









DOGS : THEIR HISTORY  
AND DEVELOPMENT

*"The spirit 'Tuil,' who drives his sledge drawn by his dog 'Koseia,' is the author of earthquakes. He drives under the earth and when his dog shakes either the fleas or the snow from its body, the earth is set in motion."*

*(A translation from the German edition of Steller's work, 1774.)*







A SPOTTED DOG AND TOY SPANIELS. An engraving by Simon Thomassin (1695-1732). Now in the British Museum.



EDWARD C. ASH

# DOGS: THEIR HISTORY AND DEVELOPMENT

Volume I

BOSTON AND NEW YORK  
HOUGHTON MIFFLIN COMPANY

*Printed and Made in Great Britain by  
Hazell, Watson & Viney Ltd. London and Aylesbury.*

TO  
CLAUDE MARSHALL  
OF  
IPSWICH





# INTRODUCTION



IT is with much diffidence that I write this introduction to Mr. E. C. Ash's work. The Author set out to get all the information he could about every breed. The enormous research this has entailed, I am sure all readers will agree, has been amply repaid by the result. I know all dog breeders and owners will offer Mr. Ash their very warmest thanks and congratulations.

It has always been a mystery to me how the majestic Irish wolfhound and the tiny Yorkshire toy terrier can be one and the same variety of life! Very little is known as to the origin of the various varieties, but the work leaves no known stone unturned to find solutions to these mysteries.

I have always looked on the Greyhound family as the oldest type in dogs. Those two magnificent stone carvings (sold at the dispersal of the Hope Collection some few years back at Christie's) of Egyptian origin, dating, I believe, 4000 B.C., portrayed the recumbent, rather over-life-size figures of what would be typical greyhounds to-day, and this rather bears out my contention.

Apart from the value this work has to dog breeders, it contains a fund of historical detail, and a collection of unique illustrations, from the first of every known variety down to the best specimens of to-day. The stories, too, are well put together and carefully selected. We meet also within its pages many old friends of the doggy world, giving their views, their troubles, their difficulties. We visit the early dog shows, and read the criticisms of newspaper reporters who, to say the least, had not the doggy sense they have to-day!

I say again, the Author is to be congratulated on such a work, which is one that should find its way to the shelf of every library, as a classic on dogs.

K. NEWCASTLE.

CLUMBER, WORKSOP, NOTTS.



# CONTENTS

## VOL. I

INTRODUCTION. By HER GRACE THE DUCHESS OF NEWCASTLE . . . . .	p. vii
LIST OF SUBSCRIBERS . . . . .	p. xiii
LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS . . . . .	pp. xv-xviii

### SECTION I

#### THE DOG AND MAN

##### CHAPTER I

###### THE DOG AND MAN

Early thoughts—Difficulties of writing a history—The antiquity of breeding—Development of types—Origin of habits and characteristics—Influence of human temperament—The making of varieties—The value of isolation—Colour and magic—The first dog show—The coming of the Kennel Club—Acknowledgments

pp. 1-9

##### CHAPTER II

###### THE PROBLEM OF THE DOMESTICATED DOG AND ITS WILD RELATIVES

The problem of the domesticated dog—Anatomy—Variations in types—Seasonable variations—Differences in habits—Prehistoric dogs—Dog-like animals—Possible origin of the domestic dog—Antipathy between domesticated dogs and wild dogs—Dog and fox crosses—Dog and wolf crosses—Habits of hybrids—Wild dogs—Professor McCoy on the dingo—Lives of wild dogs—Dogs discovered by explorers—Feral dogs—Their return to the wild.

pp. 10-38

##### CHAPTER III

###### DOGS IN ANCIENT RELIGIONS, FOLKLORE, AND LEGEND

Dogs in ancient religions—Folklore and legend—Egyptian, Assyrian, and early Chinese times—The substitution of dogs for human victims—Dogs used to expel spirits—Cannibals and dog-eaters—The Dog of the Harvest—Killing the dog—The dog gaze—The Dog-rib Indians—Demon-dog and Hell-hounds—King Arthur's dog "Covall"—"Gelert" in "Pilpay's Fables"—Kitmer—Magic and the use of dog's flesh—Superstitions—The strange plant the Baara—Dogs in ancient Egypt, 4400 B.C.—The Dog Star—Names of dogs—Mummy dogs—Methods of embalming—The El Assasif Tablet, 2000 B.C.—Toy dogs or earth dogs—The Prince of Doom, 1500 B.C.—Dogs of Babylonia—Unwanted children used for dogs—Dog bites—Various proverbs—Biblical times—Watch dogs—Jewish view of dogs—Rabbinical literature—The story of Moses and the bones of Joseph—Dogs in ancient Chinese days—The milk of a white dog—A dog country—Dogs to hold candles, A.D. 618—The bob-tailed dog—The use of the dog in medicine—Dog's weight checking disease—Dog carriages, 600 B.C.—Dog physiognomies—The white dog's blood—The colour of a dog that bites—Extracts from "The Book of Five Elements," etc.

pp. 39-62

### SECTION II

#### EARLY AUTHORITIES

##### CHAPTER I

###### EARLY AUTHORITIES

Xenophon on chief diseases, 443 B.C.—Cassianus Bassus—Signs of the Zodiac and dogs—Feeding of dogs—Gratius Faliscus—Pliny the Elder, A.D. 23—Childlike ideas—His annoyance at the spitefulness of dogs—English and foreign authorities—1400—Theodore Gaza—Edward's huntsman "Twici"—Edward II, Duke of York—"The Boke of St. Albans," 1486—The mystery of Juliana Berners—Flavius Blondus, 1388—Michelangelo Blondus 1497—Gesner's "Historiæ Animalium," 1551—Dr. Caius's letter—Abraham Fleming's amusing Introduction—Edward Wotton, 1492—Topsell—Turberville, "The Booke of Falconrie"—Gervase Markham, 1570—Aldrovandus, 1522—Lonicer, 1582—Paullinus, 1677—Contempt for the Occult—Cirino, 1653—An Anonymous Work on Animals, 1665—Buffon, 1707—Riedel, 1724—Pennant, 1726—John Whitaker, 1771—Bewick, 1785—Edwards, 1800—Taplin—Bingley, 1809—Daniel—Bell—Walsh, 1859

pp. 63-73

## CHAPTER II

## DR. CAIUS ON BRITISH DOGS (1570)

Dr. Caius on British dogs, 1570—The species of dogs and uses—The Scottish given to commerce, not indulging in hunting—The five classes of dogs—Bloodhounds—Dogs hunting by scent—The greyhound—The thief-dog—The night-dog—The spotted dog—Water-dogs—A wolf tax—The use of the shepherd's dog—The Villaticus—Dr. Caius on the defender of farmsteads—The butcher's dog—An adventure on the London-Kingston Road—A dog as a bailiff—The Gætulian dog—The tumbler—An explanation of names—Richard Surflét, 1600—Description of a mastiff—Shepherd's dog—First description of a terrier or basset—Importance of the colour of dogs—Treatment of a bitch with puppies—Cures—The use of boiled frogs—The value of a black dog's eye—An unpleasant dog-cure for "Squinancie"—Topsell on dogs, 1607—Dog's milk—Spotted dog of Italy—"Pointers"—"Sorrowful persons"—Water-dogs—The gasehound—King Richard—Conrade Heresbatch, 1631—The "Dogge for the Feelde"—The use of "brode collers" "full of nayles"—Whitaker, 1771—Description of the dogs of Manchester—The *Cuno Beline* coin . . . . . pp. 74-94

## SECTION III

## THE DOG IN ENGLISH HISTORY

## CHAPTER I

## THE DOG IN ENGLISH HISTORY

Ownership, olden days—An early rule on the first bite—Dog-collars—Laws of Howel the Good, tenth century—The privileges and duties of a huntsman—The huntsman and his creditors—Dog values compared—The Forest Laws, eleventh century—Canute, 1016—Mutilation of dogs—Lap-dogs—The "greedy ravening dog"—Fines—The honest men's tour of inspection—Payments for killing wolves—Hunting establishments—The food used—The advantage to the fleet—Richard Candevere—"Doggie" expenses (Henry IV)—Land held for the keeping of dogs—Wages, costs, etc.—The first Prince of Wales's interest in dogs—Strange rules, laws, customs, and difficulties—Sir Thomas Cockaine's hints, 1591—Henry VIII's stricture on dogs—Food consumed by royal dogs—Cost of velvet collars—Payments made by Royal Family—Cow killed by Lady Anne's greyhound—Beverley Church falls down—Bull and bear baiting—No plays on Thursdays—Edward Alleyn—Whipping blinded bears—John Stow's Chronicles—The Murthered Child—William Harrison—Dogs that rage only in the night—The woman who "eat" the candles—Performing dogs—Teaching a dog to speak French—The King of Achsen desires mastiffs—Sir John Harington's dog "Bungey," 1618—Trouble in obtaining "Mastydogges"—Manchester's annual supply—A letter from William Fawnte—The cost of a bear-garden—Sir Patrick Hume's salary, 1617—Tottenham Woods—Denmark Hill—The elephant needing wine—"Sweete hairte, blessing, blessing"—Mr. Attorney Noy and Lord Lovelace—Prestwick Eaton desires two good bulldogs—An amusing dictionary, 1632—A royal coachman, Murray's strange request—Elizabeth Cary and Royal dog "Cupid". . . . . pp. 95-111

## CHAPTER II

## THE DOG LICENCE

An unexpected result of the dog tax—The Metropolitan Police Act, 1839—The Dogs Act—Mr. Clark's Address, 1791—A lady with three lap-dogs—Debates in Parliament—Dog whippers—Dogs and St. Paul's in 1592—Payments made for dog whippers in various churches—Cost of a dog whip—Dogs disturbing the service—Strange scene at Canterbury, 1644—Vicars debarred from keeping dogs in their rooms—Robert Poole's advice to minors—Farmers' dogs in church—Dogs making love and war in church—Dog whippers' land—Dog-whipping days—The Bangbeggar . . . . . pp. 112-120

## SECTION IV

## CLASSIFICATION OF DOGS

## CHAPTER I

## CLASSIFICATION OF DOGS

Classification in Roman times—Dr. Caius's list—Linnæus's ten varieties—Robert Kerr's amusing description—Buffon's suggestions as to varieties—Martin's division—Professor Low—*Stonehenge*—Fitzinger's 180 varieties—Mr. Rawdon Lee's classification—The Kennel Club's ruling—Present-day classification . . . . . pp. 121-132



CHAPTER II

THE ESQUIMAUX DOG AND ITS RELATIVES

The Esquimaux dog and its relatives—The Samoyed—Interesting historical facts—Dogs attacking bears—Playing with wolves—The long "nights"—Hobson's "Chummie"—Strange result of a kick—A feeding scene—Treatment of dogs by explorers—Attacked by dogs—Dog sledges—Early history of the Esquimaux dog—Taplin's description—The Kamchatka race—The Esquimaux dog on the show bench—The Samoyed to-day—Early notes on Pomeranians—Their economic value—Adam Brand at a dog burial—Edwards's views on Pomeranians—Dalziel—Mr. Nash's noted Pomeranian—The coming of the sable and other colours—"Offley Henry Drew"—Trouble in the Pom world—Pomeranian shows—Her Majesty Queen Victoria's interest—The developments of the breed—The elkhound—Its introduction, type, history—The Spitz—The type of to-day

pp. 133-160

CHAPTER III

GREYHOUNDS

The greyhound and "no mean person"—Turberville's advice—Markham's description, 1615—The word "greyhound"—Colour of early greyhounds—Mythology of the first greyhound—Paddock coursing—The Duke of Norfolk—Pointers and spaniels used with greyhounds—The Swaffham Coursing Society—Lord Orford's experiments—His death—Thomas Goodlake—Strange rules of a club—Colonel Thornton's greyhounds—Famous dogs of the day—The great box-hare meeting at Epsom—Taplin's adventure with a greyhound—Mr. Moore's greyhound from Yorkshire—The "Dents"—The parson and the farmer—Dame Berners on the greyhound—Other early writers—Famous coursing meets at Altcar—The National Coursing Club—*Stonehenge's* points of the course—Meetings—Miss Richards of Compton Beauchamp—Her love-affairs—Her coachman—Her epitaph—Coursing Rules—Winners of the Waterloo Cup—*Stonehenge's* definitions—*Stonehenge's* abbreviations—The Italian greyhound—Its delicacy—Famous early dogs—"Gowan's Billie"—Lobengula's purchase—The whippet—Its origin—Methods of running, etc..

pp. 161-192

CHAPTER IV

VARIETIES OF THE GREYHOUND FAMILY

The Saluki—Mussulman ideas—Different types—Their feeding and early education—Gazelle hunting—Killing a jackal—Mourning for a Saluki—Brought into Europe by Crusaders—"Laaman" and "Ayesha"—First shown as a British breed—Winners in 1923—"The Diwan of Abu Nuwas"—Afghan hounds—Difficulty of obtaining information—The Afghans in the Ark—Their shyness—Resemblance between the Afghan and the Saluki—Deerhounds not in Pittscliffe's History—Hollinshed "Chronicle"—"Sundry Scottish Dogges"—Taylor's Irish greyhounds—"Dierhoundis"—Pennant's description of a Highland greyhound—Dr. Johnson—Sculpturings of the nineteenth century—Famous dogs—Scrope—Cessation of interest—Youatt's description—*Stonehenge*—The show at Birmingham in 1860—Famous dogs—Irish wolfhounds—Ossianic literature—"The Laws of Wales" of Howel the Good—Reginald, Huntsman to the King—"The Book of Fenagh"—The Deputy's letter to James Hancock—Campion—Taylor's Pilgrimage—Viscount Falkland's letter—The penniless pilgrim sees Irish wolf-dogs—Dorothy Osborne and Sir William Temple—The "Young Lady Almost Five Years Old"—Goldsmith's mother saved by a wolf-dog—Lord Althamont's description—Pennant's "Grehound"—Mr. H. D. Richardson—The "Dog of Dogs"—Recognised as a class—Captain Graham—The first show—An amusing claim—Mr. Rawdon Lee on the breed—Captain Graham's pamphlet—Letters to the "Field"—Mr. Hickman's opinion—The Borzois in 1812—First introduced into England—King Edward's borzois—The late Queen Alexandra's interest—The Addlestone Kennel—Mr. Kalmoutzky's Kennel—Capturing wolves—The Borzois Club—The type of to-day

pp. 193-245

SECTION V

DALMATIANS, GREAT DANES, AND SHEEP-DOGS

CHAPTER I

DALMATIANS AND GREAT DANES

Dogs of Dalmatia in 1253—Possible origin of the Name—Dr. Caius—Spotted dogs in France—Aldrovandus's description (1637)—Spotted dogs of classical times—A spotted dog from India—Bewick's woodcut—Taplin's displeasure—Various opinions on Dalmatians—Early kennels—The Great Dane—Blome's illustration—Whitaker's household dog—Bewick's mention—Great Danes used with carriages—"Great Danes" in Austrian Turkey—The boarhound—Mr. Adcock—Herr Gustav Lang and his claims—"Tiger Doggen"—Bismarck's "Tyran"—The Kaiser's present—Prince Albert Solms's letter—Great Danes on the stage—The type of to-day

pp. 246-261

## CHAPTER II

## SHEEP-DOGS

Varro's description of shepherd dogs—Use of a cooked frog—Barnaby Googe—A savage sheep-dog of Greece—The sheep-dog of South Russia—The shepherd's dog in the Pyrenees—Scottish sheep-dogs, 1844—The cur breed—Bob-tails—The "hairy-moued collie"—The bearded collie—The advantage of a short tail—Drovers' dog shows—The Old English Sheep-dog Club—Faults in modern dogs—Development of colour—Some famous dogs—The collie—Early descriptions—The sheep stealer—The value of collies—The shepherd's visit to the dog show—The word "collie"—The first standard—Four noted families—White collie presented to Prince of Wales—The story of the collie and the missing child—The Ettrick Shepherd—The dog at prayers—An ear for music—"Help" of the Urban and Suburban Railways—Collies used with ostriches—The Shetland sheep-dog's origin—The Club—Development of the breed—German sheep-dogs—The Alsatian—Various claims—Famous dogs—The reason for popularity—Trials—Possibilities—The types of to-day—Translation from Vecchio—Shetland sheep-dog—Origin, etc. . . . . pp. 262-294

## SECTION VI

## THE WATER-DOG AND SPANIEL GROUPS

## CHAPTER I

## POODLES

The present-day type—The "Water Dogge" of 1621—A water-dog assisting fishermen—Early descriptions—Possible explanation of custom of clipping—and shaving—The poodle as a sportsman—Truffle-digging—Dr. Fitzinger on the poodle—Hair produced by a poodle—How to keep the coat—Poodles' royal performance—A "poodle" which burst its skin—Sir Walter Scott on the poodle . . . . . pp. 295-305

## CHAPTER II

## SPANIELS

The word "Espagnol"—The Duke of York's opinion—Aldrovandus's illustration—"These are byrds and have wing"—How to train a setting dog of 1621—Bewick's springer and cocker—Edwards (1800)—"The gentleman who fell under water thrice"—The spaniels of St. Paul's Cathedral—High prices of 1837—Early descriptions of cockers and springers—The Sussex cocker—The Norfolk—The Clumber—The field spaniel—The Footman family—Noted early breeders—Mr. Phineas Bullock's "George"—Early history of the spaniel family—The Sporting Spaniel Club's trials—The second trial—The English water-spaniel—Spaniel varieties—The type of to-day . . . . . pp. 306-329

## CHAPTER III

## SETTERS

The "very dead horse in a barrow"—The origin of setting—Setters of 1627—A deed of 1685—The "Gentleman's Recreation"—An amusing work of 1732—A setter's journey to London—The Kunopœdia—Celebrated strains—Early writers on setters—The famous "Kent"—Mr. Walsh's amusing experiment—Correspondence in the "Field"—Early shows—The Irish setter—Mr. Laverack and his kennel—His description of the setter family—The Russian setter—Beltons—Original colour of the Gordon setters—Mr. Gray's opinion—Mr. Rawdon Lee—Types of to-day . . . . . pp. 330-353

## CHAPTER IV

## POINTERS, RETRIEVERS, AND IRISH WATER-SPANIELS

The pointer's introduction—The Spanish pointer—The Duke of Kingston's stock—A Taplin anecdote—"Pluto" and "Juno"—The pointer and the bad shot—"Major"—The Daniel Lambert strain—Early dogs of note—Mr. William Arkwright's monograph—His suggestions as to origin—A pointer as a barometer—First description of a retrieving dog—Suggested varieties of retriever—The use of the word "retriever"—Terrier crosses considered retrievers—*Stonehenge's* amusing story—*Idstone* and deerstalkers' retrievers—Curly-coated retrievers—Liver-coloured retrievers—1878—Mr. Shirley—*Saxon* praises retrievers that bite game—The Hon. Holland Hibbert and his Labradors—Mrs. Quintin Dick—The Earl of Lonsdale's letter to the "Daily Mail"—The making of the flat-coat—Famous Riverside strain—Field trials—Mr. Shirley's opinion—Mr. Farquharson's sale—A political retriever—The Hon. Dudley Marjoribanks and the golden retriever—Attempt to obtain fresh blood—The Irish water-spaniel—The story of "Bagsman"—The Irish water-spaniel of 1847—Duck hunting at Dublin—The northern and southern dogs—Mr. M'Carthy's description—*Stonehenge* on the breed—Irish water-spaniels at Birmingham—Mr. M'Carthy's criticism—First description of the variety—Show points pp. 354-384

(END OF VOLUME ONE)

# FIRST LIST OF SUBSCRIBERS

- Mrs. AIZLEWOOD, Parkhead, Sheffield.  
 HENRIK AMELN, Esq., Bergen.  
 Mrs. ASTLEY, Hereford.  
 R. B. ASTLEY, Esq., Alresford, Hants.  
 Mrs. E. BARNES, Urmston, Nr. Manchester.  
 Mrs. I. H. BARR, Ockley, Dorking.  
 H. BEECHER, Esq., Hythe, Kent.  
 The BARON BENTINCK OF SCHOONHETEN, Raalte, Holland.  
 A. T. BERNEY-FICKLER, Esq., Norwich.  
 Dr. J. E. BOWIE, Bixter, Shetland.  
 J. F. BRADBURY, Esq., Ullenhall, Warwickshire.  
 Major A. H. BRONKE, 19th Lancers, India.  
 Mr. BRUDENELL, Peterborough.  
 Major W. H. CALLANDER, Littlebourne, Canterbury.  
 A. K. CAMERON, Esq., Edinburgh.  
 EL CONDE DE CASTILLEJA DE GUZMAN.  
 Miss CAZALET, Tonbridge, Kent.  
 Miss JANET CHADWIND, Snitterfield, Warwickshire.  
 Mrs. CARLO CLARKE, Little Missenden, Bucks.  
 H. R. COOKE, Esq., Bridgnorth, Shropshire.  
 Sir JAMES CORRY, Sevenoaks.  
 The Rt. Hon. The MARQUESS OF CREWE, Paris.  
 Captain B. HUTTON CROFT, Boroughbridge, Yorkshire.  
 Miss CROUCHER, Eastbourne.  
 ALEXANDER DALZIEL, Esq., Belfast.  
 Sir JOHN DEWRANCE, Thetford, Norfolk.  
 G. C. DRABBLE, Esq., Sandown, I.O.W.  
 The Rt. Hon. The VISCOUNTESS DUNEDIN, London, S.W.1.  
 Captain J. E. EASTLEY, Paignton, Devon.  
 Mrs. HUGH ELLIOT, Normandy, Surrey.  
 R. EMMET, Esq., Moreton Morrell, Warwick.  
 The Rt. Hon. The EARL OF ENNISKILLEN, Enniskillen, Ireland.  
 THOMAS FALL, Esq., London, W.1.  
 Mrs. FLETCHER, St. Asaph.  
 W. H. B. FLETCHER, Esq., Bognor, Sussex.  
 Miss E. SUTHERLAND FRASER, London, N.7.  
 The Rt. Hon. The BARON GLENTANAR, Aboyne, Aberdeenshire.  
 E. M. GRANT, Esq., Copthorne, Sussex.  
 R. FLETCHER HEARNshaw, Esq., Burton Joyce, Notts.  
 J. N. HEATHCOTE, Esq., Peterborough.  
 Admiral A. W. HENEAGE-VIVIAN, Blackpill, Swansea.  
 Sir WILLIAM HICKING, Southwell.  
 A. HOOD-REYNARDSON, Esq., Stamford.  
 Mr. and Mrs. H. C. HOTBLACK, Hull.  
 JOHN HOWESON, Esq., West Folkestone, Kent.  
 F. W. HUTTON-STOTT, Esq., London, S.W.  
 JAMES ISMAY, Esq., Blandford.  
 H.H. MAHARAJAH OF JIND, Sangrur, India.  
 Mrs. ISABEL JOHNSTON, Willaston, nr. Birkenhead.  
 Miss HAZEL H. KNIGHT, Edenbridge.  
 Lt.-Col. JOHN KYFFIN, Radyr, nr. Cardiff.  
 THE LINENHALL LIBRARY, Belfast.  
 Mrs. A. T. LLOYD, Wantage, Berks.  
 Captain JOCELYN LUCAS, M.C., Exeter.  
 F. F. MCKENZIE, Esq., Loughton, Essex.  
 Mrs. J. TAYLOR MARSH, Speldhurst, Kent.  
 H. MARSHALL, Esq., London, S.W.1.  
 Dr. S. MILLBANK.  
 HENRIETTE MESRITZ, London, S.W.7.  
 Miss JESSIE L. MOIR, Kincardine-on-Forth.  
 H.R.H. PRINCESS CHARLOTTE OF MONACO, Paris.  
 Rev. E. J. NELSON, Horndean, Hants.  
 GODFREY PIKE, Esq., Upminster, Essex.  
 H.H. MAHARAJAH OF PITHAPURAM, Pithapuram.  
 Mrs. H. DE PLEDGE, Reading, Berks.  
 THE PUBLIC LIBRARY, Belfast.  
 JAMES V. RANK, Esq., South Nutfield, Surrey.  
 Lt.-Col. J. M. ROGERS, Sevenoaks.  
 VINCENT ROUTLEDGE, Esq., London, E.C.3.  
 Mrs. LUCY SCHEERBOOM, Southend-on-Sea.  
 K. P. STROHMENGER, Esq., London, S.W.1.  
 R. H. G. TATTON, Esq., Tarporley, Cheshire.  
 W. STUART THOMPSON, Esq., Dogsthorpe, Peterborough.  
 W. N. TOD, Esq., Liverpool.  
 Major J. E. WARREN, Handcross, Sussex.  
 Sir GILBERT A. H. WILLS, Moreton-in-Marsh.  
 L. W. WINAN, Esq., Hove.  
 H. R. WILSON-WOOD, Esq., Romsey, Hants.  
 The Rt. Hon. LORD WOOLAVINGTON, Petworth.





# LIST OF PLATES

## VOL. I

		Frontispiece
PLATE		PAGE
	A SPOTTED DOG AND TOY SPANIELS (1655-1732) . . . . .	
1.	RESTORATION OF PREHISTORIC DOGS BY E. BONN ; THE BEST MOTHER-DOG ; THE STONE-AGE DOG ; A SPOTTED DOG FROM INDIA ; THE FERAL DOG OF SAN DOMINGO. (1843) . . . . .	16a
2.	BEDOUIIN GREYHOUND OF AKKABA ; THE NORTH AMERICAN INDIAN DOG ; THE HOARY AGUARA DOG ; THE YOUNG ALCO BROUGHT FROM MEXICO ; THE CARRIER DOG OF THE INDIANS. (1843) . . . . .	16b
3.	A "CHARACTERISTIC" ENGLISH DANDIE ; CAPTAIN FRAZER'S SKYE TERRIER "QUILICK" ; BOARHOUND ; GREYHOUND-BULLDOG CROSS ; SECOND CROSS WITH GREYHOUND ; THIRD CROSS WITH GREYHOUND ; FOURTH CROSS WITH GREYHOUND ; "SAILOR" ; "A PERFECT SPECIMEN OF THE SETTER" ; A DOG-FOX CROSS . . . . .	16c
4.	LE CHIEN DE BERGER ; LE CHIEN DE SIBÉRIE ; LE CHIEN TURC ET GREDIN ; CHIEN LOUP ; CHIEN DE SIBÉRIE ; GRAND CHIEN LOUP ; CHIEN COURANT MÉTIS ; A TURKISH DOG ; LE CHIEN DES BOIS. (About 1798) . . . . .	16d
5.	SALUKIS OR GREYHOUND-TYPE DOGS AND MASTIFFS ON GREEN SLATE TABLET. (4000 B.C.) . . . . .	32a
6.	DOGS FROM THE TOMBS AT BENI-HASSAN (about 2200-2000 B.C.) . . . . .	32b
7.	DOGS FROM THE TOMBS AT BENI-HASSAN (about 2200-2000 B.C.) . . . . .	32c
8.	TAKING AN OATH BY DRINKING DOG'S BLOOD ; SLEDGE DOGS ; DOGS PREPARED AS FOOD FOR THE DEAD. (1698) . . . . .	32d
9.	DOGS OF THE GREYHOUND AND SALUKI TYPE ATTACKING GAME (bas-relief, about 1450 B.C.) . . . . .	48a
10.	THE FOUR DOGS ON THE LOWER PORTION OF THE LIMESTONE STELE OF ANTEFAA (about 2000 B.C.) . . . . .	48b
11.	DOGS AS CHILDREN'S TOYS AND ORNAMENTS, OF VARIOUS EGYPTIAN DYNASTIES . . . . .	48c
12.	DOG MODELS . . . . .	48d
13.	THE SPOILS OF WAR (1400 B.C.) ; SALUKIS : CHAMPIONS "ZOBED" AND "FARHAN." . . . .	56a
14.	DOG POTTERY, BRONZE, AND TERRA-COTTA (600-100 B.C.) . . . . .	56b
15.	BAS-RELIEF OF HUNTERS WITH NETS AND MASTIFFS . . . . .	56c
16.	MASTIFFS USED ON WILD HORSES ; TERRA-COTTA MODELS OF MASTIFFS . . . . .	56d
17.	DOGS, POSSIBLY A VARIETY OF GREYHOUND, WITH FEATHERED TAILS (Athenian fabric, 6th century B.C.) . . . . .	64a
18.	A DOG SCENE ON A GREEK AMPHORA (6th century B.C.) . . . . .	64b
19.	DOGS OF A HEAVY GREYHOUND OR GREAT DANE TYPE (Athenian fabric, about 444 B.C.) . . . . .	64c
20.	TERRA-COTTAS FROM THE BRITISH MUSEUM (1000-500 B.C.) . . . . .	64d
21.	POSSIBLY A VARIETY OF SALUKI (wine-jug, 6th century) ; TOY POMERANIAN (vase, 3rd century B.C.) . . . . .	72a
22.	THE HOUND OF KEPHALOS (about 440 B.C.) . . . . .	72b
23.	A DOG WITH A LONG MUZZLE (about 460-470 B.C.) . . . . .	72c
24.	TOY DOG OF POMERANIAN TYPE (Athenian jug, about 440 B.C.) ; DOG PLAYING, of INDEFINITE TYPE (Athenian jug, c. 500 B.C.) . . . . .	72d
25.	DOG OF GREAT DANE OR MASTIFF TYPE (Roman pavement) . . . . .	80a
26.	DOG, WEARING COLLAR, FACING BOAR ; GREYHOUND, OR SALUKI-TYPE DOG, HUNTING A HARE (Mosaics, 6th century A.D.) . . . . .	80b
27.	A GREYHOUND AND HARE LAMP (4th century B.C.) ; A DOG-HEAD DRINKING HORN (3rd century B.C.) . . . . .	80c
28.	A GREYHOUND, LACKING THE RACY BUILD OF TO-DAY'S TYPE (marble relief, beginning of 2nd century A.D.) . . . . .	80d
29.	THE KENNEL ; COUNT PHŒBUS SURROUNDED BY HIS HUNTSMEN, AND DOGS (1387) ; "CHASSE AU HERON" (15th century) ; "CI DEVISE LA MANIERE DE FAIRE SON ESPERVIER NOUVEL VOLER" (15th century). From illuminated MSS. . . . .	88a

PLATE		PAGE
30.	THE CLASSIC DESCRIPTION OF A GREYHOUND, a reproduction from the first edition of "The Book of St. Albans" (1486); THE TITLE-PAGE OF ABRAHAM FLEMING'S "DR. CAIUS"	88b
31.	DOGS (EXCEPT FOR NO. 3), PROBABLY SKETCHES BY DR. CAIUS	88c
32.	WORKING A BLOODHOUND; A ST. HUBERT HOUND; "HOW A KENNEL OUGHT TO BE SITUATED AND TRIMMED FOR HOUNDS" (1611)	88d
33.	DOGS IN FARMING SCENES AND USED WITH WOLVES (1570)	96a
34.	WILD FOWLING; HOW RABBITS ARE CAUGHT; HOW ONE MAY CATCH ALL KINDS OF BIRDS WITH HAWKS AND NETS; HOW DOGS SHOULD BE TRANSPORTED BY SHIP (1584)	96b
35.	DOGS IN WOODCUTS (1637)	96c
36.	DOGS IN WOODCUTS (1637)	96d
37.	DOGS IN WOODCUTS (1653)	112a
38.	ILLUSTRATIONS OF DOGS FROM EARLY MSS., ETC.	112b
39.	DOGS BY NOTED ARTISTS (1440-1536)	112c
40.	DOGS FROM BUFFON'S "HISTOIRE NATURELLE," BY VARIOUS ARTISTS (1798 edition)	112d
41.	TITLE-PAGE OF SIR THOMAS COCKAINE'S "A SHORT TREATISE OF HUNTING" (1591); FRONTISPIECE OF SIR JAMES WARE'S "DE HIBERNIA" (1658)	120a
42.	DOG GAUGE; CRUDE WOODCUTS OF "WATER DOGGE" AND "SETTING DOGGE" FROM GERVASE MARKHAM'S "ART OF FOWLING" (1621); POODLE, SPANIEL AND LION, FROM THE "BOOK OF BEASTS" (1665)	120b
43.	AN ALLEGORICAL PICTURE, SHOWING DOGS, FROM THE "BOOK OF BEASTS" (1665)	120c
44.	DOGS IN THE FRONTISPIECE OF MATTHEW HOPKINS' BOOK ON WITCH-FINDING (1647); A PAGE FROM THIS WORK, GIVING DETAILS OF TWO CANINE FAMILIARS	120d
45.	AN ILLUSTRATION FROM "THE HISTORIE OF SCOTLANDE," part of Holinshed (1577); OLD SCARLETT, OF PETERBOROUGH CATHEDRAL, DIED 1594, CARRYING HIS DOG-WHIP; DOGTONGS, INSCRIBED "REV. H. WILLIAMS VR IL.W.I. WARS 1815"; A TOY DOG (1301); THE DOG-WHIP OF BASLOW CHURCH	128a
46.	LORD CAMELFORD'S FAMOUS BULLDOG "TRUSTY" (1806); THE FIGHT BETWEEN A GENTLEMAN AND A BULLDOG (1807); THE BULLDOG (1798), by Howitt; "LION," A MASTIFF DOG OF 1739	128b
47.	A WHITE ROUGH-COATED AND A BLACK-AND-TAN TERRIER (from an engraving, 1801)	128c
48.	DOGS FROM BUFFON'S "HISTOIRE NATURELLE," BY VARIOUS ARTISTS (1798 edition)	128d
49.	DOGS, FROM "ICONES ANIMALIUM" (1780)	136a
50.	DOGS, FROM "ICONES ANIMALIUM" (1780)	136b
51.	DOGS FROM THOMAS BEWICK'S "GENERAL HISTORY OF QUADRUPEDS" (1790)	136c
52.	TAPLIN, AUTHOR OF "THE SPORTSMAN'S CABINET" (1803); A CELEBRATED DOG, A CROSS BETWEEN BULLDOG AND TERRIER (1812)	136d
53.	DOGS FROM BARR'S BUFFON (1792)	144a
54.	DOGS FROM BARR'S BUFFON (1792)	144b
55.	DOGS FROM SHAW'S "ZOOLOGY" (1800)	144c
56.	POMERANIAN AND GIRL. Oinochoe (wine jug, 4th century B.C.); TOY POMERANIAN WITH CHILD (Greek tombstone 3rd century B.C.)	144d
57.	DOGS FROM COLONEL H. SMITH, "JARDINE'S NATURALISTS' LIBRARY" (1843)	160a
58.	THE GREENLAND DOG, BY REINAGLE (1803)	160b
59.	SAMOYED CHAMPION "ANTARCTIC BRU"; NORWEGIAN DOG "ROLFE"; SAMOYED TEAM IN HARNESS ("STARSUN BRU," "NIM OF FARNINGHAM," "HIBEDA," "TULA OF FARNINGHAM," CH. "POLAR LIGHT OF FARNINGHAM"); ELKHOUND "ODIN WOODBYTHII"	160c
60.	ELKHOUND "ODIN WOODBYTHII"; KEESHOND "BARTEL VAN ZAANDAM"	160d
61.	GREYHOUNDS (from Turberville's "The Booke of Falconrie, or Hawking," 1611); GREYHOUNDS COURSING (an engraving by Blome, 1686)	168a
62.	LORD ORFORD'S "CZARINA" (from an engraving, 1801)	168b

PLATE	PAGE
63. "MAJOR," THE WINNER OF THE THOUSAND GUINEA CHALLENGE ON EPSOM DOWNS (from an engraving, 1803) . . . . .	168c
64. COURSING AT SWAFFHAM (1793); A SCENE IN THE SOUTHDOWNS, JANUARY 23, 1854 . . . . .	168d
65. THOMAS GOODLAKE, THE EDITOR OF "THE COURSER'S MANUAL" (1828); GEORGE CUPPLES (1894), THE WELL-KNOWN DEERHOUND OWNER . . . . .	176a
66. WATERLOO CUP WINNERS: "HARMONICON," WINNER OF THE WATERLOO CUP (1916); FOUR WATERLOO CUP WINNERS IN ONE KENNEL, "Fabulous Fortune" (1896), "Fearless Footstep" (1900, 1901), "Farndon Ferry" (1902), "Father Flint" (1903); "PENTONVILLE," WINNER OF THE WATERLOO CUP (1925); "LONG SPAN," WINNER OF THE WATERLOO CUP (1907); "MASTER McGRATH," WINNER OF THE WATERLOO CUP THREE TIMES . . . . .	176b
67. DEERHOUNDS ON THE SCULPTURED STONES AT MEIGLE; DEERHOUND "MIMIC OF ROSS"; IRISH WOLFHOUNDS: CH. "KING SHANE OF BRABYNS," "FIONN MA COUL OF BRABYNS" . . . . .	176c
68. THE FIRST PICTURE MARKED "IRISH GREYHOUND" (1665); "IRISH GREYHOUND OR WOLF-DOG" (1808); "THE IRISH WOLF-DOG" ACCORDING TO H. D. RICHARDSON (1841) . . . . .	176d
69. SALUKIS HUNTING (Turkish bottle, 16th century) . . . . .	192a
70. TYPICAL SALUKIS (from a painting, 16th century) . . . . .	192b
71. GREYHOUNDS OR SALUKI TYPES DEPICTED IN PERSIAN PAINTINGS (about 1400) . . . . .	192c
72. "NAFISOAH," A SALUKI OF REMARKABLE CHARACTER; AFGHAN HOUNDS, "KHAN OF GHAZNI" AND "SIRDAR"; A HEAD STUDY OF "SIRDAR OF GHAZNI" . . . . .	192d
73. IRISH GREYHOUND (by Reinagle, 1803) . . . . .	232a
74. BORZOIS: "KING AND QUEEN OF DIAMONDS OF ADDLESTONE"; CH. "NIZAM OF ADDLESTONE"; CH. "QUEEN OF HEARTS" . . . . .	232b
75. THE COACH-DOG (from an engraving by Reinagle, 1803) . . . . .	232c
76. DALMATIAN CH. "THE WHIP"; LANDSEER'S PICTURE OF HIS DOGS, SHOWING "MAIDA," HIS DEERHOUND; POINTER "RIOT"; DALMATIAN CH. "GRAN SPUMANTI"; "TARFF" AND "DERIG" FACING THE STAG (from Scrope's "Art of Deerstalking" 1838); DALMATIAN "PRINCE UMBRIA" . . . . .	232d
77. GREAT DANES (?) USED IN BOAR HUNTING (from an engraving, 1686) . . . . .	256a
78. GREAT DANES (from an engraving, 1800) . . . . .	256b
79. "SATAN," A LARGE NEWFOUNDLAND DOG OF LORD MONTROSE'S STRAIN (1814); "HANNIBAL" AND "PRINCESS": "WILD-BOAR HOUNDS OF THE SECOND CLASS—SOMETIMES CALLED THE TIGER-DOGS" (1807) . . . . .	256c
80. THE MODERN TYPE OF GREAT DANE; "ROLF OF OWBOROUGH," A RED-FAWN. "GRAND CHAMPION REX LENDOR VON ZETTMERSCHLOSS," A HARLEQUIN . . . . .	256d
81. SHEEP-DOGS AND SHEPHERD'S CUR-DOG; POMERANIANS AND DINGO (1800) . . . . .	272a
82. SHEEP-DOG, BY REINAGLE (1803) . . . . .	272b
83. TWO FAMOUS OLD ENGLISH SHEEP-DOGS: "NANA"; CH. "DARKEST OF ALL" . . . . .	272c
84. SHETLAND SHEEP-DOG CH. "ELTHAM PARK ESME"; BLUE MERLE COLLIE CH. "MOUNT-SHANNON BLUE SPLENDOR"; WHITE COLLIE "SQUIRE"; SMOOTH COLLIES CH. "BABETTE OF MORETON" AND CH. "IRTHLINGBOROUGH VILLAGE LASS"; MR. A. H. MEGSON'S THE NOTED CH. "ORMSKIRK EMERALD" . . . . .	272d
85. "CHIEN DE BRIE"; THE COLLIE "WOODMANSTERNE CONRAD"; BELIEVED JACKAL-AND-DOG CROSS, BUT A WOLF-DOG CROSS; LE CHIEN DES DOUARS; GERMAN LONG- AND SHORT-HAIRED SHEEP-DOGS; BELIEVED TO BE A DOG-FOX CROSS; AUSTRALIAN SHEEP-DOGS: BARBS AND KELPIES, SHOWING ALSATIAN CHARACTER . . . . .	288a
86. ALSATIAN WOLF-DOGS: CH. "BILBO OF SCRIVENTON"; "HARRAS OF SCRIVENTON," AT SEVEN MONTHS; HEAD OF CH. "BILBO OF SCRIVENTON" . . . . .	288b
87. THE ROUGH WATER-DOG, BY REINAGLE (1803) . . . . .	288c
88. MEASURES OF BLOWING (1611); SPANIELS FROM THE SAME WORK . . . . .	288d
89. SPANIELS TAUGHT TO CROUCH (from an engraving, 1686) . . . . .	304a



PLATE		PAGE
90.	THE SETTING DOG (from an engraving 1686)	304 <i>b</i>
91.	SPANIELS (from a coloured plate, 1800)	304 <i>c</i>
92.	THE ENGLISH WATER-SPANIEL; THE COCKER SPANIEL. BY REINAGLE (1803)	304 <i>d</i>
93.	SPRINGERS OR COCK-FLUSHERS, WITH WILLIAM MANSELL, KEEPER TO THE DUKE OF NEWCASTLE (1807); "THE ONE ON THE LEFT IS OF THE SUSSEX BREED, THE OTHERS THE COMMON COCKERS" (1807). (From engravings)	320 <i>a</i>
94.	DOG AND DUCK (from an engraving, 1811); THE SPRINGER; ALPINE OR GREAT ST. BERNARD DOG, AND KING CHARLES SPANIEL (1843)	320 <i>b</i>
95.	THE SETTER, BY REINAGLE (1803)	336 <i>a</i>
96.	"WAG," A DOG OF THE KING CHARLES BREED (1809); "TRIM," BRED "FROM A BEAUTIFUL OLD ENGLISH SPRINGER"; "VIXEN," "PIED TERRIER" OF 1818; SETTERS (1803)	336 <i>b</i>
97.	POINTERS: "PLUTO AND JUNO" (from an engraving, 1801)	360 <i>a</i>
98.	POINTERS TRAINING (from an engraving, 1801)	360 <i>b</i>
99.	THE SPANISH POINTER, BY REINAGLE; THE ENGLISH POINTER, BY REINAGLE (1803)	360 <i>c</i>
100.	CLUMBER SPANIEL "LORD BEVIS"; SUSSEX SPANIEL "BROSSE"; FIELD SPANIEL CH. "WRIBBENHALL WAITER"; COCKER SPANIEL "FALCONER'S COWSLIP"	360 <i>d</i>
101.	ENGLISH SPRINGER SPANIEL CH. "BOGHURST CARLO"; WELSH SPRINGER SHOW CH. "FELCOURT FLAPPER"; WELSH SPRINGER SPANIEL THE LATE "CIMLA DASH"; GOLDEN SPRINGER SPANIEL "NORANBY NELL"	372 <i>a</i>
102.	ENGLISH SETTER "EDENBRIDGE BEAUTY"; IRISH SETTERS "WIZBANG CHUMMIEBELLE" AND "WIZBANG BUNTIEBELLE"; ( <i>Below</i> ) A GROUP OF IRISH SETTERS: "W. BONNIEBELLE," "W. BUNTIEBELLE," "W. BUCCANEER," "W. CHUMMIEBELLE," "W. BRIGAND"	372 <i>b</i>
103.	LABRADOR RETRIEVER CH. "BENINGBROUGH TANGLE"; FLAT-COATED RETRIEVER "JOAN OF RIVERSIDE," WITH PUPPIES BY CH. "TOBY OF RIVERSIDE"; DUAL CH. "TOBY OF RIVERSIDE"	372 <i>c</i>
104.	PYRENEAN SHEEP-DOG "CABBAS"; ST. BERNARD "THE KING'S SON"; GOLDEN RETRIEVERS "NORANBY BRUIN," "NORANBY SANDY," AND "NORANBY BALFOUR"	372 <i>d</i>
105.	IRISH WATER-SPANIELS: "BOATSWAIN" (BORN 1834); CH. "BREIFNY COUNT"; CH. "THE ROSE OF SHARON"; "ROCK DIVER"	380 <i>a</i>
106.	A TERRIER (c. 1500), from a Latin illuminated MS.	380 <i>b</i>
107.	DIANA WITH HER HOUNDS; DOGS (from Cirino, 1653)	380 <i>c</i>
108.	TERRIERS ATTACKING A WILD CAT (1819); TERRIERS (1800)	380 <i>d</i>

## ILLUSTRATIONS IN THE TEXT

	PAGE
THE HARE INDIAN DOG	33
GREYHOUNDS ON CLASSICAL COINS AND GEMS	65
THE CUNOBELINE COIN.	91
DEERHOUND: "SIR BRIAN" (end of 19th century)	211
BORZOIS: "GOLUB," "KOROTAI," "SOKOE" AND "OUSLAD" (end of 19th century)	245
THE TRUFFLE-DOG	301

# DOGS

## THEIR HISTORY AND DEVELOPMENT

### SECTION I

#### THE DOG AND MAN

"At another town before we came to that of Santiago, many Indians met and we staid some time there. Here I observ'd that the dogs bark'd very much at night, and the place being expos'd to the Camucones, we were somewhat concern'd. I ask'd the Indians why the dogs bark so much? and they answer'd, Father, there are abundance of Crocodiles in this river; the dogs that have a mind to swim over, meet in one place, and bark for a good while till they think the Crocodiles are assembled there (it is most certain and known by experience that the Crocodiles watch dogs, as the cats do mice), then some of them running up, and others down, they cross over out of danger from the Crocodiles. This happens every night, and therefore you need not be concern'd at their barking. I wondred at it, and remembered I had read that the dogs of Egypt did the same at the river Nile."

(NAVARETTE, *on his Second Mission to Mindoro.*)

### CHAPTER I

#### THE DOG AND MAN

CUVIER expressed the opinion that the domesticated dog is man's greatest conquest. It is certainly a somewhat curious partnership, in which mutual trust, confidence, loyalty, and sympathy appear to be the main attributes. It is very much more of a partnership than any other form of domestication.

The story of dogs of earlier ages is somewhat complicated, for history is mixed indiscriminately with folklore and largely impregnated with crude beliefs. So intimately are these three things blended, that in places it becomes somewhat difficult to separate one from the other, or to find good reason for the descriptions which are allocated.

You can realise the confusion when up to comparatively recently it was believed in North Borneo that a fiery dog watches at the gate of Paradise, and takes possession of all virgins;<sup>1</sup> whilst in the Pomotu Islands the first race of men are held to have been made into dogs.<sup>2</sup>

In China a big dog dressed as a man was carried round in a palanquin in times of drought, and acted effectively.<sup>3</sup>

The Orang Dongus whipped a black dog round the kampong in the first new moon after the rice season.<sup>4</sup>

Yama had two four-eyed dogs with two spots above the eyes, used to bring in wandering souls.<sup>5</sup>

The Pottawatomes believed that in the moon there was an old woman making a basket, and that when it was finished the earth would be destroyed. But a great dog ruined her work at intervals, causing the eclipses.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Forster and Sprengel, "Berträge zur Volker- und Länderkunde."

<sup>2</sup> "Miss. Cath." (1874), p. 343.

<sup>3</sup> "Annales de la propagation de la foi" (Lyons), xxxvii, 217.

<sup>4</sup> "Journal of the Indian Archipelago" (Singapore, 1847-59), ii, 692.

<sup>5</sup> Rig. Veda, X, xiv, 10-12; Atharva Veda, VIII, i, 9.

<sup>6</sup> "Annales de la prop. de la foi," xi, 490.

In Kamchatka earthquakes are attributed to Touila's dog "Kozei."<sup>1</sup>

Such instances were heard of and repeated, and subsequently cunningly concealed in various descriptions, which, sooner or later losing identity, were considered fact. There is, however, a certain line on which we can base our explanations, after deducting myths and folk-lore where they are discernible—that is, that the value of the dog in years gone by was, as a general rule, of a useful and not of an ornamental nature.<sup>2</sup> Of course, the desire to draw attention, to stimulate pride, often acted as a bias; but types became popular because of believed advantages, real or otherwise, frequently hearsay, or the result of incidents which attracted public notice. Exceptional actions were happily considered to apply to certain shapes or colours, resulting in a demand for those with such characteristics.

In Europe it was believed that if a "spaniel gentle" was held close to the abdomen of a patient, the fever passed into the dog. This story is given as true in work after work. Its end came with the general brightening of intellect, but it had its effects, for at the time "spaniel gentles" would be desired by believers, tolerated by the sceptical, and carefully bred by those engaged in making a few honest pennies by dog breeding and selling.<sup>3</sup> Olden-day books are replete with stories, fresh and naïve, often improbable. Strong affection for a dog—or a variety—and prejudice against something new or something foreign are frequently expressed. I have here and there copied the actual spelling and punctuation, and the best of these stories are reproduced in these pages.

I suppose the making of varieties, if we believe or not that all dogs originate from one common ancestry, is a subject of more than usual interest. It is difficult to credit that such variations in size as the Pomeranian and the Newfoundland, or in shape as the greyhound and the bulldog, or in head as the gazelle and the Pekinese, have arisen from one type.<sup>4</sup>

Man has been actively engaged in the breeding of dogs for a great number of years. He has certainly produced a great number of the varieties. As to when they were first produced and how they were obtained, these pages do in some breeds give a clue, but the dog was first domesticated in times of vast antiquity, and even the making of many breeds goes back to extremely ancient times.

In 3500 B.C. the dog was very similar to those now living, and by no means a wild animal, and it had already been differentiated into types. We see illustrations in the Tombs, of dogs attached to the chairs of their masters, tied with a cord encircling the neck, dogs of certain varieties, always used for particular kinds of work. In Assyrian times the dogs depicted are always of the same breeds, and if the dogs of these

<sup>1</sup> S. P. Krachenninkow, "Histoire et description du Kamtchatka" (Amsterdam, 1770).

<sup>2</sup> See p. 4.

<sup>3</sup> A further example of this kind may be quoted from Boyle (1627-91), an extract from a letter from Mr. William Hann to Mr. Oldenburg:

"SARUM, November 29, 1664.

"About two years since, a near neighbour of my father's had a son much afflicted with an ague, for the cure of which I used many medicines, in particular I applied the yarrow-bag to the stomach, but all to little purpose or effect: at last a woman, coming casually thither, took the boy's urine, emitted a little before the coming of the fit, and made it into a cake with barley-meal, and gave it to a dog to eat; the success whereof was this, the boy was freed of the ague, and the dog, which did eat the cake, had a visible shaking ague-fit, as the father and mother both affirmed to me (but they thought it to be witchcraft). Since that, I have been credibly informed, that a gentleman's son, about four miles from my father's house, was by the same means cured of a tedious ague, the dog, which did eat the cake, having the ague transplanted to him."

<sup>4</sup> See Chapter II. The Problem of the Domesticated Dog.



carvings were given life and collected together on the bench, they would form so even a class that the judge would find it difficult to award the honours. But in the Egyptian times several varieties are shown, including pet dogs, one of these, a female, being of a black-and-liver colour with short thick legs, erect ears, and a pointed nose, and resembling a dachshund in general form. An entirely different type constantly appears in the hunting scenes. The Egyptians took a great interest in dogs for many and varied reasons, which we deal with later; they appreciated their loyalty and assistance, and treated them with marked consideration.

Dr. Birch gives a translation of a curious letter of the XIXth Dynasty, in which a large pack of hounds, 200 of the kind called "uau" and 300 or more termed "insu," are mentioned. The writer describes how the dogs stand daily at the door of the house at the time the writer rises out of sleep, how they breakfast when the amphora is opened. He, the scribe, objects to have any of the little dogs or pups of the breed of Nahar Hu, the rogue scribe, staying in the house, for they annoyed him. He does not give the reason why, but laments that when he whips them they appear to take it in good part. He mentions the red long-tailed dog, which goes at night into the stalls of the hills, to be better than the long-faced dog. These red dogs made "no delay in hunting"; and their faces glared like a god, and they delighted in their work.<sup>1</sup>

The whole history of the early development of the dog is wrapped up in mystery; strangely enough, even the origin of the word "dog" is unknown. It appears to have represented a special breed, for "the English dog" has been a regular phrase in Continental Europe for very many years. The word "hound" comes from the Teutonic "Hund," but the word "dog" appears to have no known derivative and may simply signify the sound of "daw, daw, daw," the bark of a dog heard at a distance.

The working out of development of types has been difficult. Earlier illustrations afford but little help—they are too crude to give much information; and the description of the dog in the letterpress is often little better. Indeed, previous to the end of the eighteenth century authorities were far more interested in exemplifying how ferocious or how good, kind, noble, and loyal a dog could be, than as to the type that dog represented. We have many classical stories of dog-devotion, dog-intelligence, some of which are given. We often get long descriptions of a dog's collar and very little as to the dog; authors were few and far between and entirely out of touch with their subject. Woodcuts were certainly a difficult medium in which to give finer detail, and, in consequence of this, an artist anxious to show outstanding points often exaggerated them, so rough coats, large ears, large nostrils, become grotesque. Possibly, too, the owner of a dog might say to the artist words similar to those we hear to-day: "Make its head a little stronger, give it more of a punishing jaw." The illustrations from "Cirino" show, I suggest, mastiffs exemplifying this point, for the exaggerated nostrils are very noticeable.

The development of certain natural traits and habits to abnormal stages has been part of the domestication of certain varieties. For an example we may take the setter, which comes to a very sudden halt and crouches down, "sets," when scenting game.<sup>2</sup> The crouching probably originated in the natural position which a dog takes up when threatened. This position was seen to allow better control,

<sup>1</sup> Godwin's translation, quoted by Dr. Houghton.

<sup>2</sup> To-day are taught to point.

giving, as it did, the man the opportunity, if necessary, of seizing or striking the animal before it had time to regain its feet and escape him.

It also had special advantages when manipulating the nets, which were readily discovered and appreciated. It allowed the net to be drawn over the squatting birds and the crouching dog with the minimum of exertion. The crouching dog was not able to leap at the game and frighten it, nor was it necessary for the dog to be moved before the net was drawn over and thus risk the game seeing the movement. As Martin in "Knight's Weekly Volume" of 1844<sup>1</sup> points out, the result of education, through a series of generations, produces "permanent effects"; and though perhaps we cannot agree that they are permanent, using this word in the strict sense, yet they are sufficiently set to continue for several generations without further tuition, becoming gradually weaker, and likely to die out in time, unless the education is recommenced.

But for many generations the result of past education remains curiously active, and has become more or less instinctive. A town-bred spaniel of many generations of town-bred lineage often retrieves quite satisfactorily.

As the people of the British Islands have always been of a distinctly sporting nature,<sup>2</sup> though, at earlier times, this sporting instinct was shown in decidedly cruel ways, it follows that they developed and trained their dogs to assist in the variety of sports which at the time interested them.

It was because of this that Great Britain has been noted for her dogs from very early times. The sports which public opinion to-day would not tolerate were then a matter of ordinary occurrence, part of the daily life of the people. Indeed, so right and proper were such things considered, that sometimes the very last thing a good man did before he died, to gain the goodwill of the Deity, was to arrange to leave money for a bull to be baited to death on one or more occasions every year! Sports of this and other kinds, being therefore a matter of considerable importance, the points to be developed in the dog followed a natural course. The more they fitted in with the sport, the better; thus, the face-formation of the bulldog allowed it the better to hold on to the bull. Its great width of body and bent legs enabled it to keep well down, thus saving the chest from the teeth of an adversary when in the dog-pit. These points, still admired, now carry off medals and cups, though any sign of putting such advantages to good purpose is not approved. At one time, during the hydrophobia years, dogs were greatly feared and disliked.

It was M. Buffon, the great French naturalist,<sup>3</sup> who, in 1790, foretold the change, although probably unaware of the high civilisation of both man and his partner dog, which would come within 150 years. In his classical work he writes that dogs transplanted into the highly civilised circles of England, France, and Germany became

<sup>1</sup> "Dogs are endowed respectively with qualifications or habits, certainly not innate, but the result of education, at least originally, which education, through a series of generations, has produced permanent effects."

<sup>2</sup> "There is a great variety of dogs, and those excellent in their kind. The hounds for buck, fox, and hare, that hunt by scent, are scarce anywhere to be matched; the greyhounds for their beauty; the setting-dog one would be tempted to think a reasonable creature; the mastiff guards the houses, and is not afraid to encounter an armed man if he meets him. . . . The bulldog has equal courage, but I must confess I do not admire him, he runs swiftly and silently upon the creature he attacks, and if he fastens never quits his hold until he is choked off, or his jaws wrenched open; his master's call and his cudgel are equally disregarded." (Gonzales (1730), "To England and Scotland.")

<sup>3</sup> See *Classification of Dogs*, p. 126.



civilised, and this accounts for the quality of the British, French, and German breeds compared to the rougher-coated and less domesticated Continental types, acting as sheep-dogs in wilder areas.

Certainly times have changed;<sup>1</sup> and in the dog, as in the child, can be seen the effects of constant control and continual education. The dog of to-day, whether in the cities, taking its opportunity to cross the road when the traffic allows this to be done in safety, or whether in the country, hunting rats or rabbits, starts life on a higher plane than those of years gone by. We are indeed witnessing the evolution of the canine race. It has been said that there is some mental atmosphere which passes from owner to lower animal; certainly "like master, like man," appears true of many an owner and his dog. The dog of well-educated people somehow or other collects some of their education, habits, and manners, and the dog of a man who lives by his wits appears verily to vie with his master, behaving with the greatest cunning, sometimes with more wisdom than its biped companion.

In the making of variations, influences were exerted, not as they are to-day because of the desire for certain show points, but, as already stated, with utilitarian ends kept steadily in view. The result was a number of varieties of remarkably healthy, hardy, and useful types, some of which were again crossed to produce further variations.

In Europe the incentives to keep a variety pure were few,<sup>2</sup> the general tendency being decidedly in the opposite direction, because of an anxiety to get something better. But certain influences resulted in the fixing of types and the formation of new varieties, the most important of these being the difficulties and dangers of travelling in those days. Bitches went to, or found, dogs close by. An owner, if he chose a dog, would choose one particularly capable in sporting achievements, either as a fighter or a vermin-killer; or as a courser or more than able to hold a badger or fox; or to find a stag; using a similar type as sire, in order to develop the capabilities he desired, for the belief that similar appearances meant similar character and capabilities was general. This belief is alive in the country to-day, where the farm man breeds his rat-catching bitch with a dog capable as a rat-catcher, or which looks like the bitch he admires for her work.

I have vivid recollections of my gamekeeper's anxiety that my pure-bred terrier

<sup>1</sup> The change of feeling towards dogs may be gleaned from the following note which appeared in the "Kennel Gazette" of 1887. To-day any sign of rough usage would cause an uproar. The extract is from a newspaper.

"The congregation of a church in Edgbaston were in a state of excitement recently. A strange dog entered the church, walked down the aisle, and quietly seated himself at the base of the pulpit. A gentleman got up from his seat and tried to eject the intruder, but he would not budge, and it was necessary to resort to strong measures. The assistance of the beadle was obtained, and he came with a thick stick and dealt the dog a heavy blow on the back. The animal then barked loudly, and considerably alarmed the congregation, who left their seats thinking it was mad. The beadle then ran the brute round the aisles with his stick, and it was not until the dog was stunned that he was removed from the church. The pastor was then able to go on with the service."

<sup>2</sup> To give an idea of the views of a hundred years ago or so on dogs we see in the "Encyclopædia Britannica" of 1810 that dogs' skins, "dressed with the hair on, are used in muffs, made into a kind of buskin for persons in the gout, and for other purposes. Prepared in another way they are used for ladies' gloves and the linings of masks. . . ."

"The French import many of these skins from Scotland, under a small duty. Here, when tanned, they serve as upper leathers for neat pumps. Dogs' skins dressed are exported under a small duty, and imported under a high duty. The French import from Denmark large quantities of dogs' hair, both white and black. The last is esteemed the best, and is worked up in the black list of a particular kind of woollen cloth."

bitch should go to a dog "that looked like mine" and, to be honest to the man, was famed as a rat-killer of more than usual merit; and I remember his expression when I refused, as the dog was of questionable parentage, in which, I had heard, a retriever played a part! To him it was strange that I should object when the dog showed no signs of this retriever blood except in size and perhaps in the extraordinary way in which he could find a rat or track down a rabbit!

It is, of course, obvious that difficulties of transit started varieties and fixed them, for it concentrated material in isolated areas, preventing either the intrusion of fresh blood or the passing on of that particular line. So fortune sooner or later had it, that the nearest dog to the bitch was of the same type, quite possibly a near relative to the bitch, and this continued generation after generation for a large number of years. In those days culling was severe, and a dog unable to or unwilling to carry out the work expected, or lacking what the owner considered suitable appearances, had neither a long life nor a happy one. Even when an occasional out-cross occurred, it was merely the opening of a long-sealed-up tomb, to seal it up again. Every litter from the progeny brought something new, to be slaughtered or prized, retained and bred from. Here and there in England, France, Germany, and Russia, and all over the world indeed, men of high position developed, more often than not, a hunting dog always with local blood. Few people, except friends, retainers, and villagers, knew that such dogs existed at all, and though occasionally attempts were made by an owner to obtain improvements in appearances or in useful attributes, isolation made such actions more the exception than the rule. The introduction of a dog of different type into a kennel had a strong influence in starting new varieties, and even if the results were unexpected and undesirable, as often as not, they played a further part in evolution. Such dogs were often given to people of lower degree, or if ordered to be destroyed, some, we can be sure, were carried off and concealed by the staff. Many an unwanted dog was spirited away, travelling on the waggons towards London town, to be exchanged for good brew or to be lost in the metropolis. So the breeding of dogs went on, controlled by isolation and by the desire to obtain dogs more useful for certain work. No pedigrees were kept; no one knew, and no one cared; but the forces of nature controlled with a powerful grip, whether man desired it or not.

Later, with the coming of railways and the making of roads, the country was opened up, isolated and very much inbred varieties of the canine race were discovered and carried off, some were kept pure, some were used as out-crosses to improve some other inbred variety. This probably accounts for the noticeable development both in constitution and brain that followed. Dogs from foreign lands, novelties of strange form and contour, were also introduced by explorers returning to this country. In the olden days certain biases had been at work—to a certain extent colour was of importance, especially in magic. People had some sort of hazy notion that a certain colour had advantages, not knowing the reason why. White was probably the most important colour. A king of snakes was supposed to be white<sup>1</sup>; white elephants were sacred<sup>2</sup>; white cassowaries<sup>3</sup> in Patagonia were not to be killed, or the species would

<sup>1</sup> Ausland (Munich, 1828-92), lxiii, 1031; "Globus" (Hildburghausen, 1867), etc., iv, 333, etc., xxvi, 203.

<sup>2</sup> Young, "Kingdom of the Yellow Robe," p. 390, etc.; Moura, "Cambodge," i, 101; Book "Temples and Elephants," p. 19, etc.; and many other authorities.

<sup>3</sup> This is probably meant to be the American ostrich.



die out.<sup>1</sup> White animals were preferred as victims for sacrifices. A white dog was sacrificed by the Iroquois ; this dog was killed in January, and the ashes sprinkled at the door of every house.<sup>2</sup> So in some places white was bred for, with great care ; every dog had to be white ; a white dog sold better than any other colour.

Estienne, in 1570, in dealing with hounds in his "*Maison Rustique*," lays great stress on colours : the white were the best ; all other colours failed in one or more respects. Taplin, in 1803, refers to the question of colour-value, and suggests that colour, though generally believed to imply value, is a faulty conception. Even to-day the belief in certain colours is not dead, but sufficiently credited to persuade persons of otherwise normal intelligence to purchase inferior stock. But apart from a belief that colours meant a satisfactory animal in sport, certain colours were found to have practical advantages, and became developed in consequence.

Evolution of breed is such an enormous subject that there is no end to possible and probable factors. I have made no attempt to consider them all. I have merely dealt with one or two of the major forces, of which isolation was the most important. Cut off from the outer world by miles of desert, by rocky mountains, by seas, and oceans, dog owners bred their dogs. New varieties were made and fixed on the estates, farms, in the villages ; whilst in the towns the bull-baiting, badger-digging, dog-fighting fraternity were on the look-out for improvement, and were out-crossing or keeping the variety pure, as their feelings might suggest.

Under such circumstances were formed the nuclei of present-day types, often so strongly inbred that variations are never or seldom seen.

In 1570 there were certainly very few known distinct varieties. Dr. Caius's list contains sixteen varieties, and it is doubtful if these are distinct varieties in the sense that the expression is understood to mean to-day. The development of the dog, the increase both in variety and in numbers and also in public interest, is a development of exceeding importance.

With the increase of interest came the dog show. The first taking place at Newcastle in 1859<sup>3</sup> was promoted by a Mr. Pape, a local sporting gun-maker, and a Mr. Shorthose. Mr. Pape presented the prizes, sporting guns of his own making. Twenty-three pointers and twenty-seven setters were entered, and the show caused considerable interest.<sup>4</sup> Among the judges was *Stonehenge* (Mr. J. H. Walsh). So great was the interest that other dog shows were held that year, including a foxhound show arranged by the Cleveland Agricultural Society at Redcar, the forerunner of the noted annual summer Peterborough Show.

A society named "The National Dog Show Society" was formed to arrange a

<sup>1</sup> "*Globus*," lxi. 63.

<sup>2</sup> At the annual sacrifice of the white dog the Iroquois were careful to strangle the animal without shedding its blood or breaking its bones ; the dog was afterwards burned. (L. H. Morgan, "*League of the Iroquois* " ; J.G.F. in note.) See Appendix for full account of such a ceremony.

<sup>3</sup> The following note appeared in the "*Field*" of May 28, 1859 : " A show of setters and pointers is determined on at Newcastle-on-Tyne, in connection with their annual poultry show, a programme of which will be found in our advertising columns. Those who have dogs of either breed likely to command a prize will see that one of considerable value is offered for each, in the shape of one of Mr. Pape's guns, the shooting of which was so successful at the '*Field*' gun-trial of 1858." The show took place on June 28.

<sup>4</sup> Three previous attempts had been made to establish a dog show, but had failed. The prize-winners were Mr. R. Brailsford's liver-and-white dog, by Lord Derby's "*Bang*," out of "*Dora*," the best pointer, and Mr. J. Jobling's "*Dandy*," the best setter. (For further dog shows, see Appendix XXII.)



show to be held at Birmingham each autumn. But the early dog shows had many difficulties to overcome; the general public were not sufficiently interested. In 1865 a dog show was held in Paris, the first, I believe, in France; and the National Dog Club held a show at the Crystal Palace, which, unfortunately for the promoters, was such a disastrous affair that the Dog Club came to a sudden end. Nevertheless, another show was arranged for June of 1870, but the show, though of great interest, caused further heavy losses. But those interested in dogs were not easily beaten, and arranged a further show, which, though causing a loss, had better financial results than its predecessors.

In about 1859 the "Field" published letters from readers suggesting public trials of pointers and setters over game, and on April 18, 1865, the first "field" trial took place at Southhill, near Bedford, on the estate of Mr. S. Whitbread, M.P. The judging was carried out in a similar manner to that in force to-day, but the awards were based on a scale of: nose, 40; pace and range, 30; temperament, 10; staunchness before, 10; staunchness behind, 10; and style of working was taken into consideration.<sup>1</sup>

In April 1873 the Kennel Club was formed, with Mr. S. E. Shirley as chairman. He subsequently became President, holding this honour until his much regretted demise in March 1904. In 1874 the first K.C. Stud Book was published.

No remarks of mine are needed to suggest that the founding of the Kennel Club was the greatest step in the welfare of dogs and dog shows. With a master-hand this organisation controlled without jar or unpleasant interference, to the benefit of all. Gradually the dog show emerged from perfectly impossible conditions to a controlled and satisfactory one.

To-day, in the British Islands there are over 500 known societies affiliated to the Kennel Club; and dog shows, as a rule, are well patronised and profitable. The care, management, and popularity of the dog have advanced, and the number has increased in consequence. The dog has become a business enterprise; considerable sums change hands; large numbers of people are employed, directly and indirectly. The business is still in its infancy, and there are endless opportunities awaiting breeders and those who specialise in catering for the breeder and his requirements.

This volume contains a new authentic translation of Dr. Caius's letter to Conrad Gesner<sup>2</sup> and the only translation into English of Ælian. I believe I am also correct in stating that the Chinese chapters on dogs, from the "Imperial Chinese Encyclopædia," have not all been previously translated, and I have to thank Mr. G. H. Shenham Hu for so generously putting his time at my disposal. In this Encyclopædia, although considerable space is allotted to dogs, the matter contained is mostly of a literary character. But the information as to dogs is of exceptional interest, for we find the first reference to bob-tailed dogs; and a very early reference to the Saluki, with amusing and interesting historical and medical details.

The translations in the Appendix, except where otherwise stated, have been newly done for this work. Great care has been taken that no name of a modern variety has been substituted for the original description, and the translation has been

<sup>1</sup> A copy of the report of this field trial is given in Appendix XXIV.

<sup>2</sup> This appears to be the first and only translation of Dr. Caius' letter, that by Abraham Fleming proving to be spurious.

verified. All extracts, translations, both in the main body of the work and in the Appendix, are from the earliest copy available, and are therefore free from the additions of later copyists.

In the "Dog in English History" section, I have made full use of the late George R. Jesse's work, "Research into the History of the British Dog." Many errors have been corrected. Mr. Jesse, an enthusiastic research worker, and lover of all living things, spent his life in the cause of dumb animals. He founded a society for Abolition of Vivisection, and continued to take an active part in its operations until about two years before his death.

The chapter on Salukis, except for matter culled from various authorities, has been given me by the Hon. Florence Amherst,<sup>1</sup> to whose constant, painstaking, and enthusiastic research this breed owes so much.

Amongst others, I am indebted to Mrs. Parker, of The Bungalow, Manor Road, Richmond, the Secretary of the Pomeranian Club, for part of the chapter dealing with the Pomeranian breed; to Mrs. Charlesworth, for notes on golden retrievers; to Mr. H. R. Cooke, of Riverside, for a note on flat-coated retrievers; Mr. Trench O'Rorke for his experiences of Irish water-spaniels; and the Duchess of Newcastle for notes on wire-haired terriers; Mr. F. N. Tod for part of the chapter on Old English sheep-dogs. I have acknowledged in the text other well-known breeders and owners of dogs. I am indebted to the Maharajah of Jaipur for permission to reproduce in this work three paintings from his collection and for a note explaining the *Dog Worshipper*, given in Appendix XXIII.

I add my thanks to Mr. A. J. Hughes, M.A., to whom the greater part of the Latin and Greek translations is due, and to Mr. A. Jacob, M.A., for similar work; to Mr. H. W. Mengedoht for translations from the Egyptian hieroglyphic and cuneiform; and to Miss E. Hine, my secretary.

I am grateful to the staff of the British Museum Reading Room for their courtesy and assistance during the very protracted work entailed. The illustrations from *Stonehenge* and *Dalziel* are reproduced here by courtesy of "The Bazaar, Exchange and Mart," London. Six illustrations of dogs of 1900 are from "All About Dogs," by permission of Messrs. John Lane. The Kennel Club has kindly given me permission to use certain pictures from earlier numbers of the "Kennel Gazette." An occasional note in the text, and two or three illustrations are from my "Dogs, and How to Know Them," by courtesy of the Epworth Press. The illustrations are arranged as far as possible in chronological order, and in breed order, as far as style of production allows. I think that, with little difficulty, the story the illustrations tell will be readily followed. The wash and line drawings by Miss E. Bonn are exact copies of the originals. The work has been done with great care.

The greater number of photographs have been taken by Messrs. R. B. Fleming, of Bury Street, London, who have been of considerable personal help to me. Most of the modern dogs are by Messrs. Thomas Fall, of Baker Street.

I hand this work over to the public with considerable diffidence—realising that life is indeed too short to do the subject justice, and a veritable "Encyclopædia Britannica" is required to contain the enormous amount of valuable and interesting data available.

<sup>1</sup> Author of "The Gazelle-hound" (1912).



## CHAPTER II

### THE PROBLEM OF THE DOMESTICATED DOG AND ITS WILD RELATIVES

**D**OGS are members of that order of "animals of prey" known as Carnivora,<sup>1</sup> which, with fifteen other orders, belong to a class of animals feeding their young by mammary glands, the Mammalia. The dogs, and their relatives the wolves, jackals, foxes, etc., are, however, members of that easily distinguished family the Canidæ.<sup>2</sup>

#### *The Skeleton*

In the dogs the spine or vertebral column consists of 7 cervical, 13 dorsal, 7 lumbar, and 18 to 22 caudal vertebral bones.<sup>3</sup> Those of the neck, the cervical vertebræ, are larger than in cats of equivalent size, and the skull is longer in its facial portion. The lateral arches of the skull project well forward. In some there is a ridge, standing up along the middle of the cranium, known as the sagittal ridge. The shoulder-blade or scapula is narrow in proportion to length,<sup>4</sup> and the collar-bone is usually merely a small cartilage. The colour of the palate in several races of dogs is black,<sup>5</sup> in others it is pink; the black prevailed in the wild and semi-domesticated dogs of South America.<sup>6</sup>

In their external anatomy all the wild Canidæ are similar to the common wolf, except in size, length of ears, tail, muzzle; and though some varieties of the domestic dog cannot be considered wolf-like, yet they bear a clearly recognisable similarity to that creature. Whether the domestic dogs are descended from a single wild stock, or whether they are descended from several species of wild stock, is a matter that has not been satisfactorily solved. It is possible that a clearly defined type of wild dog, varying in minor detail according to the area in which they existed, lived in most parts of the world during prehistoric times. We find the dog family, whether wild or domesticated, remarkably well defined, characterised on the whole by long and pointed muzzles, except in some Eastern breeds, such as the Japanese spaniel, the pug, and the Pekinese. Their tails are moderately long, and their perfect digitigrade feet are furnished with blunt, nearly straight, and non-retractile claws. Dogs, being digitigrade, all walk upon their toes, and not on the soles of their feet, whilst the domestic dog stands more perpendicularly on the toes than do the wolves.<sup>5</sup>

Whilst all dogs, wild and domestic (with the exception of the African hunting-dog), have four toes on their hind feet, the number of toes on the fore feet is five, of which the first, the thumb, is shorter than the others and shows signs of becoming obsolete, and is of little value, as it does not touch the ground. On the hind feet, the first toe may be externally absent, or, if not, appears as a dew-claw or suspended digit. The dew-claws are frequently removed when the puppy is quite young, in the domestic species. In the skeleton, the bone for this first toe is present, though the dew-claw is not attached to it. This dew-claw represents the great or big toe of a man.

In all the Canidæ, with some exceptions hereafter explained, a full mouth consists of 3/3 incisors, 1/1 canines, 4/4 premolars, 2/3 molars, on each side. This mouth formula is fairly constant in all the family; the Indian wild dogs have two pairs of molars.

<sup>1</sup> They mostly feed on the flesh of the mammals. Dogs can, however, live on vegetable food.

<sup>2</sup> Mivart.

<sup>3</sup> The same as the cat.

<sup>4</sup> Distinctly a transition type.

<sup>5</sup> Colonel H. Smith.

<sup>6</sup> Black is popularly believed to prove pure breeding, but the origin of this fallacy is not clear.

The Genus *Cuon* or *Cyon* contains two or three Eastern dogs, which nearly always have one molar tooth missing in the lower jaw. *Lycaon*, of which the only representative is the Cape hunting-dog, has only four toes on all feet ; a fossil dog of a similar type has been found in Glamorganshire (*L. anglicus*).

Dogs are characterised by their sombre coloration. The most vivid colours are found among the domesticated dogs—the reds of the Irish setter, or the white with black spots of the Dalmatian. But in the wild dogs in general the colour varies from shades of grey or white to a yellowish or reddish brown, and when markings occur, such markings appear mainly along the upper part of the back, and frequently in patches on one or more portions of the limbs. In wild Canidæ, as a rule, stripes and patches differing much in hue from the ground-colour are absent, or if present are ill defined ; in domestic dogs, because of constant selection, patches are frequently well defined. The under parts of the body are paler, and sometimes very sparsely covered with hair. The head is often darker. The outer parts of the ears are not uncommonly distinctive, frequently brown or black or of a deeper shade than the rest of the head.

The hair on the ears varies from that of the body and is usually of a much finer quality. Often a dark mark is seen between the eye and the nose. Uniformity of coloration is general, and domesticated dogs, if allowed to breed indiscriminately, rapidly return to it. Variation in the wild Canidæ both in colour and coat is frequent ; many species are subject to extraordinary variations either individual or seasonable, both in colour and length of hair. This, at one time, resulted in naturalists considering a number of variations, species. In colour and hair changes certain rules are more or less constant. In winter the colour generally is lighter than in summer, whilst those species inhabiting high altitudes develop longer hair in winter than in summer, and may change to white.

Dogs appear to answer rapidly to good feeding, and will then develop either, or both, size or coat. This is probably due to the great vitality of the Canidæ, which, having sufficient energy to face ordinary conditions, when given better conditions have surplus energy and find an outlet in the development of size or coat. The dog family, and by that I mean the Canidæ, always have naked pads, or cushions.<sup>1</sup> The hair between the pads is moderately developed, but in some, for example the “ untrue ” dog, the Arctic fox, the space between the pads is filled with dense fur, and is doubtlessly of aid to the animal in negotiating ice. The Canidæ have certain clearly defined habits which at once stamp them as members of this family, but such habits in minor details may vary considerably.

Dogs, although by nature exceedingly jealous, will associate happily in large packs for the purpose of hunting (chiefly or entirely by the aid of scent), and during such time appear to suffer from no feelings of jealousy. When sharing in the result of the kill, they are particular as to their rights, and the stronger, more ferocious, or more irritable take what they desire. The more timid obtain their share by stealthy snatches and as rapid retreats. Both in variety and individually, bravery and ferocity, and their opposites are variable quantities. In the methods of life, great differences occur : we find that, though some breeds of wolves hunt in packs and are exceedingly brave, other varieties are timid, and live solitary lives. Whilst the wolves, as a

<sup>1</sup> These pads are harder than those of a cat.



general rule, prey on large animals,<sup>1</sup> some, such as *Canis jubatus*, feed on small game. The foxes prefer birds and rabbits; the jackals exist mainly on carrion, and on such eggs of birds and young that they can obtain easily. Some of the wild dog family live on mice, and some even prefer snails, insects, fish, and shell-fish.

The cry of wild dogs varies; a kind of yelping bark is common, a cry comprehensible to their companions and to other animals. This cry is toned to signify dislike, pleasure, excitement. Barking proper is a development of domestication, and does not occur in the wild varieties; it may be an attempt to copy our method of conversation. Among the wild dogs a howl is characteristic. Wild species which do not give the yelping bark acquire the power of canine speech when associated with domesticated dogs. The bark and whimpering cry of domestic dogs is probably the nearest approach to intelligent speech to be found among the lower animals. Where dogs are frequently spoken to and "argued" with, they develop the power of expression to a remarkable extent. The bark of the domestic dog varies considerably, differing according to the breed. The bark of a terrier, a Pomeranian, a Pekinese, a hound, are usually distinguishable. The sound and power of expression of both bark and whimper also vary with age. At times, especially when stirred by primitive emotions, domestic dogs will emit the cries of wild *Canidæ*, strange howlings. This frequently occurs during the breeding season. It has been found in scientific experiments that dogs are able to hear notes above human perception. Certain notes cause a dog, as some people imagine, grief and pain, but it is probable that they are or contain the notes of the sex-call, and are recognised and responded to.<sup>2</sup>

Domestic dogs have acquired a desire for physical comfort, preferring cushions, soft rugs, or plenty of straw to rest on, though the wild dogs live in burrows or in the clefts of rocks, in caves or in hollow trees.<sup>3</sup>

The number of young in a litter varies from three to a dozen; the pups are always born blind; the period of gestation varies in the "untrue" dogs, but in the domestic dog is 63 days.

*Extinct Species.*—Remains of extinct species of dog, of close affinity to present-day varieties, are found in many parts of the world. Caverns of France and Germany have yielded fossils closely allied to living forms.<sup>4</sup> Extinct species of Asiatic wild dogs and of African hunting-dogs have been found in Europe. Numbers of extinct species have been obtained from the Pliocene and Upper Miocene in various parts of the world, also closely related to living species.

<sup>1</sup> The common wolf, whose howlings in the dead of night, usually when the moon shines, the mysterious shadow that crosses a traveller's path, the way, when hungry, packs will hunt down sledges and their occupants, has been subjected to a loathing, terror, and a certain adoration.

He was an attendant upon Odin in the gloomy shades; "He" suckled the founders of the Roman state. He was regarded as a type of destroying demon; and again typical of noble daring. (Low.) During the long winter of 1845 a public diligence passing along the road was stopped by the cries of a man for help. The man stated that he had been followed by a wolf and had with the utmost difficulty kept it off. The man was taken into the diligence and carried ten or twelve miles. He then got out to continue the rest of his journey on foot; but he had scarcely left the vehicle when the passengers were again alarmed by his cries. The insatiable wolf was with him again. This story is an example of the dogged perseverance common to the species.

<sup>2</sup> Story of dogs in church.

<sup>3</sup> Wolves before having their litters make a nest of moss and hair, which comes off the expectant mother. (Low.)

<sup>4</sup> Lydekker.



But in the Lower Miocene and Upper Eocene are the remains of dog-like animals remarkably different from anything living to-day, some with a strong affinity to civets. The most civet-like of these extinct animals are the *Cynodictis*, animals about the size of a fox, with a civet-like skull, short snouted; but the teeth are similar to those of the modern dog. The feet had five toes. There are also the fossil types, resembling both dog and bear, the *Amphicyon*. These vary in size, and whilst some are no larger than a fox, others are as large as a bear. The skull of these animals, though dog-like, had, however, 44 teeth, whilst the modern dog has 42 teeth, the *Amphicyon* varying from the modern dog by a third pair of molars in the upper jaw. These molars are bear-like. Their feet also were bear-like, not dog-like, and five toes were on all feet. The ulna and radius are typical of the bear.

Another of these probably ancestral forms of dogs, the *Simocyon*, found in the Upper Miocene, had a short, broad, and high skull, causing a reduction in the number of teeth and in their size—an interesting fact suggesting a distinct type which may have led to the short-faced dogs of the domestic variety. Another, *Cynodesmus*, a type closely allied to *Cynodictus*, the civet-dog described above, had the teeth of the *microdont* modern dog, and had various ancient characters compared with modern dogs. Prehistoric dog remains of modern types of dogs have been found in the Danish kitchen middens, in the lake-dwellings of Switzerland, and amongst Bronze Age remains in Europe. In a Neolithic barrow a dog was found buried with a woman; this dog was almost the size of a collie.

On these more or less recent prehistoric modern-type dogs, information is very slight. What little there is depends mainly on skulls and fragments of jaws, teeth, and a few fragments of bones. A complete but somewhat crushed skeleton of the Peat dog, *Canis palustris*, was found at Eningen, and a photo of this skeleton is illustrated in the "Transactions of the Geological Society." It is said to be distinctly fox-like, and quite possibly is indeed a fossil-fox skeleton. I give here restorations of Studer's Stone Age dog, according to his description, and the Best Mother dog, both merely attempts based on the conclusions of various authorities. The skeleton, *C. Palustris*, is in the Natural History Museum, South Kensington. The head, either because of crushing or by its nature, is remarkably free from stop.

In 1877 Jeitteles, in his book "Die Stammen Vater unserer Hunderassen," describes a prehistoric dog, *C. matris optimæ*, the Best Mother dog.<sup>1</sup>

Woldrich, in 1881, gives details of *C. mikii*, and in a further paper an account of *C. heriynicus*. Studer, writing on the Stone Age dog, states that "the skull has a length of 145 mm.; the bones of the extremities are larger and stronger than those of the dogs of the pile-dwellings"; and that if we compare the measurements given by Anutschin with the dogs of the same size which are found in the pile-dwellings of the Neolithic period, we are impressed with the lesser development of the skull as compared with the skull-face of the Ladoga dog; yet, on the other hand, among the dogs of the pile-dwellings are forms which in their development are inferior to those of the Ladoga dog. "According to my comparative table," he continues, which he gives in his treatise, "it is evident that the Ladoga dogs belong to the category of the *C. f. palustris*."

Anutschin attempted to prove, from the peculiarities of this Ladoga dog when compared with those of the pile-dwellers' dog, that it represented a more powerful

<sup>1</sup> So named as a token of respect to his mother.

and less, by domestication, altered form, claiming a higher antiquity (primordially), a fact which the formation of the bones, which are rougher, seemed to support. The greater age of the deposit would seem to support this view.

Studer states that the pure form of *C. f. palustris* is no longer found in Europe, but, on the other hand, it appears to have existed here in considerable numbers, and to have been an important member of the community.

Naumann found remains of it in pile-dwelling deposits of Lake Starnberg <sup>1</sup> which date from the Bronze Age; Strobel found him in the Terramare of Emilia; Jeitteles proved his existence on the Rhine down to Roman times—its skull was found there in an ancient Roman urn. Among the ruins of the Romano-Helvetian town of Vindonissa in Aargau, Kraemer found the skull of a dog which he ascribed to the *forma palustris*, the size of the skull 168 mm., and its form approaching nearer to the genus *Contermidius*. In Baden (Aargau) the skull of a dog was found among the ruins of an old Roman military hospital, showing the characteristics of the Peat dog, especially those of a later period, a dog inclined very much towards the form of a Spitz. "The skull cavity is nicely rounded, a weak parietal bone existing, the arc powerfully developed, the end of the face, which is rather stumpy, is strongly marked off from the brain cavity. As compared with the similarly constructed skulls of the pile-dwellings of the Neolithic period, the Baden skull appears more contracted, the forehead is broader, the snout shorter and broader, the nose higher; as is the case with all modern races in contra-distinction with the prehistoric, with those of the Peat dog from the pile-dwellings in Luttrigen on Lake Buler, whereas the facial portion is much shorter.

"I received from Dr. Scharff, Director of the National Museum in Dublin," he writes, "the plaster-cast of a skull from the Caniological collection of Dunshauglin, County Meath, which, although in its dimensions is slightly larger, shows the characteristics of the dogs of the pile-dwellers. The length is 167 mm. In the somewhat narrow brain cavity the development of the crista parietalis, the less marked facial portion, is greater than the Ladoga dog of Anutschin, and may therefore represent the more primitive, influenced by less culture, of the form of the *C. f. palustris*. Although there is now in Europe no living example of the *C. f. palustris*, it appears nevertheless to exist in its original form in Asia, namely in Siberia."

Middendorf describes a Spitz-like dog which he came across among the Tungnes, Samoyedes, and Tschuktschese, and he gives a picture of their skulls, which in its entire form show a great similarity to the dogs of the pile-dwellers. The dog which Middendorf selected for his illustration came from the left bank of the Amoor. The height to the shoulder was 1½ feet. It had long smooth hair of a grey colour tinged with black; on the head a white streak, with a white belly. Its ears were usually erect, but when at rest formed an angle of 70°. When at rest he held his tail straight out, slightly inclined below with a deviation to the right of at least 60°.

Temperamentally he was friendly and trustful and liked to be petted; he was not particularly watchful. The length of the skull was 153 mm.; width of clavicle 86 mm.; breadth of the processus orbitalis 41 mm.; smallest forehead breadth 27 mm.; width of gums 55 mm.; nasal bone 41 mm. Anutschin compared the skull with that of his Ladoga dog and found a close relationship between both, only the

<sup>1</sup> The dog bones found by the sites of the ancient lake-dwellings belong to a middle-sized race of dogs, which continues unaltered throughout the whole Stone Age; but in the Bronze Age a larger dog was kept.



snout of the latter was shorter and more stumpy and the parietal bones were more pronounced. Middendorf found a similar animal among the Samoyedes in the form of the long-haired white, rarely black, Spitz.<sup>1</sup> Indians of North-west America were said to have kept similar dogs with a shoulder-height of  $1\frac{1}{2}$  feet, which were used for hunting purposes, more rarely for drawing sledges.

In 1920 A. Brinkmann in a paper deals with the writings of all previous authorities, and states that the Studer portion contains fallacies due to Studer having accidentally confused his notes. This was discovered by Mr. Hinton, of the Natural History Museum, South Kensington. But the interesting part of these papers and figures is, that he suggests that the Samoyed or Spitz-type dogs were kept by the people of the Stone Age, and therefore, in his opinion, is a family of very considerable antiquity. It is certainly remarkable how constant the type has remained since early times. But the evidence as to the type of the prehistoric dogs is confusing, for we find that Professor H. Kraemer, of Berne, in the "Globus" of 1904, suggests that the skulls of prehistoric dogs are not of the Spitz type, and he alludes especially to that of Vindonissa, which appear to him to be more probably the skulls of dogs of the Thibet mastiff or St. Bernard type. Prehistoric remains afford very little evidence for tracing the origin of modern dogs.

There are a number of alternatives. Apart from colour, length of hair, length of leg, and height of body, we have three or more marked by different types of skeleton: the massive broad forehead of the Thibet mastiff and chow; the short skull of the Japanese spaniel; the long and narrow head of the Borzois; the fox-like head of the Samoyed. As to general build, we have the race-horse type—in the greyhound and its relatives—and the comparatively short, square body of the mastiff, etc.

Variations in size are not so difficult to understand, though the contrast between extremes such as the diminutive toy dog, the Manchester terrier, weighing  $3\frac{1}{2}$  lb., and the St. Bernard, weighing 200 lb., are surprising. Gradual steps in size between extremes make it comprehensible, and we are aware of the power of selection.

But physical differences, especially in bone formation, confront us with a problem of considerable perplexity. Forcible maltreatment, such as was once upon a time applied to the bulldog to shorten its face, could not be expected to make a variety with shortened facial lines and breeding true. But it is quite possible that this maltreatment played a greater part towards it than we are willing to admit.

We must not entirely eliminate the possibility of mental effect on the individual with such malformation, or on the animal to which it is mated, and the possibility of the mental impression acting upon the progeny.<sup>2</sup> We must find a cause of varieties. If all present-day varieties came from a true dog living now, either a wild form, the dingo, or from one original type of domestic dog, such as, we might say, the greyhound, then when we admit mental impression because of changes of appearance effecting the germ-cells, we should have to admit that the present-day varieties have one and all developed from sports, or from an occasional malformed, injured, or unhealthy indi-

<sup>1</sup> The Samoyed dog.

<sup>2</sup> The following extract of a letter appeared in the "Stock-keeper" of 1881. It refers to the bob-tailed dogs: "Might not the short tails of the pups be due to mental impression? Who can say the mother of these ready-faked dogs was not more in love with her sweetheart's short stump of a tail than his V-shaped ears, and that her intention was to prove the depth of her affection in this practical reproduction of the admired features in their sire."

vidual, by that individual carrying the germ of malformation. If all modern varieties arose from an extinct type of true dog—a common ancestor—the same problem of varieties is presented.

If, on the other hand, domesticated varieties have been bred from existing types of wolves, foxes, and jackals, and have gradually, by feeding, care, and climate, changed to what they are to-day, then we should get two or three marked races, the wolf-like, fox-like, and jackal-like, but this would not explain the Thibet mastiff or bloodhound type, or the short-faced pugs, Japanese spaniels, unless their ancestral form of wild animal existed once and has died out. It is interesting that dogs, whatever may be their breed, shape, or type, or however different their size and colouring, will at once, even if no such coloured or shaped dog has been seen before, recognise and offer a "doggie" welcome, or treat it with characteristic strained politeness. Mannerisms occur entirely different from those with which a dog treats a wolf, fox, or jackal. The "wild dog" of Bewick, Taplin, and Brown, which caused considerable trouble and loss by sheep-slaughtering enterprises, was frequently hunted by hounds, but was never the worse for its experience. On coming up to it, the hounds failed to attack; the sheep-killer threw itself down and, turning over on its back, allowed the hounds to smell it. The hounds recognised it as a brother, and permitted it to get up and run away. Similar behaviour occurred when domestic dogs were used to hunt the feral dogs, even when such feral dogs had never previously been seen. On the contrary, however, most, if not all, dogs have a natural and very strongly marked antipathy to wolves, foxes, and jackals, and attack at sight, pulling them down and tearing them to pieces.<sup>1</sup> The feeling is reciprocal. Captain Lyons describes how a fine dog strayed to the hummocks ahead, when its master, "Mr. Elder, who was near the spot, saw five wolves rush at it, attack and devour it in an incredibly short space of time." Before he could reach the place the carcass was torn in pieces, and only the lower part of one leg was to be found. "The boldness of the wolves was altogether astonishing," he writes, "as they were almost constantly seen amongst the hummocks, or lying quietly at no great distance in wait for dogs." Later he tells us that the wolves had grown so bold that one night they broke into a snow hut, in which a couple of newly purchased Esquimaux dogs were confined, and carried them off, "but not without some difficulty, for in the daylight we found even the ceiling of the hut sprinkled with blood and hair." The alarm was given, the wolves were fired at, and one of them was seen to be carrying a dead dog in his mouth, "clear of the ground, at a canter, notwithstanding the animal was of his own weight."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Sometimes this antipathy, especially in young dogs, is absent. In the "Field" the following note occurred some years ago:

"*A Curious Incident.*—Having trapped a particularly large buck rat, I determined to see if a young bull-terrier dog, fifteen months of age, would worry it, never having seen vermin before. Upon turning the rat loose in an empty room, the dog, though not appearing anxious, followed it about, but did not attempt to touch it, and then, standing in the middle of the room, permitted the rat to run underneath him, where it deliberately sat up on its hind legs and began to wash its face."

<sup>2</sup> Wolves also prey on foxes. Dr. Richardson, in his "*Fauna Boreali-Americana*," writes: "The wolves destroy many foxes, which they easily run down if they perceive them on a plain at any distance from their hiding-place."

In January 1827 a wolf was seen to catch an Arctic fox. The same wolf, he writes, "even stole fish from a sledge which two dogs were accustomed to draw home from the nets without a driver. As this kind of depredation could not be permitted to go on, the wolf was waylaid and killed. It proved to be a female, which accounted for the sledge-dogs not having been molested."





(Above) RESTORATION OF PREHISTORIC DOGS BY E. BONN: left, THE BEST MOTHER-DOG; right, THE SPOTTED DOG FROM INDIA, "Parent of the Modern Coach-dog"; right, THE FERAL DOG OF SAN DOMINGO. From Col. Hamilton Smith (1843).



(Above) left. BRIDOWN GREYHOUND OF AKKABA, "very large and fierce"; right. THE NORTH AMERICAN INDIAN DOG (about the size of a Spaniel). The property of Tecumseh. (Below) left. THE HOARY AGUARA DOG. A wild dog of the South, seen domesticated among the Indians; right. THE YOUNG ALCO BROUGHT FROM MEXICO; on the right. THE CARRIER DOG OF THE INDIANS. From *Wild Dogs* by Col. Hamilton Smith, Jardine's "Naturalists' Library" (1843).



*Illustrations from Stouhenge, 1859.*

- (1) A "CHARACTERISTIC" ENGLISH DANDY. (2) CAPTAIN FRAZER'S SKYE TERRIER "QUILICK." (3) GREYHOUND-BULLDOG CROSS. (5) SECOND CROSS WITH GREYHOUND. (6) THIRD CROSS WITH GREYHOUND. (7) FOURTH CROSS WITH GREYHOUND. (8) "SAILOR," BRED BY MR. JUSTIN, OF WORCESTER. "A PERFECT SPECIMEN OF THE SETTER." (9) A DOG-FOX CROSS. *The property of Mr. Hever, of Reading. [Re-drawn by E. Bonn.]*





(1st Row) left to right, LE CHIEN DE BERGER, LE CHIEN DE SIBÉRIE, LE CHIEN TURC ET GREDIN, (2nd Row) CHIEN LOUP, CHIEN DE SIBÉRIE, GRAND CHIEN LOUP, (3rd Row) CHIEN COURANT MÉTIS, A TURKISH DOG (Barr), LE CHIEN DES BOIS, Illustrations from Buffon and Barr, Buffon unless otherwise stated, Wild Dogs; Wolf Crosses; Northern Dogs (about 1798).



The antipathy between wolves and domestic dogs suggests that these animals are not so closely related as we might suppose, and leads us to believe that the domesticated dogs are not bred from the wild genus existing now. But we know, from the chronicles of well-known and reputable authorities, that dogs and wolves will, under conditions of freedom, interbreed readily<sup>1</sup>; that dogs are quite happy to play with wolves, often to their cost. Quite a number of crosses with jackal<sup>2</sup> and fox are reported, and there is much evidence that the natives in some tropical countries frequently crossed their domestic dogs with the variety of wild *Canidæ*, not necessarily wolves, to be found locally. *Stonehenge* cites an example of a dog crossed with a fox, given in the Appendix, but fox crosses appear to be rare.

Rev. Daniel, in "Rural Sports," states that "Mr. Tattersal had a terrier bitch which bred by a fox, and the produce, again, had whelps by dogs. The Woodman of the manor of Mongewell in Oxfordshire had a bitch, his constant attendant, the off-spring of a tame dog-fox by a shepherd's cur, and she again had puppies by a dog."

The wolf cross<sup>3</sup> has been so often and so successfully achieved that it has lost its novelty. Buffon, desiring to test interbreeding between the wolf and the dog, carried out an experiment with a wolf and a sheep-dog. He writes:

"I hoped at least to make them couple, and if they did not produce fertile individuals, they would bring forth a species of males which might participate of the nature of both. For this purpose I procured a she-wolf of about three months old from the woods, and reared her with a shepherd's dog of nearly the same size. They were shut up together in a pretty large yard where no other beast could get access, and where they were provided with a shed for their retirement; they neither of them knew any individual of their own species, nor even any man but him who constantly supplied them with their victuals. In this manner they were kept together for the space of three years without the smallest restraint. During the first year they played perpetually together, and seemed to be very fond of each other; in the second year they began to quarrel about their food, though they were always supplied with more than they could eat. The wolf always began the dispute. They had meat and bones carried to them on a wooden trencher, when the wolf, instead of seizing the meat, would drive off the dog, then take the trencher so dexterously between her teeth as to let nothing fall off, and carry away the whole; and I have frequently seen her run five or six times round the wall of the yard with it in her mouth, and only stop to take breath, devour the meat, or attack the dog if he came near. The dog was stronger than the wolf, but as he was less ferocious we began to have some fear for his life, and therefore put him on a collar.

<sup>1</sup> Page 143.

<sup>2</sup> The jackal will breed readily with the domesticated dog (Mivart). Collins informs us that the wolves were numerous and frequently watched near the huts, but were seldom known to attack anyone, and "so accustomed are the inhabitants to scenes of this description, that a female of this country would not be more alarmed at seeing a wolf or wild boar near her dwelling, than a female in England would be at seeing a mouse or a frog." This suggests domestication of the wolf or natural crossing with domestic dogs. (At Karagatch: Collins, "Voyages," 1796-1801.)

<sup>3</sup> Wolf crosses may be very dangerous. In 1890 the six-year-old son of the head kennelman, Mr. Ditz, of the Imperial Kennels at Gatchina, was followed by some young dogs, a cross between a wolf and a domestic dog, which, overtaking the boy, set on him and killed him ("Kennel Gazette").

"After the second year their quarrels were sharper and their combats more frequent, when a collar was also put on the wolf, which the dog began to treat more roughly. During these two years there was not the least appearance of desire in either of them; towards the end of the third they began to discover some marks of it, but it was without any signs of love, and instead of rendering them more gentle when they approached each other, they became ferocious and ungovernable. Nothing was now heard but dismal howlings mixed with cries of anger, and in about three weeks' time they both grew very thin, and never came near each other without indications of mutual destruction. At length they were so enraged and fought so dreadfully that the dog killed the wolf; and I was obliged to have the dog killed a few days after, because as soon as he was set at liberty, he sprang with fury on the poultry, dogs, and even men."<sup>1</sup>

Buffon also gives the following interesting series of experiments with wolf crosses.<sup>2</sup>

"At Namur, June 9, 1773.—At the Marquis de Spontin's house, at Namur, a very young she-wolf has been brought up, to which a young dog, of about the same age, has been given as a companion for two years past: they were free—coming into the rooms, the kitchen, the stable, etc.—very affectionate, lying on the table, and at the feet of those who were with them. They lived in perfect intimacy. The dog is a kind of mastiff hound (*mâtin braque*), and very strong. The wolf was brought up on milk for the first six months, and afterwards was given raw meat, which it preferred to cooked food. When she was eating, no one dared approach her; at other times one could do as one liked with her, as long as one did not ill-treat her. She licked (*caressait*) all the dogs which were introduced, until the time when she began to show her predilection for her original companion; after that she attacked all other dogs. On March 25 last she was covered for the first time: she continued on heat for sixteen days with frequent repetitions of the act, and she produced her young on the 6th June, at 8 o'clock in the morning: thus the period of gestation lasted for 63 days at the outside. She dropped four pups of a blackish colour. Some have white paws and half the chest white, deriving this from the dog, which is black and white. Since she pupped she has been bad-tempered and snarls at all who come near her; she no longer recognises her master; she would even strangle the dog if he were within reach.

"I ought to add that she has been tied by two chains, since an attack she made, after her gallant, who had jumped over a wall to visit a neighbour's bitch on heat: the wolf half strangled her rival, and the coachman separated them with blows of a large stick, but imprudently continuing this chastisement after he had led her back to her kennel, excited her until she bit him twice in the thigh, and he had to take to his bed for six weeks."<sup>3</sup>

"Namur, July 14, 1773.<sup>4</sup> . . . I could bring at least two hundred persons to witness the truth of what I am going to relate.

"The wolf was only three days old at the most when I bought her from a peasant,

<sup>1</sup> This suggests that the long sojourn with the wolf had in some way or other awakened primary instincts in the dog, or that the dangers of its existence had caused it to become more savage than is normal in the domestic variety.

<sup>2</sup> The Dog and Wolf Cross from "Histoire Naturelle."

<sup>3</sup> Letter from M. Surivey de Boissy.

<sup>4</sup> Letter from the Marquis de Spontin.



who had caught her in the woods after killing the mother. I made her suck milk for several days till she could eat meat. I ordered those in charge of her to pet her and tease her continually, so as to make her tame at any rate with those she knew: she ended by becoming so tame that I could take her hunting in the woods, as far as a league from the house, without fearing to lose her. She sometimes came home at night by herself, on those occasions when I could not induce her to come home with me. . . . She was always fond of dogs, and those that lost their natural repugnance for her played with her as if she had been one of themselves. Up to this time she had only made war on cats and fowls, which she strangled without wishing to eat them. After she reached the age of one year she became more ferocious, and I began to notice that she hated sheep and bitches, especially if the latter were on heat. After that I took her for walks muzzled or on a chain. She was at least a year old when I introduced her to the dog which covered her. She has been in town, in my garden, on a chain, since November last. More than three hundred persons have seen her during this time. I live in the middle of the town; so it is not to be supposed that a wolf could have come to find her. From the moment she was on heat, she showed such affection for the dog, and the dog for her, that they howled alarmingly to each other when they were not together. She was covered on the 28th March for the first time, and after that twice a day for about two weeks. They remained attached for about a quarter of an hour each time, during which the wolf seemed to suffer a good deal, and moaned, but the dog not at all. Three weeks later it was obvious that she was pregnant. On the 6th June she produced four puppies, which she is still feeding, though they are five weeks old and have very sharp and fairly long teeth. They are exactly like dog-puppies, having fairly long drooping ears. There is one quite black with a white chest, which is the dog's colouring, the others will, I think, have the colouring of the wolf. They all have much rougher hair than a dog. There is only one, a female, which has a very short tail, like the dog, which scarcely had one at all. They promise to be large, strong, and very mischievous. The mother takes extraordinary care of them. . . . I doubt if I shall keep her, . . . but I would bet that, if I did, she would have more puppies by the same dog. . . .<sup>1</sup>

"M. Surivey de Boissy writes to me in March 1776 that of the four pups born on June 6, 1773, two bitches were given to friends, and have not survived; the last bitch and the male have been taken to the country; . . . the mother-wolf has been killed. Of the two pups, the female was the less savage; the male seemed to show more wolf characteristics. They both became quite tame. December 30, 1775, they coupled, and on the night of the 2nd to 3rd March four puppies were born, two males, two females. Females have front paws and throat white, like their mother and grandfather. One of the males is brown, almost black: resembles a dog more than a wolf, though it is the most savage. The other has nothing remarkable about it; both males have tails like the father.

"*First Generation. Male.*—More characteristics of wolf than dog, preserving some

<sup>1</sup> "A similar event has just been communicated to me in a letter from M. Bourgelat, April 15, 1775. . . . 'Lord Pembroke tells me,' he writes, 'that several days ago he saw a large mastiff and a she-wolf couple: that the wolf is tame, and is always in her master's room or under his eyes, that in fact she never goes out without him and follows him like a dog.' He adds that an animal breeder has, on four different occasions, had results from wolf and dog crosses, . . . and that Lord Clansbrawill's bitch, daughter of a wolf, being crossed with a setter, has produced puppies which, according to his gamekeeper, will make excellent gun dogs" (Buffon).



ferocity, fierce and savage glance and character ; barked at all who approached him at first—more a howl than a bark. Was not very tame ; but when hungry would lick the face and hands of the man who brought him food, but otherwise was inclined to bite. Very jealous. Showed no affection for the female or for his pups. Became less fierce when allowed free. About the height of a strong mastiff, thicker body, but not so large as a full-grown wolf. Head more like a dog's than a wolf's. Ears rather wolf-like, but very mobile. Eyes not inclined like a wolf's. Belly more pronounced than a dog's, claws longer, tail wolf-like. Hair wolf-like.

" *Female*.—Not at all fierce, but gentle and affectionate. Bark even less decided than the male's. Smaller than the male. Many wolf characteristics : shape of head and muzzle, position of eyes, etc. Higher on her legs in proportion than the male. Jumped well. Six teats. Tail short like a dog's. Exteriorly more like a wolf than the male, but disposition more like a dog's.

" *Second Generation. Male*.—Fierce, exactly like his father, but ears larger and more drooping, and colouring slightly different, and the back legs more bent like a wolf's, and the feet a little larger, in proportion.

" *Female*.—Gentle, like the mother. Very tame. Much like the mother physically, but the eyes less wolf-like ; in general of a lighter colouring. Drooping ears like the father, but more so.

" These four animals appear to have more of the wolf than of the dog in them as far as colouring is concerned and quality of hair, which was rougher than a dog's, though less stiff than a wolf's. More of wolf also in shape, but more of dog in legs and paws, and in walk.

" The two animals of the second generation coupled on December 30–31, 1778, at age of two years ten months. Thus they partake of the wolf than of the dog in their coupling-time, as was the case with all the generations. On March 4, 1779, the female of the second generation pupped, 7 pups ; time of gestation, same as dog. Mother very attentive to newborn pups ; but six of the latter being touched by a servant girl within a few hours of birth, the mother devoured all six, leaving only one female, which had not been handled. This female of the third generation was left to the care of its parents and scarcely domesticated at all, but, though timid and wild, she was not at all fierce or bad-tempered. She was, like all the other females, gentle and quiet. She played with dogs willingly, but the dogs showed some repugnance for her, as if she still retained too much wolf for them.

" *Third Generation. Female*.—*Wolf-like characteristics* : (1) Walk, manner of running, and howling. (2) Shape of back and belly. (3) Shape of head and ears. (4) Canine teeth.

" *Dog-like* : (1) Colouring. (2) Patches of whitish-grey. (3) Colour of the claws, shape and position of eyes. Hair midway between quality of wolf and dog.

" This female was covered by its father and produced four pups, two of them were eaten by the parents, and the other two lived. Both these animals were gentle and affectionate, but greedy. The male retained the wolf face, ears large and upright, and his body more like a wolf's when he walked. The female resembled him in this, but was smaller and lighter than the male, and more gentle and timid."

I have it on good authority that in other and similar experiments the wolf cross has after a few generations entirely disappeared, each generation of dog being in every

way similar to the domestic variety.<sup>1</sup> During Buffon's own attempts at breeding a dog-wolf, he also tried to cross captive male foxes with a female dog. The foxes had proved normal with a vixen. He writes: "A bitch was put to him (the fox), but as she would not remain near the fox, she was chained in the same place, and plenty of food was given them. The fox neither bit her nor used her ill, and during the ten days they remained together there was not the smallest quarrel between them, neither night nor day, nor when they fed." But the experiment failed; the fox would have nothing whatsoever to do with her.

Mivart says that a possible reason for the difficulty of crossing foxes and dogs is "the peculiar and penetrating odour of the fox (due to the secretion of its subcaudal gland) and the absence of it in the dog."

Dr. Hodgkin ("Animals and Plants," vol. i, p. 32) writes that a female dingo in England attracted male foxes.

Interbreeding does not necessarily, especially when carried out between animals under the abnormal conditions of captivity, prove close relationship. Interbreeding under normal conditions, however, suggests close affinity, a mutual understanding, which allows a male and female to approach each other without misgivings as to intentions.

Mivart points out, and these breeding results suggest, that the dog may have originated from a form of wolf or wolves, fox or foxes, jackal or jackals, now extinct, and that the present form of these animals is but a branch from the original stocks. The wolf's ancestor might be the origin of the wolf-like domesticated true dog, such as the Samoyed, Alsatian, etc.; the ancestor of the fox the origin of the Pomeranian, and other such sharp-nosed types; the ancestral jackal of the greyhound and Saluki. Later these different type-dogs threw further varieties, various characters in their constitutions clashed and caused strange shapes and colours; characteristics in cells fitting to each other developed.<sup>2</sup>

It appears more likely to the writer that during some earlier stages of the world's history—perhaps at the time of the *Cynodictus*, *Amphicyon*, *Simocyon*, and *Cynodesmus*—certain branches of such dog-like animals, and others possibly already dogs, which have left no trace of their existence, were isolated by geographical changes, and thus developed without the infusion of relative blood, developing under influences entirely different from those pertaining in other areas.

It is indeed interesting that the Thibet mastiff and St. Bernard are both of mountain origin, and that the short-mouthed dogs should one and all come from the East, particularly China and Japan. It is of considerable significance that among the pre-historic dog-like animals, *Simicyon* of the Upper Miocene had a broad skull, short and high, which caused a reduction in the normal dental formula. It is possible that from this prehistoric form was evolved the short-faced breeds of the East; that *Simicyon* and its descendants were driven farther and farther away from the others, because their shorter faces and fewer teeth made them less able to defend themselves. It may be, however, that short-faced dogs are entirely the result of climatic and other

<sup>1</sup> In a letter the Comte le Conteux de Canteleu writes to the late Colonel Joynson that the Griffons he sold to a Mr. W. S. Hill of Edinburgh were the fourth generation of an original wolfhound cross, subsequently bred to a hound, and that they could not be distinguished from a true hound.

<sup>2</sup> Professor Kretschmier considers that the *Thous anthus* is the aboriginal species from which the Egyptians obtained their domestic dog, and points out similarity between these dogs and the smaller breed of wolf-dog.



conditions which caused short-nosed, broad-faced men. We have to bear in mind that, strange though it is, where conditions make men rough, developing hair, more often than not these people have with them rough-haired dogs, and I think it is generally admitted that the great powers of nature exert an influence over life generally, so that man and all the animals and probably also the plants around him are subject to control and stimuli.

Buffon points out, in his review of the dogs of the world already alluded to, the strange variations in human and canine people in many and varied situations. Environment, food, treatment, may awaken dormant properties carried by the sperm and ovum, and be given the liberty to show themselves; so certain characteristics dormant during very many generations come to the fore. It explains domesticated varieties, colouring and shape. Under normal conditions new types, or old types carrying new characters, develop or die out. It depends on whether the powerful hand of nature is of assistance to them or is too strong for them. Under domestication the hand of nature is controlled, the novelty, however unsuitable to face the world, survives, develops, and reproduces its kind. Its survival depends on the skill of the breeder, and indirectly on the fashion and on the standard decided for the breed. We are aware that the constant awakening of dormant properties taking place compels breeders to face not only the problem of how to evolve the perfect specimen, but also of how to keep and breed to type. The coming of differences may not be noticed for a time, and may only become seen when sufficiently marked to attract attention. Breeds alter, stock "goes back." Whether the emergence of these dormant characters can account for all the present-day varieties, especially those with marked differences in bone formation, it is difficult to say. It has been stated that the domestic dog of Europe can be traced to non-true dogs, such as wolves, jackals, and foxes of Europe, with far more ease than we can trace the European man to existing wild tribes.<sup>1</sup> Early explorers have frequently found, on the discovery of a new country and of a new and often savage people, that these possessed a race of domesticated dogs, often very similar in type to the wild dogs of that area, and frequently not unlike the European dogs.

Colonel Smith writes of the dogs used in Persia to guard the flocks of sheep, the shepherd's dog of Natolia, that they resemble the deep yellowish-red wolf of Natolia in stature and appearance so closely that a friend of his actually, during a wolf hunt, mistook a wolf to be one of the Turkoman dogs. The Natolian dog was rugged and fierce, with erect ears and rather furry tail. The colour was a deep yellowish red, though among them were a few black-and-white, believed to be cross-breeds. A similar dog was found in Central Asia to the Bosphorus. Elsewhere a visitor to Persia writes of the "strong wolfish-looking animals, exceedingly fierce to strangers," that he found guarding the villages. It was advisable to carry a heavy stick in hand. He never dared to approach a village unless in company with some of the inhabitants. He had never seen a more ferocious dog than this variety.<sup>2</sup> It is more than likely that these dogs were wolf crosses or even the domesticated wolf.

<sup>1</sup> Dr. John N. Woldrich.

<sup>2</sup> The following note on the Turkish Guard dog was sent to Frank Buckland and published in the "Field":  
 "DEAR BUCKLAND,—Having yesterday paid a visit to your dog 'Arslan,' at the Islington Dog Show, and having read with great interest your account in the 'Field,' I have thought that you might possibly like to hear



It has been stated that there is unquestionable evidence of a direct relationship between the Indian domestic dog and the coyote,<sup>1</sup> and that the Indians cross their dogs with the coyote.<sup>2</sup> The dogs of the Incas of Peru, found mummified, appear to be a type of North American wolf, but not a South American type!<sup>3</sup> Mr. Bartlett, at one time Superintendent of the Zoological Society's Gardens, stated (1890) that there could be no doubt that the Esquimaux dogs "are reclaimed or domesticated wolves," and that he had found no difficulty in crossing wolves with dogs, or jackals<sup>4</sup> with domestic dogs, "when suitably matched."

Long periods of separation, changes in colour and shape, in voice and habits,

more particulars respecting this curious breed, whose acquaintance I first made on the Albanian hills whilst cock-shooting in the winter of 1859-60.

"Though every flock that one meets with has one or more of these redoubtable guardians attached to it, I have never seen them used as sheep-dogs, according to our acceptance of the term. Indeed, the sheep 'follow the shepherd' in the Eastern fashion, without any driving at all; and the sheep-dogs are simply used to guard the flocks against depredators—biped as well as quadruped—and this they do most effectually.

"So much importance do the Albanian shepherds attach to the fierceness of their 'skillies' (?) that, however savagely the innocent wanderer in search of woodcocks may be attacked, the owner of the dog will *never* call him off, for fear of spoiling him. Any sportsman who has visited Albania must know them well, and has doubtless, like myself, often wished them on 't'other side o' Jordan.'

"An Englishman starting for the Albanian coast is always warned that under no circumstances must he ever shoot one of these dogs (which, by the way, he is often sorely tempted to do before he has been long among them),—'Shoot my dog and I'll shoot you,' seems to be the Albanian version of the old English proverb, 'Love me, love my dog.' However, if seriously attacked by them, there is a saving clause in this 'rude law of the mountains.' If a dog comes near enough you are allowed to *stab* him; his pressing you so closely being considered to warrant an appeal to cold steel in self-defence, the verdict in such a case being 'justifiable canicide'; for this reason, whilst shooting, it is the custom to carry a knife, resembling in shape that used by a *chef de cuisine*, and which fixes by a spring into the inside of one of the barrels of your gun.

"I generally found a bold front and the fixing of this formidable weapon a sufficient passport for myself and dogs in the neighbourhood of an Albanian village or flock, but on one occasion I was forced to use it to secure myself a safe retreat.

"It was on the very last day of my *séjour* in Albania, where I had spent some weeks in a native village in the interior, with four friends. On the way down to our yacht I got separated from the rest of the party, and found myself on the top of a high cliff overlooking the sea. I stood admiring the scenery with my face turned towards the cool sea-breeze, when I was suddenly attacked from the rear by one of those formidable antagonists, his owner, 'a wild Albanian, kirtled to the knee,' looking calmly on from a neighbouring eminence. I tried picking up a stone to throw at him, but my stooping only allowed my antagonist to steal a yard nearer to me. I began to feel very uncomfortable. Fancy yourself on the edge of a precipice, with an 'Arslan' keeping guard over you by describing short semicircles round you, showing his teeth the while, and growling in a very ominous manner, and I think you will allow that the situation was as critical as that of a great Yankee general after a 'glorious victory.' After standing thus 'at bay' for what appeared to me to be a considerable time, I at last determined to risk an advance, and proceeded to 'fix bayonets.' No sooner did he see the flash of the steel than my antagonist sprang straight at me. I instinctively lowered my point, which entered his chest, passing out behind the shoulder. He fell at my feet, unfixing my bayonet in his struggles. After lying still a short time he rose and beat a retreat, the bayonet still transfixing him.

"I tracked him for some distance by his blood over the broken ground, and at the end of 100 yards or so I found my bayonet (which, I suppose, he must have drawn out with his teeth) lying in a pool of blood. I was only too thankful to recover my weapon and my liberty to think of continuing the pursuit; and I returned to the yacht, impressed with a very great respect for the Albanian king of dogs, who is undoubtedly first cousin to the Turkish one."

<sup>1</sup> Mivart.

<sup>2</sup> Elliott Coves.

<sup>3</sup> "Zoologische Jahresbücher," Biol.

<sup>4</sup> "The jackal is eminently susceptible of domestication. The offensive odour proper to him in his natural state goes away, and he speedily acquires the manners of other dogs. But he is taught to bark with difficulty and so is little suited for watching." (Low.)

perhaps even the association with man and its recognition by the wild forms of the dog family, have set up a gulf between the wild and the domesticated which needs time to bridge. Suitability in matching should certainly remove part of the difficulty, e.g. similarity in outward appearance suggests relationship. For desire to breed is not an indiscriminate sex instinct, but a stimulus due to attractive appearances. To a male wolf the attraction, as far as the sex instinct is concerned, will be that of a she-wolf, though a female of wolf type might possibly, under the abnormal and degenerating influences of captivity, awaken interest. Any form of life not of the attractive nature, though tolerated, or even able to awaken fraternal and platonic feelings, is not likely to wake up the productive energies. Wild animals do not waste their sexual powers, as those domesticated so frequently do.

We might here notice the interesting fact that size, colouring, and general appearance, which control sex attraction in wild life, are of no importance in the domestic dog. Varieties will cross indiscriminately, even when colour, size and appearance are diverse, if such crossing is physically possible. Where breeds by selection have been dwarfed, the act may not be physically impossible, but the puppies are often far too large for parturition, and the mother dies.

Colour, shape, size, and appearances count for nothing—merely “clothing” to the canine mind, able to recognise the “brotherhood.” Dress a dog up to conceal its identity. For a few moments the ruse will work, the apparition will cause consternation, especially to puppies, and a dislike mixed with a considerable misgiving in adults. But let the tail-end of the apparition wag just once, or let a look from the eye be noticed, and the “I-knew-it-was-you-all-the-time” spirit will awake, the matter will be treated as a huge joke, and the apparition will be as rapidly disrobed as frantic struggles and willing teeth can manage it.

Some of the wild dogs described by explorers and naturalists have been domesticated or at least controlled sufficiently to aid the natives in their hunting. Numbers of dogs often described as wild are domesticated dogs which have returned to the wild, i.e. are “feral” dogs. We deal with these later. There is very little early history on wild dogs proper. One of the earliest records is that of Scaliger, who mentions that in the woods of Montefalcone in Italy there exist “animals differing from wolves in manners, voice, and colour, never mixing with them, and being particularly fond of human flesh.” Scaliger, however, was prone to exaggerate, for to him we owe the description of a spider able to bite through a leather shoe and saturate the leather with its poison! In Australia the only wild true-dog is found, possibly an indigenous species, though it has been suggested that it was introduced by explorers and early settlers. It was first described by Captain William Dampier in his “A Collection of Voyages” (1729), describing his visit to Australia in 1688. “My men,” he writes, “saw two or three Beasts like hungry Wolves, lean like so many skeletons, being nothing but skin and bones.”

*Canis dingo* is smaller than the wolf, and has somewhat long legs. It stands 24 inches at the shoulder.<sup>1</sup> The tail is bushy.<sup>2</sup> There is a greyish under-fur, but, except in the black variety, the long hairs are generally yellow or white. In the whole family there seems to be a natural tendency for the feet and end of the tail

<sup>1</sup> Colonel Smith.

<sup>2</sup> Mivart.



to be white. The muzzle is very often black. It is found in the wooded districts throughout Australia, and was at one time extremely numerous. It runs unlike dogs, the head held up, and the ears erect and forward.<sup>1</sup> In its habits it is far more like the fox than the wolf.<sup>2</sup>

Mr. Oxley, Surveyor-General of New South Wales, records that on killing a dingo, they threw his body on a small bush, and on returning past the same spot a week later, found that the body had been removed three or four yards and a female in a dying state was lying close beside it. She had apparently been there from the day the dog was killed, and was so weakened and emaciated as to be unable to move.

Dingos are rarely seen during the day, pursuing their work of devastation during the night. Parties of five or six, usually a family, a mother and her puppies, go together. Occasionally, however, troops of eighty to a hundred have been seen. Each family is stated to have a strictly defined area, beyond which its members do not venture. The litters are generally born in a hollow tree, and comprise six or eight.

The dingo breeds freely with the various European dogs. In the wild, dingos never bark, but soon learn to do so from other dogs. When caught, they are generally in the habit of shamming death, and an instance is recorded of one being partly flayed before moving.<sup>3</sup> Dr. Carl Lumholz, in "Among Cannibals" (1889), states that on the Herbert River there are one or two dingos in each tribe, generally of pure blood. "The natives find them in the hollow trunks of trees and rear them with as great care as they do their own children. They sleep in the huts. They get plenty to eat, not only meat, but also fruit." We read that the master never strikes but merely threatens it, "caresses it, eats the fleas off it, and then kisses it on the snout"; that often "the dingos run away, especially in the pairing season, and at such times they do not return." The dogs never bark, hunt quietly but very rapidly, and frequently capture the game on the run. Because of their keen scent, the natives used them to trace game. "If, as it sometimes does, it refuses to go any farther, its owner then carries it on his shoulders, a luxury of which, we hear, it is very fond. Under such domestication the dingo will follow no one else but its owner. They carry their tail horizontally, not curled, and bend it down when watching."<sup>4</sup>

The New Holland dingo was only in a small degree reclaimed by the savage natives. In confinement they were entirely mute, neither howling, barking, nor growling; when offended, they raised their hair upright, and assumed a very menacing attitude.<sup>1</sup>

Fossil dingos are found in the superficial river gravels and cavern deposits of Australia, with and without human remains, associated with a number of extinct species.<sup>5</sup>

Dr. Nehring, an expert investigator on the subject of domestic animals, states that the skeleton of the dingo does not suggest a feral animal, but one of a purely wild race.

I give Professor McCoy's paper here, as it contains valuable information, showing that the dingo is a wild dog of considerable antiquity. According to this authority, it *does not* appear to be the ancestral form of European domesticated dog, because of its dislike to humanity and difficulty of domestication, but personally I must admit that I do not agree with this, for it seems to me that it may have taken

<sup>1</sup> Colonel Smith.

<sup>2</sup> Brehm.

<sup>3</sup> Martin.

<sup>4</sup> The habit of bending down the tail when watching is very typical of domesticated dogs.

<sup>5</sup> Mivart.



the prehistoric man 100, 1,000, 5,000 or more generations of domesticated dingo-breeding to eliminate fully the distrust and dislike to human beings, and substitute in its place devotion and full confidence and that loyalty to service characteristic of the domestic canine species.<sup>1</sup> In his "Palæontology of Victoria," Professor McCoy writes :

"The origin of the domestic dog is a question of great difficulty and interest, which, it has been suggested, could be best investigated by a study of the dog known to the lowest types of the human race ; and the aboriginal natives of Australia and the dingo were thought to afford these conditions. On the other hand, the remarkable absence of the higher orders of mammalian quadrupeds in Australia was supposed to render it highly probable that the dingo, or Australian dog, was not really a native of the place, but was brought at some remote period from some other country by human savage races arriving to constitute the population of Australia. Taking the case of the dingo, it was certain that the native dogs of continental Asia were not clearly related, to the extent of specific identity, with the Australian one, nor could any near analogies be found anywhere ; while, on the other hand, the facts are beyond dispute : First, that the dingo is singularly averse to domestication and man's society when compared with other dogs : second, that it is extremely abundant, with little or no variation, over the whole of Australia ; and third, that the farther you go from human haunts, near the coast, into the desert interior, the more numerous do the dingos appear, indicating that the species was really an indigenous one.

"The announcement, many years ago, of my recognition of bones and teeth of the dingo in the Pliocene Tertiary strata of Colac and other Victorian localities, in company with similar mineralised remains of *Thylacoleo*, *Diprotodon*, *Nototherium*, *Procoptodon*, and other extinct genera, therefore excited great interest, as proving that the dingo was really one of the most ancient of the indigenous mammals of the country, and abandoned, as now, most probably long before man himself appeared. The dingo, in fact, as Bell remarks, is an example of a dog more removed from all the influences of domestication than any other, and the above-mentioned discovery of its remains in strata with so many extinct genera establishes it as by far the most ancient of any of the living species of dogs. The savage temper, want of general attachment to men, and the bushy tail, show departures from the characteristics of the ordinary dogs towards those of the wolves, from which the European domestic dog most probably originated ; but in the small structural details of the skull, etc., which distinguish these two groups of the *Canidæ*, the dingo is a true dog of the genus *Canis* in all respects. The dingo not barking nor growling when vexed or teased is another suggested evidence of the dingo being a good distinct species, peculiar to Australia. The palæontology of dogs is so little known that some years ago it was thought that there were no fossil dogs, but now remains have been found in the bone caves of Brazil by Lund of genera and species of *Canidæ* resembling existing South American types ; and in France M. Pomel has a Pliocene Tertiary *Canis*, his *C. megamastoides* (= *C. borbonidus*) from Cerde, Issoire, and M. Filleol has a series of French Upper Eocene

<sup>1</sup> David Low, in his "Domesticated Animals," writes that he had a dingo which had a litter to a domesticated dog. The puppies were handsome and playful, but not very docile. "They retained the disposition of their mother to dig holes in the ground, as if desiring to burrow." They attacked poultry and were never cured of the habit.

Tertiary dogs of the genus *Cynodictis*, which give the greatest antiquity known for the family Canidæ. Our present species, although still living in great numbers, I have no doubt dates from the Pliocene Tertiary time, and I find, on the most minute comparison and measurements, no difference between the fossil and the recent individuals, either of the adult age or of the younger periods before the milk-teeth were shed to give place to the permanent premolar teeth."

I have somewhat carefully collected information as to the wild dogs known to science, and notes as to the findings of explorers, hoping to trace either the colours, shapes, or habits of domesticated species.

THE SIBERIAN WILD DOG, *Cyon alpinus*, is an inhabitant of Northern Asia, extending to the Altai Mountains. The molar teeth, especially those of the upper jaw, are of large size. Colonel Smith states that the number of teeth is 40 instead of 42, but Professor Mivart does not agree. In summer it is foxy-red, darker on the neck, and lighter on the under parts and inner surface of limbs. Some turn white during the winter. The Siberian wild dog is a forest-loving animal frequenting mountains on the east bank of the Yenesei, and preys largely on deer and ibex; they hunt in parties of ten to fifteen or more, led by an old male.<sup>1</sup>

THE INDIAN WILD DOG, *C. javanicus (dukhunensis)*, or *southern dhole*, is found in the forest of the Himalaya, etc., but unknown in Ceylon. Its legs are comparatively short. It has thick and woolly under-fur; the general colour of the fur on the upper parts is a rusty red, the under parts are paler. Its molar teeth are smaller than those of the Siberian wild dog. The end of the tail is black, but the extreme tip may occasionally be white. The young are of a uniform sooty-brown colour. A specimen measured was  $37\frac{1}{2}$  inches long, exclusive of tail,  $14\frac{1}{2}$  inches long with the hair, but 8 inches without hair.<sup>2</sup> Hodgson writes that the animal appears to go heavy because of the measured uniformity of its pace. It runs in a lolling long canter, is less agile and speedy than the jackal, and very much less so than the fox. It lives on wild deer, wild pigs, and on antelopes in Thibet. It rarely attacks domestic animals, but will occasionally attack tame buffalo. Blanford<sup>3</sup> writes: "I came across a third case myself in the jungles east of Bawda, and I was curious to see how so large an animal had been destroyed. There were but a few tooth-marks about the nose and throat, and some of the pack had evidently attacked the buffalo in front, while others tore it open. This is probably their usual way of killing large animals; they have been seen to snap at the flank of a sámbar running." Hodgson states that wild dogs give tongue whilst hunting, but this is denied by both Hamilton and Blanford; but it is agreed that these animals are in the habit of howling at night. The Indian wild dog, according to Lydekker, is untamable. In India the young are born in the winter; two to four cubs complete the litter, but occasionally six have been found.

THE MALAY WILD DOG (*C. rutilans*) is considered by some to be the same as the Indian wild dog, but Blanford regards it as a distinct species. It is smaller and slighter in build, and has more slender limbs. The "brush" is smaller. The hair on the body is short and harsh, and it has no under-fur.

THE AZARA'S DOG (*C. azaræ*), first described by Prince Wied, is easily tamed if taken young, and, like the domestic dog, shows friendly feeling by licking its master.

<sup>1</sup> Rade.

<sup>2</sup> Hodgson.

<sup>3</sup> W. T. Blanford, "The Fauna of British India."



We read that "when kept with domestic dogs, they played quite happily, but were quick to perceive the approach of a strange dog, and then exhibited their dislike in unmistakable manners." "They have the habit," continues this authority, "sometimes to the discomfort of travellers who leave things about, of picking up objects which attract their notice, and carrying them into the bush. Comparatively small and fox-like, this South American species had a long body, short legs, large ears, and a long bushy tail. Its skull is unlike that of the fox. It is found from Brazil to Tierra del Fuego, also west of the Andes in Chili. The colour varies considerably. Grey predominates, with longer black-and-white hairs on the back. Black patches occur on the shoulders, the limbs are reddish (fulvous) coloured. The under side of the body and inner sides of thighs are whitish. There is also some white on the upper legs, and on the chest as well as on the inner sides of the ears, the outer side being yellowish with black tip. The tail, like the back, is mottled with black-and-white, but the end is black. White specimens have also been met with.

Its habits are fox-like<sup>1</sup>; its main food is small mammals and birds, reptiles, and also sugar-cane. It hunts with its nose to the ground. In the winter pairs of males and females go together, sleeping in the same nest. They do not make an earth, but use a convenient shelter, otherwise their habits are solitary. Three or four cubs are born. The female then remains for the first week with the cubs, the male bringing her food. When the young can eat flesh, the parents both go hunting, bringing home their catches to feed the family.

Rengger, observing the dog in bright moonlight, describes its cautious approach towards some ducks, always against the wind. After approaching with great care, it would suddenly spring upon a duck, seizing it by the neck, so that it would not cry out. It would then make off, carrying the duck held up as far away from the ground as possible, so as not to impede its progress. If disturbed before a kill, it would slip silently away and return again and again, until it succeeded. Rengger took great care to prevent it from making a capture, but he had scarcely left his post before the wild dog had returned and taken what it desired.

THE CRAB-EATING DOG (*C. cancrivorus*) is larger than Azara's dog and is found from Guano to La Plata, but not often on the Pampas. The colour varies considerably, but is often of a light reddish grey. Its back may be black and legs red. The end of the tail is always black, and the ears have black tips.<sup>2</sup> The Carasissi, as this dog is called, lives in the jungle and feeds upon small mammals, birds, and also upon crayfish and plants. When hunting in the woods they follow by scent, but in the open hunt by sight. They occasionally raid a village hen-roost and cause considerable damage. Crosses between this wild dog and the domestic dog were greatly prized by the natives.<sup>3</sup> Whilst all dogs have a cæcum of simple cylindrical form, and in most the intestine takes an "S" form, in this variety the organ is straight or only slightly curved.<sup>4</sup>

THE COLPEO (*C. magellanicus*), a large and handsome variety, living between Tierra del Fuego and Chili, has a longer and more pointed nose and a longer and more bushy tail than the crab-eating dog. It is usually brownish grey, the back mottled with black and the tail more or less red-coloured. The cheeks, throat, lower jaw, under surface, yellowish white. The ears are dark externally; the brush is light

<sup>1</sup> W. Hudson.<sup>2</sup> Col. H. Smith.<sup>3</sup> Mivart.<sup>4</sup> "Cambridge Natural History."



reddish grey, except the tip and a patch on the under surface near the root, which is black. This variety, first described by the Abbé Molina, and first obtained by Captain P. P. King, is decidedly more wolf-like than fox-like.<sup>1</sup> It has the habit of walking slowly up to men, and staring at them, and in consequence of this, large numbers have been killed.<sup>2</sup> Darwin describes how one, chased by a half-bred greyhound, ran along barking. After out-distancing its pursuer, it made a sudden bend and returned in nearly a parallel line, and at the base of a steep cliff seemed to listen with much satisfaction to the cries of the dog, running on scent well above his head.

OF THE SHORT-EARED DOG (*C. microtis*) we know very little; one was in the London Zoological Society's collection and it appears to have been the last of the race. Its skin is preserved in the British Museum. About the size of the crab-eating dog (*C. cancrivorus*), it stood 14 inches at the shoulder. The ears were short and rounded, which gave it a somewhat original expression. The colour was black, but the hairs near the roots were white; the general effect being a dark iron-grey colour.

THE RACON DOG (*Canis procyonoides*: *Nyctereutes procyonoides* of the "Cambridge Natural History"), lives during the summer in the woods on the hills feeding on mice, but ventures down to the lowlands in the winter to feed on fish. During the day it hides in the sedges and other herbage by the waterside. In the winter it is said to hibernate, if in sufficiently good condition; but if not it continues hunting, and has been seen crossing ice-bound rivers in a succession of short jumps. It is named the "raccoon" dog because it has perhaps a certain resemblance to a racoon, though the appearance is perhaps more that of a civet. Its home is China, Japan, and Amoorland.<sup>3</sup> The muzzle is sharp and pointed, the ears are short and round, the tail short and bushy, and it is covered with long fur, which increases considerably in length during the winter. The colour varies, the usual colours being dusky yellow and black. It is black round the eyes extending to the muzzle, and a patch of this colour occurs on both cheeks, whilst on the nose on both sides is a white mark. The sides of the head and forehead are frequently yellowish or black. The fur on the back is black-and-yellow or black. The tail is covered with long hair, black above, and ending in a black tip, whilst the lower side of the tail may be yellow.

THE HOARY AGUARA DOG (*Dasicyon canescens*).<sup>4</sup>—"This species," writes Colonel Smith, "we have seen domesticated among the Indians, who nevertheless asserted that it was wild to the southward." It was about 2 feet 8 inches long, the tail nearly 11 inches, and height at shoulder 15 to 16 inches (approx.). The head was terminated by a sharp, black muzzle, the edges of the lips were black, there was a very large wart with several bristles on each cheek, the ears were small, pointed, and hairy, the eyes set high up in the head, and the body full and long. It had, we read, 5 toes to all the feet.<sup>5</sup> The animal was covered with loose coarse hair on the neck, body, and hams, whitish intermixed with sand-colour "clouds," and the tips of many hairs black, particularly on the back. The legs were pale fulvous, the tail was scantily supplied with long hairs, black above, whitish beneath. "It differed only from the domestic breeds in being somewhat darker and larger. In the domestic we observed," he writes, "that the palate was black and the edge of the lower lip of the same colour, but more deeply indented and broader than in the dogs of Europe."

<sup>1</sup> "Cambridge Natural History."

<sup>2</sup> Mivart.

<sup>3</sup> "The Valley of the Amoor, Amoorland."

<sup>4</sup> Colonel, H. Smith.

<sup>5</sup> Possibly very much developed dew-claws.

THE FALKLAND ISLAND AGUARA DOG (*Dasicyon antarcticus*), of a dark brown colour, stood about 15 inches at the shoulder. The head was wolf-like, the belly and inside of the limbs were pale whitish buff, the throat dirty white, and the tail ended in white. It lived in burrows along the sea-downs, had a feeble kind of bark, and fed chiefly on birds. There is also the classic wild dog referred to on page 24, THE AGUARA DOG OF THE WOODS (*Dasicyon sylvestris*), described by Buffon and copied by Cuvier as the "chien des bois." The general appearance of the animal was more that of a cur than a shepherd's dog. It stood 14 inches at the shoulder, "the head was rounded and muzzle blunt, the ears short, erect, triangular, with a rufous fur at the back and spreading towards the neck, similar to those of wild species; the colour more grey on the neck and yellowish white beneath, this colour spreads on the insides of the legs and thighs." The colour of the upper part of the head and back consisted of a mixed black and fulvous, grey and white hairs, most fulvous on the head and legs, and grey on the back; the legs are slender and the feet small, both of a dark brown and reddish colour; the tail, clothed with a close coat of hair without a brush, is brown on the upper surface, yellowish beneath, and black at the end; the eyelids and muzzle are black and there is an indistinct appearance of two blackish streaks on each cheek. He writes further that, "comparing our figure of a domestic dog of the Indians, taken from a living specimen, with that of the Crabodage or Surinam Aguara dog, we find such a strict similarity in all, excepting the bushy tail, that we believe them to represent the same species."

*Canis anthus*.—The head is rather deep at the jowl; the nose full at the point; the ears erect; the throat and breast dirty white; the body above of a mixed fulvous, white, black, and buff produced by the tips of the longer hairs being black and uniting in meshes. The woolly under-fur is reddish brown, darkest on the back; the ears are rather small; the nose, edge of the lips, and whiskers black, lips under cheeks white; ridge of the nose brown; a black band passes round the neck towards the breast; tail hairy, rather long, with a brown spot placed one-third from the base and a long black streak spreading down to the end; below it is buff, the black hair showing; lower limbs rusty brown on the outside, buff on the internal face, soles naked and black, as well as the claws. Iris brown; the female more buff in the colours. The animal from nose to tail measures about 2 feet 6 inches; the tail 1 foot; and the dog stood about 16 inches at shoulder. At that time it was no longer common in Egypt.<sup>1</sup>

THE CAPE HUNTING-DOG (*Lycaon pictus*), or the vilde honden, at one time very abundant in South Africa,<sup>2</sup> is not a member of the Canidæ. Resembling the hyena closely, it is readily mistaken for that animal, and is known as the hyena dog. In size the hunting-dog approximates a tall greyhound. Its limbs are relatively long, the muzzle short and somewhat pointed, the ears are dark-coloured and only slightly hairy and somewhat large and broad, ovate, gradually coming to a point. The colour is on the whole an ochraceous grey, with black markings, and with patches or white spots edged with black; the markings are irregular.

Hunting in packs, usually at night, enormous damage is done to flocks, if given the opportunity; far more are destroyed than are needed for food. They attack the

<sup>1</sup> See footnote page 21.

<sup>2</sup> Mivart.



antelope, separating one from the herd. Their pace is a long, never-tiring gallop,<sup>1</sup> and in the chase co-ordinate to a remarkable degree, some loping on behind, whilst others run hard and press the quarry. These, when fatigued, are relieved by the others. On bringing the quarry to bay, the pack attack from all sides and, their prey at their mercy, tear off pieces, swallowing the still living flesh. They have little natural fear of man in the open, and will trot leisurely along before him, halting frequently, and looking back.<sup>1</sup>

The young are born in large holes, often connected burrows. During the breeding season, if a man is seen approaching, if above ground and close to their homes, the dogs<sup>1</sup> do not take shelter below, but rush forth, retreating across the plains, the young, unless too weak, accompanying their parents. If alarmed, the hunting-dog gives a short, angry bark. They have two other cries, and at night can be heard, when in large numbers, emitting sounds as of numbers of monkeys chattering, or of men conversing with teeth trembling violently from cold. Mr. Cumming describes the third type of cry to be somewhat that of the second note of the cuckoo. The following experience is given by him. He states that he was suddenly wakened one night by the sound of rushing feet "as of a pack of wolves close on every side," accompanied by the most unearthly sounds. "On raising his head," he writes, "to my utter horror I saw on every side nothing but savage wild dogs, chattering and growling. On my right and on my left, and within a few paces of me, stood two lines of these ferocious-looking animals, cocking their ears and stretching their necks to have a look at me; while two large troops, in which there were at least forty of them, kept dashing backwards across my view, within a few yards of me, chattering and growling with the most extraordinary volubility. Another troop of wild dogs were fighting over the wildebeest I had shot, which they had begun to devour. On beholding them," he continues, "I expected no other fate than to be instantly torn in pieces and consumed." Thinking that perhaps the human voice might save the situation, he leapt up, seizing a blanket, and waved it towards them with both hands, addressing them in loud and solemn tones. The dogs drew back and barked at him, "something like collies," and, becoming uneasy, left him. We read elsewhere that attempts have been made to tame these hunting-dogs, but without success.

Wild or semi-wild dogs, found by explorers on their first visit to unknown lands, may have played a part in the production of one or more of present-day varieties.

Writing of the savages in "The Last Discovery of the North Part of Virginia" (1605), one, James Rosier, "a gentleman employed in the voyage," tells us that Griffon on his return reported two or three savages, every one with "bowe and arrowes, with their dogges, and wolves which they keepe tame at command"; and in his "briefe Note of what profits we saw the Countrey yeald in the small time of our stay there" he gives a list of "Beasts," in which wolves occur and "Dogges: some like Wolves; some like Spaniels." *Wolves under Command and Dogs like Wolves* is of considerable interest.

There appear to have been no dogs in the Dutch Indies, according to the "Hist. Nat. des Indes" (1597), for in this work are the following notes on dogs:

When the Spaniards arrived on these islands there were no dogs, horses, or pigs. Now the dogs multiply and march about in troops and do much harm to the cattle,

<sup>1</sup> Gordon Cumming.



as much as wolves. The Spaniards introduced them a hundred years ago; this can be easily proved by the memory of man, and again later the traveller tells us that at San Domingo dogs multiply in such numbers and in such size and in such a fashion, that to-day they are the greatest affliction to the island. They eat the sheep, and those who kill them get as big a salary as those who kill wolves in Spain.<sup>1</sup>

Merolla gives us a description of a wild dog which he met on his voyage to the Congo in 1682. The variety was not the *vilde honden* (*Lycaon pictus*). He writes:

"In Sogno there are a sort of wild dogs, who going out to hunt in great numbers, whenever they met with any lion, tiger, or elephant in their way, set upon him with that fury, that they commonly bring him to the ground. . . ." And later:

"These dogs, notwithstanding their wildness, do little or no damage to the inhabitants. They are red-haired, have small slender bodies, and their tails turned up upon their backs like a greyhound's."

In Captain Cook's "First Voyage" (1768)—St. Vincent's Bay—we read that dogs are esteemed more delicate-eating than pork, as those bred to be eaten taste no animal food, but live entirely upon vegetables. "Tufia undertook to kill and dress one, which he did, by making a hole in the ground, and baking it. It was deemed a very good dish."

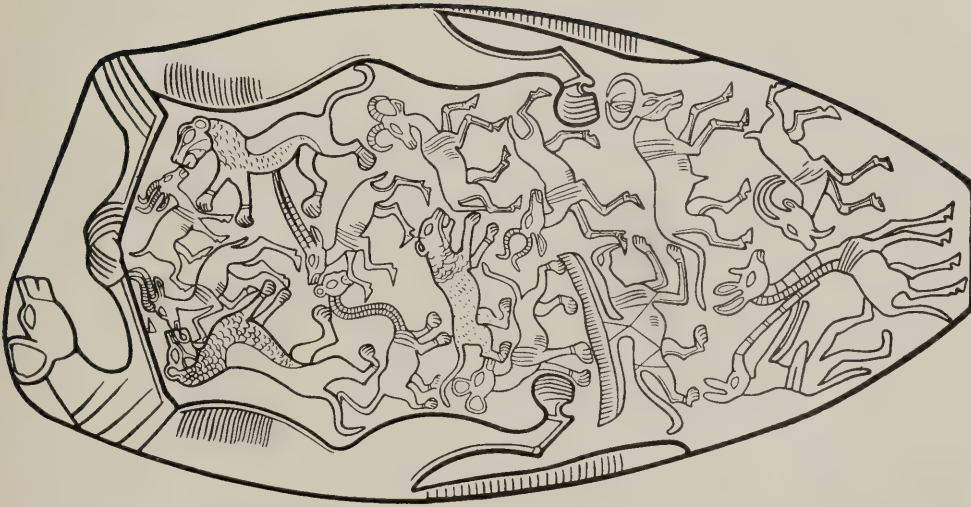
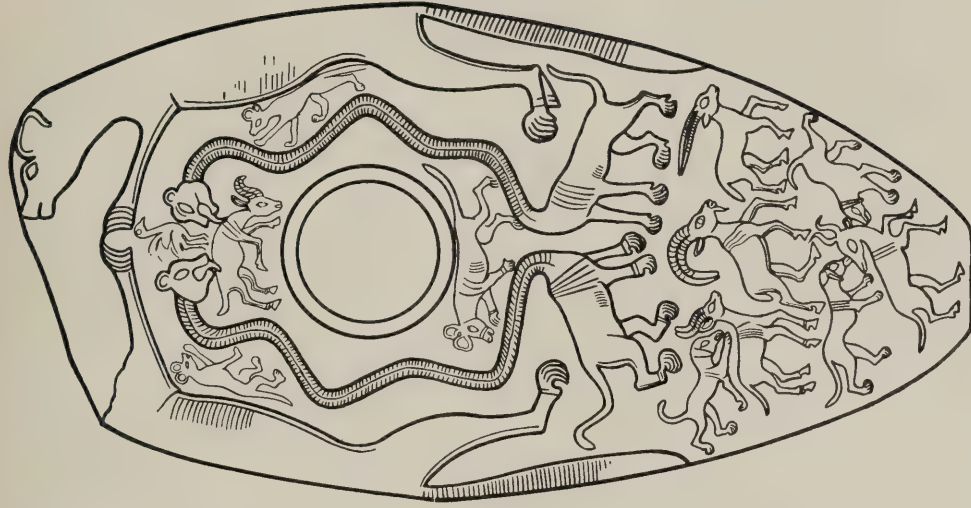
Alloa, in his "Voyage to America" (Queen Elizabeth's reign), writing of the "Island de Tierra," states that "a great singularity is also observed in the dogs of this island, namely, that they never bark. We caught some of them and brought them on board; but they never made a noise till joined with some tame dogs, and then indeed they began to imitate them, but in a strange manner, as if learning a thing not natural to them"—a most interesting note. The tribes of American Indians were found to possess dogs. According to Colonel H. Smith, the black wolf-dogs of the Florida Indians were higher at the shoulder than a Newfoundland dog (but the one he examined was not quite fully grown). They were shorter in the body and very like a wolf, except that the eyes were nearer the muzzle. The nose was rather sharp and the forehead broad and rather arched, the ears erect, pointed, and open, the tail full, like that of a wolf, hanging down, not curled, but not much lower than the heel. There were no white hairs at the tip. The whole animal was glossy black, except a small spot on the breast and tips of the fore-toes, which were white. The length of the hair was that of the Newfoundland dog, but somewhat finer.

Colonel Smith considered that the dog was evidently intermediate between the original Newfoundland dog and the wolf.

A NORTH AMERICAN DOG (*C. canadensis*) is described by Dr. Richardson to be the size of an Esquimaux or Hare Indian dog, but less perfectly reclaimed than either. The prevailing colours were black and grey, mixed with white, and some were entirely black. Its habits, according to this authority, were sneaking and cowardly, preferring to bite at the heel, never making an open attack unless in packs. When opposed to another dog, it curled the upper lip very much, showing the whole of its teeth, and snarled for a long time before it ventured to bite. Dr. Richardson states that when alone it could be put to flight by a little Scottish terrier.<sup>2</sup> These dogs often assembled

<sup>1</sup> Translated by Miss L. Smith, M.A.

<sup>2</sup> "Disconcerted the largest of them by the smartness of his attack, and used to send an animal, more than four times his own size, howling away, although the density of its woolly covering prevented his short teeth from wounding the skin."



SALUKIS OR GREYHOUND-TYPE DOGS AND MASTIFFS ON GREEN SLATE TABLETS. Ceremonial—Archaic period, 4000 B.C.  
By courtesy of the authorities, British Museum.



326] DOGS FROM THE TOMBS AT BENI-HASSAN. XIIth Dynasty, about 2200-2000 B.C. From Rosellini. (See Appendix XXIII.)





DOGS FROM THE TOMBS AT BENI-HASSAN, XIIIth Dynasty, about 2200-2000 B.C. From Rosellini. (See Appendix XXIII.)



*Russians travelling with dog sleds in Siberia*



*A. The Idol in his Tent. B. Dead corps laid to rot. C. Dogs and cats etc. hung up being their food.*

(Top) TAKING AN OATH, BY DRINKING DOG'S BLOOD; (Centre) SLEDGE DOGS; (Bottom) DOGS PREPARED AS FOOD FOR THE DEAD. From Adam Brand (1698). [32d

at night to howl in unison, particularly when the moon was shining brightly. They were used by Indians either in the chase at certain seasons or for carrying burdens. Their flesh was eaten by both the natives and by the Canadian voyagers.

THE TECHICHI.—A long-bodied, heavy-looking dog on short legs with smooth, close hair. The head was large and broad, the ears erect. In size it was similar to the European turnspit.

THE HARE INDIAN DOG (*Canis lagopus*) was only found in the possession of tribes of Indians frequenting the borders of Great Bear Lake and the banks of the Mackenzie,<sup>1</sup> who differed in feature, stature, and mode of life from their neighbours the Esquimaux as much as their dogs did.<sup>2</sup> The Hare Indian dog, judging from illustrations, was of the present-day collie type. Colonel H. Smith tells us that a pair of these dogs were imported into England and placed in the Zoological Gardens, where they bred two litters, and were found to be very gentle, lively, and familiar, but not without certain wildness. One, permitted his liberty, was not retaken except with considerable trouble.

Dr. Richardson states that in their own country they were soon gained over by kindness and were fond of being caressed. When petted, they rubbed their backs against the hand in the manner of cats. They did not tamely submit to punishment and were very mindful of injuries. If irritated, they howled like wolves, but did not attempt to bark; but if surprised and interested by some unusual object, they would make a singular attempt at barking, commencing with a kind of growl, which was not, however, unpleasant, and ending in a prolonged howl. The voice was very much like that of the prairie wolf. In their own country they frequently fell victims to larger dogs, which devoured them. Dr. Richardson states that in proportion to their size they possessed great muscular strength and perseverance. He purchased a puppy from the Hare Indians, which became greatly attached to him. At about seven months old this puppy ran on the snow by the side of the sledge for 900 miles without suffering from fatigue. During the journey it frequently, of its own accord, carried a small twig, or one of Dr. Richardson's mittens. It met with misfortune: an Indian barbarously killed and ate it, pretending afterwards that he had mistaken it for a fox.

Dr. Richardson describes it as of mild countenance, with at times an expression of demureness. A small head, slender muzzle; thickish, erect ears; somewhat oblique eyes; rather slender legs, and a broad hairy foot, with a bushy tail, usually carried over its right hip. It was covered with long hair, particularly about the shoulders, and at the roots of the hair, both on the body and tail, there was a thick wool. The hair on the top of the head was long, and on the posterior part of the cheek was directed backwards, giving the animal, when the fur was in prime order, the appearance of having a ruff round the neck. Its face, muzzle, belly, and legs were



<sup>1</sup> Richardson.

<sup>2</sup> Colonel H. Smith.



of a pure white colour, and there was a white central line passing over the crown of the head and the occiput. The anterior surface of the ear was white, the posterior yellowish grey or fawn-colour. The end of the nose, the eye-lashes, the roof of the mouth, and part of the gum, black. There was a dark patch over the eye. On the back and sides there were larger patches of dark blackish grey or lead-colour mixed with fawn-colour and white, indefinite in form, running into each other. The tail was bushy, white beneath and at the tip. The feet were covered with hair which almost concealed the claws. Some long hair between the toes projected over the soles. Naked callous protuberances, such as are found on wolves, occurred at the root of the toes and on the soles, even in winter. The ears were nearer each other than those of the Esquimaux dog.

In size, the Hare Indian dog was inferior to that of the prairie wolf, but rather exceeded that of the Red American fox. "Its resemblance, however, to the former is so great, that, on comparing live specimens, I could detect no marked difference in form (except the smallness of its cranium), nor in the fineness of the fur, and arrangement of its spots of colour. The length of the fur on the neck, back part of the cheeks, and top of the head, was the same in both species. It, in fact, bears the same relation to the prairie wolf that the Esquimaux dog does to the great grey wolf. It is not, however, a breed that is cultivated in the districts frequented by the prairie wolf, being now confined to the northern tribes, who have been taught the use of firearms within a very few years. Before that weapon was introduced by the fur-traders, a dog, so well calculated by the lightness of its body and the breadth of its paws for passing over the snow, must have been invaluable for running down game, and it is reasonable to conclude that it was then generally spread amongst the Indian tribes north of the Great Lakes."<sup>1</sup>

THE NICOBAR ISLAND DOG.—In Colonel Walter Campbell's "My Indian Journal" he describes the dogs of a village of the Nicobar Islands. Of a reddish-brown colour, smooth-skinned, with upright ears, not unlike the pariah dog of India, though smaller, they fed almost exclusively on coco-nuts. The natives cut the coco-nuts in two, and left them about for their dogs, which managed to scoop out the contents with the teeth of the lower jaw as effectually as if it had been done with a spoon. They were also exceedingly dexterous in ascending and descending the ladders leading to the upper part of the hut, "with as much ease as if they had been *flights* of steps."

THE POE DOG (*C. Pacificus*).—This variety, found in Tahiti and the Sandwich Islands, had a sharp muzzle, the ears were erect, and the back long, the limbs crooked, hair smooth, and retaining its primitive livery of tan or rusty ochre-colour. It was a silent, lazy animal, and was fed on breadfruit, etc. The dogs were entirely used for the table. Later, as European dogs became more common, the Poe dog became rarer, and the eating of its flesh was gradually abandoned, though it was considered as a delicacy by the natives and to be palatable by Europeans. In October 1835 at Oahu a skinned dog was suspended at the door of a house of entertainment for natives, "to denote what sumptuous fare might be obtained within."<sup>2</sup>

THE CARRIER INDIAN DOG (*Canis F.*, var. *D. Novæ Caledoniæ*).<sup>3</sup>—The carrier Indians or Attnah of New Caledonia possessed a variety of dog differing from the northern races. Dr. Richardson had one given him by a Mr. M'Vicar; it was stolen,

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Richardson.

<sup>2</sup> Frederick Bennet.

<sup>3</sup> Colonel H. Smith.

and fell a sacrifice to the desire which a party of Canadian voyagers had to partake of a menu of dog's flesh. It was the size of a large turnspit dog, and had a somewhat similar-shaped long body, "but it had straight legs . . . which were short." Its head was large in proportion. Its fur was rather shorter and sleeker than that of other native dogs, and its body was studded with small spots of various colours." There was a good deal of intelligence in its countenance, mixed with wildness. It was extremely active and could leap to a great height.

THE DOGS OF NEW ZEALAND.—The dogs found in New Zealand were long-haired sheep-dogs, some spotted, some whole-coloured black or white. We read that they lived on the remains of the fish left by the natives and were extremely stupid. The natives killed and ate them, and used their skins to make clothing, mainly as fringes to their dress.

A SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS DOG.—These were dogs with very large heads and small eyes, pointed ears and short tufted tails.<sup>1</sup>

THE ABORIGINAL DOG OF PATAGONIA.<sup>2</sup>—A dog about the size of a large foxhound, coat short but very often wiry, colours dark, and uniform, seldom spotted. They frequently resembled the lurcher or shepherd's dog, but had a mild wolfish appearance. They hunted by sight, did not give tongue, but growled and barked loudly when attacked or attacking.

THE FUEGIAN INDIAN DOG.—The dogs of the Fuegian Indians, writes Captain Fitzroy, "who have no horses, but move about in canoes," resembled terriers, of a mixed type, "fox, shepherd's dog, and terrier," and all when examined had black roofs to their mouths. They varied greatly in size, form, colour, and in their coats. Many were spotted and some had fine short hair. These dogs were guards, they hunted otters, and caught "sleeping or wounded birds." They were seldom fed, and provided for themselves at low water by cunningly detaching limpets from the rocks or breaking mussel-shells and eating fish. In times of famine, the oldest women are sacrificed to the cannibal appetite, but no dogs are destroyed. "Dogs," say they, "catch otters: old women are good for nothing."

THE ALCO.—For a long time only known by a wretched figure published by Recchi in the work of Fernandes. Extraordinary pictures of this dog occur in various early works. It is depicted to be abnormally fat, a huge lump of flesh with a minute head. It is mentioned in the "*Hist. Nat. des Indes*" (1597). Colonel H. Smith described it to have a small head, short neck, and very bulky body, white-and-yellow or white-and-black with rufous spots above the eyes. Believed to have originated from a variety of lapdog kept by ladies, some of which, having escaped, returned to a state of independence. A Mr. Bullock brought one from Mexico, stuffed, and showed it in his exhibition of Mexican curiosities at the Egyptian Hall. He describes it as the wild alco, but Colonel H. Smith writes that it resembled a Newfoundland puppy. "It was small, with rather large head, elongated occiput, full muzzle, pendulous ears, long, soft hair on the body. In colour it was entirely white excepting a large black spot covering each ear, and part of the forehead and cheek, with a fulvous mark above each eye, and another black spot on the rump; the tail was rather long, well fringed, and white."

The Indians call the small dogs "alcos," because of small animals like dogs<sup>3</sup> which

<sup>1</sup> Forster.

<sup>2</sup> Captain Fitzroy.

<sup>3</sup> "*Hist. Nat. des Indes*" (1597).



live there. The Indians go without food themselves to feed the dogs. They had no word to signify "dog," and took the Spanish name "espanols."

THE DROVER OR CATTLE-DOG OF CUBA.—When vessels with live-stock arrived, the ox was hoisted out by a sling passed round the base of its horns, and allowed to fall into the water. Men generally swam, and guided it by the horns, but at other times this service was performed by one or two dogs, who, catching the bewildered animal by the ears, one on each side, forced it to swim in the direction of the landing-place, and instantly released their hold when they felt it touch the ground, for then the ox naturally walked up to the shore. These dogs had the form of the Dane and the colour of the wolf.

#### THE DOGS OF HINDUSTAN (A LETTER TO THE "STOCK-KEEPER")

"In Central India, and most probably in other parts where it has not been my lot to wander, there are to be found two distinct breeds of dogs, specimens of which I have never seen in this or any other country, and as I know that your columns, to the advantage of all lovers of the canine race, are ever open to anything of interest in these matters, I venture to send you some short account of these extraordinary creatures.

"The 'Bunjâra,' a dog of from 24 inches to 28 inches in height at shoulder, is, beyond description, the most ferocious of all the breeds of dogs that I have ever known. He is, like his master, a born villain; no coaxing or blandishments avail with him—he will tear and rend his best friend, and will devour his 'sisters, his cousins, or his aunts' with impunity. I say 'like his master,' as the only persons who own 'Bunjâras' are the criminal tribes, and principally the 'Bunjâra' tribe. Now, the 'Bunjâra' people, by their caste, are born rogues and vagabonds, and the more evil they can do, the more wrongs they can commit, the softer their bed and the more pleasurable their life in Valhalla when they die, which many say they seldom do—*naturally*. The 'Bunjâra' dog is like this, only more so. He is a cunning fox, an insatiable hater, and a consummate villain; yet he has some good points. He can and will hold out to the last gasp, he never tires, and to one, and only one, does he ever give his allegiance, and to him he sticks. Of women he is a despiser, regarding them like his master does—only as a 'means to an end.' In colour he is dark brown or grey, shading to black; his coat is close, like a mastiff's, but tufted on the elbows and hocks, and feathered down inside of forelegs; his tail is carried low, except when excited, and has a good deal of brush, especially at tip; his ears are flat to the head, and only slightly raised on occasion. He is used exclusively for hunting, and only by natives—never by Europeans.

"The 'Polygar' is a larger dog than the 'Bunjâra,' standing from 27 inches to 31 inches at shoulder; he is not so ferocious either, but has an equally good pluck, and never gives in alive. In colour he is bluish grey or dark grey; he is almost bare of hair, except on his head, which is covered with a fine coat, as sleek and soft as a mole's. He has bristles all over his body, like a pig; and, in fact, his skin much resembles that of a dark-coloured pig. His tail is fine, like a greyhound's, and he has more or less of greyhound ears. For hunting purposes, and as a guard, he is excellent and more reliable than the 'Bunjâra,' not having such a spice of the devil in him. He is used both by natives and Europeans, and principally for hunting the tiger and panther. He is most faithful to his master, and capable of being trained to many useful purposes.



"There is another breed of dogs which combines the blood of all and sundry. He seems to have got the character of a very bad fellow, for, if you want to annoy a man, you cannot do it better than by calling his dog a 'Junglee dog.' In many cases, his tail is long, fine, and curled like a coil of rope; in some he is, like the Manx cat, minus. A man I knew had a little English terrier, and also tied up in his hut a 'Bunjâra.' One day a shikari from up the country reviled the terrier. 'Ha! ha!' said he, 'Junglee, Junglee dog.' 'Ho! ho!' said Bunjâra man, 'Ho! ho! You wait.' He darted in and fetched the 'Bunjâra,' who immediately set on the shikari with the utmost ferocity. This man for years had the marks of the struggle on that part of his economy which, as Uncle Toby says (or else his servant, I forget which at this moment), 'modesty forbids me to mention before ladies.' Having been at last torn from his human victim, he set on to, and in five seconds killed, the terrier, the cause of all the row; which having done, he bolted with him in his mouth out of the village and into the jungle, never to return.

"I shall be pleased at some later date, if you wish it, to give you some further account of the hunts and wars in which all the dogs herein mentioned take a prominent part."

"OTHELLO." (September 2, 1887.)

An interesting reference to dogs in Turkey occurs in the "*Histoire du Serrail et de la Cour du Grand Seigneur*," par le Sieur Michel Baudier (Paris, 1662). He writes:

"Baiazetti . . . said . . . that he valued a good hawk or a good hunting-dog much more than any of his men. Because (added the brute) I have as many men as I like, but it is but rarely that I can find good birds or good dogs. So anyone who wounded a dog during his hunting, even by mistake, was accused of high treason and punished suitably; but he who with a mighty hand brings low the pride of cruel Princes, meted out to him his own measure. Tamerlane, King of the Tartars, defeated him some time after in pitched battle, took him prisoner with his wife, and made his estate lower than that of any dog or hawk. . . ." (Book ii, chap. viii, Bajazet (A Turkish Sultan), *De la Chasse du Grand Seigneur*.)

Also in the "*Illustrations de Blaise de Vigenaire Bourbonnois sur l'Histoire de Chalcondile Athenien de la decadence de l'Empire Grec, et etablissement de celvy des Turcs*" (i.e. Appendix to *Histoire generale des Turcs*: Paris, 1662) we read that "the Turks have not so many different kinds of dogs as we, who have large greyhounds on the leash, and other smaller ones which we call companion's dogs: and still smaller ones, and faster for the hare: and house-dogs (*dogues*), alaunts (*allans*), mastiffs (*mastins*), and mongrels (*mestifs*); hounds (*braques*), foxhounds (*chiens courans*), spaniels (*epaigneulx*), water-spaniels (*barbets*), and Artois dogs and terriers for the fox and badger, and little pet dogs for amusement, all of an infinite variety of size, shape, and coat. Whereas they (the Turks) have only hounds which they call 'hith,' and greyhounds 'tasi,' both of large size, but which have commonly the tail curly, the ears flat, curled, and drooping, like our spaniels or the goats of Languedoc, very light and truly swift and able to run very far. . . . As for mastiffs they call them 'chuipech': which word they apply to Christians also." He informs us that—

"There is no people in the world that looks after its dogs and horses so well as the Turk. . . .

"The characteristics they like best in their greyhounds are a sad, melancholy air,

holding their tails between their legs, long and pendent like a rat's or rather a lion's, tufted at the tip, the paws rather long, the haunches broad, the arch of the legs wide, as also that of the belly; thin in the flank, the muzzle pointed, and the hair short and smooth. All which we more or less approve of in ours."

It is somewhat significant that G. F. Riedel, in 1780, in his illustrations, shows a Saluki type of dog, and names it *Turkischer*.

The allusion to the "tasi," as greyhounds of large size, shows that the Saluki was common in Turkey at that time and held in great esteem. A vase showing typical Salukis of the sixteenth century is in the collection of the British Museum.

Feral dogs (*Canes feri*, Colonel Smith) are wild dogs that have escaped from domestication. I think the earliest record of feral dogs is one of 1638.<sup>1</sup>

FERAL DOGS OF RUSSIA AND TURKEY.—The feral dogs of Russia were very wolf-like in appearance and colours, but smaller and far less audacious than those of Turkey. In the Turkish cities the street dogs made burrows in the ramparts and in the banks of earth on the outskirts of the town. At St. Petersburg the feral dogs would sometimes attack the defenceless, and on one occasion a British merchant and a friend were obliged to hurry to the rescue of a boy, sent with a message across the ice of the Neva.

There is something rather pathetic in the position of feral dogs. In Eastern countries the feral dogs of the cities are in a horrible condition of starvation and disease.

THE FERAL DOG OF NATOLIA (*Ictinus* of the Ancients?).—A feral race of the shepherd- or guard-dogs described on p. 22, but with more bushy tails, and pointed muzzles. The fur was rufous grey. These dogs differed from the local wolf in habits, hunting in the open in packs of ten or twelve, but, unless molested, never injuring man. If molested, however, they attacked. Colonel H. Smith relates that the son of a lady of his acquaintance in company with another midshipman of his Majesty's ship *Spartan*, whilst on shore attended by guides and seamen, saw a troop of these feral dogs. The officers fired at them, and the whole pack turned and came bounding toward them. The party ran for the shore; the feral dogs then pursued them no further.

THE FERAL DOG OF SAN DOMINGO.—The figure and the description were brought to Spanish-town, Jamaica, by a French officer taken prisoner when General le Clerc's army endeavoured to escape from the victorious progress of the negroes. It is believed to be a wild hound, of the race formerly used by the Spaniards for their conquests.<sup>2</sup> Except for these notes and a reference by Martin there is very little information.

Feral dogs are easily reclaimed, and are delighted to again associate with mankind. A story is told of one of the Turkish feral dogs, spoken to kindly by a traveller, following him for several days during his journeys, and, when exhausted by want of food, too weak to follow farther or return, watching his unsympathetic acquaintance, to whom he wished to offer service, disappear into the distance.

<sup>1</sup> Visiting St. Helena in October 1638, Peter Munday notes "Greatt store of Dogges att St. Helena. Att our first landing, which was in lemmon vally (soe called because it leadeth uppe to some lemmon trees thatt stand by a little Rillett that cometh Downe in the said vally), as wee were going upp in itt, wee saw a kennel of Dogges of sundry sorts, aboutt 15 or 16, all white. For oughtt wee could see, who, as soone as they had espide us, tooke right uppe against the steepy rocky hill. Some Dogges, att First lost or run away, have since encreased, and in tyme will Diminish the Cattle." (Hakluyt Society.)

<sup>2</sup> Colonel H. Smith.



### CHAPTER III

## DOGS IN ANCIENT RELIGIONS, FOLKLORE, AND LEGEND—EGYPTIAN, ASSYRIAN, AND EARLY CHINESE TIMES

### DOGS IN ANCIENT RELIGIONS, FOLKLORE, AND LEGEND

“ONCE upon a time when the world was young, to each and to every kind of animal a duty was assigned. The dog and cat were relieved of menial duty, because of the faithfulness of the one and the cleanliness of the other, and a written document was given them in attestation thereof, and the dog took charge of it. He buried it where he kept his stock of old bones, but this privilege of exemption so roused the envy of the horse, ass, and ox, that they bribed the rat to burrow underground and destroy the charter. Since the loss of this document, the dog has been liable, on account of his carelessness, to be tied or chained up by his master, and the cat has never forgiven him.”<sup>1</sup>

It is only possible to give a representative selection of the place of the dog in religion and folklore, as a full account of the subject would take up more space than the subject warrants in a book of this description.<sup>2</sup>

The dog constantly figures in religious rites, and among primitive peoples was considered to have divine attributes, survivals of such early beliefs being found in civilised communities. Dogs were dedicated as special sacrifices to the War-god among the Huron Indians; and if a man dreamed that he had been captured by enemies, the dreamer was thereupon ceremonially burnt with torches, and, given facility to escape, ran and seized a dog kept ready for this purpose. Then, with this dog thrown over his shoulder, he went through the wigwams carrying the dog as a sacred offering to the War-god in lieu of himself. The dog was then killed and eaten.

This idea of substitution runs through many ceremonies. At Fazolglou a dog was killed instead of the king, who himself represented the dying god. In the same way the dog is the “scapegoat” to which sins and also illness can be transferred, for diseases and evil influence are commonly conceived by savages as persons or spirits. In Dahomey, the Serpent-god Danbe was carried round in a hammock, his bearers killing dogs, pigs, and fowls on their way, thus ridding the community of its ills and diseases.

The Votiaks held a ceremony during an epidemic when every father of a family went “with a stick in his hand into all the rooms of his house, and beating about him at every stroke,” would say, “Get out of my house.” This done, an arrow was shot into a dog or cat of the village; “which, when killed, they dragged with a cord to the place of sacrifice, always going down the stream to it, then, leaving the animal with the cord fastened to it, everyone threw his stick into the river.”<sup>3</sup>

On one day of the year the Bhotiyas of Jukar (W. Himalayas) take a dog, intoxicate him, and having fed him with sweetmeats, lead him round the village and let him loose. They then chase him with sticks and stones, and after this no disease or misfortune can visit the village during the year.<sup>4</sup>

Archdeacon Gray describes the Taoist ceremony performed for the expulsion of spirits inducing suicide. “After the priest has made a great many signs and

<sup>1</sup> “Animal Folklore” (Hanawar, Palestine).

<sup>2</sup> See also Greek and Roman translations, Appendixes I–VI, and Dogs of China and Japan, p. 613.

<sup>3</sup> Tooke.

<sup>4</sup> E. T. Atkinson, J.G.F.



performed the kow-tow, he receives from the inmates a small black dog, together with a chopper and a block ; and when he has severed its tail from its body with a sharp blow, the wretched animal, with a cord round its neck, is led, or rather dragged, piteously howling, by the head of the family into every nook and corner of the house. It is then taken to the front door and kicked into the open street. The bleeding and yelping cur is supposed to frighten away the evil spirits, and to pursue them in their flight through the streets. By way of purifying the house, the priest then walks through it with a brass pan containing a burning mixture made of sulphur, saltpetre, and other inflammable ingredients."<sup>1</sup>

When the cattle of the Huguls, a pastoral people of the Carpathians, are sick, and the owner attributes the sickness to witchcraft, he throws glowing coals into a vessel of water and then pours the water on a black dog ; thus the sickness passes into the dog and the cattle are made whole.<sup>2</sup>

A Northamptonshire, Devonshire, and Welsh cure for a cough is to put a hair of the patient's head between two slices of buttered bread and give the sandwich to a dog.

In Oldenburg, if you are sick of a fever, you set a bowl of sweet milk before a dog and say " Good luck ! you hound ! May you be sick and I be sound ! " The milk must be drunk alternatively with the dog, three times : the dog takes the fever.

Among the Indians of British Columbia were two sects, one cannibals and the other dog-eaters, but both indulged in similar rites, in the course of which they ate human or dog's flesh respectively, each sect believing themselves to be inspired—the one by a cannibal spirit and the other by a dog-eating spirit. Probably this substitution arose from the fact that the dog is man's closest animal companion, making intelligible the exchange one for the other. In Hindu countries, however, the dog is believed to be a man who has committed a sin, and you will hear a woman say to a dog, " Poor fellow, what hast thou done to deserve this ? " <sup>3</sup>

Dogs were used to cause or stop rain. Among the high mountains of Japan there is a district where, when rain is needed, a party of villagers goes to the bed of a mountain torrent headed by a priest leading a black dog. They tether the dog to a stone and shoot at it with guns and bows. When its blood spatters the rocks the peasants pray to the divinity of the storm to send a shower at once to cleanse the spot. The dog must be black, representing the sky black with clouds. (Cf. Same idea among Annamites.)

In Kumaon a way of stopping rain is to pour hot oil in the left ear of a dog. Indra hears his howls of pain and, out of pity for the sufferer, stops the rain.

The Corn-spirit was often a dog, and interesting survivals in common speech are

<sup>1</sup> J. H. Gray, " China."

<sup>2</sup> R. F. Kaindi.

<sup>3</sup> " At Stravasti, Buddha entered into the house of one Tu-T'i, who was absent from home. Upon the divan a white dog was eating from a bowl. At sight of Buddha it leapt to the ground and barked at the Holy One. Buddha said, ' Miser, how deep is thy degradation ! ' The dog betook itself to a corner in dejection. When Tu-T'i returned and saw his dog so sad, he asked the cause of its misery. The servants replied, ' Buddha has done this.' Tu-T'i was angered, and asked Buddha for an explanation. Buddha said, ' I did but tell him the truth. This animal is thy dead father. Born a dog, as punishment for his avarice, he still guards his riches. Order him to reveal the treasure which he has hidden, even from thee, his son.' Tu-T'i returned to his home and said to the dog, ' As thou hast been my father in thy previous incarnation, all of that which was yours is now mine by right. Show me thy hidden treasure.' The dog crept beneath the divan and began scratching the earth. There Tu-T'i dug, and discovered great treasures. Forthwith he was converted to Buddha." (L. Wiegner, " Bouddhisme.")

to be found in France, Germany, and in Slavonic countries. In the latter when the wind blows through the corn the peasants say, "The mad dog is in the corn," or "The big dog is there," and in North-east France the phrase especially at harvest-time is, when a harvester cannot keep up with the reaper, "The white dog has passed near him," or "The white bitch has bitten him."

In the Vosges the harvest-May is called the "Dog of the Harvest." The harvest-May is a large branch or sometimes a whole tree decked with ears of corn, which is carried with the harvest to the house or barn and there hung up till the following year's harvest. The Spirit of the Corn is, by this phrase, identified as a dog, which is further shown by the saying that the person who cuts the last handful of hay or corn "kills the dog." In the neighbourhood of Verdun when the men go to finish the reaping they say, "They are going to kill the dog"; while at Epinal the phrase runs, "We will kill the Wheat-dog, or the Rye-dog, or the Potato-dog," according to the crop to be gathered. (See Sir J. G. Frazer, "Spirits of the Corn and the Wild.")

In these cases the dog is a beneficent spirit, and the actual cutting of the corn—"killing the dog"—corresponds to the ritual killing of the god, common in many parts of the world at different times.

Whilst actual dog-worship was uncommon, according to Raffles the Kalangs worshipped a red dog, and each family kept one in the house; but other writers state that wooden images, shaped like dogs, were worshipped, and a thousand of these wooden dogs were burnt after the death of a person.

The Harranians considered dogs brothers of the mystic, and therefore to be sacred.

The Ot Danums bury the dogs near the houses, place rice and salt in the graves, rice also being strewn on the grave, as an inducement to the gods to send the souls of the dogs to heaven. The Tunguses take an oath by the dog, drinking its blood.

In ancient Persia the "dog gaze" was part of the funeral ceremony, in which a brown "four-eyed dog" or a white dog with yellow ears was brought to look at the corpse three times, and was led three times back over the road traversed by the corpse.

Pythagoras, who founded a new sect in Crotona in Southern Italy, on his return from Egypt, taught, with the Egyptian philosophers, that the soul after death went into various lower animals. On the death of a favourite disciple, he would hold a dog to the mouth of the dead man, to receive the departing spirit. He thought that there was no animal more able to perpetuate the virtues of the deceased than the dog.<sup>1</sup>

Sagard, one of the early Jesuit missionaries in Canada, stated that "the Indians say that the souls of dogs follow the road of souls . . . the souls of the dogs serve the souls of their masters in the other life; the souls of men go hunting with the souls of their tools and arms."

Franklin, in his "Second Journey to the Shores of the Polar Sea," under the date November 1826, gives the legend of the Dog-rib Indians. The first man on earth was Chapewee. He met with troubles, and a forbidden fruit. Then a serious quarrel in the Chapewee family caused the tribe to divide. One Indian fixed his residence on the borders of the lake, taking a dog with him, heavy in whelp. In due time the puppies were littered and the Indian tied them up when going out to fish to prevent their straying. He had often heard, on his return, the sound of children talking and

<sup>1</sup> Supposed by some authorities to be the reason why the Jewish people held the dog in disfavour (see also Dogs in Biblical Times, p. 56).



playing; but on entering the tent only perceived the puppies tied as usual. His curiosity excited by the sounds he had heard, he determined to watch, and one day, pretending to go out and fish according to custom, he instead concealed himself in a convenient place. Shortly afterwards he heard children's voices, and rushing into the tent beheld beautiful children sporting and laughing, and the dog-skins lying by their side. He picked up the skins and threw them into the fire, and so the children, retaining their human forms, grew up, and were the ancestors of the Dog-rib tribe.

Tooke, in his volumes on Russia, gives the following information as to customs of the people. The Laplanders offered bones as sacrifices to the gods at holy places, believing that they would re-clothe the bones with flesh. Occasionally a dog would devour a bone so offered in sacrifice to a divinity. The dog was at once killed; and the bone that he had eaten was replaced by the corresponding one of his own skeleton.

The Tschonwasches after an interment hold a number of feasts on the top of the grave; and in October it was customary to hold a banquet on the tombs of deceased relatives. They then killed a sheep, ox, or horse, and having banqueted on the flesh left a piece of flesh and a little beer on the tomb. "The dogs, as proxies for the dead, regaled themselves on these provisions."<sup>1</sup>

But the dog in his divine or semi-divine character may be of a less beneficial nature. The ancient Hindoos believed in a dog-demon of epilepsy. "When a boy fell down in a fit, his father or some other competent person wrapped him in a net and carried him into the hall, not through the door but through a hole, made for the purpose, in the roof. Then, taking up some earth at the spot where the people gambled, he sprinkled the spot with water, cast dice on it, and laid the boy on his back on the dice. After that he prayed to the dog-demon saying, "Doggy, let him loose! Reverence be to thee, barker and bender!"

In Europe the best-known tradition of the demon-dog is connected with witchcraft. The usual form in which the "familiar imp" of the witch appeared was that of a black dog, though it varied in size. The dog-demon's status was higher than that of the familiar which took the shape of a cat; the latter usually remained as an inmate of the witch's house at all times, whereas the dog only appeared on special occasions, usually at the crises of the witch's career. Frequently in the reports of trials and in these unfortunate women's confessions after torture is found that the devil came to them in the form of a dog. Examples of such dogs are "Jarmara" and "Vinegar Tom."<sup>2</sup>

There were others which, though supernatural, were of a more "doggy" nature. The "Wild Huntsman" heard passing through the air was accompanied by a pack of hounds, a legend found in slightly varying forms all over Northern Europe. In Sweden the lonely wanderer on a deserted heath will suddenly see above him a dark shape accompanied by "a leash of black, fire-breathing hounds," in pursuit of some unseen quarry; while a similar apparition appears to the benighted traveller in Central Europe. In the West of England the tradition is widespread. "A tall figure with a hunting-pole" leads over the moors of Dartmoor a whole pack of "hell-hounds," known in Devonshire<sup>3</sup> as "wish-hounds," and in Wales as "spiritual hunting-dogs." The Rev. Edmund Jones in the latter half of the eighteenth century gives a long description of these apparitions, from which it seems that these dogs were,

<sup>1</sup> Did the dogs drink the beer? Probably biped proxies arrived later.

<sup>2</sup> Matthew Hopkins, "Witch Finder."

<sup>3</sup> See Appendix XVIII, Phantom Dogs of the West of England.



in some way, prophetic, and rather of the nature of the "Banshee." He relates that "before the light of the Gospel prevailed, there were in Carmarthenshire and elsewhere often heard before burials, what by some were called 'Cwn Anwn' (dogs of Hell); by others 'Cwn benedith en Mammau' (dogs of the fairies); and by some 'Cwn wybir' (sky-dogs)." The nearer they were to man the less noisy were their voices—"like that of small beetles" (beagles?); and the farther away they were, the louder their voices became. Sometimes the voice of a great hound could be heard among them, "like that of a bloodhound—a deep hollow voice." The name of "sky-dogs" was given them because they were usually heard in the air, and, according to Mr. Jones they were often heard to pass by the eaves of houses before the death of one of the family. "An acquaintance of mine," he asserts, "a man perfectly firm to tell the truth, being out at night, heard a hunting in the air, and as if they overtook something which they hunted after, and, being overtaken, made a miserable cry among them, and seemed to escape; but, overtaken again, made the same dismal cry; and again escaped, and followed after till out of hearing."

These "hunting-dogs," though only to be heard when travelling in the air, became visible occasionally when on the ground, when they appeared singly, as the following stories of Mr. Jones testify. He writes:

"Mr. D. W., of Pembrokeshire, a religious man, and far from fear and superstition, gave me the following account—that, as he was travelling by himself through a field called the Cot-moor, where two stones are set up, called the 'Devil's Nags,' at some distance from each other, where evil spirits are said to haunt and trouble passengers, he was thrown over the hedge and was never well afterwards. Mr. W. went with a strong fighting mastiff dog with him; but suddenly he saw another mastiff dog coming towards him. He thought to set his own dog at it; but his dog seemed much frightened and would not go near it. Mr. W. then stooped down to take up a stone, thinking to throw at it; but suddenly there came a fire round it, so that he could perceive it had a white tail, and a white snip down his nose, and saw his teeth grinning at him. He then knew it was one of the infernal dogs of Hell; one of those kind of dogs against which David prayeth in Ps. xxii. 20, 'Deliver my darling from the power of the dog.'"

We must suppose that the dog thereupon disappeared, as we hear no more of this incident, and no harm appears to have resulted to Mr. D. W. in consequence of this startling *rencontre*.<sup>1</sup>

Another story relates a similar occurrence, but again, though the dog was audible as well as visible, its power seems to have become confined to inspiring fear without the capacity of doing bodily harm. For the reverend gentleman tells us that "as R. A. was going to Langhorn town one evening on some business, it being late, her mother dissuaded her from going, telling her it was late, and that she would be benighted, likely she might be terrified by an apparition, which was both seen and heard by many, and by her father among others, at a place called Pant-y-Madog, which was a pit by the side of the lane leading to Langhorn. On coming back before night (though it was rather dark) she passed by the place, but not without thinking of the apparition. But being a little beyond this pit, in a field where there was a little rill

<sup>1</sup> In Chinese mythology an animal in dog shape but striped like a panther, with horns on its head and a voice of a barking dog, haunted certain hills. Whenever it appeared, dogs became abundant. (Shan. hai King.)

of water, and just going to pass it, having one foot stretched over it, and looking before her, she saw something like a great dog (one of the dogs of Hell) coming towards her. Being within four or five yards of her, it stopped and sat down, and set up such a scream, so horrible, so loud, and so strong, that she thought the earth moved under her; with which she fainted and fell down. She did not awake and go to the next house, which was but the length of one field from the place, until about midnight; having one foot wet in the rill of water which she was going to pass when she saw the apparition."<sup>1</sup>

In certain parts of Wales it was believed that the colour of the dog was significant: if a white dog appeared near the house of a dying person, the soul was to be saved; but if the dog were black, the soul must go to everlasting torment.

Another similar omen of death were "Gabriel's Hounds." These, like the Welsh Cwn Anwn, fly through the air towards the house of death and bark two or three times as the sick person breathes his last. They are supposed to be the wandering ghosts of sinners chased by the Angel Gabriel's hounds. They are also called Gabbie Ratched, whilst in some parts of England the "Gabriel Hounds" are believed to be the souls of unbaptised children who hover round the house when their parents are dying.

Allied to the superstition of the Wild Huntsman and "the spiritual hunting-dogs" is the legend of the Maisne Hellequin. Of this Mr. R. J. King writes in his "Sketches and Studies" that it was "common to the great woods of Northern France and Alsace," and "was evidently the result of some union of the popular creed with the monk's hatred of the wild life and recreations of the world he had abandoned. The "maisne," or household, of the evil Knight Hellequin was a great company of knights and barons, whose number was constantly on the increase, and who were condemned, as the punishment of ill-deeds done in the body, to wander perpetually through forests and solitary places until Doomsday. Here they were frequently encountered following the chase as when alive, but their horses and dogs were demons in animal form, and the most wicked among them was compelled to take the place of the hunted animal. They hunted, too, in the armour they had worn in life; but helmet, sword, and hauberk had all become of such intolerable weight that no ordinary mortal could so much as lift them."

Of a less sinister nature are the dogs accompanying heroes of legend. They approach more nearly to the domestic natural dog, though in size and strength more suitably heroic. King Arthur's dog "Covall," the print of whose paw may be seen on a stone to this day, is one of these. Worthy to stand beside him are "Hodain" and "Peticru," the hounds of Sir Tristram, who supplied Yseult and their master with venison when the lovers were in hiding. Fingal's dog "Bran" must have been second to none in size and strength when we consider the size of "Bran's Pillars," huge rocks to which Fingal tied the dog while he fought the chieftain of the North. Perhaps the best-known dog in British legend is Llewellyn's faithful watch-dog, "Gelert" (see *Irish Wolfhound*, p. 223). The great antiquity of this tale has been pointed out by several commentators, and Sir George Dasent, in the introduction to his "Popular Tales from the Norse," writes:

"Nor let any pious Welchman be shocked if we venture to assert that Gellert, that famous hound upon whose last resting-place the traveller comes as he passes

<sup>1</sup> King, "Sketches and Studies."



down the lovely vale of Gwynant, is a mythical dog, and never sniffed the fresh breeze in the forest of Snowdon, nor saved his master's child from ravening wolf. This, too, is a primæval story, told with many variations. Sometimes the foe is a wolf, sometimes a bear, sometimes a snake. This story, like many others, came from the East. It is found in the 'Hitopadesa,' in Pilpay's 'Fables,' in the Arabic original of 'The Seven Wise Masters'—that famous collection of stories which illustrate a step-dame's calumny and hate—and in many mediæval versions of those originals. Thence it passed into the Latin 'Gesta Romanorum,' where, as well as in the English version published by Sir Frederick Madden, it may be read as a service rendered by a faithful hound against a snake."

Nor is the hero of the story always a dog: in some versions it is an ichneumon, in others a weasel, a pole-cat, and an otter; but these are evidently only variations of the same legend as the underlying idea, and the main sequence of events is in all cases the same.

Another story, not quite so widespread but yet with several variants, is that which is best known as told of the Dog of Montargis, as follows: The dog's master, Aubry de Montdidier, was murdered by his companion, Macaire; from which time the dog showed invincible hostility to the murderer. Finally, owing to the dog's efforts, the murderer was brought to justice, and, after the dog had shown the place where its master's body was buried in the forest of Bondy, Charles VI granted the ordeal of battle to test Macaire's guilt. In this ordeal the dog won, and killed Macaire, thus proving its case and avenging its master's death. This is supposed to have occurred in 1371, but the story is very much older than that, and is found in many countries, assigned to various periods, and may be regarded as one of the traditional tales illustrating the fidelity and sagacity of dogs, of which the origin *may* have been an actual incident, but has passed into the general mass of myth and legend.

Among other characters of whom the tale is told is Hadji Aivad, the companion of the Turkish Karagenz, who corresponds to our Punch, and may possibly be the figure from which the latter is derived, as it is probable that the story of Punch and Judy, and the Harlequinade, which we adopted from Italy, was there first developed from an Eastern original. Hadji Aivad's dog would therefore be the ancestor of Punch's dog "Toby" of immortal memory, and no dog could hope for greater fame.

Another dog held in honour in the East, where to-day the species as a whole, except for the Saluki, suffers from the reputation of the pariah or scavenging dog, is "Kitmer," the hound of the Seven Sleepers. In the Christian form of this legend no dog appears, but in the Mohammedan version "Kitmer" is the guardian of the seven noble youths of Ephesus, whom he is said to have watched over for three hundred and nine years without sleep or food. As a reward for this service he has his place in Paradise beside Balaam's Ass and the Camel on which Mohammed made his famous flight from Mecca. "Kitmer's" name written on letters which have to cross the sea preserves them from loss, and the most opprobrious phrase that can be applied to a miser is that "he would not throw a bone to the dog of the Seven Sleepers."

#### MAGIC AND THE USE OF DOG'S FLESH

After feasting on a dog, the Dakōtas carefully collect the bones, scrape, wash, and bury them, "partly, as it is said, to testify to the dog-species, that in feasting upon



one of their number no disrespect was meant to the species itself, and partly also from a belief that the bones of the animal will rise and reproduce another." <sup>1</sup>

When Kansas Indians were going to war, a feast was held in the chief's hut, the principal dish being dog's flesh, because, said the Indians, an animal so brave that he will let himself be cut in pieces in defence of his master must needs inspire valour.<sup>2</sup> On extraordinary occasions the bravest warriors of the Dakōtas performed a dance at which they devoured the livers of dogs raw and warm, to acquire the sagacity and bravery of the dog. The animals were thrown to them alive, killed, and cut open, the livers extracted, cut into strips, and hung on a pole. Each dancer grabbed at one strip of liver with his teeth, chewing it and swallowing it as he danced. On no account must the hands be used; only the medicine-man enjoyed that privilege. Women did not join in the dance.<sup>3</sup>

Men of the Buru and Aru Islands, East Indies, eat the flesh of dogs in order to be bold and nimble in war.<sup>4</sup>

At the bear festival of the Gilyaks, after the bear is killed, dogs are sacrificed in couples, a male and a female. Before being strangled, they are fed and invited to go to their lord on the highest mountain, to change their skins, and to return the next year in the form of bears. The soul of the bear goes to the same lord, the lord of the primeval forest; the bear's soul goes away laden with the offerings that have been made to it, and attended by the souls of the dogs, and also by the souls of the sacred whittled sticks which figure prominently in the subsequent festival.<sup>5</sup>

#### DOG CHARMS (CHINESE)

"It is believed by some of this people that pieces of yellow paper having stamped upon them the head of a dog and the head of a buffalo or one of these heads, if used in a certain way, are very efficacious in causing one to become sick and stupid or obedient to the will of another, and even to die." Doolittle examined some of these charms. "We were shown some eight or ten bunches of yellow paper, each bunch consisting of 22 sheets about 7 or 8 inches long and 2½ inches wide."

They were used by putting into tea (after burning, as ashes) or rubbed on the hands, on the clothing, head, etc. The victim must not be aware as to what is occurring, or the charms lose their value.

Occasionally, which is most unfortunate, the charm recoiled on the individual who was using it or on to some other persons who happened to be near at the time.

"A certain yellow charm, having dogs' heads stamped on it," was said to be used by ladies of easy virtue desiring a rich guest to return to them. The ashes of the charm are mixed in his drink, or the charm is burnt after his departure and the lady calls "upon it as a dog to follow him wherever he may go," so as to ensure his return at some future time.<sup>6</sup>

#### DOG SUPERSTITIONS

##### *Unlucky*

"It is unlucky to see a drowned dog." (Yorkshire.)

"If a dog leap on a hut, it is a bad omen for the occupant." (Kaffir.)

<sup>1</sup> Keating.

<sup>2</sup> "Nouveaux Voyages."

<sup>3</sup> H. R. Schoolcraft, "Indian Tribes."

<sup>4</sup> J. G. F. Riedel.

<sup>5</sup> L. Sternberg.

<sup>6</sup> Justus Doolittle, "Social Life of the Chinese" (1867).

"To give away a dog brings bad luck."

"If a dog runs three times across your path, it is a bad omen." (Turkish.)

"If you step on a dog you will lose your position."

"Unlucky to meet a barking dog early in the morning."

"If a dog jumps on the cradle in which a baby is lying, the child will have extremely bad luck all its life."

"To encounter a mongrel dog is to expect sickness in the family."

"If you watch a water-dog swim, you will have domestic troubles."

"If a dog runs between a woman's legs, her husband is going to beat her."

"Unlucky for a dog to pass between a couple who are going to be married."

"If a dog runs between friends, the friendship will soon be over."

"If a strange dog tracks up a newly scrubbed porch, the family will soon move to smaller and less comfortable quarters."

"To meet a dog with its whelps is unlucky."

"For a sleeping dog to bark is a sign of coming misfortune."

"Never pat a black dog before noon, or you will quarrel before night."

"If a dog follows you on a rainy night it means ill-luck."

"To kick a dog will cause the knees to grow too large." (Madagascar.)

### *Lucky*

"If you meet a mastiff and it makes friends with you, you will be introduced to someone who will be a good friend."

"It is lucky to be eaten by dogs, because it means you will drive a fine team of dogs in the next world." (Kamchatka.)

"Wish on a spotted coach-dog, and, if you do not see it again, you will get your wish."

"It is a good omen to be followed by a stray dog if it comes of its own accord."

"It is a good omen if a dog approaches a sick person."

"If a strange dog follows you wagging its tail, you will receive a letter from a valued friend."

"The coming of a dog indicates future prosperity. Many believe that if a strange dog comes and remains with one, it is an omen of good to his family, indicating that he will become more wealthy. Some try to account for the existence of this sentiment by the remark that the dog knows beforehand where he will obtain enough to eat." (Doolittle, "Social Life of Chinese," 1867.)

### *Howling of Dogs*

"Dogs howl when they see Azrael, the Angel of Death, passing by." (Persian.)

"Hela, Goddess of Death, though invisible to mortal eyes, showed herself to dogs, causing them to howl." (Scandinavian.)

"The wind comes from the direction in which a dog howls." (Scottish.)

"A dog howling towards Heaven presages a disaster by fire."

"A dog howls when it sees coffins in the air."

"The coming corpse will be brought from the quarter towards which a dog howls."

"If a dog howls twice only, it foretells the death of a man, three times the death of a woman." (Southern Negro.)

"To stop a dog howling at night, turn your shoes upside down." (Persia.)

"To stop a dog howling, take off your left shoe, spit upon the sole, place it on the ground upside-down and put your foot on the place you spat upon." (Staffordshire and Norfolk.)

#### MISCELLANEOUS

"A dog's nose is cold because Noah used it to stop a leak."

"Noah's Ark was so full that the dog had to stand at the door with its nose poked out. For forty days and nights it rained on his nose and then it froze ; that is why the dog's nose is cold."

"Dogs will never bite or disturb anyone who carries the heart or liver of a dog in his pocket."

"It is not safe to ask questions of a dog, because he might answer, and the interrogator would die."

"If a dog dies under your house, you will soon move to another."

"The house where the chain-dog was burned to death will soon be on fire again."

"A girl who cannot endure a dog will never get a good husband."

"To keep a dog at home, place a few hairs from the end of his tail under your door-step."

"A dog coming into the house with a straw on its tail is the sign of a stranger."

"Dogs rubbing their noses on the floor is a sign of windy weather."

"Dogs wallowing in the dust indicate bad weather."

"If three dogs chase a rabbit or hare they cannot kill it."

"To recall a lost dog, whistle for him three times through a knot-hole."

"To cure a dog bite, use the hair of the dog that bit you."

"If you jump over a little dog, you will have nightmare."

"When a dog hammers with its paw on the floor, it is hammering coffin-nails, and a death will occur." (Swedish.)

"Not even the fiercest dog can harm you if you make out of tin an image of a dog with its head erected towards its tail and say over it, 'I bind all dogs by this image that they neither raise their heads nor bark.'"

"A dog with two yellow or round white spots above its eyes can see spirits and drive the evil ones away."

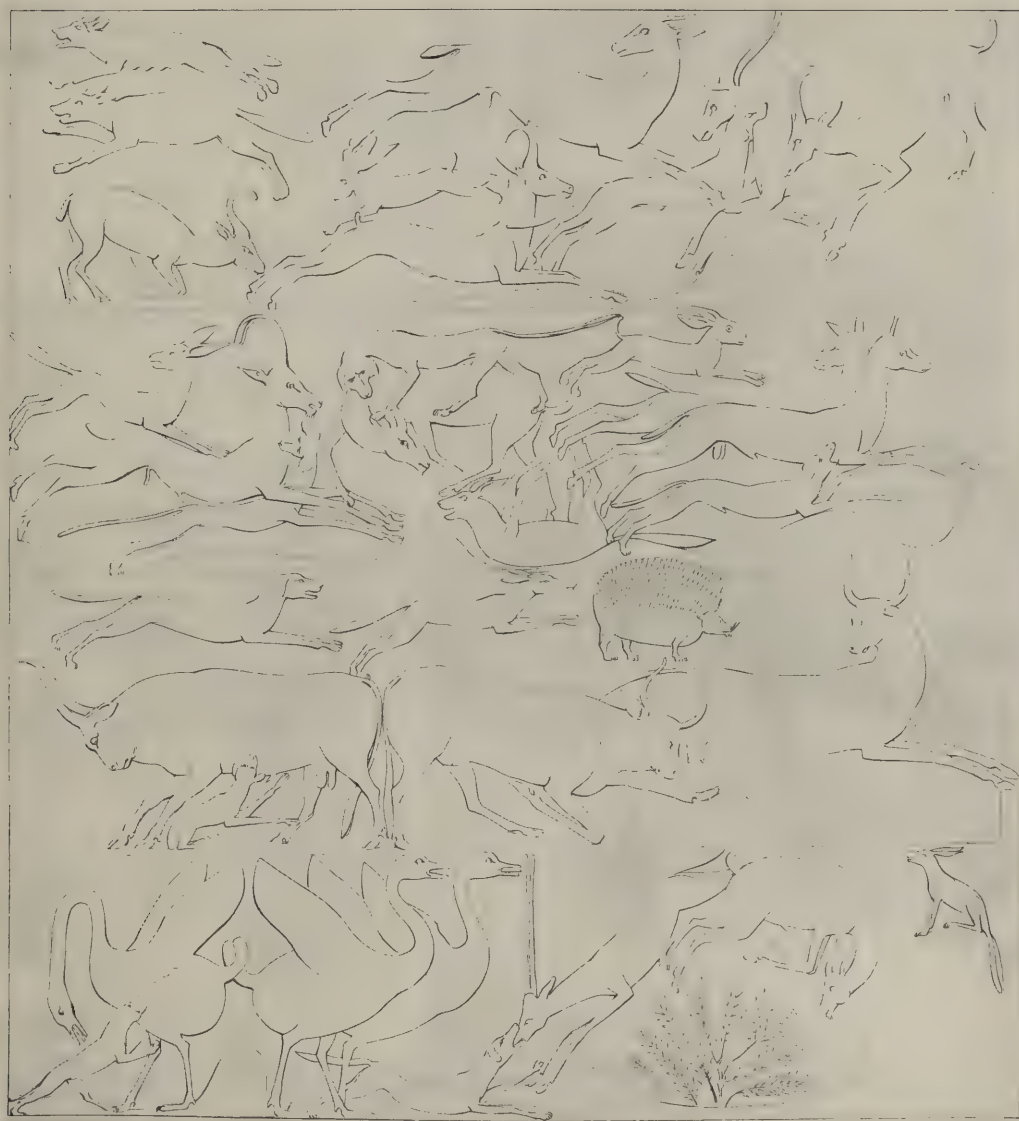
"To prevent dogs going mad in summer, beat them thoroughly in February." (Turkish.)

"To get dog's teeth, handle teeth recently drawn from another, or knocked out by accident."

#### THE USE OF A DOG WITH THAT STRANGE PLANT THE BAARA

"In times past (says Josephus) there grew a root in Judæa called 'Baara,' having the colour and brightness of a flame, which shone at night like a lamp, and was of so marvellous a nature that it slew immediately those who thought to touch it or pluck it, unless it were first anointed with the blood or the water of a woman ; and even with that it was not safe, for it slew all who touched it in such sort that, having had experience of its poison, they were constrained to tie a dog to the plant, which, wishing to follow his master, uprooted it by his efforts. This root had a most marvellous and prodigious virtue, for after it had been uprooted, it could be handled without

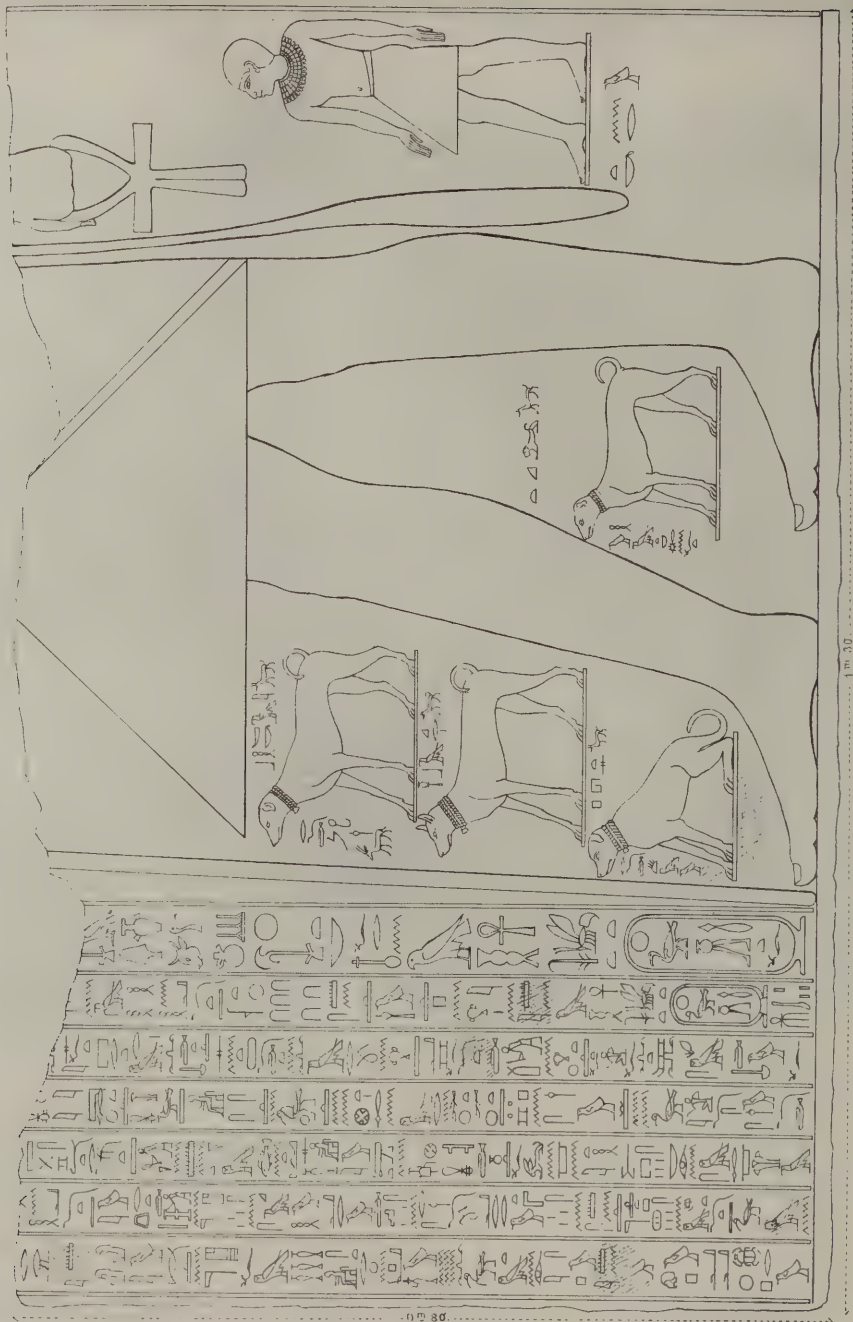




*A. Del. et Sculp.*

DOGS OF THE GREYHOUND AND SALUKI TYPE ATTACKING GAME. A bas-relief from the tombs at Thebes, about 1450 B.C.  
48a]

THE  
FOUR DOGS OF ANTEF-  
AA



THE FOUR DOGS ON THE LOWER PORTION OF THE LIMESTONE STELE OF ANTEF-AA. XIIIth Dynasty, about 2000 B.C.



DOGS AS CHILDREN'S TOYS AND ORNAMENTS, OF VARIOUS EGYPTIAN DYNASTIES. (*In the British Museum.*)  
 (1st Row) left to right. A STUDY OF A PUPPY. PROBABLY A PENDANT. A MODEL OF A "TERRIER," OR  
 GREYHOUND CROSS. (2nd Row) left. PROBABLY A MASTIFF PUPPY; right. A DOG'S HEAD. (3rd Row)  
 left. DOG WITH TAIL CURLED TIGHTLY ON BACK; right. DOG OF A HEAVY GREYHOUND TYPE EATING  
 A CALF'S HEAD. (4th Row) left. PROBABLY A POMERANIAN. The frill below the neck is distinctly  
 marked; right. PROBABLY A POMERANIAN TYPE. Modelled in blue glaze ware. (*Found at Alexandria.*)  
 (5th Row) left. A MALTESE DOG; right. A PUPPY OF A HEAVY BREED.





DOG MODELS. Circa 200 A.D. (Egyptian.) (*Top*) DATE UNKNOWN. (*Centre*) POSSIBLY A CHOW OR A THIBETAN DOG. (*Bottom*) left. A DOG, TYPE UNKNOWN; right. DOG OF ESQUIMAUX OR POMERANIAN TYPE. *British Museum.*  
[48d

danger, and, moreover, hung round the neck of obsessed persons or demoniacs and those possessed of the devil, it cured them," etc., etc.<sup>1</sup>

In ancient Egypt, Babylonian and Biblical times, dogs were highly domesticated, and we can be sure were not, as often stated, semi-domesticated jackals or wolves. It is quite possible that they were occasionally crossed with these "untrue" dogs, and that tame wolves and jackals were also used in hunting.

The very earliest representations of dogs in Egypt are the ceremonial objects discovered some years ago at the ancient *Hierakonpolis* now known as Gebelen (i.e. two mountains) situated about 40 miles to the south-west of Thebes. Among other scenes they represent incidents of the chase, in which dogs are to be seen attacking wild animals. The best of these objects are now in the Ashmolean Museum at Oxford, and at Cairo, but the British Museum possesses casts. They date from the earliest Archaic period, 4400-4000 B.C., and are made of green slate; but for what ceremonial purpose they were used is not clear.

In Egypt dogs were very much as they are to-day and doubtlessly were kept pure. Later the Egyptian dogs were introduced into other countries.

It is significant that definite types of dogs are depicted over and over again in the Tombs not only of one period, but in those separated by great numbers of years. These we can, therefore, consider native breeds. But there are others again, depicted only at a later period, and then but very occasionally, which may be considered either as novelties or rarities, either introduced from elsewhere, or types which had been present but were not considered sufficiently interesting or popular to be deposited in the Tombs. There is also the possibility that these occasional dogs resulted from the breeder's art.

Rosellini shows (Plate 6) dogs of various colours. No. 4 has brown spots on white; No. 5, black dog with white legs, throat, etc.; No. 6, brown dog with white under parts. (See also Plate 7 and Appendix XXIII.)

As people to-day give their dogs names, such as "Jock," etc., the Egyptian people gave their dogs names such as "Salekai," "Xabesu," "Menmanfnahsi," "Snap," "Xafmes," "Akena," "Ken," "Tema." Egyptian children had model dogs as toys, some of which are shown on Plate II.

Though the dog was not universally worshipped, it was held in veneration over the greater part of Egypt, more especially in the city of Cynopolis, where it was treated with divine honours. In this city quantities of provisions were supplied by the inhabitants for the maintenance of the canine population. We read that at one time a civil war raged between them and the natives of Oxyrhynchus, because the latter had killed and eaten dogs, in revenge, let it be said, for the sacrilegious behaviour of the Cynopolites, who had eaten the sacred fish of Oxyrhynchus.

On the death of a dog the household to which it belonged went into mourning, shaving their heads and bodies and rejecting as inedible any food that was present in the house at the time of the death. The body of the dog was properly prepared by the embalmers of animals, wrapped in linen,<sup>2</sup> and deposited in the tomb allotted at public expense, the bystanders beating themselves in token of grief and uttering lamentations in its honour. In every town a graveyard was devoted entirely to the interment of dog-mummies.

<sup>1</sup> *Histoires prodigieuses*, chap. xxiii.

<sup>2</sup> Dog-mummies were often placed in coffins (mostly of cedar wood, though sycamore was also used) in the form of dogs, the eyes of which were reproduced either in paste or obsidian and glass. Specimens may be seen in all large museums.

Enormous numbers of such mummies have not yet been discovered, though at one time many were found at the small town of El Hareib, a little below the modern Manfaloot at Thebes. It would be of value to those interested in canine raciology if a census were made, giving the number of each type of dog found in these cemeteries.

Amongst the mummy-dogs are small terrier-like forms, wearing collars made of leather or metal, moulded to represent leaves.

The food of the people of Lower Egypt depended on the annual overflowing of the Nile, and this phenomenon was awaited with considerable anxiety. The appearance of the Dog Star (Sirius) above the horizon was an omen of the rising waters, and on seeing the star, great feelings of joy and relief were aroused. The people hurriedly removed their sheep from the low-lying lands. The star as a guard faithfully returned each year to warn the people of the coming waters. Its fidelity was dog-like; hence the name it received.

In the "Transactions of the Society of Biblical Archæology" of 1875 is a paper read by Mr. S. Birch, LL.D., the well-known authority on Egyptology. He deals with the Tablet of Antefaa II from the Tomb in the valley of El Assasif of some 2,000 years B.C. The tablet is unfortunately seriously damaged; the upper portion, the body of the King from waist to head, and the first seven lines are missing. It appears that after it was examined by Mariette, some Arabs broke it into pieces to use as milestones. The portion shown here was later re-discovered in the hands of an Arab dealer, and is now in the Cairo Museum, but the rest of it has never been seen again. The King, standing up, is holding in his left hand the symbol of life, and close by him



"BAHAKAA," ALIAS "MAHUT."


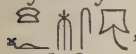
are four dogs, three being placed one above the other and the fourth between his legs. Each of them wears a collar round its neck, and it is significant that the collars vary considerably. In the dogs shown by themselves the letters A, B, C, D are added to save confusion. Commencing with the dog marked A, we find that it is named "Bahakaa," alias "Mahut," and is wearing a narrow collar of a single width, tied in front. It has by it wording which signifies "white antelope." This probably refers to the colour and to the swiftness of this particular hound. It has pendant ears, and, as Mr. Birch states, resembles to a marked extent a foxhound. This breed was common and is constantly depicted. Similar dogs appear amidst the tributes of Kush or Ethiopia brought to Thothmes III about 1500 B.C., as represented on the Tomb of Rekhmara at Thebes; and they are again seen in the offerings brought to Rameses II of the year 1266 B.C.

The dog marked B in the illustration takes a lower place to the narrow-collared dog A. It bears the name of "Abakaru," but what this signifies is not clear. The collar is broad, consisting of four bands, and is tied in front. The dog is peculiar in that the face has a marked stop, which the dog A does not possess.



The muzzle is also short and pointed and distinctly fox-like; the ears are pointed and held erect. The tail is curled and comes close to and on the side of the back.

Mr. Birch rightly describes it as resembling the modern Spitz, but it seems to me to have the curiously straight stifles which are similar to those seen in the Chow of to-day. This Spitz or Chow-like dog is similar to the one seen in the Tombs of Cheops of the IVth Dynasty, 3600 B.C., and named by some the "Khufu" dog, and it is of considerable interest that no dog is depicted previous to that date. In the Tombs of 3600 B.C. this Spitz, Esquimaux, or Chow, is shown as a house-dog, attached to the chair

of the master. He was named , "thesem," which means "hound" or "ordinary dog!" Another similar dog is seen under the chair of an officer of the XIIth Dynasty<sup>1</sup> and had the name "Xafmes," , whilst another similar dog, with a cord five times round its neck, of the IVth Dynasty, is at the foot of an officer Ra-Saaf-an, and the inscription tells us that the officer took it into the fields with him.

We meet with it again with another officer, but this time it has no collar, and has the name "Ken—" (the end of the name being erased), and the same breed is pictured elsewhere pursuing animals with a cord on its neck.



"PAHATES," ALIAS "KAMI."

Dynasty. The dog bears a resemblance to the large, heavily built mastiffs shown in the Babylonian carvings (see p. 15).

Between the King's legs is the fourth dog, marked D. It appears to be on guard, because of its position. It is called "Tekar," or "Tekal," suggesting "laying waste," and "destruction," and "cutting off," and this is followed by the word "lord" or "all," and by "under his breath," according to Birch. Though the meaning is somewhat obscure, it possibly describes the deeds that the dog



"ABAKER," OR "ABAKARU."

We have several hunting scenes in which these Spitz-like dogs are in small packs, four held together by leashes around their necks.<sup>2</sup> Their colours varied; some were black-and-liver in colour. One was named "Menemmuf" and another "Nahsi."<sup>3</sup>

The third dog on the monument, marked C, is shown seated, and is, I suggest, of a mastiff type. It is named "Pahates," alias "Kami." The first name is not understood, but the second is translated to mean "black" and doubtlessly alludes to the colour.

Mr. Birch is of opinion that the mastiff was not a native breed, but one brought to Egypt from India, for it is not figured on the Tombs before the IVth

<sup>1</sup> Sharpe, "Egypt. Inscip. F.N." Pl. 87.

<sup>2</sup> Rosellini, in the "Mon Storici."

<sup>3</sup> Negro.

accomplished, or its value as a guard. It would lay waste the enemy and was "lord," or all-important.

It is this dog that Youatt describes, in his work of 1847,<sup>1</sup> as resembling a Dalmatian, but it appears to me to be more of a great Dane and a mastiff cross than the famed carriage-dog. It is significant that this type of dog is rarely, if ever, shown in a hunting scene, suggesting that its main function was the guarding of property.



"TEKAL," OR "TEKAR."  
Teger, according to Budge Eg. Dict. 895.<sup>2</sup>

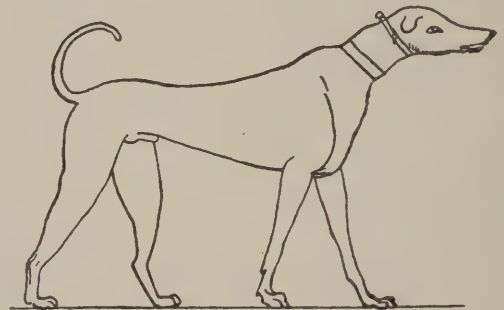
but it is far larger and shorter in the body than the gazelle-hound.

Sir Gardner Wilkinson also shows a pair of hounds, pied in colour and long in body ; one with hanging ears, the other with erect ears, depicted walking slowly but showing unmistakable signs of gazelle- or greyhound.<sup>4</sup> They were certainly of a far slower type than the collared and leashed hound already mentioned above. The way they carry their tail is of special interest, for it is held in the same way as the gazelle-hound of to-day carries this appendage. In fact I think we can feel quite confident that these dogs are the Salukis of the desert.

Another similar dog from the Tombs is given by Rosellini (" Mon. Civ.," xvii. 10).

Sir Gardner Wilkinson shows a seated hound in his book on the Egyptians.<sup>5</sup> It has a broader muzzle, shorter and broader ears, than any I have described. The tail is long, the body mottled black-and-white, and though the likeness is but slight, there certainly appears to be a "foxhound-lurcher" shape in the body. He also gives another variety wearing a collar of coloured beads, one that is rarely depicted in the scenes in the Tombs, though it was employed at an early period (VIth Dynasty) in the chase.<sup>6</sup> The collar suggests that it was easily controllable, or that it was kept as a pet.

We see, too, a dog wearing an exceedingly broad collar, signifying—I suggest—




173

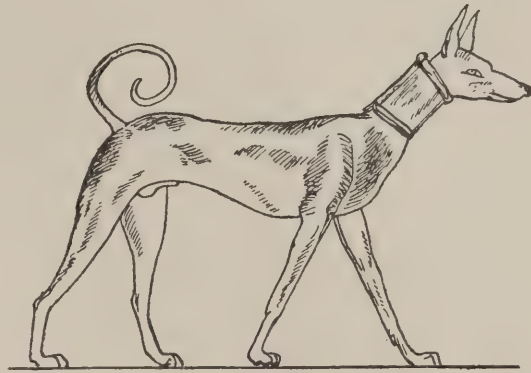
<sup>1</sup> "The Dog." <sup>2</sup> See also On the Name of an Egyptian Dog, Appendix XXIII. <sup>3</sup> Rosellini, in the "Monument Civil," xiii. 5. <sup>4</sup> Plate 6, group 5. <sup>5</sup> Plate 6, dog 10. <sup>6</sup> "Lepsius Denk II. F.N." 96, 107.

more than usual strength: the muzzle is that of a gazelle-hound, but the head is heavier. The extremely long ears are held upright, and we can imagine that the variety contained the blood of, or was perhaps one of the forerunners of, the great Dane as well as greyhound or Saluki. The carriage of this animal is certainly great Dane (174).

Whether the smaller dogs depicted were toy dogs or earth-dogs we do not know, for if the latter they are not shown in action.<sup>1</sup> The illustration is of a very short-legged dog somewhat resembling a dachshund of to-day. The colour of this particular specimen was black-and-liver.

It has a pointed nose, and the ears are held upright. In some the colour is shown to be white with brown spots,<sup>2</sup> or yellow-and-white with red legs.<sup>3</sup> There is also a short, thick-set, spotted dog with a yellow skin,<sup>4</sup> whilst a dog thicker in body and longer in the leg has a curled tail and long pointed muzzle.

In the Egyptian language the hieroglyph , showing a dog walking with upright ears and tail raised and curled, signified "thesem" or "hound," and the female or watch-dog was named "tas-mer" or "as-mut"; and as the same word is used to describe watch-towers in fortifications, it suggests that the thesem or hound was more particularly a guard. Some dogs, again, are represented by the hieroglyph of a dog seated, but, according to Mr. Birch, this may refer to the wild dog and not to the domesticated. The word "au" indicates a particular variety of dog, whilst in referring to dogs the word "unsau" ("wolves") is used to describe it. Mr. Birch suggests that it may allude to a cross from a wolf, though it is quite feasible that the word was used to signify a dog with a wolf-like appearance.



174

There seem to be few stories of early Egyptian times in which dogs are mentioned. But in that of "The Prince of Doom" a dog plays an important part.

This story, written about 1500 B.C., on a papyrus, is unfortunately incomplete. It is the story of a King who desired a son, and prayed to the seven Hathors, the seven cow-goddesses of fate—who heard him and granted his prayer, but added that the son would be killed either by a dog, a serpent, or a crocodile.

In due course the boon was granted. A son arrived, and the King had the baby placed in a high tower, where he remained, spending his babyhood, childhood, and early youth, high up away from dangers of all kinds.

But when this son was grown up to manhood, he craved permission to walk outside the tower, to which the King consented, and it was then that the son saw a dog for the first time. So he begged his father to let him have a dog as a companion, and the father, divided between his fears and forebodings and his love for his son, let

<sup>1</sup> Rosellini, in his "Mon. Civ." xvii. 6.

<sup>2</sup> Plate 6, No. 6.

<sup>3</sup> Plate 6, No. 4.

<sup>4</sup> Rosellini, "Mon. Civ."



love win. And one night, as the boy was asleep, a serpent climbed stealthily up the wall of the tower and obtained entry. But the dog was awake, and the serpent was attacked and promptly killed.

On another day, whilst the Prince was bathing, a crocodile attacked him, but the dog quickly came to his aid, the crocodile hurriedly escaped and . . . but here, unfortunately, the papyrus is torn, and the rest of it is missing.

We are left to wonder whether the King's son outwitted the fates, or did the story, as we suppose, end in that son's death through some unfortunate misadventure in which the dog played an unexpected and unwilling part?

I have read that the variety of the dog mentioned in this story is said to be the first description of a boarhound, but I am informed on good authority that this is not so.

We give elsewhere a translation of a curious letter of the XIXth Dynasty, in which the writer mentions large packs of hounds—200 of the kind called "uau" and 300 more "unsu" (wolves). They stand at the door of his house at the time of his rising out of sleep. They have a breakfast when the amphora is opened. He does not wish to have any of the little dogs or pups of the breed of Nahar Hu, the rogue scribe staying in the house, for it is an annoyance to him. . . . The red long-tailed dog goes at night into the stalls of the hills. He is better than the long-faced dog. He makes no delay in hunting; his face glares like a god, and he delights to do his work.<sup>1</sup>

During the Roman period of Egyptian history, considerable numbers of ornaments were in the shape of dogs (see Plate 12).

#### BABYLONIAN AND ASSYRIAN

About 2000 years B.C., Babylonians built their houses and monuments of mud, on which they carved various scenes of hunting and of war, writing the descriptions in the cuneiform. The Assyrians later copied these works in stone, often carving similar designs in alabaster or aragonite, which is able to resist climatic conditions and has remained little damaged, whilst the original Babylonian walls and monuments have fallen down and entirely decayed.

Whilst only two varieties of dogs appear in these scenes, the mastiff and the greyhound, the bilingual lists mention several other kinds, the water-dog, the earth-dog, the dog of Elam.<sup>2</sup> The mastiff is described as the "chained-up mouth-open dog." The Babylonians used dogs for many and various purposes, as the list below shows.

I have taken the following references to dogs from Meissner's "Babylonien und Assyrien." The pages are given to allow easier reference. The work is written in German, in two volumes.

Dogs used in lion hunting. (Vol. i, p. 74.)

Used for driving sheep, etc., to graze. (Vol. i, p. 214.)

The pariah dog—dogs used as watch-dogs. (Vol. i, p. 221.)

Kept on a chain—greyhound picture on p. 222. Dogs kept in such numbers by the Persian satrap in Babylonia, that four large villages in the plain were appointed to supply them with food; on the average these dogs received from 1-2 sila of bread daily (about 0.4-0.8 litre). (Vol. i, p. 222.)

<sup>1</sup> Godwin's translation (partly re-worded) (p. 3).

<sup>2</sup> Houghton.

Models of dogs in clay. (Vol. i, p. 235.)

The dog of the goddess Gula on boundary stones. (Vol. i, p. 322.)

Unwanted children thrown into pits as prey for dogs, etc. (Vol. i, p. 392.)

Small dogs which were allowed to run about the dining-room received the crumbs which fell from their masters' table, to which occasionally a little milk was added. (Vol. i, p. 419.)

Marduk, who destroyeth the mad dog (passage in a hymn to Marduk). (Vol. ii, p. 163.)

Mad dog (part of Creation legend). (Vol. ii, p. 176.)

Demon figures in the form of dogs. (Vol. ii, p. 205.)

Magical figures, accompanied by two white and two black dogs, were placed on a small ship which by means of magic was sent across the sea. (Vol. ii, p. 223.)

*Translation from a tablet*

If a dog extinguishes a fire in the house of a man, order (or authority) will exist in that house.

If a white dog bites a person, he will be in trouble.

If a black dog bites a person, he will fall sick.

If a brown dog bites a person, that person shall have pleasure.

If a dog bites the bedclothes of a person, that person will suffer severe illness. (Vol. ii, p. 260.)

1120 B.C.

The emblem of the goddess Gula, who was said to be able to raise the dead to life, was the dog which is often seen crouching at her feet. (Vol. ii, p. 284.)

Parts of dogs were used in medicine, especially portions of the black dog. (Vol. ii, p. 307.)

740 B.C.

Shields ornamented with barking dogs, booty of the town Mussasir (period Sargon II). (Vol. ii, p. 369.)

From a natural-history standpoint the lion was classed as belonging to the dog tribe. (Vol. ii, p. 381.)

As a proverb concerning an ungrateful person it is said, "Where the dog of the potter arrived at the kiln, it even barked at the potter." This is better understood from an Aramaic papyrus containing the sayings of Achigar (fifth cent. B.C.): "Thou hast become, my son, as the dog, which, in order to warm itself, crept into the potter's oven, and when it had warmed itself began to bark at it" (i.e. the oven). (Vol. ii, p. 423.)

Concerning a person who when in difficulties is very humble, but otherwise very overbearing: "When thou didst run away, thou didst behave like a wild beast; but now thou hast been caught, thou dost wag thy tail like a dog." (Vol. ii, p. 426.)

The hunting-dog shall break the bones of the game. (Vol. ii, p. 433.)

The bas-reliefs are of remarkable design. The dogs of the mastiff type are of enormous strength, whilst the greyhounds are of the Saluki type.

Assurbanipal, son of Esarhaddon, kept a pack of mastiffs, and five clay models, now in the British Museum, were probably artist's models or souvenirs used as ornaments.

Each of these model dogs has its name in cuneiform characters stamped upon its side ; the names express its nature. They read :

No. 1.—“ Causing evil to come forth.”

No. 2.—“ Biting his enemies.”

No. 3.—“ Capturing enemies.”

No. 4.—“ Judge of his running.”

No. 5.—“ Dust of his path,  
giving tongue.”

#### BIBLICAL TIMES

Some forty references to the dog are to be found in the Bible, almost all derogatory to its character. The Jews seem to have regarded the animal under two aspects—that of the guardian of house or herds, and of the scavenger of the streets. No reference is to be found to its use in hunting, though among the neighbouring nations we have ample proof of breeds kept for this purpose, and, with a solitary exception in the Book of Tobit, there is no evidence of its being kept as a domestic pet or companion.

Even the watch-dog or sheep-dog was not a trained animal: the sheep followed the shepherd, and the dog was not used to round-up or drive the sheep, but only to guard the flock against strangers or wild animals. Anyone who has been in the Near East to-day can testify to the ferocity of these shepherds' dogs, which are no doubt very similar in character to those of ancient times. We have a reference to such use of the dog in Job xxx. 1: “ But now they that are younger than I have me in derision, whose fathers I disdained to set with the dogs of my flock ; ” and again in Isa. lvi. 10: “ His watchmen are blind, they are all without knowledge ; they are all dumb dogs, they cannot bark.” In this connection we may mention the view that the word *keleb* (“ a dog ”) was onomatopœic and derived from the “ barking ” of the animal.

Most of the references, however, are to the pariah dog, the scavenger of the streets and fields, which may also be seen to-day by any traveller in those regions. These dogs are often almost wild, and are completely neglected, as a rule, by the inhabitants of the towns or villages. They live on the dead bodies of animals and any offal they can find, and their usual physical condition is best left to the imagination. Such were the dogs which ate Jezebel: “ In the place where dogs licked the blood of Naboth shall dogs lick thy blood, even thine ” (1 Kings xxi. 19) ; “ The dogs shall eat Jezebel by the rampart of Jezreel ” (1 Kings xxi. 23) ; as they finally did, for “ they found no more of her than the skull, and the feet, and the palms of her hands ” (2 Kings ix. 35).

Food not considered fit for human use, either for hygienic or religious reasons, was given to these dogs: “ Ye shall not eat any flesh that is torn of beasts in the field ; ye shall cast it to the dogs ” (Exod. xxii. 31), but otherwise no one ever appears to have troubled about feeding them. The fate that befell Jezebel therefore involved not only the horror of non-burial, but also the comparison with offal not fit for human purposes—a curse that is also found applied to the house of Jeroboam: “ Him that dieth of Jeroboam in the city shall the dogs eat ” (1 Kings xiv. 2), and to Baasha (1 Kings xvi. 4), and to the rebellious Jews in general by Jeremiah (xv. 3).





(Above) THE SPOILS OF WAR, from the Tomb of Rekhmara (1400 B.C.). THE SHAPE OF THE FEET AND THE SHAPE OF THE HIND QUARTERS ARE DISTINCTLY OF SALUKI TYPE. An illustration sent by Mr. Howard Carter to the Hon. Florence Amherst. (Below) CHAMPION "ZOBED" AND "FARHAN," SALUKIS. The property of the Hon. Florence Amherst.



(*Top*) left. DOG'S HEAD, OF NEWFOUNDLAND TYPE. (Pottery.) Found in Delos (about 200 B.C.); right. DOG FOUND IN EGYPT. (Bronze.) Greco-Roman. (*Centre*) left. DOG. (Terra-cotta.) Said to come from near Smyrna. Greco-Roman; right. DOG about to spring. From Cameiros, in Rhodes (600-500 B.C.). (*Bottom*) left. TOY SPANIEL (?). (Lead model.) Greco-Roman; centre. A DOG VASE. (Pottery.) Found in a tomb in South Russia (about 200-100 B.C.); right. DOG SQUATTING. From Amathus, Cyprus (600 B.C.).



BAS-RELIEF OF HUNTERS WITH NETS AND MASTIFFS. From the walls of Assurbanipal's palace at Nineveh 668-626 B.C. *British Museum.*





(Above) ASSYRIAN SPORT: MASTIFFS USED ON WILD HORSES. *Nimrod Gallery, British Museum.* (Below) MASTIFFS. Terra-cotta dog-models found in King Assurbanipal's palace 668-626 B.C. Probably artists' models. The names of the dogs appear on their sides. *British Museum.*

It is therefore not surprising that the Jews, with such views of the nature and use of the dog, should consider that the term "dog" was one of the worst insults which a man could use to others, and a sign of the greatest humility if a speaker used it of himself. "But what is thy servant, which is but a dog, that he should do this great thing?" asks Hazael deprecatingly, when told by Elisha that he should conquer Syria (2 Kings viii. 13); and Abner angrily asks, "Am I a dog's head that belongeth to Judah?" (2 Sam. iii. 8); while Goliath scornfully asks David, "Am I a dog, that thou comest to me with staves?" (1 Sam. xvii. 43).

Numerous other passages might be cited of the general use of the word "dog" to imply every kind of viciousness and unpleasantness. But the only sentences in the *canonical* books of the Bible which imply any use of the dog as a pet would seem to be in the New Testament during the conversation of Christ with the Canaanitish woman: "It is not meet to take the children's [i.e. the Jews'] bread and cast it to the dogs [i.e. Gentiles]. But she said, Yea, Lord: for even the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters' table" (Matt. xv. 26, 27). This seems to show that at this later period the dogs were at any rate allowed into the house; but even so it is probable that this was only permitted during puppyhood, for the Vulgate more correctly has it: "Etiam, Domine, nam et catelli edunt" ("Yea, Lord, for the puppies also eat"), etc.

Mention has already been made of the exceptional reference to a dog as companion in Tobit (chap. v.). This is one of the extero-canonical books of the Old Testament, and contains the Jewish notion of an idyllic picture of pious home life in the Captivity. It is not historical, but probably written about the second century B.C., though the numerous MSS. are later than this. However, as it contains the one passage really complimentary to the canine race, it is worthy of all due respect.

In Rabbinical literature, apart from certain superstitions and legends found also in other countries and times, the view taken of the dog is essentially the same as that in the Bible.

In Rabbinical literature two kinds of dogs are distinguished—the ordinary dog, resembling a wolf, and the small Cyprian, like a fox, between which crossing was forbidden. The former was classed as a domestic, the latter as a wild animal. We learn that the dog was usually neglected and that therefore God gave him a stomach capable of retaining food for three days,<sup>1</sup> and that though dogs hate one another, they unite in attacking wolves.<sup>2</sup> It was said, "Dwell not in a town where no barking of dogs is heard,"<sup>3</sup> because the barking of dogs gives a feeling of security; but "A dog in a strange city will not bark, and it takes him seven years to feel at home."<sup>4</sup> Among other statements in connection with barking we find: For his friendly conduct at the exodus of the Jews when he did not "move his tongue, against man or beast" (Exod. xi. 7), God compensated the dog by telling the people that the meat forbidden to them should be cast unto him<sup>5</sup> (cf. Exod. xxii. 31, already quoted above); while in the Haggadah the following legend is related: The Egyptians in order to prevent Joseph's body from being taken from them, had two dogs of gold placed on his tomb and endowed by witchcraft with the power of frightening away an intruder by their loud barking. When Moses came to take the bones of Joseph, the two dogs began to

<sup>1</sup> Shab. 1546; Begah. 21a.

<sup>2</sup> Pes. 113; Sanh. 105a.

<sup>3</sup> Pes. 113a.

<sup>4</sup> 'Er. 61a.

<sup>5</sup> Mek., Mishpatim 20.

bark, but he addressed them, saying, "You are the work of deceit, and you would not move your tongues if you were real dogs" (cf. Exod. xi. 7). The dog is also found in superstitions and folklore, especially in connection with hell and the nether regions.

Though there are signs that in course of time the dog came to be regarded more favourably by the Jews, yet, on the whole, the view taken in Rabbinical literature is essentially the same as that in the Bible, and we must conclude that the Jews, as a race uninfluenced by other nations, failed to discover this friend of man in the animal world.

#### THE DOG IN ANCIENT CHINESE TIMES

Through the kindness of Mr. Stenffen Hu, who was recently in England, I am able to give here the following fascinating notes on dogs of China, certain mythology of Chinese antiquity, and folklore. The wording is the original translation.

"Dogs may be classified in three: hunting-dogs, watch-dogs, and edible dogs. The latter is the same as cow, very tame."

"Pork is better to have it fried, but the stewed meat of dog is the best. The soup made of dog-meat has generally very good taste."

"The milk of a white dog is very good and nutritious."

"Ise is a domestic dog, but very wild."

The following passages are cited from "The Materia Medica," by Le She-chin:

"Le She-chin says, 'The word *kow* means "tapping." It is known that dog always barks with rhymes as the sounds resulted in tapping any instrument."

There is another explanation: *kow* means "improper" or "irregularity," for the temper of dogs is so changeable.

140 B.C.—"A sort of large dogs were bred in Ribin," a state which existed in 140 B.C. in present Turkistan. "These dogs were as large as an ass with red fur."

154 B.C.—"In the 3rd year of Chin-te of Han Dynasty a dog copulated with a pig. This happening was unusual and it was regarded as an omen of calamity for the country. A war actually broke out after a few months, and it was called, after the sign, 'the Dog-pig War' in Chinese history."

175 B.C.—"In the 5th year of Chin-te of Han Dynasty there was a dog with two horns on its head in Chi Province, and it was regarded as a sign of unlucky for the country."

246-270 B.C.—"In Chin Dynasty there was believed in China that diseases came out of the earth, and a dog may be used as a weight to keep the disease in."

420 B.C.—"'Anow,' 樊, a fine mastiff, 4 feet high, the famous property of Wei-Lin-Kwon, a prince."

"Book of Odes," about 600 B.C.—"Lu, 盧, as stated in an old poem, is a sort of gallant and fine dog, black fur."

"Book of Odes," 600 B.C.—"It is stated in another poem that special carriages were prepared for Shan, 獮, and Shejo, 歌驕. Both are hound of the same family, only differ in their mouth; the latter have the short mouth, while the former the long mouth. The purpose to prepare carriages for them is to preserve their energy before their arrival to the hunting-place."



"Book of Rites," 800 B.C.—"Dogs are divided into three classes: hunting-dogs, watch-dogs, and edible dogs. Each dog of the first two classes has its own name, but no name for the third. Feeders generally call dogs by their own name and treat them just, as they are most intelligent animals."

"The Chow Ritual," a book written about 1115 B.C.—"Chancien, 牽犬, or so called Dog-feeders, is an official who feeds dogs. He is also a dog-physiognomist. He judges the character and quality of different dog, from its appearance. Both hunting-dogs and watch-dogs should be those of good nature."

A.D. 228.—"In Wei Dynasty a dog of five colours was presented to the King."

A.D. 502—*A Dog Country*.—"For the 6th year of Teen-Gin (A.D. 502) a sailor was driven by wind to an island in the east of China Sea.

"This island was inhabited by a tribe. Women had the same appearance as our Chinese, but spoke quite different language which he could not understand. Man is in human body with dog head full with hair and spoke as the barking of dog. They ate small beans and wore cotton clothes. They had earth walls instead of bricks. The shape of their houses was round and the doors of their houses were so small as the door of furnace. In their generations the girls they brought were human being while boys were dogs, and they married each other again. The men ate raw material while women cooked food. He as being imprisoned by men, was set free by a lady and escaped to his ship. The latter gave him more than ten pieces of leg, telling him to drop every one of the legs after walking every ten miles. The dog-men pursued him, but in seeing the leg of his own in his way, he would bring it back to his home and resume pursuit again. In this way this sailor was at large and returned back to China." (An interesting story suggesting the discovery of Japan.)<sup>1</sup>

A.D. 600.—"It was stated in the History of Tung Dynasty that a sort of Persian dogs could run seven hundred li (about 200 miles) a day as gallant as a horse, some white and some brown."<sup>2</sup>

A.D. 600.—"In the Qin Dynasty high officials used to wear a pair of tail fur of sable around the neck.

"Afterwards too many officials were appointed by the Court, and those who could not get the sable tail were obliged to use the tail fur of dog instead. So here comes a saying in politics, If there are more officials appointed than the department required, 'sable not enough, dog tails used instead.'"

A.D. 618.—"In Tung Dynasty, 武德中, Wang Win-tia presented a pair of dogs to the King. They were 6 inches high and 1 foot long, very intelligent, to hold candles. They were named Fu-lin dog, after the name of the place they came from."<sup>3</sup>

"Dog's flesh is not very palatable because it is tasteless. And so dog-meat may be used for women instead of milk."

"The blood of white dog may be used to cure lunacy and that of the black dog to cure difficulties of parturition."

<sup>1</sup> Probably the Hairy Ainu. I see that Brinkley states that the Ainu practised cannibalism. This would account for the reference to the pieces of leg given in the story.—E. C. A.

<sup>2</sup> Salukis (?).

<sup>3</sup> Probably the first mention of a Pekinese. N.B.—I see that Mr. Laufer gives a somewhat similar translation from the "T'u shu chi chieng," vol. 594, date A.D. 624. That the King of the Uigur in Turfan offered to the Chinese court a pair of dogs (a male and female) 6 inches high and 1 foot long, who understood how to drag a horse by the bridle and to carry a lighted candle in their mouths. Said to come from Fu Lin, "and then it was for the first time that there were dogs of Fu Lin in China."

A.D. 1100.—“In Goo Dynasty the King, 慶曆, had a Lo-Kiang dog as escort, red fur, short tail, extraordinary intelligent.”

A.D. 1100.—“In Goo Dynasty a King issued an order to forbid anybody to kill dogs, and gave 20,000 cash as prize to preserve species.”

“There is a sort of wild dog in Szechuan Province, very small as big crab, and was afraid even by tiger and leopard, because its waste was very poisonous attacking their skin.”

“Book of Rites.”—“Dogs were feeded by the Ministry of Autumn, as they belonged to the function of watching and defence.”

“Book of Rites.”—“Poon, 駢, is a name for dogs of mixed colour in fur.”

“Book of Odes.”—“Pun, 龍, is a sort of watch-dog having suspending hoofs,<sup>1</sup> barking noisely.”

“The Literary Expositor.”—“Dogs which brought three babe dogs are called Quin, 獫狁, two babe dogs, called Sin, 師, one babe dog called Chi, 獫狁.”

“Hills and River Classics.”—“Ton, 蜎, is a fierce wild dog, and is used for attacking man's head.”

“Treaties on Diverse Matters.”—“You, 猶, is the name given to a sort of babe dogs. Chu, 誰, very fine hunting-dog, feeded in Soo State.”

“An Examination of Historical Antiquities.”—“Dogs are called 黃耳, yellow-ears in certain parts of China for having yellow ears.”

“The meat of dogs which has four toes is poisonous, and consequently uneatable.”

“To stop small dogs from barking may be done by putting a drop of oil to its nose. It then will not make a big noise.”

“In the south-east side of the Lin-hai district, there is a sort of dog with tail as short as that of a deer, 臨海水土志.”<sup>2</sup>

“Yu-Lin dogs produced in Yu-Lin district, very big, gallant, large ears, curled tails, being quite different from common dogs.”<sup>3</sup>

“Gun, 犴, like wolf in shape but smaller in size, black mouth, produced in northern provinces of China, is a sort of very intelligent watch-dog. There is another sort of Gun somewhat like the former, but wild in character.”<sup>4</sup>

“Eagle shoulder dogs, 鷹背狗. In northern part of China the nest of duck-hawks were searched by the people.

“If there were three eggs in a nest, it was watched until its birth. They believed that one turned into an eagle, one into a hawk, and one into a dog. They were presented to the King as the most valuable collections. This dog had the tail and ears with long furs. While in hunting, eagle and hawk flied to the air and the dog ran down the ground. They always made their research jointly to the same spot, 輟耕錄.”

“Woo-Loon, 烏龍, is a sort of dog like snow very much, 獸性.”

“A magistrate saw a very thin long dog come in, with very bright eyes. He tried to find out where this dog had come from, but it disappeared, vanished. Later the magistrate was defeated.”

“A man dreamed a dream about a dog. A baby was born and named after the dog, and turned out to be a great fighting gin.”

“A nobleman was in prison, and was to be executed. He said to his dog how much he would like to get some news from home. The dog moaned and wagged his tail.

<sup>1</sup> Dew-claws. <sup>2</sup> Probably first mention of a bob-tailed dog. <sup>3</sup> Is this the Chow? <sup>4</sup> Fox-dog, such as Samoyed.

The nobleman then put a letter inside the hollow of a piece of bamboo and sent it, and the dog brought letters back, and news from home."

#### THE USE OF THE DOG IN MEDICINE<sup>1</sup>

"A yellow dog is very nutritious to cure consumption, both white, black, yellow or white, may be used, but the yellow best."

"It may be used—because our stomach should be kept warm always, instead of cold, and the nature of the dog is very hot—so it may be used to cure any illness that happens in the stomach, and may be used for any illness caused through cold, especially in the lumbar area."

"The heart of a dog may be used to cure any illness caused by sorrow, nose-bleeding, and rheumatism."

"The kidney of a dog is used to cure the illness of a woman and puerperal fever."

"The liver of a dog should be cut into small pieces and put on places where a man has been bitten by a mad dog, also for enlarged feet."

"The gall is very bitter and may be used and mixed with wine to cure ringworms, and other skin diseases."

"The vagina of a dog was taken in the month of June and dried for a hundred days, can be used to carry away disease of the female genital organs."

"The ova of the female dog was used to cure certain diseases in women, and was a Chinese medical discovery."

"The skin of the dog to cure rheumatism, by putting the skin on the part where the disease is present."

"The hair of the dog is used after being burnt to ashes to cure fevers, and also for the cure of a bite to put on damaged tissue (bitten place)."

"The teeth of a dog are poisonous, but may be used by pounding into a pestle and mortar and mixed with vinegar to cure hydrophobia, also for spinal disease and sores in the thighs (if you drive the horse too much), and also the small-pox."

"In the Capital during epidemics, dogs were killed and the blood put in front of the doors of the city walls to prevent the calamity from arising. And a white dog's blood was put on the door itself."<sup>2</sup>

"The fat of the white dog will be used to cure chilblains and get rid of black spots from the face."

"If a man was hurt by a mad dog, then the man goes mad, and the best cure was to use the brain from the same dog and put it on the wound."

"The dog's spit may be used to cure illness such as cramp, and stiff joints, and hæmorrhoids."

"The head (skull) of the dog may be used as medicine by combusting it into ashes. The compounds of this ash with some other materials are eaten for curing blood-flux, hæmorrhage, dysentery, or cancer, or carbuncles on the back, etc."

"The chin bone of the dog is a material of medicine to cure epilepsy and convulsion."

"The ash of the bone of the dog may be used to stop bleeding."

"The ash of the bone of the dog may be used with fat to cure any disease in the nose."

<sup>1</sup> See also p. 55.

<sup>2</sup> Even nowadays magicians use dogs' blood in secret in China.



## DOG-BITES AND CURES

"The poison of a white rabid dog with red flushed nose affects at all times; that of a red or brown dog is more dangerous when one is bitten at midday, midnight, or sunrise; that of a parti-coloured dog between 8 a.m. and 1 p.m.; of spotted ones at 9 p.m. or at twilight; of iron-grey ones at night or dawn; and that of a yellow rabid dog is sure to be fatal when one is bitten at dusk or 9 a.m. The baneful effects of this dangerous malady break out seven days after the bite of a white dog, one month after that of a black dog, 16 days after that of a parti-coloured, 26 days after that of an ash-grey, from one month to 7½ months in the case of a red, 3 to 7 months in that of a blackish-yellow, one year and a half-month in that of a spotted, and a year and 8 months after the bite of a bluish-black or tiger-coloured rabid dog. It is difficult to cure the disease when caused by a bite of the last kind of dog at 7 p.m. or dusk, or by that of a black dog at dawn; but if a blue dog bites at midday, a red one at midnight, a spotted one at dawn, or a white one early in the morning, the patient can easily be cured."<sup>1</sup>

From a translation of the ancient work, "The Book of the Five Elements," Mr. Collier tells us that the colour of dogs was of considerable importance: "Should a man breed a black dog with white ears, he would become rich and noble; or if a white dog with a yellow head, his family became prosperous. The appearance in a litter of a yellow dog with a white tail meant that his family would have officials in it in every generation. A black dog with white fore legs promised many children of the sterner sex to be born to that family. A yellow dog with white fore legs meant good luck, and the breeding of a white dog with a black head was also distinctly lucky, as it meant riches. Lastly, according to the same authority, a white dog with a black tail caused the family through all generations to ride in chariots."

<sup>1</sup> Collier, "Dogs of China and Japan" (1921).

## SECTION II

### EARLY AUTHORITIES

#### CHAPTER I

#### EARLY AUTHORITIES

**W**HILST there is scarcely any reference to cats in Greek and Roman writers, lovers of dogs will find plenty of interesting matter in their pages, much of which is given in this chapter.

It will be convenient to begin with a name painfully familiar to some from their schooldays, that of Xenophon the historian (who is not to be confused with Xenophon the Ephesian). Xenophon the historian, the pioneer of the Romantic Novel with a love interest, was the son of Gryllus and born at Athens in or about 443 B.C. He fought at the Battle of Delium, about which there is a well-known passage in Lord Macaulay's "Essays," and was a great friend of Socrates. He fought against his own countrymen at the Battle of Coronea, and was rewarded by the Spartans with a country-house surrounded by meadow-lands and forests rich in game. Here he led the life of a farmer, and it is probably owing to this that we possess one of the most curious works in Greek literature, his treatise on "Hunting with Dogs." Hunting was Xenophon's favourite occupation, and he used his leisure and wealth to write on his pet theme. It was probably of great contemporary interest also, for Dr. Gardner writes of Greece :

"The chief amusement of country life was hunting, in which dogs were so essential as to give the sport its name. Hares were coursed on foot with dogs, and driven into nets, and the same process was used for small deer."

The book contains many excellent touches of quaint humour, and it is interesting because of the descriptions of the way dogs work, and of the type that Xenophon believed was more than usually able in this direction. The details of the "Perfect Dog" are very true even to-day. A large part of the work is original, but it is also patent that in many chapters Xenophon is using early sources of information, and that some work on the subject had already been composed either in Thrace or in Macedonia. New intellectual movements usually reached Athens from Northern Greece, not from Egypt or the East.

Dogs are divided into breeds : Indian dogs, Cretan, Locrian, and Spartan. The work shows patient and careful observation of the nature and the habits of the dog. Allowing for passages which have lost their interest, or seem remote from modern ideas, the tract is well worth reading.<sup>1</sup>

There are two or three references to dogs in Aristotle's "De Partibus Animalium," but of no value, and many interesting passages in the "Animal History." Besides mentioning certain breeds of dogs with their Greek names, he abounds in curious passages about the animal, some relating to its disposition, and some consisting of purely physical description. He notes that, like all viviparous quadrupeds, dogs dream, and prove that they do by whining. He mentions the chief diseases from which dogs suffer to be rabies, quincy, and foot-rot, and in this particular is followed

<sup>1</sup> Extracts of importance or full translations of early authorities are given in the Appendix, p. 637.

by many other writers. And he has notes also on minor troubles of the dog—for instance, obsession by ticks. Some of the notes are certainly very quaint and many deal with breeding questions. He says that a dog's bark becomes fuller and deeper with age, and gravely discusses whether the male or the female be the longer lived.<sup>1</sup>

When Aristotle died in 322 B.C. the foundations of Zoology as we know it had been laid, and his influence is paramount through all the succeeding centuries in this department of knowledge.

In the "Fragments" of *Theophrastus*, Aristotle's successor and one of his executors, there are a few scattered references to dogs, chiefly in connection with astronomical science, and the Dog-star; and then we come to a most important writer, Arrian, or to give him his full name, *Flavius Arrianus*, who was born at Nicomedia in Bithynia, and belongs to the second century A.D. He enjoyed the distinction of being at the same time a Roman and an Athenian citizen, and he died at an advanced age during the reign of the Emperor Marcus Aurelius. His contemporaries nicknamed him the "New Xenophon," being a little amused at the completeness of the parallel which he imagined to exist between that writer and himself. Xenophon had been a pupil of Socrates; and so Arrian had been a pupil of Epictetus, and he wrote works about Epictetus which corresponded to Xenophon's "Memorabilia." He also wrote an "Anabasis," and closely imitated the style of the "Anabasis" of Xenophon. And Xenophon having written a book on "Hunting with Dogs," Arrian wrote a book on the same subject, and chose for it the very same title.

In this work he begins by saying that Xenophon had left out of his treatise any mention of the Gallic, the Scythian, and the Libyan dogs; not through carelessness, however, but because he was not acquainted with them. He goes on carefully to describe these breeds, and also the Carian and the Cretan stocks, dealing with their appearance and good points.

He then gives an account of a favourite dog of his own<sup>2</sup>; and continues on general lines with reference to outward appearance and disposition. Besides details of science, as it then was, he adds a large number of amusing practical instructions and hints to dog breeders, and the reasons for them. A little later he discusses hare hunting at considerable length, and different modes of hunting in different countries.<sup>3</sup> He then considers further points of practical training, and concludes with the usual flattering reference to Homer.

As a Supplement to Xenophon's work and on account of its clear and easily understood Greek, this treatise must be considered as having very high value.

A third-century A.D. writer called *Julius Africanus* probably collected notes on canine matters, but the fact cannot be ascertained because his works are lost.

We are fortunate enough, however, to possess a substantial body of notes and facts compiled by a contemporary of Africanus, *Ælian of Præneste*. He wrote "Miscellaneous Inquiries" in fourteen books, and a treatise "On the Peculiarities of Animals" extending to seventeen books. Both of these we possess, and both are especially valuable because the sources from which they were compiled are lost. With the exception of two short notes in the "Miscellanea," one on the dogs of Egypt and one at the end about the Magnetes, all the passages relating to dogs are contained in the "Peculiarities." After allowing for a good deal of mythological padding and the

<sup>1</sup> Appendix, p. 639.

<sup>2</sup> Appendix, p. 643.

<sup>3</sup> Appendix, p. 644.





DOGS, POSSIBLY A VARIETY OF GREYHOUND, WITH FEATHERED TAILS. A Hydria of Athenian fabric (6th century B.C.). "Departure of Warriors." *British Museum.*  
647]



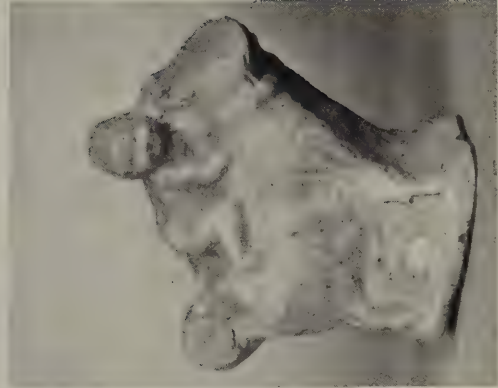
A DOGGIE SCENE ON A GREEK AMPHORA. Athens (6th century B.C.). "A Musical Entertainment." *British Museum.*





DOGS OF A HEAVY GREYHOUND OR GREAT DANE TYPE, "SEILENOS AND MAENAD," along the Top of a Hydria. Athenian fabric (about 444 B.C.). *British Museum.*





(Above) left to right, Dog, Tanagra (600-500 B.C.); The Spotted Dog of Athens (800-600 B.C.); Dog Carrying Hare (800-600 B.C.)  
 (Below) left to right, Dog of Samoyed Type, Carrying Boy. From Italy; Greco-Roman; Two Dogs with Curled Tails, and Man  
 Climbing Tree. From Curium, Cyprus (1000 B.C.); Dog of Spitz Type, Carrying Baby Boy. Greco-Roman. Terra cotta from  
 the British Museum.

CLASSICAL COINS AND GEMS WITH REPRESENTATIONS OF GREYHOUNDS



CELTIC GREYHOUND. Brass Coin of Cythnus. (Goltzii. N. G. Ins., t. xviii, fol. vii.)



CELTIC GREYHOUND. Brass Coin of Cythnus. (Goltzii. N. G. Ins., t. xviii, fol. viii.)



CELTIC GREYHOUND. Silver Coin of Cythnus. (Goltzii. N. G. Ins., t. xviii, fol. ix.)



CELTIC GREYHOUND. (Goltzii. N. G. Ins., t. xviii, fol. x.)



CELTIC GREYHOUND AND DEER FROM VAILLANT. (Montfauçon, "L'Antiq. Expliq.," I. iii.)



CELTIC GREYHOUND KILLING A HARE. Ancient Ring. (Gortaci Dactyliontheca," fol. 120.)

[Cythnus was one of the islands of the Cyclades in the Ægean, and references are found to it from about 500 B.C. to AD. 200.]



GENII HUNTING. (From Maffei, "Gemme Antiche," I. iv, "Caccia di Genii," I. liv, p. 86.) (Also given by l'Agostini and Montfauçon.)

insertion of a number of "good stories," there remains some useful information, if examined in the light of the times in which it was written, and much that is very amusing.

Finally, looking through the literature of the Mid-Byzantine Period, one finds a very curious work by an odd and out-of-the-way author. This is Cassianus Bassus, who lived in the reign of Constantine Porphyrogenitus, and edited a "Geoponica," which is extant in nineteen books and an appendix. The passages relating to dogs in this work are isolated and not numerous; but these are curious. He says that dogs give an indication that a storm is coming by scratching up the ground with their feet, and this is repeated by various writers, including Surflot in 1600. He thinks that it can be determined by the signs of the Zodiac whether there will be a plenty or a scarcity of dogs; and lastly, in his nineteenth book, he has a few continuous paragraphs. There he lays down precepts about sheep-dogs and their *accoutrements*, warns the farmer against the inbreeding of dogs, and prescribes special foods for them. The physical descriptions given are very detailed. He treats of the birth and the breeding of the pups, and in the third chapter of remedies for disease.

Mystery is attached to Oppian. That there was an ancient writer who wrote a poem, in hexameters, on Hunting (with dogs) whose name was Oppian is certain, but it is not certain whether there was not also another man whose name was Oppian who also wrote a poem, in hexameters, on Sea-fishing. And except to scholars the matter is not of primary importance. However this may be, the poem is in the Greek language, and the author's dates are probably somewhere in the second century A.D. As to the value of the poem, it must be admitted that there is a considerable element of the mythological and the fabulous which can be dispensed with by the man of science. At the same time the accuracy of many of his descriptions has been noticed by several writers.

Varro, the Latin author who wrote the "Treatise on Farming," was seventy years old in the year 46 B.C. His book is the most valuable authority on dogs in the whole range of Greek and Latin literature. It professes to be and is a practical handbook on the whole subject. He gives practical suggestions, and the matter is free from the false ideas so usual in early works.

A few words only are necessary in the case of Ovid, a poet under the early Empire exiled by Augustus Cæsar, as the references to dogs in his works are only of accidental importance, and he composed no work specially devoted to canine history.

Vergil demands a little longer notice. He was born in 70 B.C. and died in 19 B.C. It need hardly be said that it is the "Georgics" which are of importance to lovers of dogs. He says towards the end of the third georgic that the farmer should feed the swift Spartan hounds and the keen Molossian on fat whey, such animals being useful as watch-dogs and for hunting. For the latter purpose the Spartan dogs were the better adapted, while the Molossians, which were bred by the Molossi, one of the tribes that inhabited ancient Epirus in North-west Greece, were more suitable for purposes of protection. Amongst the animals hunted Vergil mentions wild asses, hares, boars, and stags. Near Sparta, Mount Taygetus and Amyclæ are specially referred to in the third georgic as dog-breeding centres.

Gratius Faliscus was a Roman poet during the time of Augustus. Nothing is known of him except a remark of the poet Ovid that he had written a book on hunting,



and the actual work, "*Cynegeticon Liber*," the unique MS. of which was discovered in France about 1503, and first printed at Venice in 1534. It is a poem of 540 hexameter lines, and describes the equipment of the hunter, while more than half is devoted to his horses and dogs. The style is worthy of the golden age of Latin literature, but the text is so corrupt that many passages are difficult to interpret with certainty. Grattius made use of many authors, particularly of Xenophon, as sources of information, but his work was so completely forgotten that Nemesianus, who wrote on the same subject 150 years later, could boast that he was opening up a new path for poetry.

Caius Plinius Secundus, known as Pliny the Elder, was born probably at Como in the year A.D. 23 and died in A.D. 79 at the age of fifty-six. He came to Rome and pursued his studies there; and when about twenty-two years of age spent some time in Africa, and fought in Germany under Pomponius Secundus with the grade of "*Præfectus Alæ*." At the age of forty-five he became Procurator of the Emperor Vespasian in hither Spain, and at fifty-two Prefect of the fleet stationed at Misena, where he died at his post during the eruption which destroyed Pompeii and Herculaneum. All his works have perished except the "*Natural History*." Pliny is, in the main, a compiler of facts discovered by others. There is an absence of any critical sense, and a childish credulity allows the author to present the most incredible statements with all seriousness. The "*Natural History*" must be accused of having encouraged innumerable superstitions and prejudices during the Middle Ages. The matter on dogs will be found in the Appendix and includes several quaint cures of considerable interest when viewed in the proper light. For example, the root of a wild rose is "the sure and sovereign remedie" for the bite of a mad dog; while another remedy is the ashes of some hairs from a mad dog's tail applied to the wound—"a hair of the dog that bit you"! If difficult to obtain, "a piece of clay taken from a swallow's nest made into a linement with vinegre," or "the liver of drowned puppies of the same sex as the mad dog," eaten raw, was efficacious. Pliny is particularly annoyed by the "spitefulness" of dogs, which, knowing and using certain curative herbs, yet take care to "bee sure that no man shall see him when he croppeth that herbe." "A strange thing of these dogs," he comments meditatively—strange indeed!

#### ENGLISH AND FOREIGN AUTHORITIES (A.D. 1400-1867)

Theodore Gaza, born in Thessalonica in A.D. 1400, famous scholar and one of the founders of the Renaissance, arrived in Italy about 1430, after a period of great distress and privation, and became Professor of Greek at Ferrara. He sent a letter to Mahomet II, probably accompanying the gift of a dog. It contains very little information, being largely a collection of various classical stories illustrating their loyalty and intelligence. The style is of considerable beauty.

Edward's huntsman, William Twici, wrote "*The Craft of Hunting*" in French. It is only a few pages long, being largely concerned with the correct horn-calls and cries of encouragement to hounds at certain moments during the chase. There is an English translation of this, probably made about 1400, in which John Gyffard's name is added to Twici's as one of the authors.

The translation is bound up in a volume of the Cotton MSS. in the British Museum.

It is not of sufficient doggy interest to be used in this work except for occasional quotations.

"The Master of Game," written between 1406 and 1413 by Edward, the second Duke of York, then Master of Game to his cousin, Henry IV, was intended for the use of Prince Henry. The greater part is a translation, with interpolations, of Gaston de Foix's "Livre de Chasse," but contains five original chapters. It was formerly, but wrongly, attributed to Edmund de Langley, and till recently was little known, except by name; there is now, however, a monumental edition published in 1904.

The famous "Boke of St. Albans," the first book on hunting to issue from the Press in England, is largely copied from the above-named writer. It is supposed to be the work of one Juliana Barnes or Berners, sister of Lord Berners and a prioress of Sopewell Nunnery in about 1481. It has been established that there was no such prioress of Sopewell Nunnery, nor such a lady as Lord Berners' sister. The origin of this valuable book is therefore unknown. A photograph of the wording on spaniels and on greyhounds is shown here. It is taken from the first edition of 1486.

The next matter dealing with dogs appears in a work by Blondus. Two authors of the name of Blondus, separated by thirty or forty years, wrote in Italy. The first, Flavius Blondus, born at Forti in 1388, was famous both as a historian and an archæologist. Secretary to Pope Eugene IV, he retained the office, except for a short period, under the next three successors to the Papal chair. It was only the fact of his being married that prevented him from reaching higher dignities.

The other, Michelangelo Blondus, was born in 1497 and practised as a physician at Rome and Naples. His literary output was large, and embraced a curious variety of subjects, the book "De Canibus et Venatione" being first published in 1544. Neither of these works contains much information of value, though occasional interesting notes.

The first serious attempt to deal with dogs is that of Conrad Gesner, one of those sixteenth-century savants who took all knowledge for their province. Born at Zurich on March 26, 1516, he took the degree of Doctor of Medicine at Bâle about 1540, and thereafter practised in his native town. In 1545 he published his famous "Bibliotheca Universalis," the first great work on Bibliography, and six years later appeared the first volume of the "Historiæ Animalium." The latter work, in five books, caused Cuvier—long afterwards—to describe him as "a prodigy of application, learning, and sagacity," and it formed the basis of almost all natural histories up to the eighteenth century. He continued to write with indefatigable zeal, and in order to bring his work up to date he wrote to Dr. Caius, then at Cambridge, asking for a description of British dogs. From what we read, Dr. Caius sent him a letter containing erroneous statements and which, because of this, Gesner did not use. Later Dr. Caius sent him the famous descriptive letter used by Gesner and afterwards published as a small book in London. It was this book that Abraham Fleming,<sup>1</sup> a student, translated with the following introduction:

*"To the well disposed Reader"*

"As every manifest effect proceedeth frō som certain cause, so the penning of this present abridgement (gentle and courteous Reader) issued from a special occasion.

<sup>1</sup> Took holy orders and was for some time Chaplain to the Countess of Nottingham.



For *Conradus Gesnerus*, a man whiles he lived, of incomparable knowledge, and many-fold experience, being never satisfied with the sweet sappe of understanding requested *Johannes Caius* a profound clarke and a ravenous devourer of learning (to his praise be it spoke though the language be somewhat homely) to write a breviary, a short treatise of such dogges as were ingendred within the borders of England: To the contentation of whose mind and the utter accomplishment of whose desire, *Caius* spared no study, (for the acquaintance which was betweene them, as it was confirmed by continuance, and established by unfainedness, so was it seated with vertue and honesty,) withdrew himself from no labour, repined at no paines, forsooke no travaile, refused no indeavour, finally pretermitted no opportunity of circumstance which seemed pertinent and requisite to the performance of this little libell. In the whole discourse whereof, the booke to consider the substaunce, being but a phamphlet or skantling, the argument not so fyne and affected, and yet the doctrine very profitable and necessarye, he useth such a smoothe and comely style, and tyeth his invention to such methodical and orderly proceedings, as the elegantnes and neatnesse of his Latine phrase, (being pure, perfect and unmingled) maketh the matter which of it selfe is very base and clubbishe, to appeare (shall I say tolerable) nay rather commendable and effectuall. The sundry sortes of Englishe dogges he discovereth so evidently, their natures he rippeth up so apparently, their manners he openeth so manifestly, their qualities he declareth so skilfully, their proportions he paineth out so perfectly, their colours he describeth so artificially and knytteth all these in such shortnesse and brevity, that the mouth of th' adversary must needes confesse and give sentence that comendation ought to bee his rewarde, and praise his deserved pension. An ignoraunt man woulde never have bene drawne into this opinion, to thincke that there had bene in England such variety and choise of dogges, in all respectes (not onely for name but also for qualitie) so diverse and unlike: But what cannot learning attaine? what cannot the key of knowledge open? what cannot the lampe of understanding lighten? what secretes cannot discretion detect? finally what cannot experience comprehend? what huge heapes of histories hath *Gesnerus* houred up in volumes of a large syze? Fishes in floudes, Cattell on lande, Byrdes in the ayre, how hath he lifted them by their naturall differences: how closely and in how narrow a compasse hath he couched mighty and monstrous beasts, in bygnesse lyke mountaines, the bookes themselves being lesser than Molehilles. The lyfe of this man was not so great a restority of comfort, as his death was an ulcer or wound of sorrow: the losse of whom *Caius* lamented, no so much as he was his faithfull friende, as for that he was a famous Philosopher, and yet the former reason (being in very deede, vehement and forceable) did stinge him with more griefe, then he peradventure was willing to disclose. And though death he counted terrible for the time, and consequently unhappy, yet *Caius* advoucheth the death of *Gesner* most blessed, luckie and fortunate, as in his Booke intituled, *De libris propriis*, appeareth. But of these two Eagles sufficient is spoken as I suppose, and yet little enough in consideration of their dignitie and worthiness. Neverthesse little or mickle, something or nothing, substaunce or shadow take all in good part, my meaning is by a fewe wordes to wynde credit to this worke, not so much for mine owne Englishe Translation as for the singuler commendation of them, challenged of dutie and depart. Wherefore gentle Reader, I commit them to thy memorie, and their bookes to thy courteous censure. They were both learned



men, and painefull practitioners in their professions, so much the more therefore are their bookes worthy estimation, I would it were in me to advaunce them as I wishe, the worst (and yet both, no doubt, excellent) hath deserved a monument of immortality. Well there is no more to be added but this, that as the translatiō of this booke was attempted, finished and published of goodwill (not onely to minister pleasure, as to affoord profit) so it is my desire and request that my labour therein employed may be acceptable, as I hope it shalbe to men of indifferent judgement. As for such as shall snarr and snatch at the Englishe abridgement, and teare the Translatour, being absent with the teeth of spightful envye, I conclude in brevity there eloquence is but currishe, if I serve in their meate with wrong sawce, ascribe it not to unskilfulness in coquery, but to ignoraunce in their diet, for as the Poet sayeth :

Non satis est ars sola coquo, seruire palato :  
 Namque coquus domini debet habere gulam :  
 It is not enough that a cooke understand,  
 Except his Lordes stomach he holde in his hande.

“ To winde up all in a watcheworde I saye no more, but doe well and farewell.

“ His and his friendes,

“ ABRAHAM FLEMING.”

Though Abraham Fleming used Dr. Caius's work merely as a foundation for his own original and somewhat inaccurate ideas, and so successfully misled the writers that have followed him, I feel that this extraordinary introduction earns for him our full forgiveness.

Edward Wotton was Gesner's contemporary in England, being born in 1492, and was likewise a practising physician. He is said to have been the first English doctor to study natural history *systematically*, and he acquired a European fame by his book “De Differentiis Animalium,” dedicated to Edward VI and published in 1552 at Paris. Gesner said that though it contained nothing new it deserved to be read and praised as a complete digest of all important previous works. The part dealing with dogs is of a very blunt description, in which breeding questions and normal functions are carefully and fully described.

In Germany one of the foremost figures of the savants was Conrad Heresbach, born in 1496, in the duchy of Cleves. In 1523 he became first tutor of Prince William, son of the Duke of Cleves, and later the private secretary to the Duke himself. This position he held for forty years, besides filling many diplomatic posts. Barnaby Googe (1601) translated his work into English; the more important parts dealing with dogs are given, some of which are very amusing.

Edward Topsell, born in the latter half of the sixteenth century, made some use of Fleming's books in his two zoological works, but was mainly indebted to Conrad Gesner. Topsell's books are more valuable from a historic point of view, as an exhaustive collection of the beliefs of his time, than as a serious contribution to natural history, but occasionally they are interesting and often extremely amusing. Of his life scarcely anything is known, except that he took holy orders and held several livings, and probably died in 1638.

George Turberville, born probably in 1540, first appeared before the world as a poet with a volume of “Epitaphs, Epigrams, Songs and Sonets” in 1567. A compilation, “The Booke of Faulconrie, or Hawking,” followed in 1575, being, as the title-

page states, "Collected out of the best authors, as well Italian as Frenchmen and some English practices withall. . . ." It is decorated with woodcuts; those of interest are reproduced here, from the 1611 edition.

Gervase Markham was born in Nottinghamshire about 1570. He served in Ireland as a captain under the Earl of Essex, and died about 1637. He is sometimes confused with his brother Francis Markham,<sup>1</sup> also a soldier-author. Gervase turned to literature with much zeal as a means of subsistence, and with so few scruples that he was finally induced to sign an undertaking<sup>2</sup> to write no more books on the diseases of horses and cattle, which subject had apparently been his "war-horse." Ben Jonson declared that "he was not of the number of the Faithfull and but a base fellow," perhaps more disgusted at his mediocrity as a poet and dramatist than at his dishonesty. Markham was buried at St. Giles's, Cripplegate, on February 3, 1636-7. His description of the "water-dog," a form of poodle, and his delightful account of how to train such a dog, is given elsewhere.

Aldrovandus, a famous Italian naturalist, was born at Bologna in 1522. We read that at the age of six he lost his father and was placed as a page in the family of a wealthy bishop. Later he was apprenticed to a merchant at Bologna and showed great aptitude for commerce, but disliked the occupation and set himself to the study of law. After further adventures and excursions he finally took up in earnest the study of natural history, and to this object he directed all his talents and fortune, collecting specimens from all parts of the world, and maintaining, at his own expense, a number of painters and engravers to illustrate the great work he projected. Four volumes out of the thirteen which compose his "Natural History," were published during his lifetime, the rest being posthumously issued at the expense of the Senate of Bologna, but an enormous quantity of MS. still remained unedited. The work is a vast accumulation of quotations from previous authors, and follows, in the main, the plan of Gesner; there is little original matter. He gives a few pages to dogs, illustrated by roughly executed woodcuts, some, however, being very clearly definite breeds. Among these is the first illustration of a spaniel and of a dachshund-like bitch. Each dog is accompanied by a plant, usually in flower.

J. A. Lonicer, of Frankfurt, compiled a book on Hunting and Hawking which he describes to have "most artistic pictures." The volume contained—besides the illustrations—"appropriate *mottoes in verse*," though they do not appear to me to be so, the poems on Hunting by Hercules Stroza of Florence, Cardinal Hadrian, Gratus Fabiscus, Nemesianus, and Joannes Darcaeus. It was published at Frankfurt in 1582.

Christian Francis Paullinus, a German naturalist, was born at Eisenach in 1643. His works include the "Cynographia Curiosa" (1677), from which extracts are given in the Appendix. He treats, in these passages, of the three diseases to which, he says, dogs are subject, rabies, podagra, and angina, and gives a completely inaccurate, though amusing, etymology of the first. He has, however, a healthy contempt for "occult diseases," and says: "If we are to pursue truth for truth's sake, we shall not be afraid of great names or any number of them." After discussing certain breeds of dogs and their qualities, in an exclamatory style, he optimistically states that by

<sup>1</sup> Born 1565; author of "The Booke of Honour" (1626), etc.

<sup>2</sup> He even went so far as to sell the same book under a different title to several publishers.



careful crossing it would be possible to produce a dog with all the virtues of all the breeds, and none of the vices. "So do we cull," he ends, "something from every flower while kindly nature seconds our efforts!"

Andreas Cirino, an Italian, wrote his "*De Natura et Solertia Canum*" in 1653. It is merely a repetition of previous authors, and though some of the woodcuts are copies from earlier works, some of them are new and original, including a woodcut of a small dog, quite possibly the first illustration of a white terrier. The frontispiece of the work shows a strange picture of the goddess Diana with greyhounds by her side.

In 1665 appeared an anonymous work on animals, entirely illustrations, containing several examples of dogs, some of which are of great interest, as they show that these varieties of dogs were very much of the same type as to-day.

Jean Louis Leclerc Buffon, one of the most famous of all naturalists, was born at Montbard on the Côte d'Or on September 7, 1707. His "*Natural History*" became the fashionable study of all classes of educated persons, one of the first complete English versions being published by Barr in 1792. Barr, as will be seen, improved the illustrations.

Gottlieb Friedrich Riedel, born in Dresden 1724, painter and miniaturist; specialised as a designer and painter for porcelain ware in Meissen and other places; died 1784. He illustrated several publications, among others a large book containing plates of many forms of animal life. His plate of dogs (given in Plates 49 and 50) has been used by others in sections, and misinterpreted to suggest the antiquity of breeds. The "*Canis Molossus*" may be taken as an example. The dogs depicted are dealt with in the chapter devoted to the breed.

Thomas Pennant, who was born at Downing, Flintshire, in 1726, in his "*British Zoology*" deals very inadequately with dogs, giving Buffon's classification.

Then followed John Whitaker, with his descriptions of dogs in the "*History of Manchester*," a work which was never completed, and Thomas Bewick, an artist and naturalist born at Ovingham in Northumberland in 1753, who, after an apprenticeship, set up in partnership with his old master, Beilby, as publisher and engraver. He started the "*General History of Quadrupeds*" in 1785, undertaking the engraving himself, whilst Beilby undertook the letterpress, "being of a bookish or reading turn." First published in 1790, by 1824 the eighth edition was reached.

It was in 1800 that the first book on dogs with accurate coloured plates was published. It is the work of Sydenham Teak Edwards, the son of an organist and schoolmaster at Abergavenny, born in 1769. His talent for drawing was recognised by William Curtis, founder of the "*Botanical Magazine*," who, after giving Edwards an art training, employed him to draw for that publication. The "*Cynographia Britannica*" was in six parts. Later Edwards was induced to leave the "*Botanical Magazine*," and help to found the "*Botanical Register*." He died in 1819.

Whether Taplin wrote the "*Sportsman's Cabinet*" has been a matter of considerable dispute. Some assign this work to Scott, but it is now, I believe, generally considered to be the work of Taplin, who also wrote the "*Sporting Dictionary*." The former work, beautifully illustrated by Reinagle, contains a number of excellent stories with evident sympathy for the lower animal. The following amusing passage occurs at the end of his chapter on mastiffs:

"The souls of deceased bailiffs and common constables are in the bodies of setting





(Left) POSSIBLY A VARIETY OF SALUKI: A DOG WITH FEATHERED TAIL, AND LONG, NARROW MUZZLE. WINE-JUG (6th century B.C.), Attic Corinthian. (British Museum.) (Right) A TOY POMERANIAN. VASE OF APULIAN WARE (3rd century B.C.). (British Museum.)



A DOG OF ABOUT 440 B.C., OF RATHER CRUDE DESIGN (WITH SIMILAR MUZZLE TO THE WINE-JUG DOG, 6TH CENTURY B.C.), REPRESENTING THE HOUND OF KEPHALOS, A WREATHED YOUTH, EQUIPPED AS A HUNTER, MENACING EOS WITH A STONE. Greek crater found in Apulia.



A DOG WITH A LONG MUZZLE, WEARING A COLLAR, WITH BEAD (?). Stamnos. "Departure of a Warrior"  
(about 460-470 B.C.).





(Left) Toy Dog, of POMERANIAN TYPE.

Athenian jug from Kamiros, the island of Rhodes (about 440 B.C.),  
jug, from Eretria (C. 500 B.C.).



(Right) Dog Playing, of INDEFINITE TYPE.

Athenian

dogs and pointers; the terriers are inhabited by trading justices; the blood-hounds were formerly a set of informers, thief takers, and false evidences; the spaniels were heretofore courtiers, hangers-on of administration, and hack-journal writers, all of whom preserve their primitive qualities of fawning on their feeders, licking their hands, and snarling and snapping at all who offer to offend their master. A former train of gamblers and blacklegs are now embodied in that particular species denominated lurchers; bulldogs and mastiffs were once butchers and drovers; grey-hounds and hounds owe their animation to country squires and foxhounds; while whistling, useless lap-dogs draw their existence from the quondam beau; macaronies and gentlemen of the tiffy, still being the playthings of the ladies, and used for their diversion. There are also a set of sad dogs derived from attornies; and puppies who were in past times attornies' clerks, shopmen to retail haberdashers, men-milliners, etc., etc. Turnspits are animated by old aldermen who still enjoy the smell of the roast meat; that droning, snarling species stiled Dutch pugs have been fellows of colleges; and that faithful, useful tribe of shepherds' dogs were in days of yore, members of parliament who guarded the flock, and protected the sheep from wolves and thieves, although indeed, of late, some have turned sheep-biters, and worried those they ought to have defended."

William Bingley, born at Doncaster in 1774, a most prolific miscellaneous writer and learned botanist, was minister of Fitzroy Chapel, Charlotte Street. In order to create a taste for natural history, he published in 1802 "Animal Biography," and the great popularity of this work induced him to issue in 1809 the "Memoirs of British Quadrupeds." It contains very little as to breeds of dogs, but some excellent illustrations.

Another clergyman of similar tastes was William Barker Daniel, born in 1753. As an extreme type of "sporting parson" he shocked even the easy morality of his times. He was ordained but never beneficed, perhaps because, as a writer in the "Gentleman's Magazine" said, "he was more suitable to act the character of Nimrod than to be a dignitary of the Church." His book on "Rural Sports," a miscellaneous collection of facts and fancies, was published in 1801 and 1813. He died, at the age of eighty, in 1833.

Thomas Bell, born in 1792 at Poole, Dorsetshire, was a dental surgeon and zoologist; from 1817 to 1861 he was dental surgeon and lecturer on comparative anatomy to Guy's Hospital; from 1836 he held the Professorship of Zoology at King's College, London. In his "History of British Quadrupeds," he gives some excellent illustrations and brings to notice varieties of dogs not mentioned by earlier authors.

Following Bell is Colonel Smith, of Jardine's Naturalists' Library fame (1843). In 1859 *Stonehenge* (Mr. J. H. Walsh) published his work on dogs—"The Dog." It can be considered to be the first dog book. He was not only a prolific but a conscientious and capable writer. A second book appeared in 1867, and a third in 1878. These books are used frequently in this work when dealing with varieties, and are, in fact, a basis on which the development and history of dogs stand. Mr. Walsh commenced life as a medical man in Worcester and was in practice for twenty years. He was the first editor of "The Coursing Calender and Review of the Season," which appeared in 1856, and continues to-day in practically the same form. He died in 1888, after an active life devoted to the dog. At one time he kept a small kennel of greyhounds. He was most anxious to please, and being both honest and candid was the cause of considerable correspondence. As to Mr. George R. Jesse and his work, see page 9.

## CHAPTER II

### DR. CAIUS ON BRITISH DOGS (1570)

**D**R. CAIUS, who founded the college that bears his name at Cambridge, was a graduate of that University, and after practising medicine in Norwich, his native town, settled in London and was appointed Physician to Edward VIth, afterwards filling the same office to Mary and Elizabeth. His name was probably John Key or Cay, and is also known as Kaze or Kees. He wrote various works, including a letter to his friend Conrad Gesner, the celebrated Swiss naturalist and scholar. The letter reads as follows :<sup>1</sup>

“ A few years ago, my dear Gesner, I sent you a discursive treatise on the various forms of quadrupeds, birds, and fishes : also on the kinds and shapes of plants and shrubs. I also sent specially for you some notes on dogs, and these you have promised to publish in the part of your book, on the forms of domestic animals of the second class, where you treat of Scotch Hounds : also at the end of a letter to Wm. Turner about books published by you, the notes are among Unprinted Books. Still there are points in that treatise of mine which leave something to be desired, accordingly I stopped the publication and promised a revised edition. And so to be true to my promise, and to satisfy your expectations of me, I will try to explain to your comprehensive mind by a method of my own (1) the Genera and Species of Dogs, (2) the uses of this animal, (3) its character and disposition. I shall divide the subject under the 3 species of (1) High-bred, (2) Country, (3) Mongrel, and in that order I shall call them all British for two reasons : (1) The expression ‘ British ’ really includes all the English and the Scotch in one. (2) The Scotch being poor in livestock and much given to commerce do not indulge as much in the joys of hunting and the chase as do the English with their greater pastoral wealth and larger leisure.

“ Well then ; since the 1st class is exhausted by

- (a) those dogs that hunt wild beasts, or
- (b) that catch birds,

we name these first, as being 2 Genera, a Beast Class and a Bird Class. The Latin equivalent is *Canis Venatica*.

“ Englishmen, however, regard the two pursuits as distinct : and would put hunting first ; and just so give two different names to each class of dog :

- (1) the Venatici,
- (2) the Aucupatorii.

“ Further they subdivide (1) into 5 classes. Either they overcome the animals by (1) scent or (2) by sight or (3) by speed or (4) by scent and speed or (5) catch them by craft. The dog that wins by scent and is always swift is unusually keen in following up the trail : this dog we call Sagax or in Greek *ἰχνεύτην* and *ῥινηλάτην*. Its hips protrude : its ears hang forward towards its mouth : it is of moderate size. This we call *Leverarius* : for the purpose of dividing a whole genus into separate species, for otherwise if one goes by duty or function one cannot class them into a unified species : one dog is keen to scent a hare only, another a fox, another a flat-horned animal, another a badger, or an otter, or a polecat, or a rabbit only (this last, however, hunted only with net and ferret), and each excels in his own class and in what he likes. There are hounds that will hunt fox and hare alternately, but not with the

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Caius's sketches sent to Gesner are given on Plate 31. See also Appendix, p. 656.



same luck as when following their natural bent, for they often go wrong. Some are Fox and Badger Hounds only: called the *Terrarii* because they penetrate holes in the earth, as ferrets do when after rabbits, and so frighten and bite the fox and the badger that they either tear them on the ground with their teeth, or force them from their lairs into flight or into nets drawn over the burrows in the ground. These form the smallest class of Sagaces. The larger class remain to be mentioned: these, too, have drooping lips and ears, and it is well known that they follow their prey not only while alive but also after death when they have caught the scent of blood. For whether the beasts are wounded alive and slip out of the hunter's hands, or are taken dead out of the warren (but with a profusion of blood in either case), these hounds perceive it at once by smell and follow the trail. For that reason they are properly called *Sanguinari*.

"Frequently, however, an animal is stolen, and owing to the cleverness of the thieves there is no effusion of blood: but even so they are clever enough to follow dry human footsteps for a huge distance, and can pick a man out of a crowd however large, pressing on through the densest thickets, and they will still go on even though they have to swim across a river. When they arrive at the opposite bank, by a circular movement, they find out which way a man has gone, even if at first they do not hit on the track of the thief. Thus they supplement good luck by artifice and deserve what Ælian says of them in C59 of his 'Historia Animalium,' where he argues that these dogs can think and reason and come to a decision; nor do they cease to follow until the thieves have been caught. During the day their masters keep them in darkness, and bring them out at night, the idea being that if they are used to the dark, they will be all the quicker in tracking robbers, who above all things are fond of the dark. When these dogs hunt thieves, they are not given the same liberty as when after beasts, unless they flee at very great speed, but they are held back in the leash and so guide their master, on foot or horseback, at such speed as suits him.

"On the Anglo-Scottish border, because of frequent cattle and horse raids, much use is made of these dogs, and they learn to follow animals first and to chase thieves later and as a secondary occupation.

"In this class none is by nature aquatic unless it be the Otter Hound, for others frequent banks of earth and water in turn. But all of them will, if their prey takes to the water, take to it also, such being their desire to catch it. This, however, is more the working of desire than of instinct. And whereas some of these dogs are called Brachs in English (in Scotch, Rachs), this is because of sex, not race. For so we are used to name the females in the *Genus Venaticum*.

"Lastly, it is in the nature of the Sagaces that some, before the quarry is started, should quickly hunt about, and others start the animal by a noise at once at the first scent, though as yet it may be far off and in its lair: the younger they are, too, the less manageable and the more faulty are they.

"For age and hunting practice breed experience and confidence in them as in all other animals, especially when they have learnt to obey a master's commands and prohibitions. As for what strikes his sense of sight, this he follows not with nose but with eye: with the eye he pursues fox or hare, selects from a herd the fattest and richest animal only, follows it up, finds it again if the view is lost, sees it return to the herd apart from all the rest, and finally when sighted hunts it to death. We call it

*Agasæus* because it aims at its prey with the eye. It is more frequently employed in Southern than in Northern England, and in level country districts than those that are thorny and woody. Also more by horsemen than by pedestrians ; (for so they excite the horses to greater speed, the dogs taking more pleasure in them than in the prey itself, and accustom them lightly and fearlessly to leap over hedges and ditches and flee whither the riders may find refuge in flight through difficulty and danger, or pursue and kill an enemy at will). Should the hound ever deviate, it will run up on the instant at a signal, and renewing the chase with sharp bark and at quick pace worry the hunted animal as before.

"The *Leporarius* is so called from its speed : its value and its use are found in the hunting of hares. Although in catching fallow deer, stags, roebucks, foxes, etc., they excel in strength and traditional speed, their excellence varies with temperament and plumpness or slimness of body. For there is a thin sort comprising a larger and smaller variety : and some have smooth hair.

"The larger the prey the larger the animal we select for it. I have found its value in hunting great ; and in one respect it is a very odd animal.

"Froissart relates in the 4th Book of his Chronicles that a *Leporarius* belonging to Richard II of England, which had before acknowledged only the King, did, when Henry IV (Duke of Lancaster) came to Flint Castle to arrest Richard, abandon Richard and receive Henry with the same loyal attentions as his rival, just as though he had perceived or got news of Richard's misfortunes. Richard was quick to see this and said in so many words that it was a presage of his doom.

"There is a hound which has value for sagacity and speed, while in race and physical qualities it comes between the *Sagax* itself and the *Leporarius*. This arrival is called *Levinarius* because of its light weight : *Lorarius* because it is led by *Lora*. Its speed enables it to press hard on its prey and catch it quickly.

"The Greyhound obtained its name, *Vertagus*, originally from its craftiness. When in pursuit, it will turn itself (*vertat*) and with a revolution of the body it will with a sudden rush seize and catch its prey in the very opening of its lair. And it displays cunning in this way. When he comes to a rabbit-warren he does not worry the rabbits by running after them nor frighten them by barks, nor shew any other marks of enmity, but casually and like a friend he passes by them in artful silence, carefully noting the rabbits' holes. On coming to the spot, he so arranges himself on the earth as to have the wind always against him and be out of view of the warren. In this way he easily perceived the smell of a rabbit coming in or going out, while the rabbit does not catch his scent at all and is baffled so as not to see him. So crouched, the hound lying in wait either cleverly seizes on the rabbit going out without thought of danger just at the burrow's entrance or catches them on his return and carries him to his master in his mouth, he being hidden near by. This dog is smaller than the *Sagax* we have mentioned, thinner, and with pricked-up ears. Were he larger you would call him from his shape *Bastard Leporarius*. But though much smaller he can catch in one day as many animals as are a fair cartload. *Guile* and bodily agility are to him what strength might be.

"The *Thief Dog* is similar. At his master's commands he goes out at night and following up the rabbits without barking by the scent borne in his face he catches while coursing as many as his master allows and brings them back to where he stands.



"The inhabitants call him the *Night Dog*, because he hunts at night. But enough of those that hunt wild beasts.

"Next of those that pursue birds already stated to be called *Aucupatorii*. These are bred dogs and of two kinds. Some pursue birds only on land, some by water. Those that confine themselves to land either track and start the bird, following it up openly and barking, or simply point it without noise. The first kind are used in hawking: the second in snaring. The first class have no special names but take their names from the birds which they naturally pursue. So we get the names *Falconarii*, *Phasianarii*, *Perdiciarii* (Partridge).

"The generic name in this country, however, is *Hispanioli*, as though the whole breed came from Spain. All are nearly all over *white*. If they have any spots, these are red, and scarce and big. There is a red and also a black variety: but such are very scarce.

"Recently (so fond are we all now of novelties) a new variety has been imported from France, all white with black spots: this is always called the *Gallican*.

"The dogs of the second kind follow the bird silently on foot and obey the directions of their master who helps them and go forward, or back, or to right or left as told. When I say the bird, I mean Partridges and Quails. When he has made a find carefully, noiselessly, stopping his course and on the secret watch he creeps forward low down: when he gets near he jumps and indicates the right spot by his paw: hence he is called *Canis Index*. The place once shewn, the birdcatcher spreads, and covers the bird with a net. This done, the dog at once rises to the familiar sign from his master or his voice, and startles the birds at closer quarters, so causing them to be *inextricably netted*. One need not wonder at the cleverness in the domestic dog when a hare, a wild animal, in the year of grace 1564 was actually seen in England to dance and to beat a drum with its fore-paws like a drummer-boy and to go for a dog tooth and claw and retire with blood on its feet, this is not an idle story: and so I give it currency, for I think it well that nothing should be passed by that shews *design in nature*.

"Those that hunt by water, by instinct, or perhaps after a little training, are larger in size, with a natural coat of rough shaggy hair. I, however, my dear Gesner, have painted him for you shorn from shoulder to hindquarters and of tail, for it is our habit to shear them so, that they may be quicker when without hair and not checked in swimming.

"In England he is also called *Aquatian*, taking his name from his watery haunts. With him we pursue birds on the water (and specially ducks whence he is called Duck-Dog: he is expert at that) or fish them out when killed with a dart, or recover darts and arrows that have fallen we don't know where, or find lost things; hence his name the *Inquisitor Dog*. And yet the duck can at times outwit dog, and man too, either by making water or by natural cunning. If a man comes near where they lie, the ducks come forward and offer themselves voluntarily to the comers, and making believe to be lame of foot or wing, as though they could be caught at once, effect their exit slowly. By this trick they attract but elude those who come against them until having proceeded some way they are called off from the nests; and they are very careful on their return lest by being crowded together they should reveal where they are. Nor are the ducklings less careful to protect themselves. For as



soon as they perceive that they are seen, they take refuge under a mound or under sedges, under the covering of which they are so cleverly protected that they would escape capture altogether if not scented out by the dog.

"I have never personally known a *Canis Piscator* (of which Hector Boethius writes) which goes after fish on the rocks by scent, nor have I heard tell of such even after careful enquiries amongst anglers and sportsmen : unless you call the Otter a fish (which many believe it to be), just as the *Pupinus* bird is said and reputed to be a fish. Whether the dogs that go for fish—if any do—do it out of sport or out of hunger I will write and tell you when assured on the point : we know that there are dogs that will eat carrion if pressed by starvation.

"In the meantime, we have the sanction of Ælian and Æbius for calling the Otter a River-Dog. And I know that the Otter, just like the dog, will if there is a dearth of fish, make raids on the land and rend lambs and then return fed up to the water. But we have none such amongst English dogs.

"Again the Seal hunts fish over rocks and stones, but is not reckoned amongst our fish though we call him *Sea-Dog*.

"There is another breed of high-bred dogs among us, apart from these, which *Callimachus* calls *Melitei*, from *Melita*, the island near Sicily (now popularly called Malta and famous from the Knights of St. John), from which the breed especially springs. And from Malta come the *Pachyni*, as *Strabo* says. This is a tiny breed of dog, and only sought after to be a luxurious plaything for women. The smaller it is the more welcome is it for that purpose and for being carried in the bosom in bedchambers, or in their hands when driving out. It is no use at all except that it will relieve indigestion if pressed against the stomach, or moved up and down the breast of a sick person, because of the difference in temperature. Nay it is even believed that diseases will pass, through the sickness and also the death of these : as though the evil passed into them because of the similarity of heat.

"So much for the *Canis Generosus*. Now for the *Rusticus* :

"In this class two only deserve mention, the Pastoral or Pecuarian and the Molossian or Villatic, the one, useful to repel injury from beasts, the other against human strategy. In England the Pastoral is of smallish account since he has nothing to do with the wolf which is the natural enemy of sheep, for we have no wolves owing to the beneficial policy of *Edgar*, who imposed an annual tribute of 300 wolves on the *Cambri* as a tax (they were most frequent amongst them).

"Writers say that *King Lud* of *Cambria* paid *King Edgar* an annual tax of 3,000 wolves, and so in four years all *Cambria* and all England were rid of them. *Edgar* reigned A.D. 959 about. Now since that date we never read that a native wolf was seen in England ; but by way of making money we have often seen one brought from abroad, simply to be seen as a rare and unfamiliar animal. But as to this dog. If his master utters a certain command, or a clear whistle through his closed fist, he will drive all stray sheep into one place, and this the one the master wants ; so that with no real trouble and without even stirring the shepherd can govern the whole flock as he likes, making them advance or halt or retreat or move to and fro.

"In England the shepherd follows his sheep : in France and Germany and Syria and in Tartary the practice is the contrary.

“ Sometimes too, even without a dog running out or about, the wandering sheep will form into flock merely on hearing the whistle above described, because, I suppose, they are frightened of the dog and associate the sound with the probable reappearance of the dog. And I have carefully made this observation when travelling, and noticed people curbing horses by the shepherd’s whistle, so that one could visually test the truth of the fact. With this same dog the shepherd can get hold of a sheep to kill or to cure, without doing any injury to it.

“ The *Villaticus* is a big and robust breed. Its body has great weight but little speed. To look at it is, however, terrible and so is its voice and it has more strength and keenness than any Arcadian hound. Though it may be added that the Arcadian is reputed to be descended from the lion. The name *Villatic* comes from its function. If there is fear of thieves, it is used to protect the farm from them. He is useful also to cope with the fox and the badger who prey on the stock. He is also good at following wild boars, and driving swine from orchard and field, and for the purpose of capturing and keeping bulls when use or sport makes this desirable, one matched against one, or even one against two of the fiercest kind. For the breed is most bellicose and violent; and a danger even to men, for they do not fear men. Nor does war terrify them: and to make him even keener we help his propensity by science and by association. And they teach them to scare away bears, bulls, arctic bears, and other wild beasts, bear-leaders being appointed to conduct the contests; also often to fight with a man armed with a stake, a club, or a sword, and so make them fiercer and keener and imperturbable. Their strength is miraculous; and their power of biting most keen, so much so, that three of them can hold a bear, four a lion. There is a story that Henry VII, that wise monarch of England, ordered a number of them to be hanged, sore grieved that dogs of a lower and ignoble ancestry should do violence to the lion, the generous King of Beasts; a notable lesson to subjects not to rebel against a King. And another story relates that the Falconers commended a falcon of his for a daring attack on an eagle: with the same motive he ordered the falcon to be killed.

“ This kind of dog is also called *Catenarius* from *Catena*—chain, for during the day it is chained to the door for fear of harm if it were loose, while at the same time it may frighten others by its bark. And though Cicero in the ‘*Pro Roscio*’ thinks that dogs that bark in the day ought to have their legs broken, modern opinion guided by the need for securing life and property is widely different. For society is full of thieves, even in daylight; nor are they afraid of an infamous death by hanging. The reason is not merely lack of money, but the luxurious pride in clothes and fine living, and petulance, and love of ease such as characterises overweening profligates who care for nothing but horses prancing over the turf and gathering their proud footsteps and wheeling in a narrow circle, for nothing but lechery and idle begging and thieving, while they unjustly lay all to the score of bodily infirmity. The Emperor Valentinian had such men in his eye when he passed laws that men suffering from no bodily ill but lazily and worthlessly putting this forward as a pretext for begging should be the slaves in perpetuity of such cultivators of farms as should prosecute and expose their knavery, lest their idleness should be a burden to the state and a bad example. Alfred too governed the Kingdom with such vigilant justice that if a man walking through the streets lost in the dust a purse full



of gold in the morning time, even after a month's lapse he would find it quite untouched. We know this from Ingulf of Croyland. But nowadays nothing hardly is safe even behind closed and bolted doors.

"The *Canis Custos* is so called as defending farmsteads but also places of business and rich men's houses. For that reason dogs at Rome were fed publicly in the Capitol, to give the alarm of thieves approaching.

"Then there is the *Laniarius*, so called because frequently used by butchers when driving and capturing beasts. Also the Molossian named from the Molossian district in Epirus, where there were good and keen hounds of that breed. Of this breed there is a class for a special reason called *Mandatorius*, because at its master's bidding it carries letters on from place to place tied to it or done up in its collar. And great care is taken that they be not intercepted if unequal to fighting or flight.

"Next the *Lunarius*, whose duty is simply to be a night watchman, for sleepless all night it 'bays'—to quote Nonius—at the moon. The larger and bigger will pump water out of deep wells for use in the country by pulling a long rope; hence called *Aquarii*.

"The *Sarcinarii* are so called because with wonderful patience they relieve travelling merchants of the trouble of carrying their packs.

"In addition to these qualities and uses the *Villatici* have the understanding merit of loving their masters and hating their enemies. And so they guard them on journeys, defending them from thieves and keeping them safe and sound, and so might also well be called Defenders. And if ever their master is called by a multitude of men and the strong arm, and falls, it has been found that they do not desert him even in death, but will lovingly and for many days endure hunger and cold, and if it should so turn out will kill the murderer or at any rate betray him by their bark or anger or hostile assault, as though a witness of the master's death.

"A proof of this occurs to me: the case of a certain traveller who was travelling straight from London to Kingston, a town famous for the coronation of eight Kings, and who after he had travelled nearly all the way fell among thieves at Compareus, a broad and spacious valley covered with trees and infamous on account of robberies. And that dog of British breed mentioned by Blondus in his History when his master had been killed by a rival not far from Paris betrayed the murderer and would have killed him if the murderer had not protested against the vengeance of a dog. And when fires happen in the evening or at night, dogs a year old will bark even though prohibited until the servants wake and perceive the fire; and then stop of their own accord. This has been proved in England. And that dog was not less faithful who would not leave his master, who while hunting fell into a deep well, until by his own sagacity he had been drawn up by a rope on to which, when he was close to the top, the dog leapt to take him into his arms as it were, impatient of more delay. There are some who will not allow a fire to go out, but move coal on to it with their paws, having previously watched and wondered how it is done. If the coal is too hot, they cover it with ash and then shove it into its place with the nose.

"There are others who do a Bailiff's work at night. For when the master goes to bed and a hundred brazen bolts close everything and the eternal strength of iron, and Janus Custos is not away from the door, (as Vergil writes,) then if the master tells





DOG OF GREAT DANE OR MASTIFF TYPE, ATTACKING A WILD BOAR; THE DOG ABOUT THE SAME SIZE AS THE BOAR. Roman pavement from Withington, Gloucestershire. *British Museum.*



(Above) DOG, WEARING COLLAR, FACING BOAR. (Below) GREYHOUND, OR SALUKI-TYPE DOG, WEARING COLLAR, HUNTING A HARE. Mosaics of latter half of 6th century A.D., from a Roman villa at Utica. *British Museum.*





(Above) A GREYHOUND AND HARE LAMP. Greek. Height,  $2\frac{3}{4}$  in.; length,  $6\frac{3}{8}$  in. Style, Apulian (4th century B.C.). (Below) A DOG-HEAD DRINKING HORN. Greek. Height,  $9\frac{3}{8}$  in. The head painted black, the eyes red with black markings (3rd century B.C.).





A GREYHOUND, LACKING THE RACY BUILD OF TO-DAY'S TYPE. Marble relief, beginning of 2nd century A.D. *British Museum.*

the dog to go out, he goes all through the estate more carefully than any bailiff, and if he finds any stranger, be it man or animal, he drives them off, but leaves domestic animals and servants alone. But the variety of their cleverness is as great as their fidelity. For some without a muzzle will bark without biting. But these are less to be feared because they are more timid. For, as the proverb goes, the more timid the dog the greater the bark. Some bark and bite too. One should be careful of these because they mean to inflict injury at some time, but do not attack them, for they are provoked by anger to bite, being indeed bitter by nature. Some jump without noise and fly at a bound at the throat, and tear it terribly. Be in fear of these, for they have great courage and overcome careless men.

“By such indications we distinguish a cowardly from a brave and a bold from a timid breed. But even from a bad breed one does not necessarily get bad progeny: no dog is more suitable for human use than the one named. For if one wished to sum up all their uses, what man could give the alarm of a beast or a thief more clearly or so loudly as a dog with his bark? Who subdues beasts with greater power? What servant is more loving to his lord? Who a more faithful companion? Who a more reliable defender? Or a more vigilant watchman? Who more staunch to avenge and punish? Who a better messenger? Who more effective in the water? What tailor carrying his wares is more patient?

“So much of well-bred British dogs and rustic dogs, true to their breed.

“Of mongrels and their mixed varieties I have little to say, for they display no signal mark of race or breed: I dismiss them as useless. Still in daytime they announce visitors by barking and give notice to their owners—hence their name *Admonitores*. Again in the kitchen when roasting is going on they help to turn the spits by a small wheel, walking round it, and making it turn evenly with their weight. No cook or servant could do it more cleverly. Hence the name *Versator*—or more commonly *Veru Versator*: these are the last of the classes at first mentioned. Our mongrels are also taught to dance to the drums and to the lyre and to perform in many other ways, standing or lying; they have learnt these tricks from their owners when they were in a state of vagrancy and want.

“We have no native Lyciscus in England, just as we have no wolf: nor any other breed from dog and wolf except the Lacæna and the Urcanus, the former being a cross between dog and fox (there are several in England kept privately from motives of pride or morbid feeling); the latter between a bear and a house-dog (*Catenarius*), animals that are naturally enemies but here as elsewhere in the natural kingdom joined in union by a curious lust. For we read of unions between Hircani and tigers, Arcadii and lions, Gallici and wolves. In men, too, as Moria says, although they have reason, a senseless but instinctive lust will conciliate enmities. This Urcanus is a savage beast and of unappeasable anger (to use the word of the poet Grattius), which surpasses all our other dogs in ferocious cruelty: even its look is terrible and grim, in fight it is keen and vehement, and so tenacious that you could cut it in pieces sooner than shake it off; it fears neither wolf nor bull, bear nor lion; it can only be compared to that Indian dog of Alexander. But enough of British breeds.

“Custom has long since admitted some foreign dogs and preferably the larger, I mean the Icelandic and the Lithuanian: these being quite covered with hair,



which is long and shaggy, have their faces and the shape of their bodies completely concealed. Many people are fond of them because they are foreign, and regard them as affectionately as they do a Maltese : so prone are we all to like novelties. We love the foreigner better than ourselves. And this happens in the case of workmen as well as in that of dogs. Our own men, though skilled and competent, we despise : but wonder at some animal from Barbary or a foreign country as the Cumans an ass or a Thales.

"Hippocrates makes that observation at the beginning of his treatise 'On Fractures' and we have enlarged on it in our treatise or argument 'Ephemera Britannica addressed to the British people.' And one may add the more ignorant and impudent and frivolous a man is, the more we make of him, and the more he is made of by bejewelled princes and peers. But I will not talk of foreign dogs. All I want to do, my learned Conrad, is to tell you what you want to know of the English ones.

"On another occasion I did separately treat of the Gætulian Dog, on account of the rarity of the breed. Of the rest of them you yourself are writing at great length. But as I have written to you at greater length on this occasion than before, but too briefly for a proper exposition, remembering as I do the range of your interests, I will draw out a table to illustrate what I have said about British dogs. And as you are fond of modern names, as I know from your letters, I will add these to the Latin and add reasons for them, so as to make the whole thing plain and satisfactory to you.

"Since being a foreigner our words are not intelligible to you without a translation, I shall now, following the same order as before, translate the English as I have already translated the Latin.

"'Hound' then—the Sagax among the Venatici—comes from our word 'hunt' with the change of one letter, and 'hunt' is translated 'Venari.' And if taking from your language the word 'Hund' ('dog' generally in German) you suppose it to be called that because of the similarity of the words, dear Gesner, I shall certainly be with you, for even now we retain many German words left over from the Saxon occupation of Britain, but I may also tell you the generic name for 'Canis' is 'dog,' and of 'hunting dogs' *hound*.

"Similarly from English 'gaze' (to look closely or attentively at anything) we derive 'Gazehound,' or as we have called it 'Agasæus.' For it is not by scent but by careful and diligent sighting, that such a dog follows the prey, as we have observed, though of course I know Agasæus is one of the Latin words for dog.

"The English 'Greyhound' comes from 'grey,' because it is of the first grade of dogs and of the best breed. 'Grey' in English—'Gradus.' The Latin equivalent is 'Leporarius.'

"The dogs called Levinarius and Lorarius in Latin come from Levitas and Leyner, Lorum and Lyemmer. For in English Lyemme—Lorum. That Leyner comes from Levitas, the English from the Latin, and why generally so many of our words from Greek, Latin, Italian, German, French and Spanish, and how in course of time many have been altered by corruption, we have explained in our book on the symphony and consonance of English words.

"The Vertagus is the last of the Venatici : and we call him Tumbler : 'tumble' in English is *Vertere* in Latin, and 'tumbiere' among the Gauls, whence the name



Tumbler, with a characteristic change of vowel into a liquid ; just the opposite to what happens in French and Italian in which a liquid before a vowel is nearly always changed into another vowel : as *Impiere*, *Piano*, *Implere*, *Plano*, and many other instances.

“After the *Venatici* the *Aucupatorii*, and 1st of these the *Hispaniolus* : a Spanish word as we have said. Leaving out the ‘h’ and the ‘i’ we say ‘spaniel’ or for ease in pronunciation ‘spainel.’ 2nd *Index* comes from English ‘set,’ to mark out a place : hence English Setter. Next comes *Aquaticus* or Water Spaniel, from ‘Water’ and ‘Spain’—*Aqua* and *Hispania*. The *Aqua* in which the dog plays is in English *Water* : and *Hispania* we call ‘Spain’ : and one assumes from the name that the breed comes from Spain. Still at the same time there is now an English breed of such dogs, but Spaniel is a common and general name for dogs believed to have come originally from Spain, and so they and the other *Aucupatorii* are commonly referred there, though born in England and distinguished by a peculiar bark or a sign of breed : as is that sort by the addition of *Water* or *Aqua*. The same dog is also called *Finder*, because he seeks for and finds lost things : *Find* in English—*Invenire* in Latin. But because the principal part of finding lies in the Enquiring, we have given it this Latin name from the Enquiring. From these two we pass to the *Delicati Rustici*, and *Degeneres*. The *Delicatus*, *Melitæus*, Spanielgentle or *Hispaniolus Generosus* is given by us this last name because of the generosity of its breed : for it is used to the society of titled men and women, and is their companion at feasts and sports.

“Compare Gorgo the pet dog in a poem by Theocritus, about a festival at Syracuse, which when she went out she gave to a slave to look after along with her baby, bidding her call the dog in and mind the crying child. This dog is useless for all purposes except as I said to warm a stomach weakened by cold, or, also to shew up an adultery : see hereon *Ælian*, Book 7, Cap. 25.

“‘*Rustici*’ has for translation Shepherd’s Dog, Mastiff, Ban Dog : ‘*Pastor*’ in Latin—Shepherd in English, because he guards *sheep*, in Latin *oves*.

“*Ban* is from *band* (in Latin *ligamentum*) and another word our bailiffs use, is *Masty*—*Sagina* (fat). For this breed called *Catenarii* is fat and well fed.

“I know at the same time that *Augustinus Niphus* considered the *Mastinus* or *Mastivus* to be properly a *Pecuarius*, and that *Albertus Lyciscus* says it is a half breed from a dog and a wolf : but as a rule it passes for a *Molossian*. Lastly we have said certain mongrels are called *Wappe*, and *Turnspit*. The latter is from the English *turn*—Latin *verto*. And *Spete* or *Spede* to represent the Italian equivalent for a *spit*, namely *veru*. *Wappe* comes from the natural sound *Wau* which the dog makes when barking to attract attention. Hence originally it was *Waupe*. But for the sake of euphony, a vowel changing to a consonant, we say *Wappe* ; then, too, *Nonius* derives *Baubari* from *Bau ! Bau !* and so with the Greek.

“As to the *Saltator*, it is sufficient to say that *dance* in English is ‘*saltare*’ in Latin. And then I fancy you will not need to learn more on that head. And so you have, my dear *Gesner*, not only the kinds of our dogs, but also their names in English and in Latin, their duties, functions, differentiae and peculiarities, natures and activities. What more could you possibly desire ? If you have not fully come up to your expectations (for perchance you are so eager that even speed seems slow)

because I have suppressed the publication of that immature treatise which I sent you five years ago privately and not for publication, still I trust I have satisfied you in this respect, and that delay has made it appreciably better. Second thoughts, we are told, make a thing easier to read."

Dr. Caius, in his volume devoted to Natural History, writes the following note on dogs :

"There was a *Canis Gætulus* in England as early as 1554. Its body is compact, short and naturally curved, even when it walks. It has a short or no neck : legs somewhat out of proportion in length to the body : a very short, or hardly any tail : a face sharp and black like that of the ground hedgehog : black eyes and canine teeth, there being a double row on one side of the head upper and lower, and on the other one row. It has a dog's bark, the walk of an ape, smooth hair on its face and fore parts, rough on the body otherwise. Its whole body on the inside is reddish, on the back and the outside, Lupine. Its length from head to tail is only 1 foot and a hand's breath all but one finger."<sup>1</sup>

#### RICHARD SURFLET (1600)

The "Maison Rustique," by a "Practitioner in Physicke," translated from the French of "Charles Stevens and John Liebault, Doctors in Physicke," by Richard Surflet, was also translated into a cumbrous volume in German.

Surflet describes the qualities of a watch-dog to be of "gross and great competence," with a square, compact body. His head should be large and thick, "so as to be the greatest part of its body," and his countenance should resemble that of a man. The throat "great and wide," and the lips "thicke and great—hollowed after the manner of vallies." This somewhat original description has never been copied by subsequent writers. The dog's ears should be large and hanging, and the eyes black or azure. His broad breast should be covered with hair ("full of haire"), so also the legs, which were to be thick.

"The Shepherd's dog," writes Surflet, "need not be so great or heavy as that of the farm, and should be long rather than short, so as to be able to run after the wolves, and take what they were carrying away from them!" It was better white, so that one was able to distinguish the dog from amongst the wolves. He describes "*earth-dogs* . . . which are of two sorts, the one hath crooked legs, and commonly short hair, the other has straight legs and shaged hair like water-spaniels." Those with crooked legs "creep more easily into the earth than the other, and are best for badgers, because they stay long there and keep better without coming forth.

"Those which have straight legs serve for two uses, because they run as coursing dogs above ground, and also take the earth more boldly than the other, but they tarrie not in so long, because they vexe themselves in fighting with the foxes and brocks, whereby they are forced to come forth to take air."

In his "two and twentieth chapter," dealing with what dogs are best for the course, Surflet tells us that the hunting of the stag, wild boar, reindeer, and the hare is performed principally with dogs, horses, and "strength of bodie," and that the taking of these animals with snares and nets is more fit for "holidiaie men, milke

<sup>1</sup> See Plate 31.



sops and cowards." The other way was for men who preferred better the exercise of sport, and the pleasures thereof, than just for the "filling of the bellie."

The hunting-dogs suitable for coursing were of four sorts—white, bay-coloured, grey, and black. The white he likes the best, the bay-coloured second best; the grey were not so swift or so lusty as the others, the black were short-legged and were the most suitable for coursing strong-scented beasts.

Much of Turberville's account is similar to that of Surflet, from whom he obtained much matter.

Surflet warns the reader not to give flesh to hare-hunting dogs, because they may make light of hares and course "tame cattell."

In the German edition, published in 1598, the illustrations, except for one or two, are re-drawn and somewhat similar to those shown here, except for an original illustration of a huntsman and his dog.

He gives some astonishing preventive and curative measures for dog ailments, and training hints and notes on management.

(1) The first litter of puppies were to be taken away, because a bitch does not know how to rear them, and the dog in the first litter is likely to go mad.

(2) Puppies were not to be allowed to go out, except to play with their mother, until after six months old, "for feare that in attempting to leape hedge or ditch, they doe not burst and beate out their guts."

(3) You were to break the tip of the puppies' tails when "fortie daies old," and draw out a sinew that "runneth along the joints of the backe" in order to prevent them from growing mad, also from growing too long.

(4) Against madness one need take out from under their tongues a little sinew "which is like unto a small broade and rounde worme."

(5) He gives a cure for madness. All one need do was to burn the dog on the brow with a hot iron; or to take the juice of leet with the pitch of elder trees—or to bathe the dog in sea-water for fifteen to twenty days, three or four times a day!

In the instructions on training dogs we read that to—

(a) Make the dog come after a man use boiled frogs, or better still "braised salt," or give them a piece of bread which had been kept under the armpit. Another method he advised is to allow the dog to smell the after-birth of another bitch "wrapped up in a cloath."

(b) To prevent "raging fierce dogs from attacking," all that a man need do was to hold in his hand "the eie of a blacke dog pulled from him alive," or better still the eye or the heart of a wolf or the tongue of a "she wolfe."

Some of these horrible devices were not entirely confined to dogs, for we read that you are advised to—

"Shut up a dog close in some place, for three daies in such sort as that he may gnaw nothing but bones, then gather his dung and drie it: the powder of this dung is good against all bloudie fluxes, if it be taken twice a day with milke, and so continued for the space of three daies, remembring moreover before you mixe the saide milke, to quench divers small pebble stones made red hot in the fire in it."

This was also good for ulcers and excellent for the "squincie."

In his description of hunting, he writes that the horsemen must be ready to start off in the early morning with their guide, and dogs, as well as "bloodhounds and coursers."



TOPSELL (1607)

Edward Topsell, B.A. Cantab., a divine and author, wrote two books on Zoology, mainly copied from Conrad Gesner and partly from Abraham Fleming and Dr. Caius. The first is entitled "The Historie of Foure-footed Beasts," describing the true and lively figure of every beast; the second, "History of Sea Serpents, or the seconde book of living creatures."

Topsell's notes embrace much folklore and contain some interesting matter. He tells us that there were a kind of people called Cynamolgi near India, so named "because for one half of the year they live upon the milk of great dogs which they keep to defend the country from the great oppression of wild cattle," which descend from the woods and mountains yearly during the summer in great swarms "like bees returning to their hives, and honeycombs."

He writes that these cattle set upon the people and destroyed them with their horns "except their dogs be present." The dogs were of great strength, and easily tore the cattle to pieces, and that the people took "such as be goode for meate to themselves" and left the other parts for their dogs to feed upon. The rest of the winter was spent hunting with the dogs, and the milk of the females was used for drinking purposes like the milk of sheep and goats.

It appears to be a story founded on fact; unfortunately the dogs are not fully described, so that we do not know whether these great dogs were of a greyhound or of a mastiff type. Later, Topsell tells us that dogs of Illyria called "mastini" have their upper lips hanging over the lower lips, and "look fierce like lyons, whom they resemble in neck, eyes, face, colour and nails, falling upon bears and boars." The colour of a lion is very similar to that of the mastiff of to-day, and the upper lip hangs over the lower. Here possibly we have a description of an ancestor of the mastiff type. The "lion" neck would be, we may presume, a neck well covered with hair, giving a mane and suggesting the coat of a Pomeranian and its near relatives.

"There be in France," he writes, "dogs brought out of Great Britain to kill bears, wolves, and wild boars"—dogs described as "singularly swift and strong," called "limier" in Gaul.

Topsell then gives an illustration copied from Gesner of a drawing sent by Dr. Caius, I think, with his original letter. It shows one of the sluthounds of Scotland, named in Germany "Schlatthund," one of the lesser hunting-dogs. I find it difficult to see any relationship with modern varieties. He describes the bloodhound and gives an illustration of it, stating that "the bloodhound differs nothing in quality from this Scottish sluthound, saving that they are greater in quantity and not always of one and the same colour, for among them are sometimes red, sanded, black, white, spotted, and of such colours as are other hounds, but most commonly brown or red."

I suggest we can presume, more or less safely, that Topsell means by "greater in quantity" that the bloodhound was a larger dog than the Scottish sluthound, to which he compares it, and from this it suggests that the Scottish sluthound was a short-legged tracking-dog, with a narrow pointed muzzle and long ears and a skull; somewhat of a Dandie Dinmont type to judge from the illustration. Again quoting

Topsell : " The virtue of smelling, called in Latin *sagacitas*, is attributed to these as to the former hunting-hounds, of whom we will first discourse." Topsell, referring to the bloodhound, goes on to say that Pincianus called this kind " Plaudi," and so did Festus, and that the Germans name it " Spurhund," " Leidthund," " Jaghund," because " their ears are long, thin, and hanging down, and they differ not from vulgar dogs in any other outward proportion, EXCEPT ONLY IN THEIR CRY OR BARKING VOICE."

Slight as it may seem, there is yet here a very fair description of a hound of bloodhound type, the long, thin ears hanging down, the wonderful bell-like voice, so different from the bark of the ordinary dog. Topsell tells us that " the nature of these is, being set on by the voice and words of their leader, to cast about for the sitting of the beast, and so having found it, with continual cry to follow after it till it be wearied, without changing for any other." That " they seldom bark except in their hunting chase, and then they follow their game through woods, thickets, thorns, and other difficult places." Also that " the white hounds are said to be the quickest-scented and surest-nosed, and therefore best for the hare ; the black ones for the boar and the red ones for the hart and roe, ' but hereunto I cannot agree,' because their colour (especially of the two latter) are too like the game they hunt ; although there can be nothing certain collected of their colour, yet is the black hound harder and better able to endure cold than the other which is white. In Italy they make account of the spotted one, especially white and yellowish, for they are quicker-nosed."

This reference to a spotted dog of Italy supports the results of investigation on other lines as to the origin of the Dalmatian. Of course a spotted dog of Italy may have been, as I have stated elsewhere, a spotted bloodhound or perhaps a pointer.

Topsell then tells us that " it is questionable how to discern a hound of excellent sense," but that, as Blondus said, " the square and flat nose is the best sign." He states that the dog should have a small head, legs of equal length, a breast not deeper than the belly, a plain straight back to his tail, quick eyes, long ears hanging though sometimes standing up, a nimble (neat) tail, " the beak of his nose always to the earth." And he especially recommends those that are most silent and bark least. He states that " there are some of that nature who when they have found the beast they will stand still until their hunter come, to whom in silence by their face, eye, and tail they shew their game " (pointer ?). But there are others which " when they have found the footsteps go forward without any voice or other show of ear or tail." Whilst another sort " prick up their ear a little and either bark or wag their tails," and then comes one of the most interesting of the descriptions, " others again WRING THEIR FACES AND DRAW THEIR SKINS THROUGH OVER MUCH INTENTION (LIKE SORROWFUL PERSONS), . . . holding the tail immovable." Here once again Topsell gives a very typical character of no other dog than the bloodhound, for the drawing up of the skin " like sorrowful persons " and the tail held more or less in one position are marked bloodhound characteristics. Later he describes the spaniel, " the Spanish dogs whome the French call Espagneulx, have long ears, but NOT LIKE A BRACHES," how they hunted hares and rabbits by scent, and " are not rough but smooth haired."

He then describes various " smelling dogs " he has heard of, which I think throw



a light on the types of spaniels kept in England later, and quite possibly indirectly on other breeds now long removed from "smelling dogs."

The first of these is the Tuscan dog "commended by Nemesian"—"not beautiful to look upon, having a deep shaggy hair"; the Umbrian dog described by Gratius as sharp-nosed to drive wild beasts from byways, but otherwise a coward; the Ætolian dogs noted for their scenting powers, so that Gratius states that "whatever dog springs from the Ætolian stock rouses with his barking boars he has not yet seen (a bad business), etc. . . . but it is remarkable how quick they are and how valuable they are for their scent." The Tuscan dog with shaggy hair may or may not be one of the ancestors of the long-coated dogs, such as the old English sheep-dog.

Topsell then gives the "terriers or beagles" which "set upon foxes and badgers in the earth and by biting expell them out of their dens" (cf. Whitaker's account of Terriers of Manchester, p. 93). He adds that they are called "in the German tongue, LOCHUNDLE," and continues: "Unto all these smelling dogs I may also add the water spagnell, called in French, Barbet, and in German, Wasserhund,<sup>1</sup> who is taught by his master to seek for things that are lost, by words and tokens, and if he meet any person that hath taken them up, he ceaseth not to bay at him till he appear in his master's presence." These dogs were also used, we read, to take water-fowl and for hunting otters and beavers, watching "the stroke of the gun when the fowler shooteth," and instantly running into the water "for the dead fowle," which they brought to their master.

Copying Dr. Caius and earlier writers, he explains that these dogs had their hindquarters sheared "that they may be the less annoyed in swimming," and an illustration of a spaginel sheared is given. The water-dog resembles the old English sheep-dog of the present day. It would seem from Topsell's account and from the further evidence of illustrations that there were two very diverse varieties of dogs, some known as spaniels, and the others as "Water-dogs, or Spagnells," probably a poodle of the bearded collie cross. They are probably related to the shepherd's dog of Taplin, the old English sheep-dog, and the otter-hound. That it must have had more than the usual coat is shown by the constantly repeated remark as to the necessity for shearing, for no mention of shearing any other dog occurs.

Whether there was any relationship between the Tuscan dog described by Topsell as not beautiful but having shaggy hair, commended for its scenting powers, is difficult to say, but Edwards describes a Russian pointer used in England to which the Tuscan description might well apply. This Tuscan dog because of its scenting powers was brought to England, and because of its heavy coat might be taken north, where a heavy coat, as we will read later, was considered desirable as protecting an animal from cold and wet. This might account for the bearded collie of Scotland, and its relative the bob-tail; or was the Tuscan dog a poodle?

*"Of the Dogge called the Gasehounde, in Latine—Agaseus*

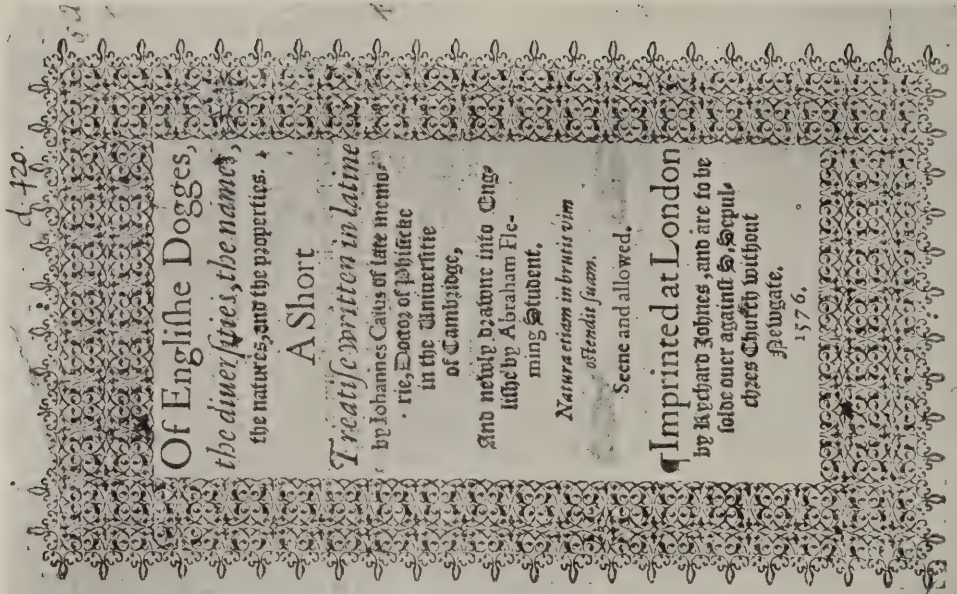
"This kinde of Dogge which pursueth by the eye, prevaieth little, or never a whit, by any benefite of the nose that is by smelling, but excelleth in perspicuitie

<sup>1</sup> Poodle (?).





(Top) left. THE KENNEL; right. COUNT PHCEBUS SURROUNDED BY HIS HUNTSMEN, AND DOGS. From the illuminated MS. Gaston Phœbus' "Livre de Chasse" (1387). (Centre) "CHASSE AU HERON." From a miniature in the same work. (Bottom) "CI DEVISE LA MANIERE DE FAIRE SON ESPERVIER NOUVEL VOLER." "Livre du Roy Modus" (15th cent.).



**B**eis of the chace of the swete fewte a linking  
 he is beestes of the chace: of the swete fewte. And  
 the be the Bucke. the Doe. the Beere. the Reynard  
 the Elke. the Appard. the Otter. and the Marten.

**A**nd he is beestes of the chace of the steyning fewte And  
 they be the Roobucke. and the Roe. the Fulmar. the  
 Speere. the Hauke. the Graye. the Hore. the Squart.  
 the Whittat. the Sol. and the Pulatit.

### ¶ The namys of diuersle maner houndis

**T**his be the namys of houndes. Firste ther is a Greyhound  
 a Gaskard. a Mengratt. a Malysse. a Lemor. a Spas  
 nyell. Ratches. Benetys. Trowes. Bocheus hounds.  
 Mydding dogges. Tyndalples. and Paketid curis.  
 and smale ladies popis that keere a dogg the fleyes and dyue;  
 tis smale falytis.

### ¶ The proprieties of a goode Greyhound.

**A** Greyhound shulde be hood like a Snake. and necked  
 like a Snake. Foted like a Rat. Tayled like a Rat.  
 Spedd lyke a Teme. Chyned lyke a Heme.

**A**nd the firste yere he most lerne to fere. The second yere he fel  
 de hym fere. ¶ The .iii. yere he is feld lyke. The .iiii.  
 yere ther is noon sike ¶ The .v. yere he is good ynough  
 The .vi. yere he shalld holde the plough ¶ The .vii. yere he  
 listt adwale: grete bullepes for to assaile. ¶ The .viii. yere  
 likladit. The .ix. yere cardegeft. ¶ And hym he is com





3



6



9



2



4



7



1



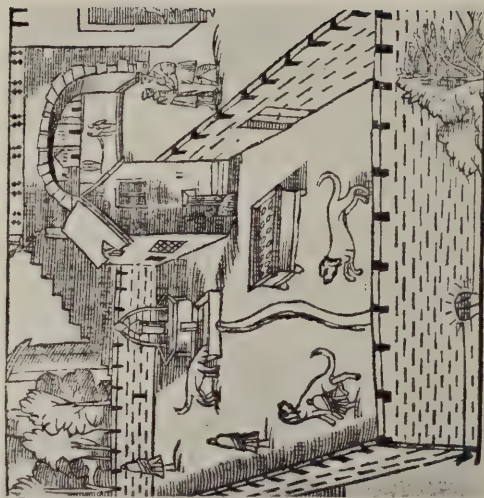
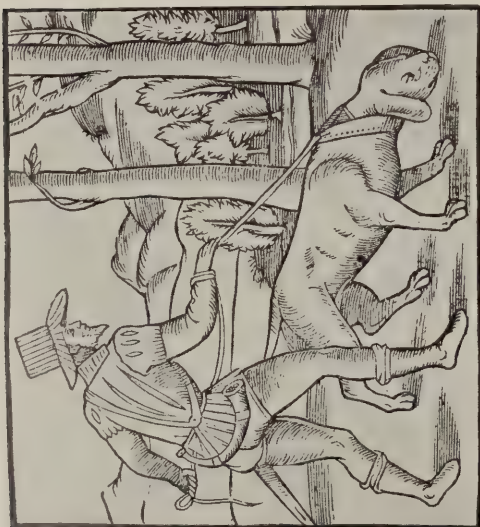
5



8

DOGS (EXCEPT FOR NO. 3), PROBABLY SKETCHES BY DR. CAIUS. 1. "The bloodhound owned among the English. This seems to be of the same nature of the Scottish thief taking dog." (*Gesner*, 1603.) 2. "The bloodhound owned among the English. This seems to be of the same nature of the Scottish thief taking dog." (*Gesner*, 1603.) 3. "Hispanorum aquatice canes commendantur apud Caium." (*Cirius*, 1613.) 4. "An English or Scottish dog taker of thieves, called by the Scottish 'ane sleuth hound.' This may be compared with the 'bloodhound' of the English." (*Gesner*, 1603.) 5. The only dog illustration in *Gesner's* first edition. (1561.) 6. A Scottish Water-dog. (*Gesner*, 1603.) 7. "The English hound which in Scotland, as someone has reported, is called 'ane Rache,' 'This breed,' says Hector Boethius, 'belongs to the dogs that track by scent.'" (*Gesner*, 1603.) 8. "The hare dog in Scotland called 'ane grew Hound.'" (*Gesner*, 1603.) 9. "The water dog for taking birds which hunts in the water," says Caius, "... in English a water spagelle."





(Above) left and right. WORKING A BLOODHOUND. (Below) left. A ST. HUBERT HOUND; right. "HOW A KENNEL OUGHT TO BE SITUATED AND TRIMMED FOR HOUNDS." From Turberville's "The Book of Falconrie and Hunting" (1611).

and sharpenesse of sight altogether, by the vertue whereof, being singular and notable, it hunteth the Foxe and the Hare. This Dogge will choose and separate any beast from among a great flocke or hearde, and such a one will it take by election as is not lancke, leane and hollow, but well spred, smoothe, full, fatte and round, it follows by direction of the eyesight, which in deede is cleere, constant, and not uncertaine, if a beast be wounded and go astray this Dogge seeketh after it by the stedfastness of the eye, if it chaunce peradventure to returne and bee mingled with the residue of the flocke, this Dogge spyeth it out by the vertue of his eye, leaving the rest of the cattell untouched, and after he hath set sure sight upon it he separateth it from among the company and having so done never ceaseth untill he have wearyed the beast to death.

“Our country men call this dogge *Agaseum*. A gasehound because the beames of his sight are so stedfastly settled and unmoveably fastened. These Dogges are much and usually occupied in the Northern partes of England more then in the Southern parts, and in fealdy landes rather then in bushy and woody places, horsemen use them more then footmen to th’ intent that they might provoke their horses to a swift galloppe (wherewith they are more delighted then with the pray it selfe) and that they myght accustome theyr horses to leape over hedges and ditches, without stoppe or stumble, without harme or hassard, without doubt or daunger, and to escape with safeguard of lyfe. And to the ende that the ryders themselves when necessitie so constrained, and the feare of further mischiefes enforced, myght save themselves undamnified and prevent each perilous tempest by preparing speedy flight, or else by swift pursuite made upon theyr enemyes, myght both overtake them, encounter with them, and make a slaughter of them accordingly. But if it fortune so at any time that this Dogge take a wrong way, the master making some usuall signe and familiar token, he returneth forthwith, and taketh the right and ready trace, beginning his chase afresh and with a cleare voyce and a swift foote followeth the game with as much courage and nimblenesse as he did at the first.

“*Of the Dogge called the Grehounde, in Latine—Leporarius.*

“There is another kinde of Dogge which for his incredible swiftnesse is called *Leporarius* a Grehounde, because the principall service of them dependeth and consisteth in starting and hunting the hare, which Dogges likewyse are indued with no lesse strength then lightnes in maintenance of the game, in serving the chase, in taking the Bucke, the Harte, the Dowe, the Foxe, and other Beastes of semblable kinde, ordained for the game of hunting. But more or less, each one according to the measure and proportion of theyr desire and as might and habilitie of theyr bodyes will permit and suffer. For it is a spare and bare kinde of Dogge, (of fleshe but not of bone,) some are of a greater sorte and some of a lesser, some are smooth skynned, and some are curled, the bigger therefore are appoynted to hunt the bigger beasts, and the smaller serve to hunt the smaller accordingly. The nature of these dogges I finde to be wonderful by y<sup>e</sup> testimony of all histories. For as *John Froisart* the History-grapher in his 4 lib. reporteth :

“A Grehound of King *Richard*, the second y<sup>t</sup> wore the Crowne, and bare the



Scepter of the Realme of England, never knowing any man beside the King's person, whē *Henry Duke of Lancaster* came to the castle of *Flinte* to take King *Richarde*, the Dogge forsaking his former Lord and Master came to *Duke Henry*, fawned upon him with such resemblaunces of goodwyll and conceaved affection, as he favoured King *Richarde* before : he followed the Duke, and utterly left the King. So that by these manifest circumstances a man myght judge this Dogge to have bene lightened wyth the lampe of fore-knowledge and understanding touchyng his olde Master's miseryes to come, and unhappinesse nye at hand, which King *Richarde* himselfe evidently perceaved, accounting this deede of his Dogge a prophecy of his overthrowe," etc.

#### CONRADE HERESBATCH

In Conrade Heresbatch's book "Foure Bookes of Husbandry," translated in 1631 by Barnaby Googe, he describes a bandog for the house and a shepherd's dog.

"First the Mastie that keepeth the house : for this purpose you must provide you such a one as hath a large and mightie body, a great and shrill voyce, that both with his barking he may discover and with his sight dismay the theefe, yea, being not seene, with the horror of his voice put him to flight. His stature must neither be long nor short, but well set, his head great, his eyes sharpe and fiery, either browne or grey, his lippes blackish, neither turning up nor hanging too much downe, his mouth blacke and wide, his neather iawe fat, and comming out of it on either side a fang appearing more outward than his other teeth ; his upper teeth even with his neather, not hanging too much over, sharpe and hidden with his lippes : his countenance like a Lion, his brest great and shagayred, his shoulders broad, his legges bigge, his tayle short, his feet very great, his disposition must be neither too gentle, nor too curst, that he neither faune upon a theefe, nor flee upon his friends, very wakey, no gadder abroad, nor lavish of his mouth, barking without cause, neither maketh it any matter though he be not swift : for he is but to fight at home and to give warning of the enemye.

"The Dogge that is for the folde must neyther be so gaunt nor swyft as the Greyhound, nor so fatte nor heavy as the Mastie of the house, but very strong, and able to fight and followe the chase, that he may be able to beate away the Woolfe or other beastes and to follow the theefe and recover the praye and therefore his body would rather be long than short and thicke : in all other poyntes he must agree with the Bandogge."

Googe tells us that "you shall perceave by his foote whether he will be great or no. His head must be great, smoothe and ful of vaines, his eares great and hanging, his joyntes long, his forelegges shorter than his hinder, but very strayght and great. . . . For his colour it maketh no great matter though Varro would have him white and so would *Columella*, the Dogge for the feelde, as he would have the house Dogge to be blacke : but the pyed colour is judged nought in them both. The white they commend, because he may be discerned from the Woolfe in the night, whereby they shall not strike the Dogge insteede of the Woolfe. The blacke agayne for the house is best commended, because of his Terrour to the Theefe in the day and for the hurt that he may doo by night, by reason of his not being seene : the dunne, the branded and the redde, doo not mislike me, so they be well marked beside. To arme them agaynst the Woolfe, or other wyld beastes, you may put



brode collers about theyr neckes full of nayles, and iron studdes, lynng it with soft leather within."

#### THE DOGS OF MANCHESTER (1771)

Though Whitaker does not tell us much about dogs, what we read of them in his pages is of considerable interest. I refer to "The History of Manchester," published in 1771. He was a most painstaking and accurate observer. Born at Rainham in Norfolk, a son of the curate of the parish, he took his LL.B. in 1781, and was ordained in 1785.

We read that he was very anxious to have the Whalley living, and obtained his desire. He started a local literary club, and, being interested in arboriculture, obtained the gold medal of the Society of Arts for planting the greatest number of larches in one year. After taking a considerable interest in trees during his life, on his death he was buried in a coffin made out of one of those he had planted. He was the author of many works, including "The History of Manchester," from which our extracts are taken.

He describes British dogs with the object of giving varieties which had local interest, and says that "the principal sorts which seem to be genuine natives of the soil are these five: the great household dog, the terrier, the greyhound, the bulldog, and the large slowhound. The first blessed with no powers of sagacity at all, but animated with an uncommon degree of courage." He writes that they "had a breed of these in Manchester," enormous, tall and large, and just such a type as is seen on a coin of Cunobeline.

The *Cunobeline*<sup>1</sup> coin dates from about A.D. 43. The coin is given here and will be seen to bear a dog of the great Dane type waving its tail. That the size of this dog was considerable is obvious by comparing it to the man riding on its back.

It is significant that Whitaker should state that the Manchester household dog was "just such a one," and it opens up the question whether the great household dog of 1771, the dog of the *Cunobeline* coin of A.D. 43, is the prototype of the modern Dane, which I think is very probable.

Whitaker then describes the bulldog as enjoying a sagacity of nose and bravery of spirit, a bravery indeed "so peculiarly eminent that this dog has perhaps a larger share of true genuine courage than any other animal in the world." He quotes Gratius:

"But can you waft across the British tide,  
And land undangered on the farther side,  
O what great gains will certainly rebound,  
From a free traffic in the British Hound.  
Mind not the badness of their forms or face;  
That the sole blemish of the generous race,  
When the bold game turns back upon the spear,  
And all the furies wait upon the war.  
First in the fight the whelps of Britain shine,  
And snatch Epirus, all the palm from thine."



THE CUNOBELINE COIN.

<sup>1</sup> Cuno Belinus was a British King who died in 43 A.D. Cuno is probably connected with the Welsh Cwn, meaning dog.

As further proofs of antiquity he gives from Claudian: "The British Hound, that wrings the bull's forehead to the ground," and that Symmachus, the contemporary of Claudian, mentions seven Irish bulldogs ("septem Scotiei canes"), which when first produced in the circus at Rome so surprised the people by their ferocity and boldness that they universally imagined them to have been brought over in cages of iron, and this same story appears in Sir James Ware's work, partly rewritten by W. Harris in 1739-64. Whitaker states that the greyhound was originally denominated by the Britons as the "grech," or "greg," which the mode of liquefying the "g" into "y" among the Britons and Saxons has now softened into "grey," and that it was considered the "vertrag," i.e. the eager or swift dog. He states "that this lightly limbed and elegantly molded species of our hounds" was as much esteemed by the Romans for its fleetness as the bulldog was admired for bravery, and adds that the greyhound was not, like the bulldog, peculiar to Britain, but was a native also of Gaul, and was in consequence of this named by the Romans "The Gallic dog."

He quotes Martial:

"For thee above thy greyhound hunts the prey,  
And brings to thee, the untasted hare away."

He cites Nemesianus, writing at the end of the third century, as proof that the greyhound was an old-established variety in the British Islands:

"Be thine the greyhounds of the British race,  
And taste improved the pleasures of the chase."

Whitaker brings to our notice a verse from Gratius showing that once the hare was out of sight the greyhound had lost it, not being able to hunt by scent:

"Would you chase the deer  
Or urge the motions of the smaller hare,  
Let the brisk greyhound of the Celtic Name,  
Bound o'er the glebe and shew his painted frame,  
Swift as the wish that darts along the mind,  
The Celtic greyhound sweeps the level lea,  
Eyes as he strains, and stops the flying prey,  
But should the game elude his watchful eyes.  
No more sagacious tells him where it lies."

He gives some interesting details of a further breed of dogs, "our little terriers," which, says he, are evidently described in the poems of Oppian, who lived in the days of Severus.

"A small bold breed and steady to the game,  
Next claims the tribute of peculiar fame!  
Trained by the tribes on Britain's wildest shore,  
Thence they their title of Agasses bore."

"Small as the race that useless to their lord,  
Bask on the hearth and beg about the board,  
Work-limbed and black-eyed, all their fame appears,  
Flanked with no flesh and bristled rough with hairs;

" But shod each foot with hardest claws is seen,  
The sole's kind armour on the beaten green ;  
But fenced each jaw with closest teeth is found,  
And death sits instant on th' inflicted wound.

" Far o'er the rest he quests the secret prey,  
And sees each track wind opening to his say :  
Far o'er the rest he feels each scent that flows,  
Count the live nerve and thrill along the nose."

Whitaker adds that " this is a very minute description of a British dog," and those two particular strokes in the description, the crookedness of its limbs, the leanness of body, " clearly appropriate the account to our present terrier." Were these the original type of terriers of which the Manchester and the dachshund are the descendants? From the translation recently made and given below, the account does not suggest a terrier, but rather a small spaniel.

I give Mr. Hughes's translation of the same passage for comparison :

" And there is a courageous breed of whelps that follow tracks,  
Small it's true, but worth the tribute of our song,  
Which the tribes of Britain with painted backs bred,  
And called them distinctively ' Agasaei.'

" Now their size is equal to the very smallest, the pet dogs of the house that are fed at table, round with very little flesh, hairy and weak of sight, but armed in their feet with baneful claws, and with many sharp poisonous point. Whilst above all other good points the Agasaeir scent, and the best at the track since he has great skill in finding the prints of those who go over the ground, and has the wit to indicate precisely the very plain as it is borne along."

Whitaker states that a variety existed " almost peculiar to the parish of Manchester. The good old hound of our Mancunian fathers."

Quoting Shakespeare, he suggests that the account tallies well with the Southern Hound kept by the Priests.

" My hounds are bred out of the Spartan kind,  
So flewed, so sanded, and their heads are hung  
With ears that sweep away the morning dew,  
Crook-knee'd, and dewlapp'd like Thessalian bulls ;  
Slow in pursuit, but match'd in mouth like bells,  
Each under each. A cry more tuneable  
Was never holla'd to, nor cheer'd with horn,  
In Crete, in Sparta, nor in Thessaly."

(Theseus, in " A Midsummer Night's Dream.")

Whitaker's description of the slowhound, so well drawn by Bewick some eighteen years later, confirms the wording of that artist. He writes that " the breed towards the close of the last century was confined to one or two counties in the south-west regions of the island, and to Manchester and its vicinity in the north-west."

He is clearly sorry that the breed was gradually dwindling in size " into little more than a generation of common harriers." He says that these and our wolf-dogs were some of the original hounds of these islands, and that the " Romans seem to have



introduced into the one and to have added to the other the present breed of our common harehounds, and the present race of our common spaniels."

Whitaker thinks that Nemesianus in his description of the Tuscan dog refers to the Harrier, for he writes: "the description agrees exactly." The description referred to is as "shagged with roughened hairs nor one faint semblance to the greyhound wears."

In the above we find evidence of the southern hound being converted into the smaller foxhound; the first suggestion of the great Dane, as a British breed; and of terriers with crooked legs in the Manchester area. Whitaker's account should be compared with Riedel's illustrations. (See Plate 49.)

## SECTION III

### THE DOG IN ENGLISH HISTORY

#### CHAPTER I

#### THE DOG IN ENGLISH HISTORY

UNFORTUNATELY space does not allow us to develop this theme to its full extent. The dog has played great parts in the history of the British Islands. He has caused no end of laws to be compiled, read, and passed; he has brought boundless pleasure to owners of all kinds, from people of royal and exalted rank to others poor and of low degree. He has caused men to suffer punishment, disgrace, exportation, and death. He has stood by Kings, as consort and companion, and he has been the subject of much folklore and great numbers of books, articles, pictures.

He has been very important, and he is more than ever important now. Times have changed: the dog, at one time man's assistant, and man's long-suffering slave, sometimes valued commercially for his hair and skin (see notes on p. 5), often cruelly used, is now man's friend and companion. Customs have changed too: the State obtains a large revenue from taxation, and very large sums of money are in circulation because of the interest attached to his keeping, showing, and breeding.

In very early English times the feeding of a dog was considered to constitute ownership, for an old law runs<sup>1</sup>: "Of tearing by a Dog. If a dog tear or bite a man, for the first misdeed let vi shillings be paid, if he [the owner] give him food; for the second time xii shillings; for the third xxx shillings. If, after any of these misdeeds, the dog escapes, let this 'bot' [compensation] nevertheless take place. If the dog do more misdeeds, and he keep him, let him 'bot' according to the full 'wēr' [price of a man killed] as well wound-bot, as for whatever he may do."

Even on the subject of the dog-collar, legislators of the past have conceived it worth while to enter details in their scrolls. This originated as a means of control, but developed in early times as a form of armour to defend the dog's throat against the attacks of wolves. It was then broad enough to cover the throat, and bore large spikes. A survival of these spikes we find on the collar of the present day, in the form of brass knobs. In the reign of Edgar, which saw the extirpation of the wolf in Wales, the following law was enacted by him:

"An ox's bell, and a dog's collar and a blast horn, either of these three shall be worth a shilling, and each is reckoned an informer."<sup>2</sup>

In later works we get descriptions of dog-collars worn by the canine attendants of the royalty and the nobility.

In the tenth century were passed the laws of Howel the Good, King of South Wales,<sup>3</sup> dealing with the methods of the chase: included in these laws is a list of the kinds of dogs to be found in these islands. The dogs mentioned are: the "gelli,"

<sup>1</sup> Laws of King Alfred, 23.

<sup>2</sup> Edgar, H.8. (The collar was a "melda," or "informer," perhaps because a bell was attached to it.)

"Ancient Laws and Institutes of England": Engl. Record Commission, 1840.

<sup>3</sup> "Ancient Laws and Institutes of Wales," ed. by Aneurin Owen: Engl. Record Commission, 1841.

a large hound like a buckhound, so named from his being either of a dun or bay colour and from his hunting in coverts; the "milgi," or greyhound; the "olrhëad," or tracker; the "bytheuad," a hound or harrier; the "cholwyn," or spaniel; the "bugeilgi," or shepherd's dog; the "ki-taeog," or peasant's dog; and the "callawet," or watchdog, otherwise wandering dog. The chief huntsman had the following privileges and duties. Apart from free land and linen clothing from the Queen and "woollens" from the King, he had three hornfuls of liquor and a mess of meat, and received one-third of a fine of a junior huntsman when punished and one-third of the fee paid on the huntsmen's daughters' weddings! He was to have the skin of an ox in winter to make leashes and the skin of a cow in the summer to make boots. He was exempt from creditors, as long as he was out of bed and had his boots on. But this form of moratorium ended in November, when he was to pay his debts and to share the skins, and so on. We read that the chief huntsman's "worth" is "six score and six kine, to be augmented once."<sup>1</sup> A King's buckhound was of the value of one pound when trained, the same value as a stallion, but only "6 score pence" when "untrained," 3 score pence when a year old, 30 pence when a whelp, 15 pence from birth to opening its eyes. Greyhounds, if trained, were started at 6 score pence, and the value is in all cases just half that of the buckhound given above.

A spaniel of royal ownership was worth a pound and that of a man of exalted position was worth the same, but that of "a freeman" only 6 score pence, whilst that of an *aillt* only 4 pence, the same value as a cur. A herd-dog that goes before the herd in the morning and follows them home at night is worth the best ox in the herd, we read. Needles were important, those used to sew for hunting purposes more so: that of the chief huntsman for sewing up the torn dogs, we read, was worth 4 legal pence, whilst that of a seamstress for sewing cloth was only to be valued at 1 penny. And in these laws are many strange things. He who dare put out the eye or cut off the tail of the King's covert-hound was to pay 24 pence to the King for every cow that the dog may be valued at; and a man might scowl at a dog attacking him and on two other occasions!

According to these old Welsh laws, dogs are to be considered of higher and lower rank. Of higher dogs there are three species—the tracker, a greyhound, a spaniel. Of the trackers there were three kinds—a bloodhound, a covert-hound, and a harrier. There were also three kinds of curs—a mastiff (?), a shepherd's dog, and a house-cur; and in amongst masses of similar and amusing values and descriptions we find a note that if a wife should call her husband "a cur" and abuse him, wishing him "drivel on his beard, dirt in his teeth," she was to pay 3 kine; or if she liked it better, to receive 3 stokes with a rod the length of the husband's forearm and the thickness of his long finger, on any part of her person he should please, her head excepted.

From the beginning of the eleventh century the forest laws are an important source of information. Doubtless these laws had been in existence for long before this. We may be sure that chieftains and petty kings had always taken good care to prevent their hunting being spoiled or even interfered with by the ever-ready-to-get-food-for-the-catching fraternity. Gurguntius, son of Belyn, is said to have

<sup>1</sup> These rules varied according to whether they were of North Wales, South Wales, or South-east Wales.





Et si on n'auoit veu rembuscher ou entrer le Loup dedans le bois (car il est aucunesfois rare) le venant pour bien dreiller li-mier & ieunes chiens pour Loup, doit attendre le temps des lou-  
C ij

DV LOUP, ET DE SA NATVRE.



Des remedes que lon peut tirer des parties & excremens du Loup. Chap. 2.

Comme lon doit dresser les chiens courants pour la chasse du Loup. Chap. 4.



Il y a en France cent mille chiens courants, qui tous ne scauroient auoir mis vn Loup hors du bois, là où avec vn seul des miens.

LA CHASSE DV LOUP.  
Comme lon doit chasser les Loups avec les chiens courants, & prendre à force. Chap. 7.



DOGS IN FARMING SCENES, AND USED WITH WOLVES. From the "Maison Rustique." Estienne (1570).



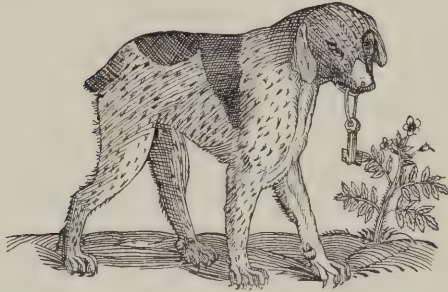


(Above) left. WILD FOWLING; right. HOW RABBITS ARE CAUGHT. (Below) left. HOW ONE MAY CATCH ALL KINDS OF BIRDS WITH HAWKS AND NETS, and right. HOW DOGS SHOULD BE TRANSPORTED BY SHIP. From Engravings by J. A. Loncier, 1884.



Does in Woodcuts. (Above) left, "Dog without hair . . ."; right, "White hairy Greyhound." (Below) left, "Another Spanish dog with floppy ears . . ."; right, "Another rust-coloured Greyhound or Turkish hound." From *Aldrovandus* (1637).





DOGS IN WOODCUTS. (1st Row) left, "Maltese dog with shorter hair"; right, "Spotted sporting dog trained to catch game." (2nd Row) left, Sporting white dog; right, "Spanish dog with floppy ears." (3rd Row) left, "French dog"; right, "Mad dog of Grevinus." (4th Row) left, Hairy Maltese dog; right, "English fighting dog . . . of horrid aspect,"  
From *Aldrovandus* (1637).

made the forest laws in Wiltshire,<sup>1</sup> and we learn that previously to the reign of Canute no one of less degree than a gentleman might keep greyhounds for hunting.

The laws passed by Canute, however, at the Parliament held at Winchester in 1016 are the first of which we have any detailed knowledge, and formed the basis of subsequent legislation. Many of the penalties were exceedingly severe, viewed in the light of to-day. Death was the payment for hunting on Crown domains; flogging or fining for driving an animal out of breath, but if it was a royal stag the punishment was imprisonment for two years or to be deprived of all privileges and excluded from human society. William I added to these regulations, amongst other things, that the eyes of a culprit who took a stag or a buck were to be put out. Indeed the grinding tyranny of the forest laws became with every succeeding monarch so much the more exacting and brutally intolerant, and clearly suggest the difficulty Royalty, nobility, and landowners found to preserve their huntings and prevent poaching. Later, for the better prevention of the infringement of royal privileges, the mutilation of dogs was enforced to render them unfit for hunting or running a stag, and only certain breeds of pet dogs and shepherd's dogs might be kept within the precincts of forest lands without such mutilation. "32. What dogges a man may keep, in the Forest. These little dogges, called velteres [possibly Italian greyhounds] and such as are called ramhundt (al which dogs are to sit in ones lap) may be kept in the forest, because in them no danger and therefore they shall not be hoxed or have their knees cut, but although they be lawfull dogges, they must be lawfully used and kept, as it does appeare by the next canon."<sup>2</sup>

In this canon, numbered 33, we read that "the price of a meane man.—If by misfortune such a kinde of dogs are become mad and savage and doe runne up and downe everywhere, by the negligence of their master, and so doe become unlawfull, then the owner must yeald a recompence to the King for their unlawfulness. If they be found within the circuit of the forest then the master of such dogs must bee sought out, and hee shall yield recompence. According to the estimation of a meane man, which, according to the ancient law, is 10 pounds."

It was further enacted in clause 34 that "The price of a freeman.—If a greedy ravening dog doe bite a wild beast in the forest, then the owner shall yeeld recompence for the same, oweing to the price of a freeman which is 12 times a hundred shillings. But if he doe bite a Royal beast then he shall be guilty of the greatest offence."<sup>3</sup>

As time went on there was increasing objection among the people to the hardships involved, particularly in the mutilation of their dogs, which, apart from feelings of indignation caused by the wish to poach, was in itself so revolting a business that the law was frequently broken and we find that they were just as often fined for doing so. The fines varied from 12*d.* to 1*d.* if the person offending was poor. Forests then had a new commercial value, yielded incomes of various sums per annum—as much as £10, as well as fines in "kind," honey, wax, and so on, were forthcoming; but on one occasion only 38*s.* was the yield of a certain forest, and a

<sup>1</sup> "Concordantia Historiarum."

<sup>2</sup> John Manwood, "A Treatise and Discourse of the Laws of the Forest" (1598; 4th ed. 1717).

<sup>3</sup> A dog gauge used in Canute's reign is shown on Plate 42. If a dog could pass through this iron ring, it passed the test for size and escaped mutilation. The illustration is from Whitaker's "History of Whalley." The diameter was 7 inches by 5 inches; on the top is a swivel for attachment to a man's belt.



note states that the Scottish enemy had raided the country. King John (1199-1216), probably annoyed that the law was being so flagrantly broken, according to Henry de Knyghton, Canon of Leicester, ordered that all dogs and mastiffs in every forest were to be slaughtered.<sup>1</sup> So the preservation of game continued year after year—the dogs were maimed by hoxing, hock-sinewing, hambling, hazing, lawing, expediting, and were sometimes so damaged that they were too lame to live. Those who tried to escape were fined to the benefit of the King, to whom these fines were sent.

In Henry II's reign the method of mutilation was changed: instead of cutting the sinews,<sup>2</sup> the method now was one of cutting out the ball<sup>3</sup> of the foot, but the dogs were found difficult to handle during the operation, and so by wise dispensation this was later altered to striking off three claws of the right foot. The now more up-to-date method was instituted by Henry II at the assizes of Woodstock, and every three years, officers of the Crown, or "honest men," made a tour of inspection to see that the law was carried out. Quite a number of legal actions were fought on the question of the right to be absolved from maiming dogs by reason of exemptions granted to an owner or to his ancestors. The fines were increased to as much as 3s. per dog. Better to control this mutilation, certain places were now appointed as defined areas where the operation was to be performed. No other dogs except mastiffs, writes Rev. W. B. Daniel in his "Rural Sports," were expeditated, because no other type of dog was allowed to be kept in the forest.<sup>4</sup>

It was usual for the Regarders of the Forest to make a report to the Judges of the Court, and to order all the mastiffs to be brought before them at a time when a man was present with instruments to carry out the law. "Three clawes of the forefoot" were to be cut off by the skin. The mastiff, being forced to set one of his forefeet upon a piece of wood 8 inches thick and a foot square, was held there whilst a man, setting a chisel of 2 inches broad upon the three clawes<sup>5</sup> of his forefoot, at one blow with a mallet "doth smite them cleane off."<sup>6</sup> Mastiffs so expeditated were allowed to be kept by farmers and freeholders of position dwelling within the forest to defend their houses.

This mutilation continued during the reigns of Queen Elizabeth and James I, though I think it probable that the law was by no means strictly enforced, since mastiffs were needed for bull and bear baiting. Already the breaking-down process had started. Various exemptions had been granted. It was, for example, "lawful to the Abbot of the Borough of St. Peter to hunt and to take Hares, Foxes, and Martons, within the Bounds of the Forest, and to have unawed Dogs, because he hath sufficient Warrant thereunto" (Edward I).<sup>7</sup> Amongst others who were exempted were the Bishop and Prior of Carlisle, the Abbot and Monks of Reading, and one Stephen de Segrave, Justiciary of England, who received a charter of exemption not only for the dogs of himself, but for those of his heirs and their men for ever in the Manor of Awkenbury in Huntingdonshire.<sup>8</sup> Once exemptions were easily

<sup>1</sup> Twysden, "Historiæ Anglicanæ Scriptores" (1652), x, p. 2417.

<sup>2</sup> Wynn suggests that this is incorrect and that the word "hambling" or "hameling" merely means "to abate their speed." There is an interesting note of a lady recovering a fine (see Appendix XXI).

<sup>3</sup> The ball of the foot was termed the "pellota" (Wynn).

<sup>6</sup> Manwood, *loc. cit.*

<sup>4</sup> Charter of the Forests (Henry III).

<sup>7</sup> "Statutes of the Realm," vol. i., p. 244.

<sup>5</sup> The claw was known as the *ortellus* (Wynn).

<sup>8</sup> "Archæologia" (1806), vol. xv.



obtained, the regulation was well on the road towards extinction. Exemptions pierce the law, the breach gradually widens until it becomes so large that the law becomes a farce, a mere weapon for the unscrupulous to turn on an enemy. So it was that a time came when exemption could be granted by noblemen to their dependents, by bishops to those over whom they held authority, and the fines for failure to expedite, formerly the property of the King, now went to the noblemen as part of their increments! The Royal Family had lost interest, and gradually the nobility followed their lead and lost interest too. The nobles and bishops and others on whom the powers had fallen found it difficult and often exceedingly unpleasant to obtain the fines levied on dog owners.

While the royal love of sport thus entailed considerable hardship and discontent among the mass of the people during these centuries, for those within the royal circle there were many advantages to be reaped. Land was often held on condition that dogs were kept for the King's pleasure if he should require them. Thus in Henry II's reign the Manor of Bericote in Warwickshire was given to one Boscher, a servant, for keeping a white bitch with red ears, which had to be delivered to the King at the year's end, and was then replaced by another. Among others Hugh Pantulf held Stanforde, Hereford, for similar services.<sup>1</sup>

In the same reign wolves were still common, and various payments are noted on account of their destruction: 100s. to the wolf hunters of Hampshire, 29s. to the wolf hunters of Buckinghamshire, and two wolf hunters of the King get 5s. 6d., Richard and Baldwin sharing this sum.<sup>2</sup> These were considerable sums of money in those days, and no doubt this was a profitable form of activity.

The large hunting establishments of the Royal Family were also a means of employment for a large number of persons. The entries in the Close Rolls of John and Henry III<sup>3</sup> are very numerous regarding the maintenance of these establishments:

"The King to John Fitz-Hugh, etc.: We send to you by William de Mere and R. de Erleham, three Gire falcons, and Gibbun the Gire falcon, than which we do not possess a better, and one falcon gentle, commanding you to receive them and place them in the mewes, and provide for their food plump goats and sometimes good hens, and once every week let them have the flesh of hares; and procure good mastiffs (*bonos mastivos*) to guard the mewes. And the cost which you incur in keeping these falcons and the expenses of Spark, the man of W. de Mere, who will attend them, with one man and one horse, shall be accounted to you at the Exchequer. 21 March, 16, John."

We also have entries giving details as to the food of the dogs—"their allowance of bread or paste, as they may require it"; also "let them hunt sometimes in the Bishop's chace for the flesh which they are fed." We have, too, the entry dated 1206, and warranted by G. Fitz-Peter, to pay to H. de Neville 10 marks each year for four years, being the wages of Odo and Richard, who have the charge of "our wolfdogs"<sup>4</sup>; and there is a further order that one Peter Bordeaux is to be allowed to keep six or seven dogs for hunting, and three greyhounds, and that he was not to be the loser nor be dragged into court. William de Breosa paid for three castles in Monmouthshire, amongst other things twenty-four scenting hounds (searching

<sup>1</sup> Thomas Blount, "Fragmenta Antiquitatis," ed. Beckwith (1815).

<sup>3</sup> T. D. Hardy, "Rotuli Litterarum Clausarum" (1844).

<sup>2</sup> J. Hunter, Pipe Rolls (1844).

<sup>4</sup> See Appendix XXI.

hounds) and ten greyhounds. "We command you to provide necessaries for Ralph the otter huntsman, and Godfrey his fellow, with two men and two horses and twelve otter hounds as long as they find employment in capturing otters in your shire. And as soon as they cannot capture any, you are forthwith to send them back to us and any cost you may incur through them shall be accounted to you at the Exchequer." In another letter we have that forty-four "de mota" dogs were to be used for hunting the wild boar in the Brigstock Forest of Northamptonshire, the flesh of the pig to be salted down, the skins to be bleached and according to the direction of one William de Ireby. This salted flesh, of both boar and deer, went to the Court, also to victual the fleet. There is an interesting note dated 15 John 1213, and signed by Master Ernald de Auchleat, showing that the King sent "three of our red-and-black greyhounds and one sorrel-coloured one" to Warren Fitz-Falcon. There is also mention of foxhounds (*gupillerettis*), forty of which are sent by King John to Peter de Cancellia. In a further letter foxhounds again are mentioned, this time as *brachettis wulpericiis*. Boarhounds (*canibus nostris porkariciis*) also occur in a letter to Rowland Bloet, and deerhounds in a letter from the King in 1215, of the 16th day of August, as *Canibus Daimmariciis* to hunt danmos (deer).

The following account is of interest. It can be seen in the Public Record office (Henry III's reign):

"In discharge of the expenses of Richard de Candevere and William de Candevere, hunting red-deer (*cervos*) in the forests of Kynefare," each one of them receives per day 21*d.* "to keep them 2 horses, 3 grooms, 25 herettior dogs for their discharge from Sunday in the feast of," etc. Subtracted from the account for their dogs is 10*s.*; for skins of 20 stags, £11 8*s.* All over the country, land was granted under the express conditions that dogs were to be kept for the King's pleasure in hunting wolves and other game, a kennel of "Harriers" at the King's cost. John Engayne held the Manor of Upminster in Essex, value £30 a year, because he kept hare dogs for the King; and Hardekyn held land in Wodeham Mortimer in Essex because he nursed a hound until fit to run; whilst one Bertram de Criol held the Manor of Steene in Kent, for providing one man to lead three greyhounds as long as a pair of shoes worth 4*d.* should last.<sup>1</sup> "When the King should go into Gascony."

Fox hunting is evidently of ancient origin, as foxhounds are mentioned in King John's reign, and in Edward I's reign William, fox-dog keeper of the King, went to Clarendon, to hunt in several forests for foxes, he and his men receiving 2*d.* a day wages, the food of the thirty dogs costing 1*d.* a day, and the horse carrying the fox nets 3*d.* a day, and there are several further accounts of a similar nature.<sup>2</sup> During the next reign, that of Edward II, foxhunting started on the 1st of September and ended on the last day of February, or from the 8th of September to the 25th of March. The earths were stopped at night, and the dogs used were of many and different kinds, whilst the nets referred to above were still employed to secure the fox, should the various other methods of hunting fail.

This first Prince of Wales, afterwards Edward II, was very fond of dogs and hunting, and letters from him in 1304 and 1305, when he was twenty-two years of age and was suffering banishment from the Court, are of great interest. He writes that he is sending some "of our bow-legged harehounds of Wales who can well

<sup>1</sup> Blount (1679).

<sup>2</sup> Public Record Office: Expenses of Giralconers, etc. (Jesse).



discover a hare if they find it sleeping; and some of our running dogs who can swiftly chase it"; he also offers to send some of "the wild natives," but whether the latter offer was accepted or not history does not relate.

Foxhounds were not only used for hunting foxes, but also frequently employed for other purposes, and it is not till we reach the sixteenth century that we find in Sir Thomas Cockaine's book,<sup>1</sup> published in 1591, evidence that packs are beginning to be kept for the exclusive object of fox hunting. After describing the way to train hounds by killing cubs, he continues that as an old fox, "being well breathed, is so forcible a chase," it is the duty of every huntsman to chase him back into the wood and prevent him breaking cover, and to help the hounds "that all travoilers passing that way may knowe that it is a foxe that is hunted." He also states that he has killed a fox fourteen miles from the covert. On the title-page is the big hound, with a large head and drooping ears, short legs and high stern.

In his instructions as to hunting he tells us that "you must breed fourteen or fifteen couple of small Kibble hounds, lowe and swift, and two couple of Terriers."

Amongst other regulations for the household of his Majesty King Henry VIII we find that "noe dogs to be kept in Court," except "some small spanyells for ladies or other"; nor might any dog be brought into the Court except by the King or Queen's command. There is also a very interesting note that the dogs kept outside the Court must be kept "sweete, wholesome," and "cleane."<sup>2</sup> In the privy accounts<sup>3</sup> of his Majesty appear various outlays, such as payments for the King's "mastyves for certeynne necessaryes," "Colars and mosulles," their "mete"; also payments made to (Robert) Shere, "Keper of the Begles," and for the care and food of "buk houndes." The food consumed by the King's dogs was as follows: 68 loves of bread, served to the Officers of the Lesh, 34 loves served to Mr. — for the greyhounds, costing a total sum of 2s. 1½d. a day. The King and Queen's dogs had velvet collars: "vi dogge collars of crymson vellat net. VI lyhans of white leather." And it is recorded that Mary gave "15s. for a little spanyell."

There is an item which has much human interest: payments of ten shillings and five shillings were made "for bringing Cut the Kinge's spanyell ayen" and "Bringing home, Ball, the Kinge's dog that was lost in the forrest of Waltham," as well as 4s. 8d. to "a poure woman" as a reward "for bringing ayenne of Cutte, the King's dog." There is also the 3s. paid for the hire of a cart for the King's hounds from "Newelme to Wodstok," and 7s. 6d. for canvas to cover them with, whilst Humphrey Raynezford collected 5s. for 10 elles of canvas to cover the cart and 6d. for 300 nails used in covering it.

Another item is 10s. paid for a cow (in 1530) "that Uryen a Brereton's greyhound and my Ladye Anne [Anne Boleyn] killed."

Skeleton, who had been Henry VIII's tutor, and became Poet Laureate, in one of his satires describes Wolsey as the "Maystiffe cur" and as the "Boucher's dog." It is not surprising, perhaps, that he had, at one time, to take sanctuary at Westminster for his outspokenness. He attacked not only great personalities, but the sports and pastimes of the people, such as bull baiting and bear baiting. These were the chief Sunday amusements of the populace, and when Beverley Church fell in,

<sup>1</sup> "A Short Treatise on Hunting" (London, 1591).

<sup>2</sup> Harl. 610, Statut. Henry VIII. See Appendix XXI.

<sup>3</sup> "Privy Purse Expenses of Henry VIII, 1529-1532," edited by N. H. Nicolas (1827).



smothering the few people who were at evening service, some man said that it proved how foolish it was to be in church when it was a ruling of Providence that everyone should be at sport.<sup>1</sup>

Bull and bear baiting continued to be important entertainments under Elizabeth, witnessed by all personages who visited our shores.<sup>2</sup> The French Ambassador, amongst others, in 1559, after "musick to dinner and after a splendid dinner," was entertained by bulls and bears baited with English dogs, and the Queen stood watching until six at night. There was also a great feast of baiting at the Paris Garden (Bankside, Southwark), and the French Ambassador left England two days after this feast, taking with him many mastiffs for hunting wolves. The Queen's interest in baiting continued to the end of her life, for in the Sidney papers we read a letter from Rowland White, of May 12, 1600, that her Majesty was very well: "This day she appointes to see a Frenchman doe feates upon a rope in the Conduit court, to-morrow she hath commanded the beares, the bull, and the ape, to be baited in the Tilt-yard, upon Wednesday she will have solemn dawning."

In 1591 an order of the Privy Council prohibited the exhibition of plays on Thursdays, as that was the day for bull and bear baiting, and instructions were sent to the Lord Mayor that people were reciting their plays to the great hurt and destruction of the game of bear baiting . . . maintained at her Majesty's pleasure.

Edward Alleyn, the actor, founder of Dulwich College and proprietor of the Fortune Playhouse in Whitecross Street, was the owner, in partnership with Philip Henslow, of a bear-garden on the Bankside at Southwark and was often of considerable service to the Master of the Queen's Bears by being able to supply bears at short notice. An advertisement shows the type of entertainment provided.

"To-morrow being Thursdaie, shal be seen at the bear-garden on the Bank-side, a greate match plaid by the gamesters of Essex, who hath challenged all comers whatsoever to plai 5 dogges at the single beare, for 5 pounds; and also to wearie a bull dead at the stake, and for their better content, shall have pleasant sport with the horse and ape, and whipping of the blind bear.

"VIVAT REX" <sup>3</sup>

Paul Hentzner, a tutor, travelled with his master through England in 1598,<sup>4</sup> and describes a place built in the form of a theatre, used for the baiting of bulls and bears, "where they are worried by great dogs,"<sup>5</sup> and continues that the whipping of a blinded bear was performed by five or six men, standing circularly with whips, which they used without mercy, the bear being unable to escape because of his blindness

<sup>1</sup> Sir Thomas More: "At Beverley late, much of the people being at a bear baiting, the church fell sodenly down at evensong time, and overwhelmed some that then were in it. A good fellow that after heard the tale told, 'So,' quod he, 'now you may see what it is to be at evensong when you should be at the bear baiting.'"

<sup>2</sup> John Nichols, "The Progresses and Public Processions of Queen Elizabeth" (1823).

<sup>3</sup> James 1st.

<sup>4</sup> "A Journey into England in the Year 1598" ("Itinerarium Germaniæ, Galliæ, etc," Nuremberg 1612), translation by R. Bentley (1757).

<sup>5</sup> The Latin reads:

"Est & alius postea locus Theatri quoque formam habens, Ursorum & Taurorum venationibus destinatus, qui à politicâ parte alligati à magnis illis canibus & molossis Anglicis quos linguâ vernalulâ docten appellant, mirè exagitantur, ita tamen, ut foepè canes isti ab Ursis vel Tauris dentibus anepti, vel comibus impetiti de vitâ periclitari, aliquando etiam animam exhalare foleant, quibus sic vel lassis statim substituantur alii recentes & magnis alacres." ("Hentzneri Itinerarium, 1612.)

and his chain. The poor brute threw down all he managed to seize, also seizing the whips and tearing them out of the men's hands and breaking them.

In the "Generall Chronicle of England" commenced by John Stow, who subsequently died half-starved on the streets, we have many accounts of a variety of sports of baiting. They show the childlike interest of the monarch and his courtiers in experimental work. They failed entirely to realise that they were dealing with animated things of flesh and blood. Not only were bears, bulls, and apes baited, but horses and lions were treated in the same way. We read how live cocks were thrown to the lions, and a live lamb was let down on a rope to them; the unfortunate lamb lay upon his knees, "but presently the lambe rose up, and went into the lyons, who very gently looked upon him, and smelled on him," so the lamb was drawn up again. Again, there was "a triall of fight between a lyon, a stone horse, a beare and of mastife dogs," and a great fierce bear, "which had killed a child, that was negligently left in the Bear-house," on the 23rd of June. The lions failed to attack the bear, and the two mastiff dogs also ran past the bear and attacked the lion. The stallion was then introduced, "who suddenly scented and saw both the Beare and Lyon and very carelessly grazed in the middle of the yard between them both." Then six dogs were let in; they at first made for the lion, but then suddenly left him and seized on the horse, which would have been worried to death if "three stout Beare-wards" had not come in and saved it. The lion escaped into his den as soon as he could. Finally, as the stage effects had so miscarried, the King ordered the fierce bear to be baited to death, which was done. One can imagine what the poor brute suffered: nothing was too cruel and no torment was spared, and "unto the mother of the murdered child was given 20 pence out of part of that money which the people gave to see the beare kild." After one such encounter the lion was allowed to get back into his den, "and then he never ceast walking up and downe, to and fro, until he hadde brought himself into his former temperature. Whilst he was hot hee would never offer to lie downe but walked to and fro."

It was then that William Harrison, in his "Description of England" (1586),<sup>1</sup> describes British dogs, based on the Dr. Caius's treatise as sent to Gesner, to which Harrison alludes in the first part of his chapter. He describes the mastiff, tie dog or band-dog, so called "because manie of them are tied up in chaines and strong bondes, in the daie time, for doing hurt abroad"; and after stating that "some barke onlie with fierce and open mouth but will not bite, some doo both barke and bite, but the cruellest doo either not bark at all, or bite before they barke, and therefore are more to be feared than anie of the other," writes that "they take also their name of the word mase and theefe (or master theefe if you will) because they often stound and put such persons to their shifts in townes and villages and are the principall causes of their apprehension and taking. The force which is in them surmounteth all beleefe and the fast hold which they take with their teeth exceedeth all credit."

He further states, after giving a short account of their great ferocity and strength, that some "rage" only in the night, that those which are suffered to go loose about the house and yard are so gentle in "the daie time" that children may ride on their backs and play with them as they desire, but he adds that some of these mastiffs are of "such gelousie" as to their master and his household that if

<sup>1</sup> Raphael Holinshed, "Chronicles of England" (1587).



"a stranger do imbrace or touch anie of them" the dogs will attack furiously and cause great mischief unless quickly controlled.

"I had one myself," he writes, "which would not suffer anie man to bring in his weapon further than my gate; neither those that were of my house to be touched in his presence. Or if I had beaten anie of my children, he would gentlie have assaied to catch the rod in his teeth and take it out of my hand or else pluck doune their clothes to save them from the stripes."

He also describes the Maltese as "little and prettie, proper and fine, and sought out far and neare to satisfy the nice delicacie of daintie dames, and wanton women's willes." He adds that the smaller they are the better they are liked, and especially if they have a "hole in the foreparts of their heads."

He states that "turne spits" office is not "unknowne to aine." There were also "sholts or curs dailie brought out of Iceland," very popular because of their "sawcinesse and quarrelling, moreover they bite very sore, and love candles exceedinglie, as doo the men and women of their countrie." He tells us of a woman, the wife of a great man of those parts, who "wilst her husband was under the hatches with the mariners espied a pound or two of candles hanging at the mast which she thereupon eat, every one, supposing herself to have been at a jolly banket."

"The last kind of toieth curs," he writes, "are named dancers, taught and exercised to dance in measure at the musical sound of an instrument, as at the 'suft' stroke of a drum, sweet accent of the cilharne<sup>1</sup> and pleasant harmonie of the harp, shewing many tricks by the gesture of their bodies, as to stand bolt upright, to lie flat upon the ground, to turn round as a ring, holding their tails in their teeth, to saw and beg for meat, to take a man's cap from his head . . . they were dressed in motleie and coloured short-waisted jackets."<sup>2</sup>

He states that he might describe other dogs, such as those bred between a bitch and a wolf, called Lycifca, a thing "verie often seene in France," which I presume refers to the Spitz or a "Spitz" cross.

But popular as dogs were, it was considered an insult to be likened unto or described as a dog. The following is a copy from a *Lansdowne MS.* 114 of the last part of the sixteenth century.

I.

To prove that one William Paget on the Vth. day of this present moneth, being fryday betwixt viii & ix of the clocke at nyght went up and downe teachyng a dogg frenche.

1. Mr<sup>rs</sup> Karter a gentilwoman borne sayeth that about the same tym she did hear the said Paget say that he would teach his Dogg to speak frenche.

2. Mr<sup>rs</sup> Anne Coot, a gentilwoman affirmeth the same.

3. One William Poyser, yeoman, sayeth that he hearde Paget say that he wold make his Dogg speake as good frenche as any of them.

4. James Hudson sayeth that standing at his master's doore he did hear Paget speake to his Dogg in a straunge language but what language he knoweth not.

5. Edward a grosser is to be deposed that he hearde Paget say I will teach my Dogg to speake frenche, and was talking with his Dogg in frenche.

<sup>1</sup> Probably "citherne," a kind of guitar.

<sup>2</sup> At about the same time there is an interesting reference to the use of English dogs for even more startling purposes.—AUTHOR.



2.

To prove that the sayd  
Paget did say shortly will  
come into the realme frenche  
dogges, I hope I shall see  
thame all rootted owt.

1. M<sup>rs</sup> Karter sayeth she hearde Paget say Shortlye etc.  
2. M<sup>rs</sup> Anne Coot affirmeth the same.  
3. William Poyser sayeth he hearde Paget say within this week  
or two there will come a great many frenche dogges.  
4. M<sup>rs</sup> Eleonore Borgurreci upon her othe affirmeth the same.  
5. The L. Maior writteth in his letter, etc.

3.

To prove the great assem-  
bly that was with Paget be-  
fore D. Julio came home to  
his hous.

1. John Polton saieth, etc.  
2. James Hudson, etc.  
3. Richard Preston, etc.

4.

To prove that the sayd  
Paget did resiste to the Con-  
stable, when he came to ap-  
prehend him.

1. William Poyser, etc.  
James Hudson, etc.  
Richard Preston, etc.

D. Julio's abstract of the depositions of the witnesses sworn concerning the abusive speeches of John Paget against the French.

When Sir Thomas Roe was Ambassador to the Great Mogul "Jehan Guire, the Mighty Emperor of India," malefactors were thrown to the dogs, which tore them to pieces<sup>1</sup>; and in his "Journal of his Voyage to the East Indies"<sup>2</sup> he describes the death of a chief outside his house, torn to pieces by twelve dogs. The East India Company found it much to their advantage that the leading natives were so interested in European dogs as to be willing to allow the Company extensive privileges. "Sum more of the same, with some great curld water spaniells, according to my former would be vallued of the King, beyond things of greater worth, but a charg must be given to the Master or Cammaunders of youre shippes for their good usadge, for som of theise were neglected," writes William Edwards to the Company in 1615.<sup>3</sup> So advanced peaceful penetration. We read too in various letters of how the Indian King tried the dogs, how the British mastiff killed a tiger, and another request for dogs, "2 or 3 fierce Mastyfes a couple of Irishe Grayhoundes and a couple of well (bred) water Spanyells would give him greate contentt."<sup>4</sup>

His Majesty Johnam ben Doulat, King of Achsen, obviously emboldened by such generosity, wrote a personal letter to James for "10 Mastiff bitch and 10 dogs with a great gun wherein a man may sit upright."<sup>1</sup>

In a letter from Sir John Harington, Queen Elizabeth's godson, to Prince Henry in 1608, Sir John describes the feats of his dog "Bungey." He says it travelled on more than one occasion from his house at Bath (Somerset) to Greenwich Palace to deliver to the Court such matters as were entrusted to his care and to bring back messages, nor did he ever "blab ought concerninge his highe truste," as others had done; and that the dog, "sente with two charges of sack wine from the Bathe to

<sup>1</sup> The use of dogs for punishing purposes was not confined to this in later times.

<sup>2</sup> A. and J. Churchill, "A Collection of Voyages," etc. (1732).

<sup>3</sup> O. C. India Office.

<sup>4</sup> Letter from Thomas Keridge to the Company.

my howse by my man Combe" when the "cordage" slackened, most carefully hid one of the flasks in the rushes and brought the other to the house in his teeth, and then went and fetched the flask he had hidden. (See Appendix XXI.)

In Harington's folio edition of "*Orlando Furioso*" (1591) the title page shows him with a large spaniel or setter, shaggy in front and shorn behind; and in the annotation in the book xli, Harington describes a spanielle or hound, used for fowl or deer.

Edmund Spenser, in his "*Faerie Queene*," often refers to the dog, but it is strange that, though the poet was so interested in Ireland, there is no mention of an Irish wolf-dog or wolfhound. It is a noteworthy fact, for he alludes to mastiff, bandog, hound, limehound, spaniel, shepherd's "curre," and cur. It is a few years later that Christopher Wase<sup>1</sup> mentions the Irish wolf-dog. He writes that though there are no wolves in England, where at one time they were prevalent, yet in Ireland they are present where a race of greyhounds are kept, quick, strong, and with a natural enmity to wolves, and that they were in demand for foreign export, and that the King of Poland used them to hunt great beasts. He also suggests wolf-dog crosses, as did William Harrison.

After Queen Elizabeth's death, the torturing of bears and bulls continued. Bears, as formerly, had their eyes scooped out, so that they could be subsequently used to play blind man's buff more ably, the men in the game carrying sticks and whips as usual to thrash the bear. Bulls were tortured to madness, dogs torn, crushed, or tossed, and so the sport continued. The supply of the unfortunate animals was inadequate. Alleyn's bear-garden was taken over, and more stock was required. The chief master of the ceremonies was given unlimited powers to send officers to any part of the kingdom to requisition bears, bulls, dogs, or indeed any other animal considered by the officers to be capable of affording his Majesty and his guests "sport." To avoid trouble with these officers, certain towns and counties agreed to supply mastiff dogs yearly as long as the commission kept outside their borders; Manchester, for example, promised to send up "a mastydogge or bytch to the bear-garden, between Mydsomer and Michalmasse."<sup>2</sup> As bears were created to be baited, blinded, and whipped, and bulls to be tortured at the ring, and dogs were made to fight each other, the public conscience saw no harm in it. Only one thing the public did not understand so clearly as we might have supposed—that was, why they bred dogs or bought dogs, to be handed over to the commission on demand. That this decidedly unreasonable attitude created serious complications could be expected, sometimes leading to pain and bloodshed and other difficulties. Justices of the Peace only too often refused to grant the commission the redress they expected and to which they were doubtless well entitled.

While the master of the bear-garden in Queen Elizabeth's reign had been allowed the privilege of trading public baiting on Sundays in the afternoon for his own benefit, James I refused to grant a continuation of this liberty, and Alleyn complains bitterly of this in his petition which he thereupon presented to the King, praying for an increase in his salary.

Among the letters of the time, one to Mr. Alleyn is of considerable interest,

<sup>1</sup> "*Cynegeticon*," englished and illustrated by Christopher Wase, Gent. (1654).

<sup>2</sup> Papers of Edward Alleyn.

starting, "Mey Verey Loving frend Mr. Allin at the Palles Garden at London," and continuing :

"Mr. Allin, mey love remembered I understoode bey a man which came with too Beares from the gardeyne, that you have a deseyre to bey one of mey Boles. I have three westorne boles at thes tyme, but I have had verey ell loeck with them, for one of them hath lost his horne to the queyck, that I think that hee will never bee ablee to feyght agayne ; that is mey ould star of the west : hee was a verey esey bole ; and my Bol, Bevis, he hath lost one of hes eyes, but I think if you hed him hee would do you more hurt then good, for I protest I think hee would other throo up your dodges in to the loftes or eles ding out theare braynes ageanst the grates, so that I think hee is not for your turne. Besydes, I esteeme him verey hey, for my lord of Rutlandes man bad mee for him xx marckes. I have a bol which came out of the west, which standes mee in twentey nobles. If you so did leyck him, you shall have him of mey : faith, hee is a marvailous good Boole, and shuch a on as I think you have had but few shuch, for I asseure you that I hould him as good a doble bole as that which you had amee last a single, and one that I have played therty or fourty coursse before hath bene tacken from the stacke, with the best dodges which halfe a dosen freyghtes had.

"If you send a man unto mee he shall see aney of mey boles playe, and you shall have aney of them . . . refor, if the will plesoure you. Thus bidding you hartely farewell, I end,

"your louing friend

"WILLIAM FAWNTE."

Whether or no Mr. Alleyn purchased the bull able to hurl the dogs into the gallery, or brain them against the gratings protecting the spectators in the pit, I do not know, but one can feel certain that the suggestion that the bull was too good for him aroused in the last-named gentleman the sporting spirit of "we'll just show him if it is." It appears from Mr. Fawnte's letter that his west-country bulls had already experienced baiting.

We read that both bears and dogs were conveyed by Mr. Alleyn to France to amuse the King whilst in Paris.

An entry in his diary states that the bear-garden cost him £450 and rent of £60 per year ; of this he paid a Mr. Burnabye £200, and for the patent £250. The last entry in the account reads : "Sould itt to my Father, Hinchloe, in Februarie 1610 for £580." Certainly the business paid, for it was thanks to the sums accruing from the garden that this gentleman founded Dulwich College.

James I, besides taking a keen traditional interest in bear baiting, was very fond of hunting. "Nay, I dare boldly say," writes F. Osborn,<sup>1</sup> "that one Man might with more safety have killed another than a Raskall Deare."

There were at that time royal buckhounds, harriers, otter-hounds, greyhounds, lyam-hounds ; and in 1603 Sir Thomas Tyringham was Master of the Buckhounds, and Patrick Hume Keeper and Master of the Privy Harriers and Master of Hawks, and was paid £201 per annum, and had four horses and one footman. Three men were paid £3 each a month and £66 13s. 4d. for keeping twenty couple of hounds.

In 1605 Thomas Pott was appointed to take charge of such hounds, greyhounds,

<sup>1</sup> "Traditionall Memoyres on The Raigne of King James" (1658).



and dogs as shall be fit for the recreation and disport of the Prince at a fee of 3s. 4d. a day. The following year he was given the "Slugg hounds" at 2s. a day; the spelling given here is according to the account for the £9 2s. 6d. paid to the said Thomas Pott in 1612 for this service.

The rolls in the Public Record Office during the reign of James contain numerous payments to huntsmen. Yeomen received 12d. a day, and grooms and waggoners 6d. a day, whilst a yeoman pricker received 20d. a day and 20s. per annum for livery. In 1617 Sir Patrick Hume was paid £360 a year and 10s. a day for life.

James hunted until his death, for in 1624 we find him staying with the Earl of Arundel at Highgate to hunt the stag in St. John's Wood. There is the story of the missing hound "Jowler," "one of the King's special hounds." The loss of this hound displeased his Majesty intensely, but the next day, as he was hunting, "Jowler" reappeared with a paper fastened to his neck, on which was written: "Good Mr. Jowler, we pray you speake to the King (for he hears you every day, and so doth he not us) that it will please his Majestie to go back to London, for els the country wilbe undoon; all our provition is spent already, and we are not able to intertayne him longer." But the King treated this note as a jest and stayed there a further fourteen days.<sup>1</sup>

It is interesting to note that his Majesty was careful not to be subjected to any risks, for in 1617 the constables of Sandon, Kelshall, and other Hertfordshire towns received a letter, instructing them not to allow occupants of land to plough land in narrow ridges, nor swine to be let loose unringed, and thus cause holes in the earth, to the danger of his Majesty the King and the Prince when hawking and hunting. He also objected to the banks between lands "which hinder his Majesty's redde passage."

In Tottenham Woods gates were to be erected, with locks of which he alone was to have a key.

It was James, of course, who sent the £2,000 legacy from "his dead dogge" in the form of a diamond to his consort Queen Anne, after that lady, on aiming at a "deere," mistook her mark and killed "Jewell," the King's favourite and special hound.<sup>2</sup> He wrote her that he would love her none the worse, and that she was therefore not to be troubled; and later, when the Archbishop of Canterbury was unfortunate enough to shoot Lord Zouch's keeper, King James sent word to the prelate "not to discomfort himself," and mentioned that the Queen in a similar way had killed his favourite hound, the best he had ever had.<sup>1</sup>

So James I developed sport in many and various forms. He attended wild-boar hunts in the royal forests (Windsor being a favourite rendezvous); he went fishing with trained cormorants. His love for hunting found expression in the naming of his friends: he called his Queen his "deare little Beagle"; Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury, he addressed as "my little Beagill," whilst his "dog Steenie" was Buckingham. The King was also interested in wild animals as curios; all strange fowls and beasts were to be reserved for him, and when the King of Spain presented

<sup>1</sup> John Nichols, "Progresses of James I": *A Letter from Edmund Lascelles to the Earl of Shrewsbury*.

<sup>2</sup> Nichols, *loc. cit.*: *Birch's MS.* 4173.

Queen Anne hunted round Denmark Hill, hence the name. Where the tram up Denmark Hill swivels round to pass in front of Denmark Hill station stands the "Fox under the Hill" (which also has a Dickens association). Turning right-handed up Grove Lane, and from the top of this descending to East Dulwich station, is Dog-kennel Hill, near which the royal kennels were situated.

his Majesty with an elephant and five camels, no person was to see the elephant on pain of death!<sup>1</sup> We might add here that the elephant cost £275 12s. a year to keep, and, the four keepers being strongly of the opinion that it had on no account to drink water between September and April, an allowance of a gallon of wine a day during that period was made towards its maintenance. To his dogs the King was devoted, and it is on record that during a storm at sea, the ship appearing to be foundering, his Majesty was heard to cry out: "Save the dogs and Colonel Churchill."

We cannot leave the weakly boy, said to have been unable to stand without support until over seven years old, and who grew up to depend on craft rather than strength, without giving his letter to Buckingham, "his dog Steenie," or "badger." This curiously quaint letter of the King reads:

"Sweete hairte blessing blessing on my sweete tome badgers hairte rootes and all his, for breiding me so fyne a kennell of yong howndes, some of thaime so faire and well shaped, and some of thaime so fine prettie litle ones as thaye are worthie to lye on Steenie and Kates bedde; and all of thaime runne together in a lumpe, both at sente and uewe, and God thanke the maister of the horse, for provyding me such a numbre of faire usefull horsis, fitte for my hande; in a worde I proteste I was never maister of suche horses and howndes; the bearare will tell you quhat fyne running we hadde yesterdaye. Remember now to take the aire discreitlie and peece and peece, and for Gods saike and myne, keepe thyselfe verrie warme, especially thy heade and thy showlders, putte thy parke of Bewlie to an ende, and love me still and still, and so God blesse thee and my sweete daughter and god-daughter, to the comforte of thy deare dade."<sup>2</sup>

"JAMES R.

"P.S.—Thy olde purveyoure sent thee yesternight six partridges and two levrettis. I ame now going to hawke the pheasant."<sup>3</sup>

King James died in 1625. He had hoped to excel as an author. He wrote various sonnets and poems, and his famous "Counterblaste to Tobacco" (1604), the latter published anonymously, passed with little notice. His written works are of historical interest to-day as the work of a royal hand, but certainly whilst King his thoughts were mainly centred on the chase, on horses, dogs, and hawks, in furrows and pig-made holes in fields, and gates to which he alone had a key.

With the accession of Charles I to the throne we find an attempt to restore royal privileges, to re-establish the Star Chamber and other obnoxious political institutions, and to revive the Forest Laws in respect of the sixty-eight royal forests then in existence. It is true that Forest Courts were still held here and there and fines for unexpedited dogs were still imposed, but public opinion was set

<sup>1</sup> Public Record Office (Jesse).

<sup>2</sup> The Duke styled the King his "deare dade and gossip."

<sup>3</sup> Har. MS. 6907, fol. 184.

An interesting account appears in a Petition to Sir Thomas Smith, Knight, and all the Company of the East India and Sommer Islands, addressed to King James. The claim is for £6,875. The Petition of William Bragge (1620), MS. Reg. 17, B. X.: E. It reads:

"Item more for 20 Doggs and a greate many Catts which under God as by your booke written of late ridd away and devoured all the Ratts in that lland wch formerly eate up all your corne and many other blessed fruites which that land afforded well for this I will demandaund of you but 5<sup>lb</sup>. a peace for the Doggs and let the Catts goe . . . 100<sup>lb</sup>. 0s. 0d."



against this form of tyranny. One of the last courts was held in 1632 at "Wyndsor," when Mr. Attorney Noy, representing the King, faced Lord Lovelace, who claimed exemption. I think it was at the same court that one Edward Blagrove, who had erected a ferry, was fined £4 because "the forest might be abused by stealing deare and by carrying them over the water so as no blood-hound can follow." So also was Sir Sampson Darrell fined £5 "for erecting a wind milne on his own ground within the Forest, because it frightened the dear and drew company to disquiet game."

Charles I kept hounds, and although he does not appear to have shown quite the same enthusiasm as the preceding monarch, he was by no means indifferent to sport. Ships were named after dogs, and on one occasion indeed Lord Conway wrote to Secretary Coke that he was unable to obtain the King's consideration on certain business as his Majesty was continually sporting or at tennis. In 1629 a warrant was issued to Sir Francis Cottington and Justices to punish any person destroying or disturbing game breeding or nesting within certain limits of Hampton Court—probably the first example of bird protection, though the warrant included hares. No dog was to be taken into the fields and enclosures in that area.

We can obtain some idea as to the situation in the dog world by the following letters.

In 1631 or 1632 Prestwick Eaton wrote from St. Sebastian to George Wellingham in St. Swithen's Lane, for, amongst other things "a good mastive dogge, his bottles filled with good lickour and two good bulldoggs and lett them bee sent by yr first ship." In a subsequent letter Eaton writes: "Let them be good at the Bull and cost what they will, but let them be fair and good curs: they are not for myself but for friends, that I must rely upon, if occasion should offer."

On November 30th, 1632, Viscount Wentworth wrote to the Earl of Carlisle as my very good Lord, and that he had been asked by his cousin Wandesforde to "furnish your worship with some couples of fleet hounds, it is grown a very rare commodity in these parts, all men as they tell me having given over breeding that kinde of cattle."

It was in 1632 that the famous French-English Dictionary appeared that gives the following translations in respect to doggie matters (Randle Cotgrave's):

"*Chien*. A dogge; also a base, filthie, or shamelesse fellow.

"*Fau le chien couchant*. To play the coward or base fellow; to humble or deiect himselfe too much in the presence of another.

"*Chiens publiques*. So were in old times those called who had the letting, and settling of the subsidies granted, and taxes due, unto the King.

"*Appetit de chien*. A most unsatiate appetite; a stomacke which, though it lay in unto vomiting, still would have more.

"*Chose de chien*. A paultrie thing; a matter of no value or consequence; a trifle, trash, trumperie.

"*Chien-dent*. A noble stinker; a loose, dessolute, or idle good fellow.

"*Chien licé*. A beastly companion, filthie scoundrell, stinking iacke, scurie mate.

"*Canaille*. Dogges; a Kennell, or company of dogs, a knot of cures, also, a base crue, roguish troupe, rascall company of scoundrells, the dreggs, or offalls of the people."



He also describes the—

"*Levrier d'attache*. An Irish greyhound, a great Greyhound.

"*Limier*. A bloodhound or limehound.

"*Espagneul, Espagnol*. A Spaniell.

"*Mastin*. A Mastive.

"*Chien de damoiselle*. A pupsie, little dogge, fisting curre.

"*Basset*. A terrier, or earthing beagle; also a low stoole, a dwarfe.

"*Chien d'artois*. A terrier.

"*Chien de S. Hubert*. A kind of strong short legd and deep mouthed hound, used most for hunting the Fox, Badger, Otter, etc.

"*Chiens Muts*. The Hart-hounds, Bauds, tearmed so because 'they only give tongue when they see their first game.'"

The hunting establishments of the Royal Family still supplied in the seventeenth century a large number of eagerly sought posts, some of which were already becoming sinecures, though the next century saw the climax of this process when nothing was left of many offices except the salary, and—what was often more important—the perquisites.

Thus no sooner had Charles II become King than we find that one John Colt presented him with a petition to be appointed Sergeant of the Otter-hounds, and Richard Wood, who had then reached the age of ninety-five, made an application for the post of cormorant keeper, which he had held in James I's reign. Charles II's reign witnessed an attempt to replenish the royal forests with deer, and we read that "400 pounds a year was aloted to the master of Harthounds and Privy Buckhounds," plus £100 for feeding them; whilst Elliott, as Master of the Privy Harriers, was granted £500 a year, and there was also appointed a Master of Otter-hounds and more than one Master of Tenents and Toils. So great was the demand for posts that the King's coachman Murray, seeing no other opportunity for a royal post not already in existence, petitioned for the "keeping of such outlandish beasts . . . as shall be presented by the Russian Ambassador," but this petition failed.

But one of the most amusing petitions of the time was from a widow, Elizabeth Cary, who hoped that it might please his Majesty as the petitioner was old and decrepit and "not likely to enjoy the same long" and had "a son that followed your Majesty to Oxford and was there bitten by your Majesty's Dog Cupid (as your Majesty may happily call to mind)," who was destitute of a livelihood and so likely to come to misery after the petitioner's death without his Majesty's clemency and goodness. Wherefore the petitioner most humbly prayed that "his Majesty in consideration of his promises will be graciously pleased to grant that the said pension may be turned over to her said son Peter Cary." The said Peter Cary, following his Majesty, at last bitten by that royal dog "Cupid!"<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> A somewhat amusing note appeared in the "Kennel Gazette," September 1890, in reference to a dog-bite.

"I do wish some wealthy nabob's mastiff would 'taste' me, says this same 'Peregrine,' something after the style Vanderbilt's dog did his trainer, Myers. I don't think I would mind a 'bite' if I could be sure of such quick healing salve as he is said to have applied; 5,000 dols. and a 4,000 dols. doctor's bill isn't bad by any means, though I hardly see how the latter item comes in, unless he (Myers) had to be entirely renewed."

## CHAPTER II

### THE DOG LICENCE

THE duties on dogs commenced in 1796 and (until 1867) were levied as an assessed tax. The duties varied in amount from time to time, and different rates were charged according to the kind of dog. In 1853, on the revision of the assessed taxes, the duty was fixed at 12s. for any description of dog, and this was the amount of duty when last collected as an assessed tax. Assessed taxes were payable for every year ending April 5, consequently as the excise duty of 5s. for each dog became payable immediately after April 5, 1867, the assessed tax for the year ending on that date was fixed at 7s., so that no additional duty was levied in 1867.

After the dog tax became law, a great slaughter of dogs took place. Dogs were often not buried, and the Magistrates in some places were obliged to interfere. At Cambridge the High Constable buried above 400, at Birmingham more than 1,000 were destroyed, and a great slaughter took place at Liverpool in 1864, and we read that some 100 dead dogs packed up as game were sent to Smithfield Market.

1867. 30 *Vict. Cap. 5.*

AN ACT TO REPEAL THE DUTIES OF ASSESSED TAXES ON DOGS AND TO IMPOSE IN LIEU THEREOF A DUTY OF EXCISE.

#### *Summary.*

1. From and after April 5, 1867, in England, and May 24, 1867, in Scotland, assessed taxes on dogs to cease.
2. Assessed taxes on dogs kept within the year ending April 5, 1867, in England, and May 24, 1867, in Scotland, reduced to 7s. No person to be chargeable for more than £23 2s. for any number of hounds, or £5 5s. for any number of greyhounds.
3. After April 5, 1867: "For and in respect of every dog of whatever description or denomination . . . an annual duty of 5s. to be paid by the person who shall keep the dog."
4. Duties and licences to be under the management of the Commissioners of Inland Revenue.
5. Licences to be in such form as the Commissioners shall direct.
6. Register of licences to be kept.
7. Commissioners to cause notices to be fixed on the church doors.
8. Penalty for keeping a dog without licence, £5; "every person in whose custody, charge, or possession, or in whose house or premises any dog shall be found or seen, shall be deemed to be the person who shall keep such dog, unless the contrary be proved, and the owner or master of hounds shall be deemed to be the person keeping the same."
9. Penalty for not producing licence if required, £5.
10. No dogs under six months old to pay duty.

#### *Metropolitan Police Act, 1839.*

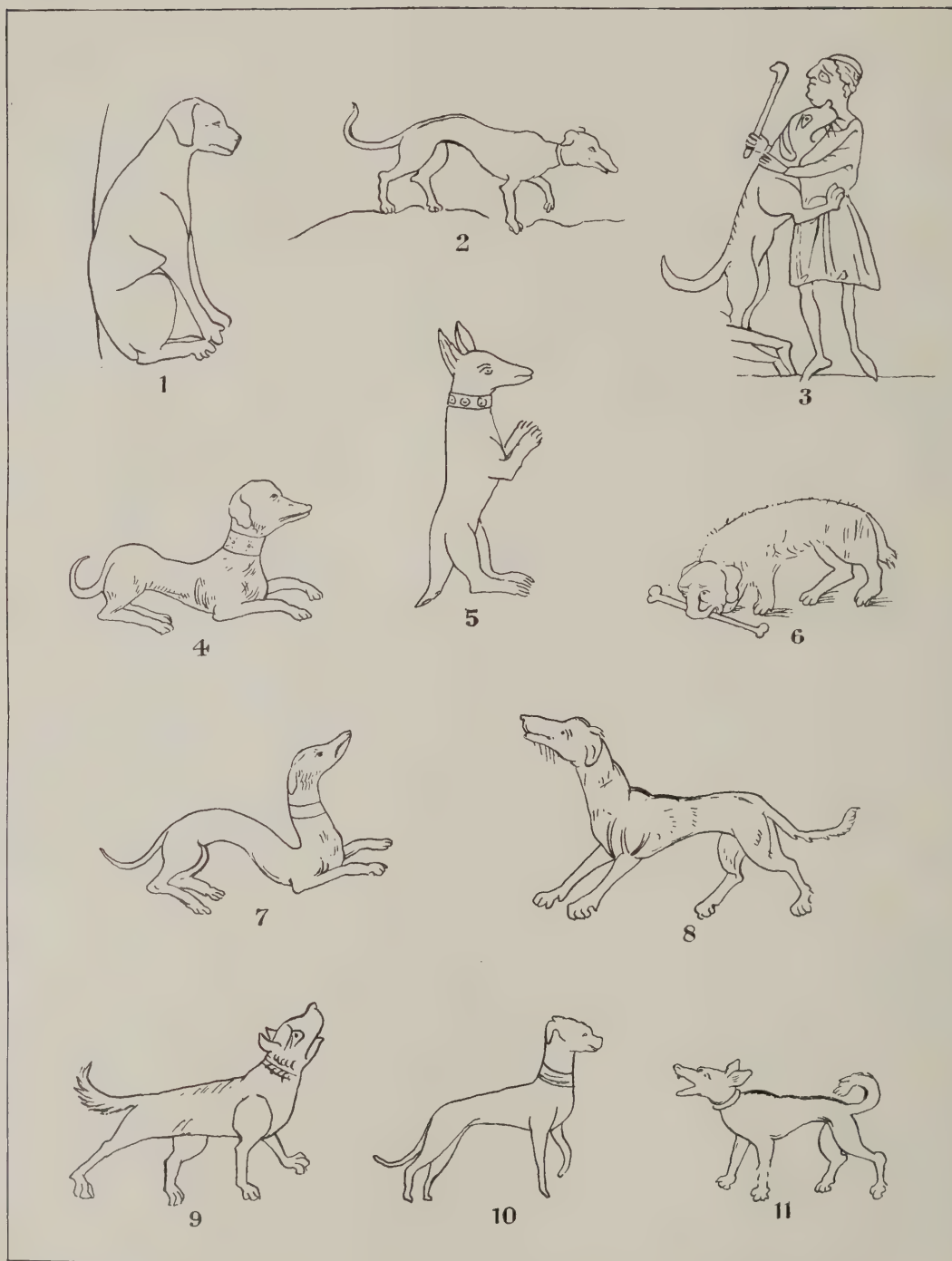
54. Penalty not exceeding 40s.; "Every person who shall turn loose any horse or cattle or suffer to be at large any unmuzzled ferocious dog, or set on or urge any dog or other animal to attack, worry, or put in fear any person, horse, or other animal."

56. "After the first of January next every person who within the metropolitan police district shall use any dog for the purpose of drawing or helping to draw any



(Top) left to right. De Cane Aquatico et aucupe—Spaniel? Hare-dog, Hunting dog "which fight against wild beasts. . . This kind grows to an enormous size, with terrific bark louder than a lion's roar." (Centre) left to right. Pet dog from Maltese stock. Pet Dog (Meliteus). Hunting dog. "A savage beast of unamenable anger surpassing all others in ferocity." (Bottom) left to right. Mastiffs? Typical large dog, such as "are said to draw carts in England." No description. Mastiff (?). Illustrations from *And. Cirino's work of 1673.*





1. Illuminated MSS., 13th century (Warner). 2. Queen Mary's Psalter, early 14th century. 3. "Tractat de Animal," 14th century. 4. Valerius Maximus, 1722. 5. Valerius Maximus, 1722. 6. Valerius Maximus, 1722. 7. Valerius Maximus, 1722. 8. 11th century, English. 9. 14th Century, "Tractat de Animal." 10. Illuminated MSS., 1473. 11. Queen Mary's Psalter, early 14th century. *Illustrations of Dogs from early MSS. etc.*



1



2



3



4



5



7



6



8



9



10

1-3. Poodles? Albert Dürer, 1471-1528. 4-6. Nicoletti da Modena, 1536. 7 and 8. Albert Dürer. 9. Richard Pynson, 1521. (Mastiffs attacking bear.) 10. John van Eyck, 1440. DOGS BY NOTED ARTISTS, 1440-1536. (From Charles Berjean.)



(Top) left to right, Le Levrier, Le Pyrame, Le Roquet, (Centre) left to right, Le Grand Danois, Le Dogue de forte race, Le Gredin, (Bottom) left to right, Le Petit Danois, Le Bichon and Le chien Lion, Le Grand Barbet. From Buffon's "Histoire Naturelle." By various artists, 1798 edition.



cart, carriage, truck, or barrow shall be liable to a penalty not more than 40s. for the first offence and not more than £5 for the second or any following offence."

*Cruelty to Animals Act*, 1854, extended this clause to all parts of the U.K.

*Metropolitan Streets Act*, 1867.

"The Commissioner of Police may, if he sees fit, issue a notice requiring any dog while in the streets and not led by some person to be muzzled."

*Customs and Inland Revenue Act*, 1878.

Duty increased from 5s. to 7s. 6d. Exemption of dogs used by blind persons, and of shepherd's dogs on certain conditions.

*Diseases of Animals Act*, 1894.

Board of Agriculture may make orders as to muzzling, etc.

*Dogs Act*, 1906.

1. Liability of owner of dog for injury to cattle.

2. Board of Agriculture may make orders about dogs.

3. Seizure of stray dogs by police.

Sale or destruction of such dogs.

No such dogs to be given or sold for purposes of vivisection, etc.

4. Notice to police of finding of stray dogs.

5. Exemption of sheep-dogs, etc., from licence.

6. Burial of carcasses safely from dogs.

7. Definition of cattle.

8. The Act to apply to Scotland } with slight modification.

9. And Ireland }

10. Former Acts repealed wholly or partially, according to the schedule to this Act.

11. "This Act may be cited as the Dogs Act, 1906, and shall come into operation on the first of January 1907."

In 1791 a Mr. G. Clark published an address to both Houses of Parliament "containing reasons for a Tax upon Dogs, and the outline of a plan for that purpose ; and for effectually suppressing the oppressive practice of impressing seamen and more expeditions by manning the Royal Navy."

The author, after some preliminary remarks as to the duty of every member of society "to promote the prosperity and happiness of his fellow-citizens," and the "superior discernment of the present age," whose "benevolence is seen in a cheerful sacrifice of the dearest propensities at the shrine of justice and public spirit," comes to his subject in this manner :

"If a scheme is offered to Parliament thus circumstanced, with the additional recommendation of an increase of revenue to the Government, it may be presumed that it has a demand upon the candour and consideration of Government ; and perhaps ought not to be rejected but upon the most perfect conviction of its impracticability or political malignancy. And I cannot persuade myself, my Lords and Gentlemen, but that the tax upon Dogs, which has lately been suggested to the Honourable House of Commons, is a measure which deserves serious attention."

He continues, "being always careful to combine the highest motives with a keen sense of pecuniary advantage": "It appears to me that it would have a tendency to deliver mankind from many evils they are now subject to ; and that it would

from many evils they are now subject to ; and that it would produce a considerable annual sum of money (which might be dedicated to most excellent purposes) with the express consent of those of whom it shall be raised."

He then proceeds to deal with objections which had evidently been already raised against the proposal :

"An outcry has been raised, and may probably again be raised by sordid and interested minds, charging any scheme of this nature as an infringement of the liberty of the subject as to those who *choose* to keep Dogs, and as partial and oppressive upon those who are *obliged* to keep them," etc.

In his next paragraph we find an interesting sidelight on the numbers of the population at that date : "If the number of families in this country amounts to one million, and we reckon a dog to two families, a taxation of them, at 5s. per dog, will amount to £125,000 per annum ; which, added to a gross sum to be paid by gentlemen who keep packs of dogs for hunting, would produce at least £150,000 per annum raised in the most unexceptionable way, i.e. out of a luxury, by the consent of the persons taxed, and by the partial suppression of manifest evils."

Our author, for two or three paragraphs, expatiates on the contention that "taxes *ought* to be laid on luxuries only," and maintains that "dogs are no doubt faithful domestics and cheerful companions," and that they certainly have their uses. "But this by no means makes them necessities." He adds : "The fact is notorious that there are more dogs kept in this country from fancy or for pleasure, than from necessity ; and those which are not necessities are luxuries."

There is strong public support, he says, for the proposal. "I have had frequent opportunities of representing the propriety of such a tax both in public and private companies ; and I have rarely met with one who did not readily adopt the idea, and join me in opinion, that it would in all probability be attended with the most happy effects. The associations forming in different parts of the Kingdom, in order to petition Parliament for such a tax, are a public testimony of the public opinion upon the subject." Such a tax would no doubt cause a devastation among those creatures. . . . In order, therefore, to shew the usefulness of this tax, it will be proper that we should enumerate some of the dangers and evils which arise from dogs."

The first and greatest of those evils, CANINE MADNESS. "By this cruel malady husbands, wives, children, are snatched from each other, and hurried into the invisible world, in the midst of horrors which human nature in no other case feels, and which it is impossible to describe. . . . In the wretch labouring under this dreadful calamity we see human nature sunk to its lowest state of degradation ; we see nothing but the wretched form of humanity left ; and that abject form convulsed by a mind, dreadfully changed from the image of God, to the condition of a brute animal ! . . . And these evils brought upon him by the bite of a dog ! Human nature revolts at the idea, that such evils, proceeding from such causes, should be suffered to exist."

He then proceeds to give reasons for lessening the number of dogs : "The consumption of food occasioned by the number of dogs which are kept tends in a considerable degree to increase the price of provisions and the miseries of the poor " ; the peasant's dog was kept "for some better, or at least for some more profitable purpose than to gratify the eyes and ears of their masters : the practice of poaching

is too prevalent to make these dogs useless pieces of furniture "; that "if a calculation were to be made for one year of the number of sheep and lambs destroyed by dogs in the Kingdom, I am inclined to think that we should stand aghast with horror at the sum," etc., etc.

Finally, he outlines a law of which the clauses are as follows :

1. A duty of 5s. upon each dog annually.
2. Persons keeping more than eight dogs to pay annually £3, and for every pack of hounds £5.
3. None to keep dogs but housekeepers (householders).
4. A penalty of £10 for keeping a dog without paying the duty.
5. The tax to be collected by the collectors of the window tax.
6. That each person shall annually make a return of the number of dogs kept by him.
7. Puppies are not to be paid for or returned till the next half-year after they are pupped.
8. A man once convicted of poaching to have his dogs destroyed, and to be incapable of keeping any for one year.
9. The owners of dogs to be in all cases answerable for damage done by them in killing sheep or otherwise, whether it can be proved that they knew them to be accustomed to such practices or not.
10. Each dog to wear a collar with his owner's name and place of abode ; and a penalty of 10s. upon persons suffering dogs to be ranging without one.
11. All persons to have a right to kill dogs found so ranging without a collar.
12. Power might be given to the Mayors in towns corporate, and to the parish-officers in other places, to order a general confinement of dogs, with penalties for those who should disobey by suffering their dogs to be at large.

The last part of his address deals with the employment of the money raised by the tax, which he proposes should be devoted to paying £5 a year to sailors of the Royal Navy, and thus do away with the necessity of the press-gang with all its attendant evils. The £5, on this suggestion, was to be a kind of retaining fee ; each man, prepared to serve when called upon, was to register his name and address, and he would then, in return for his £5 a year, hold himself in readiness to join up when called. His arguments in favour of this throw some interesting sidelights on the condition of the Navy at that date, less than fifteen years before Trafalgar, but they are too long to give here and have nothing to do with dogs. It is impossible, however, to resist quoting the following passage : " There are many thousands of peasants in this country who labour hard six days in the week for 6 shillings a week, and have nothing else for the support of themselves and their families. £5 per annum would produce near 2s. a week, which to a labouring man would be a highly acceptable boon. It would provide a decent home for him, and occasionally some others of the comforts of life."

Clark's final paragraph runs : " After what has been said I need not here observe that if it be clear that the laying the tax upon dogs will cause so many to be destroyed that the tax will be unproductive ; yet it must, in all events, raise a very considerable annual sum ; which, under your wise and patriotic direction, may be applied so as to gain a national blessing in some shape or another. One, and that



a blessing of great value, we are sure to have: we are sure to have a destruction of dogs; and that will be an additional security to our lives, our health, and our happiness."

Whatever else George Clark may have been, it would be difficult to call him an ardent dog-lover.

Considerable feeling against dogs found outlet in letters to the Press, and subsequent Parliamentary activity. In "The Times" of January 26, 1796, is a letter:

" . . . I hope to see an advertisement in your paper for an *early* meeting of such persons as are desirous of promoting such a tax. . . . I remember the dreadful madness amongst dogs in London about 1757 or 1758, when a reward was offered by the different parishes of 2*d.* for each *dead* dog. I used to give money to a poor woman who sat in a passage near Lime Street, with two children and a dog, until a man passing by observed that though her two children seemed *half-starved*, her dog was *very fat*. Last spring a very fine sheep was driven into the water in Kensington Gardens and drowned by a lap-dog worrying it. A lady near Grosvenor Square keeps three lap-dogs who are aired in Hyde Park every morning in fine weather by the *Butler and two maids*. A Lady near Knightsbridge keeps nine lap-dogs. Surely the keepers of such dogs should be heavily taxed, as they consume the provisions that children would be glad of."

*Parliament Reports*, February 22, 1796: "It is computed that 15,000 sheep are killed annually by dogs."

*March* 23, 1796: "The number of dogs which it is computed will be liable to the intended tax is calculated at one million."

*April* 9, 1796: "The report of the resolutions of the Committee on the Dog Tax being brought up in which the duty of 3*s.* a dog was proposed, Mr. Dent said he wished the duty to be 2*s.* 6*d.*, and that it should be appropriated to the relief of the poor. He at the same time suggested to the Chancellor of the Exchequer the propriety of doubling the tax next year, and that the additional 2*s.* 6*d.* should then go to the public at large. The Resolution of the Committee being agreed to, it was, upon motion, ordered that leave be given to bring in a bill accordingly."

*April* 15, 1796: Bill read a first time. Chancellor (Pitt) of the Exchequer proposed changes in rate which were opposed by Mr. Dent.

*April* 25, 1796: Long Debate in Parliament on the tax.

*April* 27, 1796: The House resolved itself into a Committee of Ways and Means and discussed the Dog Tax.

#### DOG WHIPPERS

Churches were at one time frequented by dogs, some homeless, and others accompanying their owners to services. An official known as a "dog whipper" was employed to drive out the strays before a service and to keep order among the privileged canines coming with their masters.

Even St. Paul's was used by dogs as a resting-place, for in a pamphlet of 1592 we have the following complaint:

"For who can abide a scurvie peddling poet to plucke a man by the sleeve at everie third step in Paules Churchyard, and when hee comes in to survey his wares, there's nothing but purgations and vomits wrapt up in wast paper? It were verie

good the dog whipper in Paules would have a care of this in his unsaverie visitation everie Saturday, for it is dangerous for such of the queenes liedge people as shall take a viewe of them fasting.”<sup>1</sup>

The post of dog whipper was not confined to larger churches, and was a regular church appointment, the duty often being combined with the office of beadle. A few typical entries in accounts are given here. Occasionally, as will be seen later, certain rights or uniform went with the position. Sometimes a pair of long tongs, for enabling the capture and ejection of a dog without risk, formed part of the equipment (see p. 118). In these accounts the phraseology is varied, and its quaintness adds considerably to the interest.

“ 1612. Paid Henry Collinges for whippinge the Dogges vd.<sup>2</sup>

“ 1694. Pd. to Tho. Miles for whipping dogs out of church, 1 shilling.”<sup>3</sup>

1659. Richard Dovey, of Farmcote in Shropshire, charged certain cottages with the payment of 8 shillings to a poor man of Claverley, who could awaken sleepers and whip dogs from the church during divine service (see p. 120).

1729. Pd y<sup>e</sup> dog wiper, 2s. 6d.<sup>4</sup>

1730. Pd y<sup>e</sup> dog whiper Hewitt, 2s. 6d.<sup>4</sup>

1766. Aug. 22. Pd. for a dogwip for the church, 6d.<sup>4</sup>

1725. May 1. Agreed that Tho. Thornton shall keep and whip the dogs out of the church every Sunday till next Easter Monday, and also the cattle from about the church and churchyard, for 100 lb. Tobacco.<sup>5</sup>

“ *Extract from the Churchwarden's Accounts of the Parish of Leverton.*”

1572.

To Robt. Hamond for whyppynge dogge out of the churche . . . . . vj. d.

“ Apl. 1st, 1782. Paid Edwd. Johnson (Dogwhipper) Sallary and  
for whip 2d. . . . . £0. 5. 2.”

1576.

“ Pd. to John Qusted for whippinge dogs out of the churche . . . . . xijd.”

At Chichester the verger in charge of the cloister, known as the Precular (*precula* used in the Exeter Statutes to mean a set of beads), purged the churchyard of dogs and hogs and lewd persons.<sup>6</sup> At Durham, in 1632, it is recorded that dogs ran into the choir and disturbed the service.

Disturbances by dogs were by no means rare. In Harsnett's Statutes we find the following order :

1611.

“ Nullus canes in ecclesiam ducat propter fœditatem, quam in eadem sœpius fecisse dinoscitur, sub poena suspensionis ab ingressu ecclesiæ, si super id legitime fuerit convictus.”<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Thomas Nash, “Pierce Penniless” (1592) (Shakespeare Society ed.).

<sup>2</sup> Account Book, Cheddar, Somerset.

<sup>4</sup> Churchwarden's Account, Great Staughton.

<sup>3</sup> Churchwarden's Account Book, Forest Hill, near Oxford.

<sup>5</sup> Vestry-book, Shrewsbury parish, Maryland.

<sup>6</sup> “that play or do worse therein, and scourge out of the cloister all ungracious boys with their tops, or at least present them to the old man of the vestry.” (Granville's Letters.)

<sup>7</sup> “Let no man bring dogs into the church by reason of the filthiness, which is known often to occur, under penalty of suspension from right of entry into the church if there be just conviction of doing the same.”

Efforts were made to persuade the people that a church was no place for hawks and hounds. The Caroline divines allude to the scandal of laymen entering church with dogs at their heels.<sup>1</sup> Altar-rails were made close to prevent dogs from slipping through them.

In 1644 Culmer, in his "Cathedrall Newes from Canterbury," writes:

"One of the Great Canons or Prebends in the very act of his low congying towards the Altar as he went up to it, in Prayer time, was (not long since) resaluted by a huge mastiffe dog, which leapt upright on him, once and againe, and pawed him, in his ducking saluting progresse and posture to the Altar, so that he was fain to call out aloud, 'Take away the dog, take away the dog.'"

Richard Culmer gives this story probably to support the sub-title of his tract, which runs "shewing The Canterburian Cathedrall to be in an Abbey-like corrupt and rotten condition which calls for a speedy Reformation, or dissolution," etc.

The installation of Vicars during Edward I's reign states that "Vicars were not to carry swords in the city or *keep dogs* in their rooms."<sup>2</sup> Dogs were purposely introduced occasionally, for "at Canterbury, in times of danger, *BANDOGS* were loosed to gnaw the shrine, which was more valuable than the treasures of Kings."<sup>3</sup> In these circumstances we may suppose that the "dog whipper" changed his function slightly, and instead of whipping the dogs *out of* church, drove them *into* it, and perhaps employed his titular implement to encourage the zeal of the intermediaries if they did not gnaw hard enough!

The office of dog whipper continued till the end of the eighteenth century.

"The whip is a stout lash, some 3 feet in length, fastened to a short ash stick, with leather bound round the handle."

The practice of letting dogs into church met with the stern disapproval of Robert Poole, who in his twelve heads of "advice to Minors" (1734) states, in No. 3:

"Remember the Sabbath day to keep it holy, and carefully attend the Worship of God. But bring no Dogs with you to church; these Christians surely do not consider where they are going when they bring Dogs with them to the Assembly of Divine Worship; disturbing the Congregation by their Noise and Clamour. Be thou careful, I say, of this Scandalous Thing, which all ought to be advised against as indecent."<sup>4</sup>

Formerly farmers attending church were accompanied by their faithful dogs. Where large numbers met, their behaviour was not always strictly decorous, and often snarling and growling culminated in an open fight. An instrument for ejecting noisy or quarrelsome and pugnacious dogs was used, sufficiently strong to overcome the dog's muscular power, known in Wales as the old "*gefail gwn*," or dog tongs. Firmly grasped round the neck or leg, out of the church he was obliged to go. The arms moved freely on iron pivots, shooting out as the handles were brought together. In some of these tongs three or more nails with blunted points are inserted to make the grip secure. The dimensions of the arms are as follows: the two foremost are alike, 18 inches long, while the handle is 20 inches; stretched out at their greatest length the tongs measure 52 inches.

In Dean Ramsay's delightful "Reminiscences of Scottish Life and Character,"

<sup>1</sup> Mackenzie F. C. Walcott.

<sup>2</sup> Traditions and Customs of Cathedrals" (1872).

<sup>3</sup> "Anec. and Trad. Cand. Soc," v.

<sup>4</sup> "A Choice Drop of Seraphic Love" (1734).



he tells us that in a district of Sutherland, where the population was very scanty, the congregations were made up one-half of dogs. A clergyman, annoyed during the course of his sermon by the restlessness and occasional whining of a dog, was more displeased when at last it began to bark outright. He looked round for the beadle and directed him peremptorily, "John, carry that dog out." But John was wiser, and looking up to the pulpit with a knowing expression, replied, "Na, na, sir; I'se just mak' him gae out on his ain four legs."<sup>1</sup>

Dogs would sit out the Gaelic services and sermon with commendable patience; but often towards the end of the last psalm, when universal stretching and yawning took place, they would scamper out, barking in a most excited manner.

"The congregation of one of these churches determined that the service should close in a more decorous manner, and steps were taken to attain this object. Accordingly, when a stranger clergyman was officiating, he found the people all sitting when he was about to pronounce the blessing. Hesitating, he paused, expecting them to rise, till an old shepherd, looking up to the pulpit, said, 'Say awa', sir, we're a' sitting to cheat the dowgs.'"<sup>2</sup>

Miss L. S. Costello states, in 1846, that on a visit to San Antonio and its seven domes, she found in the church, amidst the priests, fishermen, and peasants, and "dirty Franciscans in coarse brown dresses," several large dogs. She was told that these dogs were of a race privileged to be there!<sup>3</sup> Twenty years before this, Henry Best describes the same state of affairs in France. "I went," he writes, "into some of the churches of Nismes, and found, on the inner door of them, an *écriteau* requesting the faithful not to allow their dogs to follow them to church. But at Avignon the dogs made love or war and barked in the churches at pleasure."<sup>4</sup>

In England the office of dog whipper<sup>5</sup> was not extinct in 1856, but was a regular item in the parish accounts of the Collegiate Church, Middleham, and was regularly paid. No doubt the office would only be allowed to lapse with difficulty, as in many cases a tenure of land was attached to it, as well as other perquisites. At Barton Turf, Norfolk, for example, the parish clerk had the rent of 3 acres of land called "Dog Whipper's Land"<sup>6</sup>; at Chislet, Kent, "ten shillings a year is paid by the tenant of Sir John Budes, as a charge on lands called Dog Whippers' Marsh, containing about two acres, to a person for keeping order in the church during divine service."

At Peterchurch, Herefordshire: "From time immemorial an acre of land in this parish has been appropriated to the use of a person for keeping dogs out of the church, such person being appointed by the minister and churchwardens."

An amusing request is one of Claverley, Shropshire: "In the deed of feoffment,

<sup>1</sup> "Reminiscences," etc., 2nd Series (enlarged ed., 1861).

<sup>2</sup> "A Tour to and from Venice" (1846).

<sup>3</sup> Henry Digby Beste (formerly Henry Best), "Four Years in France" (1826).

<sup>4</sup> Known in Yorkshire as "the dog woper": *vide* "The History of Ecclesfield," by the Rev. I. Eastwood. This same authority informs us that "there was, till about fifty years ago, a small pew in Northope Church, known as the Hall dog-pew, in which the dogs who followed the residents of the Hall to church were confined during service" (*loc. cit.*, p. 219).

<sup>5</sup> In reply to my inquiry the Rev. J. Gough Poole, present Vicar of Barton Turf, writes that there is a piece of land in that parish known as the "Dog Whipper's Land," but that this is not the original piece, there being reason to believe that a change was made at the time of the Enclosure Award, about 1810. The rent now goes towards church expenses.

August 23, 1659, whereby Richard Dovey, of Farmcote, granted certain premises to John Sanders, and others, viz. cottages or buildings, over and adjoining the churchyard and churchyard gates of the parish of Claverley, is to place in some room of the said cottages, and to pay yearly the sum of 8s. to a poor man of that parish who should undertake to awaken sleepers, and to whip out dogs from the church of Claverley during divine service."

The sum of 10s. 6d. per annum was paid for the above purpose for upwards of 20 years.

*Dog-whipping Days.*—Until about 1856 a custom prevailed that on a certain fixed day a general whipping of dogs found in the streets took place. It was customary on October 10 for the "ceremony" to be performed in Hull, the reason assigned being that during the time when monasteries still flourished in England, the monks dispensed charity each year to those who came to the fair on October 11, and on one occasion a dog entered the monastic larder a day before the fair and decamped with a large joint of meat. After this, any dog seen near the monastery on the eve of the fair was whipped away.

Another version is that a priest, while celebrating Mass, dropped the pyx after consecration, which was seized and swallowed by a dog. The dog was killed.

In Yorkshire the whipping took place on October 18, St. Luke's Day, also known as Whipping Day.

We may conclude this short account of "Bumble as Flagellant" with a reference to another similar aspect of his duties, which he no doubt enjoyed and performed with unction—that of "bang beggar"! This expressive title explains itself, and, according to Wright's "Dialect Dictionary," is found in Yorkshire, Lancashire, Cheshire, Derbyshire, and Ireland, while the form Banbeggar is found in Staffordshire, Warwickshire, and Northampton as well as Derbyshire. Edwin Waugh, in "The Barrel Organ" (1864), thus refers to him: "Just then Pudge, th' bang beggar, coom runnin' into th' pew, and he fot Dick a souse at back o' th' yed wi' his silver-nobbed pow." In "Notes and Queries" (December 10, 1870, p. 514), a correspondent states that the Bangbeggar was still to be found in all his splendour in St. John's Church, Bury, Lancs. "Generally he wears a livery on Sundays of blue coat and silver buttons, pink plush knee-breeches, white silk stockings, and cocked hat, and carries a formidable mace about 6 feet long which is the insignia of his office, and which he not seldom uses, in his own phrase, 'to bang th' beggars' yeds,' the said beggars being unruly boys in the free seats."

No wonder so magnificent a personage had to have lazy tongs with which to control "unruly" dogs; and so we may leave Bumble banging beggars, waking sleepers, whipping dogs, and in general ruling the roost of church decorum.



# A Short Treatise of Hunting:

*Compyled for the delight of Noble  
men and Gentlemen, by Sir Thomas  
Cockaine, Knight.*



Imprinted at London by Thomas Orwin  
for Thomas Woodcocke, dwelling in Paules  
Churchyard at the signe of the  
black Beare. 1591.

(Left) Title-page of Sir Thomas Cockaine's "*A Short Treatise of Hunting*" (1591).  
120d] "THE IRISH WOLFHOUNDS," ACCORDING TO SOME AUTHORITIES.

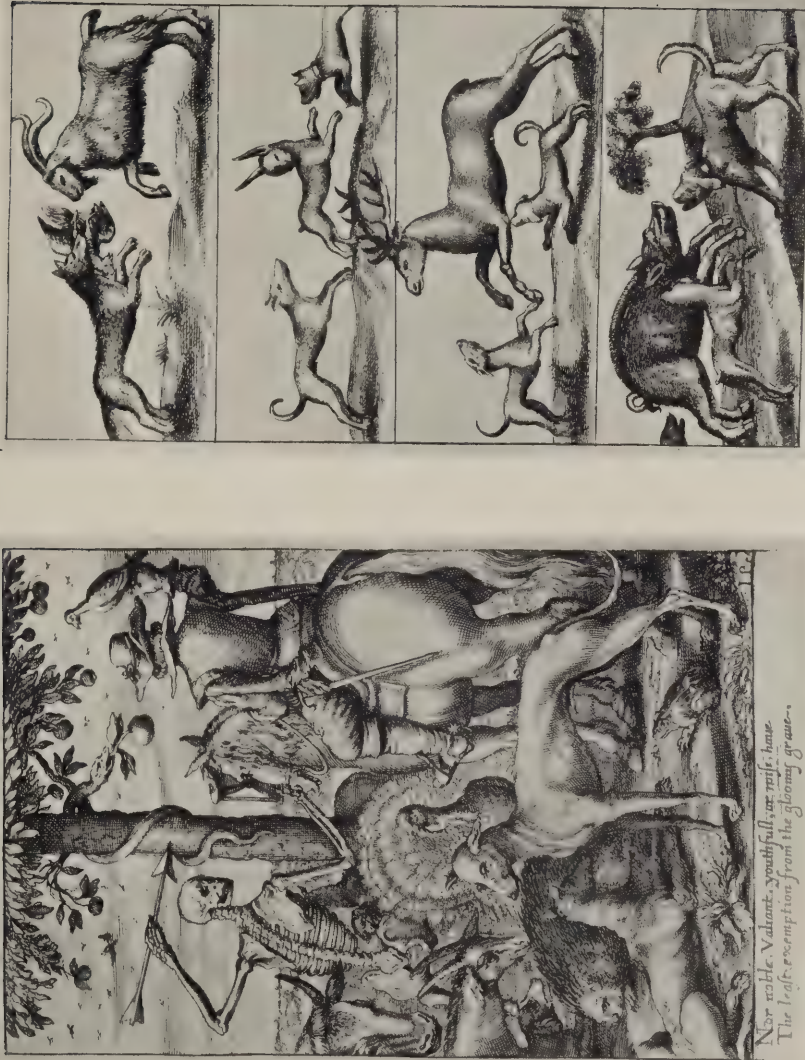


A book containing an amusing description of "Earth Dogs." (Right)  
Frontispiece of Sir James Ware's "*De Hibernia*" (1658).

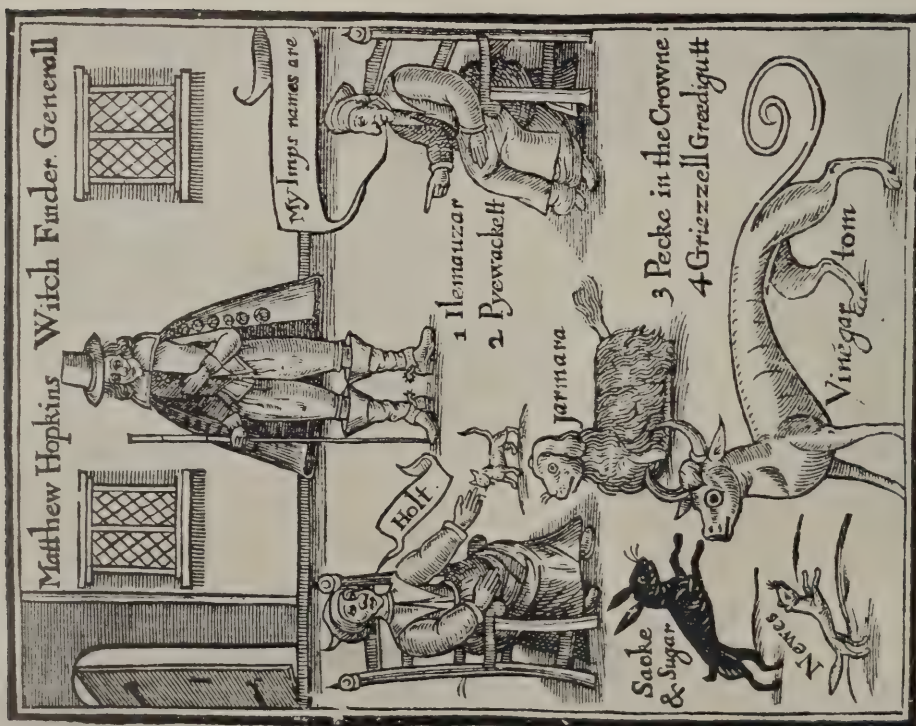




(Above) left, DOG GAUGE. Time of Canute; right CRUDE WOODCUTS. (upper) "Perfect Water Dogge"; (lower) "The forme and proportion of the Setting Dogge." Both from Gervase Markham's "Art of Fowling" (1621). (Below) left, POODLE; right, SPANIEL AND LION. Both from the "Book of Beasts" (1665). Author unknown.



(Left) A REMARKABLE ALLEGORICAL PICTURE, SHOWING SPANIEL (left) AND GREYHOUNDS. (Right) DOGS OF THAT TIME, PROBABLY OF NO DISTINCT VARIETY. Two plates from the "Book of Beasts" (1665). Author unknown.



(2)

*Answe.* The Discoverer never travelled far for it, but in *March* 1644 he had some seven or eight of that horrible sect of Witches living in the Towne where he lived, a Towne in *Essex* called *Manningtree*, with divers other adjacent Witches of other townes, who every six weeks in the night (being always on the Friday night) had their meeting close by his house, and had their severall solemne sacrifices there offered to the *Devill*, one of which this discoverer heard speaking to her *Imps* one night, and bid them goe to another Witch, who was thereupon apprehended, and feared by women who had for many yeares knowne the Devils marks, and found to have three teats about her, which honest women have not: so upon command from the *Justice*, they were to keep her from sleep two or three nights, expecting in that time to see her *familiar*, which the fourth night she called in by their severall names, and told them what shapes, a quarter of an houre before they came in, there being ten of us in the roome, the first she called was

1. *Holt*, who came in like a white kitting.
2. *Iermara*, who came in like a fat Spaniel without any legs at all, she said she kept him fat, for the clapt her hand on her belly, and said he sucked good blood from her body.
3. *Vinegar Tom*, who was like a long-legged Greyhound, with an head like an Oxe, with a long taile and broad eyes, who when this discoverer spoke to, and bade him goe to the place provided for him and his Angels, immediately transformed himselfe into the shape of a child of foure yeeres old without a head, and gave halfe a dozen turnes about the house, and vanished at the doore.
4. *Saake and Sugar*, like a black Rabbit.
5. *N ewes*, like a Polcat. All these vanished away in a little time. Immediately after this Witch confessed severall other Witches, from whom she had her *Imps*, and named to divers women where their marks were, the number of their *Markes*, and *Imps*, and *Imps* names, as *Elemazer*, *Pyewackett*, *Pecke in the Crowne*, *Griez Zell Greedigutt*, &c. which no mortall could invent; and upon their searches the same Markes were found, the same number, and in the same place, and the like confessions from them of the same *Imps*, (though they knew not that we were told before) and so peached



# SECTION IV

## CLASSIFICATION OF DOGS

### CHAPTER I

#### CLASSIFICATION OF DOGS

IN Roman times dogs were divided into three classes :  
 House dogs (*Canes villatici*).  
 Shepherd dogs (*Canes pastorales pecuarii*).  
 Sporting dogs (*Canes venatici*).  
 Pugnacious or war dogs (*Pugnaces* or *bellicosi*).  
 Dogs which ran by scent (*Nares sagaces*).  
 Swift dogs which ran on sight (*Pedibus celeres*).

The 'shepherd dog was often provided with a spiked collar round his neck as a protection against wolves. Dogs were later classified into three groups :

(1) Those having the head more or less elongated and the parietal lines of the skull indented at the base (greyhound type of head).

(2) The head moderately elongated, the parietals diverging from each other, such as the spaniel.

(3) The muzzle more or less short, the frontal sinus large. To this class toy dogs and terriers belonged. Dr. Caius, 1570, classifies British dogs as follows :

*Britannicis, libellus.*

		Nomina.	
		Latina.	Anglica.
Canes ergo Britānīci, aut sunt.	Generosi.	Sagax. { Terrarius. Leuerarius. Sanguinarius. }	Hunde. { Terrare. Harier. Bludhunde.
		Venatici. { Agaseus. Leporarius. Leuinarius, seu Lorarius. Vertagus. }	{ Gasehunde. Grehunde. Leuiner, or Lyemmer. Tumbler.
		Aucupa- torii. { Hispaniolus. Index. Aquaticus, seu Inquisitor. }	{ Spainel. Setter. Waterspainel, or Fynder.
	Delicati.	{ Meliteus, seu Fotor. }	{ Spainel gentle, or comforter.
	Rustici.	{ Pastoralis. Villaticus, seu Cathenarius. }	{ Shepheerdes dogge. Mastieue, or Bandedogge.
	Degeneres.	{ Admonitor. Versator. Saltator. }	{ Wappe. Turnespete. Danser.

In 1707 *Carl Linnæus*, the celebrated Swedish naturalist, son of a Lutheran minister, was born at Rashult. In his "*Caroli Linnæi . . . Systema Naturæ . . . Editio multo auctior, et emendatior*" (Leyden, 1756), he divides the dog family as follows:

*Canis. Dog*

<i>Canis cauda (sinistrorsum) recurva</i>	Dog with tail curved upwards to the left.
(a) <i>Canis domesticus</i> . . . .	Domesticated dog.
(b) <i>Canis sagax</i> . . . .	Wise dog.
(c) <i>Canis graius</i> . . . .	Greyhound.
(d) <i>Canis mastinus</i> . . . .	A great dog (mastiff?).
(e) <i>Canis aquaticus</i> . . . .	Water-dog.
(f) <i>Canis melitæus</i> . . . .	Pet dog (Maltese).
(g) <i>Canis ægyptius</i> . . . .	Egyptian dog.
(h) <i>Canis fricatix</i> . . . .	Rubbing dog or cold dog (pug-dog?).
(i) <i>Canis mustelinus</i> . . . .	Weasel or weasel coloured dog.

In 1792 this classification was greatly enlarged in "*The Animal Kingdom*" (1792), Prof. Gmelin edition (translated by Robert Kerr).

I give the text in full, as it is a somewhat amusing description of the dog and its characteristics.

"DOG. *Canis*.

"This genus is naturally rapacious and greedy; bites very hard, and tears what it bites; it is very swift, and fitted for the chase, but does not climb trees: the head is in general flat on the crown, with a narrow lengthened visage and snout; the trunk of the body is thickest in its fore part, or at the chest; the fore feet have five toes, except the *Hyænas*, which have only four, and the hind feet only four<sup>1</sup>; while the genera of Cat, Seal, Bear, and Weasel have five toes on all the feet. The male has a large knob at its middle: the female brings forth a considerable number in each litter, and has generally ten paps, of which four are placed on the breast and six on the belly.

"FAITHFUL DOG. *Canis familiaris*.

"The tail bends upwards, and towards the left side.

"Inhabits chiefly in society with man, though often found in a wild state; it is uncertain whether the species be native in the East Indies. This species is universally attached to mankind. It feeds on flesh, dead bodies, and farinaceous vegetables, refusing greens, and even digests bones. When sick, it eats some kind of grass which serves as an emetic, drinks by lapping with the tongue . . . <sup>2</sup>; is very delicate in the sense of smelling; runs obliquely, resting on the toes in walking; fiercely sweats when warm, but lolls out the tongue, and foams at the mouth; when about to lie down often goes round the place; and when asleep has a very quick sense of hearing, and frequently seems to dream: the female, when in heat, receives the embraces of various males, who flock about her and are very quarrelsome among

<sup>1</sup> In a domestic state, many varieties of the dog have five toes on the hind feet, the fifth being much smaller than the rest, very loose and placed far up the inside of the leg; this is usually called the *dew-claw*.—T.  
 "T" means translator, Robert Kerr.

<sup>2</sup> I have omitted twenty-one words here.

themselves, while she is equally ill-humoured, biting and snarling at all around her. She goes sixty-three days with young, and litters from four to eight puppies ; of which the males generally resemble the father, and the females the mother.

“ This is the most faithful of all animals, and perhaps the only one which is really attached to man, being hardly ever found wild, except in places where they have lost their masters and had no opportunity of finding others. It fawns at the approach of its master, and will not allow anyone to strike him ; runs before on a journey, and coming to a division of the road, stops and looks back, as if asking which to choose ; is very docile, and may be taught to seek for anything that is lost ; is very watchful at night, and gives notice of the approach of strangers, and guards faithfully anything committed to its charge ; drives cattle home from the field, and is employed to keep flocks and herds within due bounds, and to protect them from the attacks of wild beasts ; points out game to the sportsman, by means of its acute sense of smelling, creeping with great caution to spring upon the game, and brings it when killed to its master, without destroying any ; is employed in France and some other countries to turn spits ; in Siberia is made to draw sledges ; begs when his master is at table ; and, when it has stolen anything, slinks away, slouching its tail between the hind legs, eats enviously with oblique eyes ; and is always desirous of domineering over its fellows ; is the enemy of all beggars, and often attacks strangers without any provocation ; will lick wounds, and often by so doing relieves ulcers and the gout, howls at certain notes in music, and sometimes urines on hearing them ; bites a stone when flung at it, grows sick at the approach of storms, is often afflicted with the *Tænia*, or tape-worm, in its bowels ; sometimes becomes mad, which disorder it communicates to its kind, to other animals, and to man, by biting ; makes a violent hollowing when Empyreumatic oils are rubbed on the tail ; is often infected with gonorrhea. Dogs are banished from their houses, as unclean, by Mahometans, who, notwithstanding, endow hospitals for their maintenance ; is the victim of anatomists for demonstrating the circulation of the blood, the lacteal vessels, and for experiments on transfusion, cutting of nerves, and other cruel purposes ; but has been made a useful martyr by some, for discovering the effects of remedies against poison.

“ The top of the head is flat, and has a projecting longitudinal ridge ; the edges of the lower lips, at the sides, are divided into dentated or tooth-like projections, which are concealed by the upper lips ; has five or six rows of whiskers on the snout ; the upper margin of the external ear is reflected ; the posterior one has two lobes, and the anterior three ; the nostrils are in form of a semilunar furrow turned outwards at the lower end ; the face usually has seven hairy warts ; and the fur has eight ridges or whorles on the neck, the breast, the fore-legs, the belly, the eyes, the loins, the ears, and near the arms. The female has ten paps, of which four are on the breast. The feet have small membranes connecting the roots of the toes with each other, or are called *sub-palmated*.

“ This animal is subject to more varieties than any other. Each of these will reproduce, and, mixing with others, produce varieties almost without end ; yet certain kinds are more numerous and more permanent than others, perhaps from their usefulness, having more attention paid to their breed. It is perhaps impossible to enumerate or describe all the varieties, but the following catalogue includes the most remarkable and best known. Various conjectures are formed concerning the original



or parent stock ; some deriving all dogs from the sheep-dog, and supposing that, by the influence of climate, and the crossing of breeds with the Shakal, Wolf, Fox, and Hyæna, all the forms and sizes have been produced. See Smellie's translation of *Buffon*, IV, p. 1, and plates from XXIV to XLIV inclusive."

"SHEPHERD'S DOG. *Canis domesticus*.—Has erect ears, and the tail is woolly underneath.

"POMERANIAN DOG. *Canis pomeranus*.—Has long hairs on the head, erect ears, and the tail is much curved upwards on the rump.

"SIBERIAN DOG. *Canis sibiricus*.—Has erect ears, a curled-up tail, and the hair on the whole body is long.

"ICELAND DOG. *Canis islandicus*.—The ears are erect, with pendulous points ; and the hair is universally long, except on the snout, which is short.

"GREAT WATER-DOG. *Canis aquaticus major*.—The hair is long and curled, like the fleece of a sheep.

"LESSER WATER-DOG. *Canis aquaticus minor*.—Is of a small size, with long curly hair, which about the ears is longer and hangs downwards.

"PYRAME. *Canis brevipilis*.—Has a small rounded head, with short snout, and the tail is turned up on the back.

"Dr. Gmelin has evidently confounded two distinct varieties of the small cocking spaniel in this place : first, the King Charles spaniel is entirely black, and has a black palate ; second, the pyrame is likewise black, but is marked on the legs and above each eye with red or flame colour.—T.

"SPANIEL. *Canis extrarius*.—Has long, pendulous, woolly ears.

"SHOCK-DOG. *Canis melitacus*.—Is about the size of a squirrel, having very long, soft, silky hair all over the body.

"LION-DOG. *Canis leoninus*.—Is exceedingly small, with long hair, like the fore-going, on the fore part of the body ; that on the hind parts being shorter and smooth.

"LITTLE DANISH DOG. *Canis variegatus*.—Has small, half-pendulous ears, a small pointed nose, and thin legs.

"BASTARD PUG-DOG. *Canis hybridus*.—Has small, half-pendulous ears, and a thick flattish nose.

"Dr. Gmelin thinks that this variety is perhaps produced by a cross between the little Danish dog and the pug-dog (?).

"PUG-DOG. *Canis fricator*.—The nose is crooked upwards, the ears are pendulous, and the body square built.

"This variety has a resemblance to the bull-dog, but is much smaller and entirely wants his savage ferocity. Of this there are two sub-varieties, viz. :

(a) The Artois dog, of Buffon, produced between the pug-dog and bastard pug-dog.

(b) The Alicant dog, of Buffon, produced between the pug-dog and spaniel.

"BULLDOG. *Canis Molossus*.—Is as large as a wolf, having the sides of the lips very pendulous, and the body very strong and robust. The nose of this variety is short, and the under jaw is longer than the upper ; this kind is exceedingly fierce and cruel, attacks without warning, but with little judgment, and never quits its hold. It is peculiar almost to England for baiting bulls, which practice, and consequently

the kind of dog, is now much less frequent than formerly. There are several varieties of this in size and colour.

" MASTIFF. *Canis anglicus*.—Of very large size, having a very robust body, and the lips pendulous at the sides, or chops.

" Is very thick and strongly made, having a large head, and great lips, which hang down on each side. This dog is peculiar to England, and grows to a great size, being used principally as a watch-dog, which duty he fulfils with great fidelity and even judgment. Some will permit a stranger to come into the yard, or place which he has been appointed to guard, and will go peaceably along with him through every part of it, so long as he touches nothing; but the moment he attempts to meddle with any of the goods, or endeavours to leave the place, he informs him, first by gentle growling, or if that is ineffectual, by harsher means, that he must neither do mischief nor go away; and never uses violence unless resisted; will even, in this case, seize the person, throw him down, and hold him there for hours, or until relieved, without biting.

" GERMAN HOUND. *Canis sagax*.—Has pendulous ears, and a spurious toe, usually called a *dew-claw*, on each hind foot.

" HOUND. *Canis gallicus*.—Is of a whitish ground-colour; has pendulous ears, and a dew-claw on each hind foot.

" BLOODHOUND. *Canis scoticus*.

" *Canis Venaticus*.—I am uncertain what particular variety of hound is here meant, as no description is given by Dr. Gmelin.

" POINTER. *Canis avicularis*.—The tail is short, and has the appearance of having been cut.

" BARBET. *Canis aquatilis*.—The tail is truncated, or seems cut off in the middle, with long coarse hair.

" This seems the same with the *Canis aquaticus major*, great water-dog, or grand barbet of Buffon, already mentioned.—T.

" GREYHOUND. *Canis cursorius*.—Has a long narrow head, with strong lengthened snout, and small half-pendulous ears; the legs are long and strongly made, and the body is long and thin.

" IRISH GREYHOUND. *Canis cursorius hibernicus*.—Is nearly as large as a mastiff, having an arched body, and narrow projecting snout.

" TURKISH GREYHOUND. *Canis cursorius turcicus*.—Is of the size of a mastiff, with an arched body and narrow snout; and having the fur somewhat curled.

" COMMON GREYHOUND. *Canis grajus*.—About the size of a wolf; having a curved or arched body and narrow snout.

" ROUGH GREYHOUND. *Canis grajus hirsutus*.—Same size, body, and snout with the last, but having the hair somewhat longer and curled.

" ITALIAN GREYHOUND. *Canis grajus italicus*.—Of a small size, but the same form of body and snout with the last.

" ORIENTAL GREYHOUND. *Canis grajus orientalis*.—Tall, slender, with very pendulous ears, and very long hairs on the tail, hanging down a great length.

" NAKED DOG. *Canis ægyptius*.—Has no hair on the body.

"LURCHER. *Canis laniarius*.—The body is narrow, and covered with short, thick-set hair; the legs are strong and the tail is thick and straight.

"ROUGH LURCHER. *Canis laniarius aprinus*.—In body, legs, and tail resembles the last, but is covered with long harsh hair.

"BOAR LURCHER. *Canis laniarius fuillus*.—The head and snout are strongly made; the hind part of the body is lank; the legs are long, and the hair is long and harsh.

"TURNSPIT. *Canis vertegus*.—Has short legs and a long body, which is mostly spotted.

(a) With straight legs.

(b) With crooked legs.

(c) With long shaggy hair.

"ALCO. *Canis americanus*.—About the size of a squirrel, having a small head, pendulous ears, a curved body and short tail.

"Of this animal there are two kinds mentioned by authors.

"FAT ALCO. *Canis americanus obesus*.—Is prodigiously fat; the head is very small, and the ears are pendulous; the fore part of the head is white, and the ears are yellowish; the neck is short; the back is arched, and covered with yellow hair; the tail is white, short, and pendulous; the belly is large, and spotted with black, the legs and feet are white. The female has six conspicuous paps.

"TECHICHI. *Canis americanus plancus*.—Is like the small dogs of Europe, but has a wild and melancholy air.

"NEW HOLLAND DOG. *Canis antarcticus*.—The tail is bushy, and hangs downwards; the ears are short and erect, and the muzzle is pointed.

"Inhabits New Holland. This animal is rather less than 2 feet high, and about 2 feet and a half in length. His head resembles that of a fox, having a pointed muzzle, garnished with whiskers, and short erect ears; the whole body and tail is of a light brown colour, growing paler towards the belly, on the sides of the face, and on the throat; the hind parts of the fore legs, the fore parts of the hind legs, and all the feet are white. On the whole, it is a very elegant animal, but fierce and cruel; from which its figure, and the total want of the common voice of the dog, and from general resemblance in other respects, it seems more properly to belong to the wolf than dog kind."<sup>1</sup>

In 1798 Jean Louis Leclerc Buffon, the illustrious French naturalist, born in Burgundy, gave a classification, and his reasons for this classification. He suggests that all breeds of dogs are evolved from the shepherd's dog, and his arguments, though considered satisfactory by various authorities about his time, are far from convincing to-day. His argument is that all savage people who keep sheep have therefore a sheep-dog, and in consequence of this the sheep-dog must be the original dog! And he supports his original argument by the contention that the sheep-dog is the most intelligent of all dogs, thus being proved to have been domesticated sooner than any other. Even if we could be persuaded to agree that the sheep-dog is superior in intelligence to any other, this statement would not go

<sup>1</sup> "The Animal Kingdom . . . of Sir Charles Linnæus . . . as lately published with great improvements by Prof. Gmelin of Gottingen . . . translated by Robert Kerr, F.R. and A.S.S.E. London, 1792," which contains many additions from later authorities.





very far. Even the word "sheep-dog" means nothing, for the sheep-dogs of France, Russia, Germany, and England were by no means similar, varying according to the districts. This variation is not only in coat, but in size and in type. In some areas a bearded collie was the sheep-dog proper; in another, a half-bred mastiff, and elsewhere a terrier-like dog. Indeed the word "sheep-dog" merely signifies the work the dog was engaged in, and not the variety. Certainly Buffon did good work, opening a field of thought. His illustrations, Plates 4, 40 and 48, are unique.<sup>1</sup> History tells us that he died in 1788, leaving one son, an officer in the army, who rose to the rank of colonel, only to be subsequently guillotined during the Reign of Terror.

Pennant, in summing up Buffon's contentions, adds various notes, as given here.

The first group is :

(1) The shepherd's dog (*le chien de berger*), of which the nearest allies are the Pomeranian (*le chien loup*) and the Siberian dog (*le chien de Sibirie*).

The second group is :

(2) The hound or dog with long and smooth pendulous ears (*le chien courant*), including the bloodhound. The nearest allies to this being :

(a) The harrier (*le braque*).

(b) The Dalmatian (*le braque de Bangal*), vulgarly called.

(c) The Danish dog.

(d) The turnspit (*le bassett a jambes torses . . . a jambes droites*).

(e) The water-dog great and small (*le grand and le petit barbet*).

From this second group branches out another race (3) with pendant ears, covered with long hair but smaller in size and form. These are spaniels, varying in size from the setting dog to the springer spaniel and some of the little lap-dogs, King Charles (*le gredin*), also the pyrame (a small black dog marked on the legs with red and above each eye a spot of the same colour). Lastly in this group is the shock-dog, the dog of Malta.

The fourth group are dogs, with short pendant ears, long legs, and long bodies, which he tabulates into five minor classes :

(1) The common greyhound.

(2) The Italian greyhound. Small and smooth.

(3) The Oriental greyhound. Tall, slender, with very pendulous ears and very long hairs on the tail, hanging down a great length.

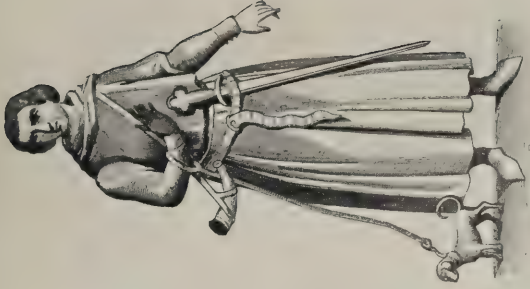
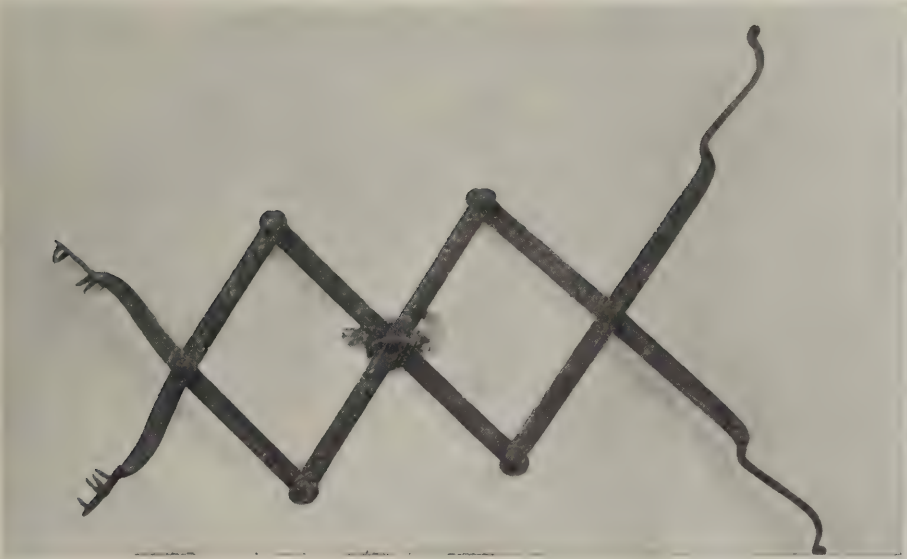
(4) Danish dog. Of a stronger make than a greyhound; the largest of dogs.

(5) Mastiff. Very strong and thick in make. Head large; lips great and hanging down on each side; a fine, noble countenance. A variety which grows to a large size. A British breed. (*Le Dogue de forte race*.)

The fifth group are dogs with pendant ears, short compact bodies, short noses, and generally with short legs. In this class he places :

(1) Bulldog, with a short nose and under jaw longer than the upper. A cruel and fierce kind, often biting before it barks. Peculiar to England.

<sup>1</sup> A set of four plates, two on each side facing each other. The plates on the left are the same as those on the right, but coloured.



(Left) above. AN ILLUSTRATION FROM "THE HISTORIE OF SCOTLANDE," part of Holinshed (1577); below. OLD SCARLETT, OF PETERBOROUGH CATHEDRAL, DIED 1594, CARRYING HIS DOG-WHIP. By courtesy of the Dean. (Centre) DOG-TONGS, INSCRIBED "REV. H. WILLIAMS V.R. H.W.L. WARS 1815." By courtesy of Rev. John Davies and Mr. C. J. Cruise. (Right) above. A TOX DOG, 1301. From the tomb of Guillaume Malgancete in the Abbaye de Long-Pont; below. THE DOG-WHIP OF BASLOW CHURCH. By courtesy of the Rev. James Smith.





(Above) left, LORD CAMELFORD'S FAMOUS BULLDOG "TRUSTY" (1866), right, THE FIGHT BETWEEN A GENTLEMAN AND A BULLDOG (1807), (Below) left, THE BULLDOG (1798), by HAMILTON, right, "LION," A MASTIFF DOG OF 1739. Drawn by the Rev. Cooper Williams from the original, the property of Mr. Powell Snell, published in 1797.



EARTH-STOPPER.

A WHITE ROUGH-COATED AND A BLACK-AND-TAN TERRIER. *From an engraving in the Rev. W. B. Daniel's "Rural Sports" (1801).*  
128c]





(1st Row) left to right, CHIEN D'ISLANDIE, CHIEN COURANT, "LE MATIN," (2nd Row) left to right, CHIEN DE RUSSIE (mâle), L'ESPAGNEUL, CHIEN DE RUSSIE (femelle), LE DOGUE, LE PETIT BARBET, LE DOGUIN, From Buffon's "Histoire Naturelle," by various artists (1798 edition).



- (2) Pug-dog. A small species, an innocent resemblance to the last.
- (3) Bastard pug (*le roquet*).
- (4) Naked (*le chien turc*). A degenerate species with naked bodies, having lost its hair by reason of the climate.

So ends M. de Buffon's classification. He explains the making of varieties, that a dog sent to some other area takes in consequence another form. He suggests that climate partly causes the change. "The shepherd's dog," writes Buffon, "transplanted into the temperate climates and among people entirely civilised such as England, France, and Germany, will be divested of his savage air, his pricked ears, his rough, long, and thick hair, and from the influence of climate and food alone, will become either a *mâtin*, a mastiff, or a hound."

"The grey *mâtin* (the second branch) transported to the north becomes the great Danish dog, and this sent to the south becomes the Greyhound of different sizes. The same transported into Ireland, the Ukraine, Tartary, Epirus, and Albania, becomes the great wolf-dog. The mastiff, which is in this branch and chiefly a native of England, when transported into Denmark becomes the little Danish dog, etc."

Whilst Buffon's grouping is more or less correct, types are far more confused than such a classification suggests. Mastiffs are probably more closely related to the bulldog than to the great Dane. The hairless dog of Turkey seems out of place with the bulldog and pug, for it agrees more closely with the greyhound. Buffon's explanation as to the making of varieties is inadequate, though it is agreed that changes of condition and climate cause the production of variations; yet modern types, with few exceptions, are certainly more the result of cross-breeding and the mating up of those widely different. I think we can be safe in the assumption that short-faced dogs, the pugs, Pekinese, and Japanese spaniels belong to a group in no way related to the collie, and that the greyhound, Saluki, etc., are representatives of a group with, if any, but a very slight relationship to the varieties mentioned earlier.

W. C. L. Martin, in 1845,<sup>1</sup> writes :

"We now venture to offer the following as an arrangement of the principal breeds into which the domestic dog appears to be resolvable; from this arrangement we exclude the true wild dogs of India and the dingo of Australia, but retain in it such dogs as have reverted to a life of independence, and which may be termed feral :

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. Ears, erect or nearly so; nose, pointed; hair, long, often woolly; form, robust and muscular; aspect, more or less wolfish. | { Feral dog of Russia.<br>Feral dog of Natolia.<br>Shepherd's dog of Natolia.<br>Persian guard dog.<br>Pomeranian dog.<br>Icelandish dog.<br>Siberian dog.<br>Tschuktschi dog.<br>Esquimaux dog.<br>Hare Indian dog.<br>Black wolf-dog of Florida Indians.<br>Nootka dog.<br>Shepherd dog. |
|--|--|

<sup>1</sup> "Knights Weekly Volume."

- |  |   |   |
|--|---|---|
|  | { | Ancient German boarhound, the<br>Sau-ruden of Redinger.<br>Great Danish dog.<br>Feral dog of Hayti.<br>French mâtin.<br>Irish wolf-dog.<br>Scotch deerhound.<br>English greyhound.<br>Italian greyhound.<br>Persian greyhound.<br>Brinjaree dog.<br>Albanian greyhound.<br>Lurcher. |
| 2. Ears, narrow, semi-erect, or only slightly pendulous; muzzle, produced; jaws, strong; hair, smooth or wiry; limbs, long and vigorous; power of scent, not highly developed. | { |   |
| 3. Ears, moderately large and pendent; muzzle, deep and strong; hair, long, sometimes wiry; form, robust; aspect, grave and intelligent.                                       | { | Italian wolf-dog.<br>Newfoundland dog.<br>Labrador dog.<br>Alpine dog.  |
| 4. Ears, moderately large; sometimes very large, pendent; hair, long and fine; muzzle, moderate; forehead, developed; scent, acute; intelligence at a high ratio.              | { | Spaniel and fancy varieties.<br>Water-spaniel and varieties.<br>Rough water-dog or barbet.<br>Little barbet.<br>Setter.   |
| 5. Ears, large, pendent; muzzle, long and deep; nose, large; hair, close; scent, acute; form, vigorous.  | { | Pointer.<br>Dalmatian dog.<br>Beagle.<br>Harrier.<br>Foxhound.<br>Old English hound.<br>Bloodhound.<br>African hound, &c.   |
| 6. Ears, moderate, pendent; muzzle, short and thick; jaws, enormously strong; hair, short, sometimes wiry; form, robust; sense of smell variable.                              | { | Cuban mastiff.<br>English mastiff.<br>Thibet mastiff.<br>Bandog.<br>Bulldog.<br>Corsican and Spanish bulldog.<br>Pug-dog.   |
| 7. Ears, sub-erect; muzzle, rather acute; jaws, strong; hair, short or wiry; scent, acute; habits, active; intelligence, considerable.   | { | Terrier—smooth and wirehaired.<br>Turnspit.<br>Barbary dog.   |

"We do not offer this arrangement, which is essentially the same as that which we have elsewhere given, as not liable to objections; indeed so many mixed breeds of dogs of uncertain origin exist, that any attempt to class them under distinct heads would appear hopeless." And so it would appear Martin's classification is certainly an astonishing one.

Professor Low, Professor of Agriculture in the University of Edinburgh, divides the dogs<sup>1</sup> into four main divisions:

(I) *The LYCISCAN Group.*

Dogs approaching more or less to the conformation of the common wolf.

These include the Esquimaux, Samoyeds, shepherds' dogs of wolf type, also the

<sup>1</sup> "Domesticated Animals" (1845).

collie. Related to the Lyciscan group but crossed with other groups: the lurcher, great dog of Newfoundland.

(II) *The VERTRAGAL Group.*

Example, the greyhound, probably bred from some form of swifter Canidæ, and not the wolf. Related to these, but crossed with the Molossian Group, are the boarhounds, the Irish wolf-dog, the great Dane, and the Dalmatian.

(III) *The MOLOSSIAN Group.*

These dogs are large and resemble more or less the mastiff. Found in Thibet, the variety stretches to the western limits of Europe. Related to the mastiff is the bulldog and the boarhound and great Dane, also the St. Bernard. The bloodhound, intermediate between the mastiff and the hound.

(IV) *The INDAGATOR Group.*

(a) *The True Hound.*—Probably derived from the wild hound of Nepaul, the dog of Beloochistan, the jackal, and the hunting Canidæ of Africa.

(b) *The Mute Hound.*—These include the Lymehound, and dogs used by fowlers, such as the pointer, to which is related the setter.

(c) *The Spaniel.*—Probably a mixture of African blood with that of Western Asia and Europe.

(d) *The Barbet or Water-dog.*—A dog of aquatic situations. "His feet are webbed." Includes the poodle.

(e) *The Terrier.*—Related to the Lyciscan Group, and its habits seem to connect it with the burrowing Canidæ, and the most probable supposition is that it has been produced by a mixture of jackal or even common fox with domesticated dogs.

This classification appears to me to form an excellent basis, but is in one or more points somewhat difficult to follow. The setter group seem to me to be clearly spaniels; nor does the terrier appear to show marked relationship to the wolf type.

As to the suggested relationship to wild Canidæ, we have seen in the pages dealing with the domesticated dog, the matter is far too confusing to be able to give any opinion of weight. We do know, however, that wolf crosses and crosses with some of the other wild Canidæ are often obtained without difficulty, and that fox crosses, though reported, appear to lack sufficient confirmation.

That the wolf and the dingo are dogs is doubtless, and that both can, in a few generations, become domestic dogs has been proved.

Probably the wild men all over the world, at a very early stage of the story of civilisation, captured and broke in the wild Canidæ frequenting the area in which they moved.

From these wild dogs, others were born in captivity and trained to work with the tribe or their owner. Gradually the wild instincts were blunted by control, or developed by training and by choice in breeding.

We have to-day not the outcome of a yet recent domestication, but a dog population, of various types, varieties, evolved in modern times, on stock descended



from the original captives of wild people, but now so interbred to make a classification on ancestral forms impossible.

*Stonehenge* in his "British Rural Sports" (1856) classifies dogs in a somewhat original manner into six classes. These classes, as will be seen below, depend on the way the dogs behave.

The first class comprises those "that find game for man, leaving him to kill it himself, as an example of which *Stonehenge* gives the spaniel."

The second class, "those that kill game when found for them (example, the greyhound)."

The third class, "those finding and also killing their game (example, foxhounds)."

The fourth class, "those which retrieve game wounded by man (example, retriever)."

The fifth class, "useful companions (example, mastiff)."

The sixth class, "ladies' toy dogs (example, King Charles spaniel)."

Original as this classification is, it is far too broad to be of any use. For example, the spaniel in group 1 not only finds game, but also retrieves wounded game, and is therefore eligible for group 4. Similarly the retriever in group 4 also finds game, and is therefore eligible for group 1. As to class 5, all and sundry have good cause to accumulate in that group, for all dogs are useful companions.

Professor Fitzinger, in his "Der Hund und seine Racen" (1876), recognises 180 varieties, but I do not think he has any foundation for doing so. Lieut.-Colonel C. Hamilton Smith, in Jardine's "Naturalist Library," vol. x (1843), groups the breeds into six groups; whilst Mr. Edmund Harting, F.L.S., arranges them into a similar number of divisions, this latter gentleman believing that by careful crossing of the six types, every one of the existing races of present-day dogs could be produced.

In 1894 Mr. Rawdon B. Lee issued his classification of sporting and non-sporting dogs, a classification containing difficulties, but sound and allowing convenient division, and which the Kennel Club, in respect to a petition presented appealing for a ruling, decided to adopt.

*Sporting*.—Bloodhound, otter-hound, foxhound, harrier, beagle, basset-hound (smooth and rough), dachshund, greyhound, deerhound, borzoi, Irish wolfhound, whippet, pointer, setters, retrievers, spaniels (Irish water-, water- other than Irish; Clumbers, Sussex, field; English springer other than Clumber, Sussex, and field; Welsh springer, red and white; and cocker), fox-terriers (smooth and wire-coated), Irish terrier, Scotch terrier, Welsh, Dandie Dinmont, Skye, Airedale, and Bedlington.

*Non-sporting*.—Bulldog, and miniature, mastiff, great Dane, Newfoundland, St. Bernard, old English sheep-dog, collie, Dalmatian, poodle, bull-terrier, white English terrier, black-and-tan, toy spaniels, Japanese spaniels, Pekinese, Yorkshire, Maltese, Italian greyhound, Chow-chow, black-and-tan miniature, Pomeranians, pugs, griffin, French bulldogs, elk, Esquimaux, Lhasa terriers, Samoyeds, and any other variety not mentioned under this heading.

On May 4, 1898, a sub-committee of the K.C. decided that black-and-tan (under 7 lb.), bull-terriers (under 8 lb.), griffins, Italian greyhounds, Japanese, Maltese, Pekinese, poodles (under 15 inches), pugs, toy spaniels, Yorkshire terriers and poms should be classified as toys. The present-day classification is given in Appendix XXV.

## CHAPTER II

### THE ESQUIMAUX DOG AND ITS RELATIVES

THE Esquimaux dog and the Samoyed are closely related ; the former being of various colours, whilst the latter is not only a smaller type, but to-day, in England, is only bred pure white. Some come slightly tinged with brown, and though occasionally dogs are born with black markings on the head, black puppies or fawns are very rare indeed. Black puppies had a white patch on the chest, and though attempts have been made to fix the black colour, blacks when mated to each other or to whites, curiously enough, produce whites only.

The Samoyed of to-day stands 19 to 21 inches high, and weighs about 40lb., and has, since importation, increased in size. The dogs when first imported were more or less immune from distemper, but this immunity is no longer present. It was also recorded that the first imported dogs very seldom barked, and it is interesting that puppies even now, if kept away from barking dogs, seldom do so, whilst those reared with terriers and other dogs that love to bark acquire the habit without difficulty. We might add here that occasionally, but rarely, blue-eyed puppies are born, and so far on one or two occasions a bob-tailed puppy has appeared.

The home of the Samoyed dog is between the Ob and Yenisei, from the shores of the Arctic Ocean to the White Sea, among the pastoral people of that extensive area.<sup>1</sup> Its work is mainly rounding up the reindeer, and to a certain extent the drawing of sledges. They are very useful to the natives, who, if necessary, use the flesh for food and the skin of their dogs as clothing, whilst the wool is woven into cloth.

The dogs of Iceland are of a similar type.<sup>2</sup>

The main advantage of using dogs for draught purposes is that whilst any other draught animal necessitates carrying bulky supplies of food for its needs, the dog is fed on walrus and other skins, food-stuffs which take up little room on sledges, and the blubber, fish, etc., obtained during the journey.

There is considerable literature on the breed, for sledge-dogs have been so constantly used by explorers during their efforts to reach the Poles and in various expeditions of research, that they appeal strongly not only to popular imagination but also to scientific research on dogs and their uses. In such expeditions the number of dogs used varies considerably. We read that, as a rule, Russian explorers preferred large numbers, and were often in great difficulty as to feeding them. On the whole, British explorers use fewer dogs, and were more able to treat these hard-working animals better. Nansen, in his several attempts to reach the Pole, had white and white-and-black Samoyeds with him, whilst the American, Peary, preferred the wolf-like Esquimaux dog to the Samoyed.

The Esquimaux dog is not quite so handsome as the Samoyed, and is more wolf-like in appearance, with a long muzzle and erect and nearly triangular ears. The colours are also wolf-like, black and grey-brown, and black predominate. Some are pure white, varying from the Samoyed in length of leg and of face. The

<sup>1</sup> "The Samoyeds are a nomadic race of Finnic origin and their language contains many words similar to those used by the Finns and by the Magyars of Hungary. They are sturdily built people with Mongolian features, and the men have very little hair on their faces. They dress in reindeer skins decorated with parti-coloured fox and dog fur, and have a habit of raising the tunic over the head, which makes them look headless, and no doubt gave rise to the old traveller's tale of a headless race." (E. Kilburn Scott, 1918.)

<sup>2</sup> Van Troil states: "There are three kinds of dogs, fiar hundar, or lumbar shag dogs, and dry hundar and dverghunder." (Van Troil's "Letters on Iceland," 1772.)



Esquimaux dog-teams are controlled by a "king," who, if he cannot be avoided, is obeyed by the rest of the team, and who specialises in tyrannical severity. Amusing accounts are given of the "king" and his behaviour. They are said to be monogamous, and "marriage" between a dog and bitch remains binding, and is protected with the greatest ferocity should any other dog attempt to interfere.<sup>1</sup>

It has been constantly suggested by various travellers and naturalists that the Esquimaux branch of the dog family are indeed domesticated wolves.

Admiral Wrangell, in his "Expedition to the Polar Seas," writes that "on all the coasts of the Polar Sea, from the Obi to Behring Straits, in Greenland, Kamtchatka, and the Kurile Islands," the dogs bore a close resemblance to the wolf. They had long, pointed, projecting noses, sharp and upright ears, and a long bushy tail; some were smooth and some curly; their colours were various, black, brown, reddish brown, white, and spotted. In size they were of different heights, but "it was considered that a good sledge-dog should not be less than 2 feet 7½ inches in height and 3 feet ¾ inch in length." Their barking was like a wolf, and they passed their whole life in the open air; in summer digging holes in the ground for coolness, or resting in the water to avoid the mosquitoes. In winter they protected themselves by burrowing in the snow, and lay there curled up with their noses covered by their bushy tails. The dogs only were used for work, the female puppies being drowned at birth, except for those kept to preserve the breed. Those born in winter were trained the following autumn, and were only used for short journeys until their third year.

Jackson ("The Great Frozen North": *Macmillan*) states that the dogs, *Voinaika*, of the Samoyeds, are wild and savage with each other and that he feels certain, that if a number were chained together, that they would develop so grimly a fraternal feeling that the weak ones would soon be absorbed. You could buy out there a puppy for a rouble, but you had to give sixty, seventy, and as much as a hundred roubles for a trained adult. There were two varieties of these dogs—the pure white Spitz type, of comparatively small size, and a larger dog, of various colours and markings, of Newfoundland type. The small one was known as the white fox-dog, and stood 15 to 16 inches high. The larger are described as black-and-white, blue, blue-and-white, and to stand 20 to 22 inches. It was noticeable that all the pups born in the very high northern latitudes were pure white, whilst farther south the colours were mixed.

The sledge-dogs of the Tuski (at the circle at Behring Straits) were of a different kind, generally small and long-haired, wiry in build, with pointed faces and bushy tails. The bark of this variety is described to be a melancholy whine or yell. There was also a strong mongrel breed with short hair and something of the pointer look. One team resembled staghounds. We also have descriptions of the Nootka<sup>2</sup> dog, very similar in type to the Esquimaux, but more woolly, being covered by a thick deep fleece of variable colour, which is spun with wool into garments.

In Sir E. Parry's "Journal of a Second Voyage for the Discovery of a North-west Passage" interesting details are given as to the employment of dogs in drawing sledges. We learn that the dogs wore a simple harness (*annoo*) of deer or sealskin, with one strap round the neck and another for each of the fore legs, whilst a single thong led over the back and was attached to the sledge as a trace. Though the dogs

<sup>1</sup> Cassell's "Book of the Dog" (Robert Leighton).

<sup>2</sup> See page 142.



appeared at first sight to be huddled together, without any regard to regularity, there was, in fact, considerable attention paid to arrangement, particularly in the "selection of a dog of peculiar spirit and sagacity, who is allowed a longer trace to precede the rest as a leader and to whom in turning to the right or left the driver usually addresses himself. The choice is made without regard to age or sex, and the rest of the dogs take precedence according to their training or sagacity; the least effective being put nearest the sledge." The leader is 18 to 20 feet from the fore part of the sledge, and the hindmost dog about 9 to 10 feet, so that when ten or twelve are running together, several are nearly abreast of each other.

He tells us that the driver in the fore part of the sledge sits quite low, with his feet on one side, overhanging the snow. In his hand he holds a whip, the handle of which is made either of wood, bone, or whalebone, and is 18 inches long. The lash is more than 18 feet in length, and the part of the thong next the handle is plaited a little way down, to stiffen it and give it a spring. That which composes the lash is "chewed by the women to make it flexible in frosty weather." The lash is allowed to trail along the ground by the side of the sledge. The men acquire considerable expertness in the use of the whip, and can inflict a very severe blow on any dog at pleasure. "Sometimes when the whip is applied with severity the dog chastised immediately worries his neighbour, and he in turn attacks a third, and so it continues, until universal confusion follows, the traces become entangled, and the safety of the sledge endangered."

In order to facilitate long journeys in some parts of Siberia, relays of dogs were centred at various spots, and on the arrival of a sledge the tired dogs were exchanged for fresh ones, in a similar manner to the method of changing post-horses in Europe during the coaching days.

In these old diaries we obtain excellent pictures of the dogs at work. "Even at the best of times," we read, "by this rude mode of draught, the traces of one-third of the dogs form an angle of 30 or 40 degrees to the direction in which the line is advancing," and "after running a few miles the traces always require to be taken off and cleaned." In directing the driver used certain words, as the carters do here, to make the dogs turn more to the right or left, as might be desired. To these words a good leader would attend with admirable precision, especially if his own name was shouted out at the same time. The leader addressed would look behind his shoulder "with great earnestness, as if listening to the directions of the driver." So capable are these dogs in finding their own way over the snow, that where only a single foot or sledge mark is occasionally discernible, and even on the darkest night or in the heaviest snow-drift, there is seldom danger of the dogs losing the road. At such times the leader will keep his nose near the ground. When these dogs drawing a sledge come on weak, rotten, unsafe ice, they refuse to go further, tremble, and lie down. Negotiating rough ground, among hummocks of ice, considerable skill is necessary to prevent the sledge from being overturned. The driver gets off and by lifting or drawing the sledge to one side, steers clear of obstacles which the sledge would not otherwise pass over.

To stop the dogs, the driver calls out "Wo, woa" exactly as our carters do, but frequently the attention paid to this command depends entirely on his ability to enforce it. If the weight is small and the journey is homeward, the dogs are not

likely to be delayed by a mere command, and the driver is obliged to dig his heels into the snow, and so to obstruct their progress. Having succeeded in stopping the team, he stands up, with one leg before the foremost crosspiece of the sledge, and by gently laying the whip over each dog's head he makes them all lie down. He is careful not to quit his position, so that should the dogs set off, he is thrown upon the sledge and not left behind.

When the load is heavy and difficult to move, the dogs draw best with one of their own people, especially a woman, walking a little way ahead of them, "and in this case they are sometimes enticed to mend their pace by holding a mitten to the mouth, and then making the motion of cutting it with a knife and throwing it on the snow, when the dogs, mistaking it for meat, hasten forward to pick it up."

Sometimes a journey, especially when the load is light and the team fresh, has an exciting ending. The greatest difficulty a driver has to face on the journey is when a team comes across the scent of game. This is too much, and away they go, as fast as their legs can carry them, on the line of the quarry. Frequently the leader attempts to keep the team back, pretending to have discovered a new scent in some other direction, and thus induce the rest of the team to follow him. In so wild a race across the snow the sledge is likely to come to grief. Bewick, in his notes on the Greenland dogs (see p. 140), gives an amusing description of a final scene of this kind. Travelling on dark nights, when the vast plain is veiled in impenetrable mist, all depends on the leader-dog. The sheltering *powarna* is probably covered with snow, but if the dog has been to the *powarna* before (however well the hut may be concealed), he is sure to find it. In summer the dogs were used to tow the boats up the river, changing from one bank to the other as ordered. On hearing the call, they plunged into the water, drawing the towing-line after them, and swam to the opposite shore, and on reaching it, placed themselves into proper order and waited the command to go on.

When winter comes, the walls are caulked afresh with moss and newly plastered with clay, and a solid mound of earth is heaped up on the outside as high as the windows. "In the long winter the light of the fire, and that of the train-oil lamps, is seen through the ice-windows; and from the low chimney rises high columns of red smoke, with magnificent jets of sparks, occasioned by the resinous nature of the wood." Outside, buried in the snow, the dogs from time to time howl dismally, awakening the solitude with unearthly cries. "Howling takes place more often when the moon shines, and the bears, hearing them, keep aloof." But sometimes the bears, driven on by hunger and the need to find sustenance, were less cautious. "One, however, came near one night and was attacked by them"; some of the dogs showed no symptom of fear, "jumping and falling into the water with Bruin, whilst others ran off in evident fright." So hungry were they that in the stillness of the night, after the bear's death, could be heard the grating noise of the dogs' teeth. Some had returned to the battle-field, to gnaw into the blood-stained ice. We read that during the long Arctic night the unfortunate dogs suffer extreme nervous depression, and whenever the deck-light happened to go out, would scale the steep snow, barking and rushing on to the deck like wolves.

"Hobson's favourite dog, 'Chummie,' has returned after an absence of six days, . . . decidedly hungry, but he can hardly have been without food all that time; some



Tabula XLIII Continuatio Animalium, & Ratiocinium, live, genus Canum, ex Ording, noni Classis primæ regni animalis  
 XLIII Tabelle Fortsetzung der thierischen Thiere auf der 2ten Classe der 1ten Ordnung des Reichs der Thiere, Hundes Gattung

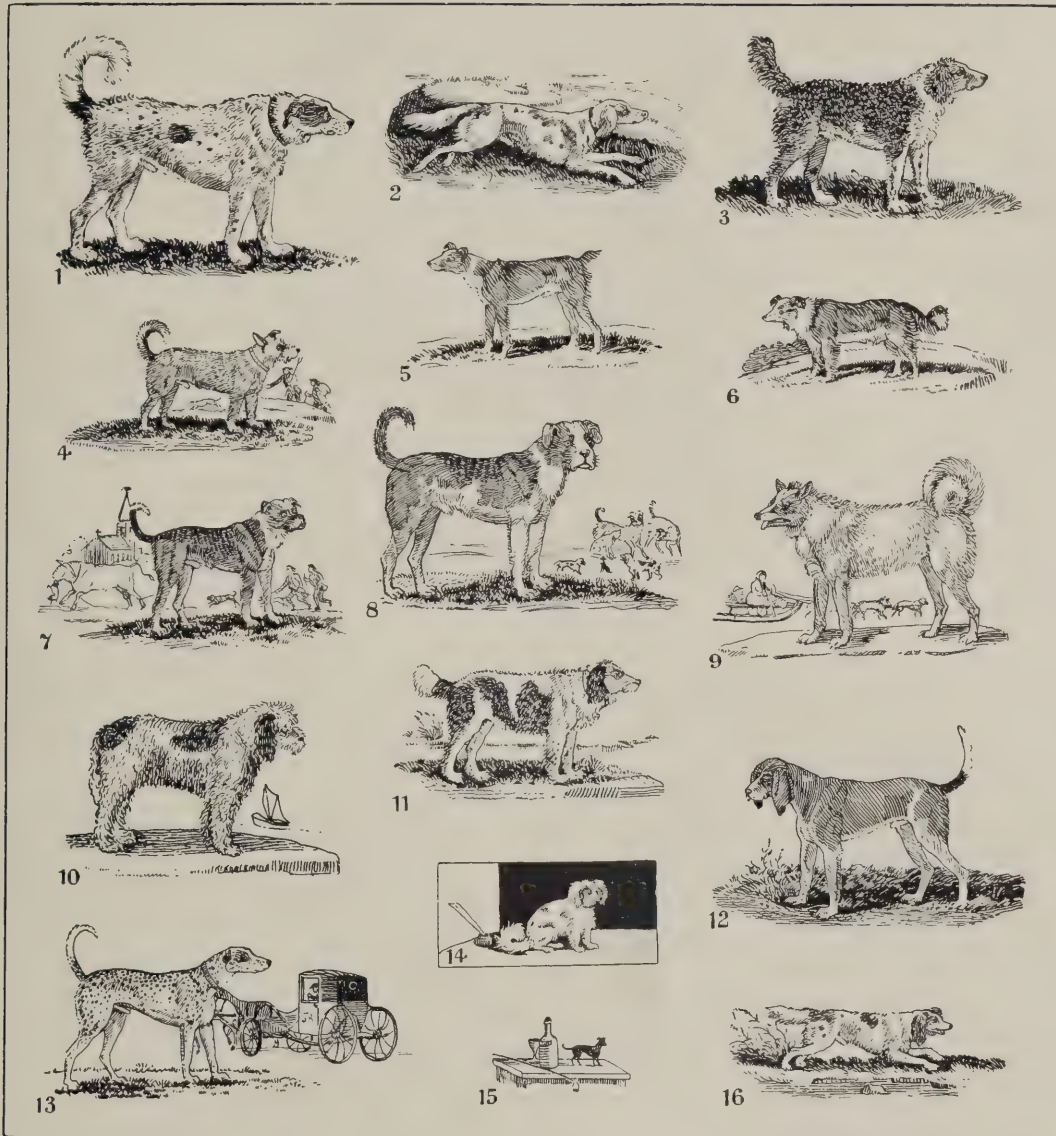


Dogs. From "Icones Animalium." G. F. Riedel (1780).



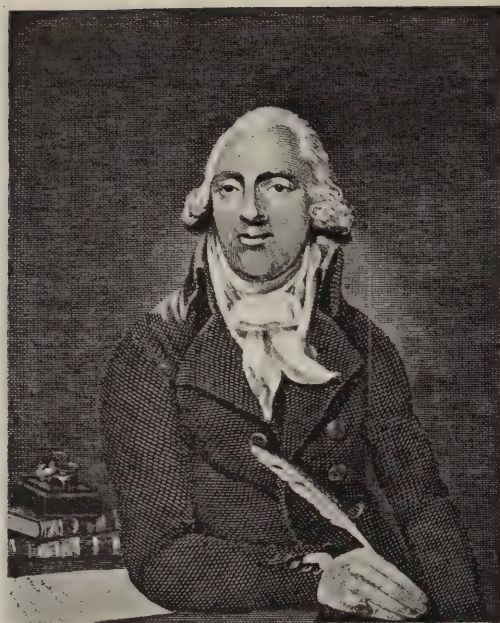


Dogs. From "Icones Animalium." G. F. Riedel (1780).



1. THE NEWFOUNDLAND. 2. THE ENGLISH SETTER. 3. THE LARGE WATER-SPANIEL. 4. THE TERRIER. 5. THE CUR-DOG. 6. THE SHEPHERD'S DOG. 7. THE BULLDOG. 8. THE MASTIFF. 9. THE GREENLAND DOG. 10. THE ROUGH WATER-DOG. 11. THE SMALL WATER-SPANIEL. 12. THE OLD ENGLISH HOUND. 13. THE DALMATIAN OR COACH-DOG. 14. THE COMPORTER (VERY MUCH OF A PAPILLON). 15. "TOY DOG, BOTTLE, GLASS, AND PIPE." *From a vignette.* 16. THE SPRINGER OR COCKER. *From Thomas Bewick's "General History of Quadrupeds" (1790).*





TAPLIN, AUTHOR OF "THE SPORTSMAN'S CABINET." (1803.)



DUSTMAN.

A CELEBRATED DOG. A CROSS BETWEEN BULLDOG AND TERRIER. "The breed of dogs of this description has been much encouraged of late." From "*The Sporting Magazine*" (1812). [136d]



fox may have lured him off. He evinced real delight at getting back, devoted his first attentions to a hearty meal, then rubbed himself up against his own particular associates, after which he sought out and attacked the weakest of his enemies, and, soothed by their howlings, coiled himself up for a long sleep." We read, too, how Hobson made one happy without intending it; he leant over to give the dog a kick; but his slipper, down at heel, flew off, and away went the dog in triumph. The slipper was not seen again. "They lay out," he writes, "in the snow at 40°, and the mists gave a raw and keen edge to the chilly blasts." The dogs were often heard howling or moaning, as they hung about half-drowned amidst pelting sleet and rain.

The long dark winters send dogs mad. "They break into a howl at an incidental light, thinking it to be the moon, then bark frenziedly at nothing" and "walk in straight and curved lines up and down the deck with anxious and unwearying perseverance." When the long night ends, the few dogs surviving are harnessed. "The howling of the wind," writes Kane,<sup>1</sup> describing the start of a new year, "and the whirl of the snow drift, confused the poor creatures. I strove to force them over—'now 'Stumpy'! now 'Whitey'! Good dogs! Tu-lee-ee-ee! Tul!' . . . The next moment the whole team was rolling in a lump, some 10 feet below me, in the chasm of the ice-foot." Standing straddled with one foot on frozen ice and the other on loose piled rubbish, "a few cuts of a sheath-knife released them"; and he writes: "The caresses of the dear brutes might have been fatal to me." "I find by my notes," he writes later, "these six dogs, well worn by previous travel, carried me with a fully-burdened sledge between 700 and 800 miles during the first fortnight after leaving the brig—a mean travel of 57 miles a day."

"I shall not easily forget," writes McClintock, "the trial my patience underwent during the six weeks that I drove the dogs' sledge. The leader of the team, named 'Omar Pasha,' was very willing, but very lame; little 'Rose' was coquettish, but fonder of being caressed than whipped. From some cause or other she ceased growing when only a few months old. 'Darky' and 'Missy' were nice pups; and last of all came the two wretched starvelings reared in the winter, 'Foxy' and 'Dolly.'"

When a particular native hunter started off on his journey: "The dogs (seven) were cold and eager to be off. They were hitched to the sledge in a moment; the hunter with his right hand threw out the coils of his long whip-lash, with his left he seized an upstander and pushing the sledge forward a few paces he at the same time shrilly sounded the familiar starting-cry of 'Ka! Ka!—Ka! Ka!' which sent the dogs hurrying to their places and dashing down over the rough ice."

Guiding his sledge among the hummocks, the hunter restrained "the impetuosity of his team with the nasal 'Ay! Ay!' which they well understood. Having reached the smooth ice, he dropped upon the sledge, let fall his whip-lash upon the snow to trail after him, shouting 'Ka! Ka!—Ka! Ka!—Ka! Ka!'

"They were off at a wild gallop. I watched the sledges from the rocks below the hut until I grew cold. They moved gracefully over the heavy drifts, and wound skilfully among the hummocks.<sup>2</sup> Sometimes they were lost to view for a moment

<sup>1</sup> Elisha Kent Kane, M.D., Commander Second Grinnell Expedition.

<sup>2</sup> "The dogs' feet suffer from the minute crystals on the hard crust of snow, becoming very sore and sometimes bleeding. The natives have, in consequence, little socks of leather which they tie on the paws." (Hayes, "Arctic Boat Journey," 1854.)

in a valley or behind a wall of broken ice. At length they appeared only as dark specks upon the white horizon. Even when they were almost lost to sight, a cheerful voice reached me through the clear air; and as I turned away 'Ka! Ka!—Ka! Ka!' rung in my ears. Happy, care-defying creatures! I dropped then the door of my wretched hut, crawled through the dark passage, and rolled myself upon my blankets, to get warm. . . . They were going out into the desert, laughing at, defying the cold, the wind, and storm, caring for nothing, lamenting nothing, fearing nothing; in their own minds creatures of a predetermined fate."

Kane gives a remarkably vivid picture of giving the dogs their food. "They evidently wanted their breakfasts. Each master went to his sledge and brought up a piece of something which looked more like plate-iron flat than anything else, but which, upon examination, I found to be walrus hide. It was  $\frac{3}{4}$  inch thick, and was frozen intensely hard. Throwing it upon the snow a few feet in advance of their respective teams, they drew their knives from their boots and attempted to cut the skin into pieces; but the frost had been more severe than they had thought, when discovering the dilemma, I ran up for our hatchet and saw.

"Whilst this operation was going on (about 10 minutes) the dogs had become almost frantic—they tried hard to break loose, pulling in their traces, backwards and forwards, straining and choking themselves; their eyes glared and the foam flew from their mouths. They attacked each other and rolled over in the snow, and when the food was thrown to them they uttered a greedy scream which was followed by an instant of silence whilst the pieces were falling, then by a scuffle, and the hard strong chunks were gone. How they were swallowed or digested was to me inexplicable."

On McClintock's voyage of the *Fox* in the Arctic Sea to discover the fate of Franklin, there were thirty Esquimaux dogs on board and one native to manage them. Twenty-nine of these dogs devoured their two days' allowance of seals' flesh (60 and 65 lb.) in forty-two seconds. It was cut up into small pieces and spread out upon the snow before they were permitted to rush to their dinner. In this way the weak had a fair chance, and there was no time for fighting. They were only fed three times a week at times, and some, dissatisfied with their rations, absented themselves from the ship, hunting on their own account, though what they could find remained a mystery.

As a contrast to the above Hooper, in "Tents of Tuski," gives information as to the treatment of the Esquimaux dogs by the natives and by some of the travellers. He writes that they are often beaten over the head with whip-handles. "Sometimes they turn very sulky and obstinate and stop short in a most determined manner, either offended with their fellows, the road, or the driver, and scarcely any amount of punishment will induce them to budge." If the whip is applied, "they throw themselves down in the snow, howl vigorously at first, their cries gradually subsiding into a short moan at each blow; occasionally a good whipping has the desired effect and the dog resumes its labours," but the struggle for supremacy between master and dog is often protracted and severe. "On one occasion, Austin, a man of a particularly cold-blooded and savage nature, being displeased with the conduct of one of his dogs, quickly drew his knife, stabbed the animal in two places, unharnessed it, wiped the blade of his weapon on its coat, and proceeded on his visit to the ship without the least concern.



"When ordinary modes of chastisement have failed, the proceedings then instituted are very curious indeed. The driver gets off his sledge, seizes the dog which has misconducted itself, and makes a nice little hole in the snow, in which he arranges the unfortunate wretch's nose with the greatest care and attention to its suitable position: having thus made due preparation, he pounds away at the snout of his victim with the butt-end of his whip, which is generally a piece of heavy flat ivory, in the most remorseless manner. The dogs know perfectly well what is coming the instant their masters touch them, and tremble in every limb: they do not attempt to howl loudly, and when released they make an occasional short yell as they run."

De Lessep, in his story of his journeys published in Paris in 1790, gives an appalling picture of the cruelty with which the dogs were occasionally treated. So hungry were the dogs that when they were harnessed and brought up to the pole, they seized the harness, constructed of the thickest and toughest leather, and tore it to pieces and devoured it. De Lessep says: "A great number of the dogs escaped into the wilds around and seized everything which came within their reach and their teeth could destroy. Those that fell exhausted were immediately torn to pieces by the others. In order to defend themselves, the author and his friends used their bludgeons and swords. Those which escaped their blows stood round the sledge, thin, starved, and miserable, and scarcely able to move, plaintively and continuously howling. Some of them crept into the tent and fell into the fire."

Hayes in his "Arctic Boat Journey in the Autumn of 1854" writes: "Leaving the hunters to look after their teams, I returned to the hut. The blinding snow, which battered my face, made me insensible to everything except the idea of getting out of it; and thinking of no danger, I was in the act of stooping to enter the doorway, when a sudden noise behind me caused me to look round, and there, close at my heels, was the whole pack of thirteen hungry dogs, snarling, snapping, and showing their sharp teeth like a drove of ravenous wolves. So impetuous was their attack that one of them had already sprung when I faced round. I caught him on my arm and kicked him downhill. I had faced death in several shapes . . . my blood fairly curdled in my veins. Death down the red throats of a pack of wolfish dogs had something about it particularly unpleasant." Later he writes, referring to the incident given above: "Savage they are, however, only when hungry . . . that they had developed their latent wolfish qualities, and that reclaimed wolves they doubtlessly are."

Valuable information as to the relationship between wolves and these Esquimaux dogs is given by Captain Sir E. Parry, R.N., and Sir J. Franklin. Captain Parry states that the Esquimaux bitches would stray from the ship and return to the ship pregnant to wolves; and Sir J. Franklin informs us that the Indians attached to one of his expeditions, upon destroying a female wolf, carried away three of her whelps to improve their breed of dogs; and that in March the female greywolves frequently entice the domesticated dogs from the huts. There is also a note that Esquimaux dogs when suffering from hunger will not drink water unless it is oily; that Esquimaux dogs have an instinctive longing for fat and blubber, so that when brought to other countries they exhibit the same penchant. He states that two dogs at Chelsea would stand hour after hour in front of a candle-maker's workshop, sniffing the savoury effluvia of the melting tallow.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Mrs. Scott informs me that Samoyed dogs in this country show no such desire.



In 1821, we read that disease carried off the greater part of the dog population in one district. A Juhakir family had only two dogs left out of twenty, and these two were just born and still blind. Rather than lose the last remains of their former wealth, the wife of the Juhakir decided to nurse the two puppies with her own child. She did so, and from these two puppies started a new race of sledge-dogs.

The early history of the Esquimaux and Samoyed dogs is of interest. Frobisher (1577) mentions the use of sledge-dogs. In his "*Histoire du Canada*" Gabriel Sagard Theodat (1636) writes: "The dogs of Canada are slightly different from ours, but not in their disposition and temper, which are not at all bad. They howl rather than bark, and all have upright ears like foxes, but in all other respects are just like the middle-sized mastiffs of our villages; they set at the elk and discover the beasts' lair, and are very little expense to their master, but otherwise are more suitable for the kitchen than for any other use. The flesh is quite good and tastes a little like pork—perhaps because their chief food is the dirt in the roads; I did not often eat it, as such meat is highly esteemed in that country, so that I did not have it as often as I wished. They are very tiresome in the tents, walk over you, and if they find the pot uncovered, immediately plunge their pointed noses into the 'sagamite,'<sup>1</sup> which is not thought the less clean for this."

Tooke (1779) states that the Samoyeds use dogs for draught, describing them as "a sort of tarriers, very strong and accustomed to hard duty," and adding that the people wear white shaggy dog skins. Bewick (1790) describes the breed as "the Greenland dog," and his etching seems to have been the model for Reinagle's illustration in Taplin's work.

Bewick writes that "the savage aspect and disposition of this dog seem to bear some affinity to the rigours of the climate it inhabits. . . . The Pomeranian or wolf-dog of M. Buffon, the Siberian Lapland<sup>2</sup> and Iceland dogs, are somewhat similar to it in the sharpness of their muzzles, in their long shaggy hair, and bushy, curling tails. The principal difference is in their size. Most of the Greenland dogs are white, but some are spotted, and some black. They may rather be said to howl than bark. The dogs of Kamchatka are commonly black or white."

He describes how the driver strikes on the snow to regulate the speed of the dogs, or to stop them, and how, when the dogs are inattentive to their duty, he often chastises them by throwing the stick at them.

Then comes the amusing passage mentioned in an early part of this chapter.<sup>3</sup> Bewick writes that the man, having thrown his stick at the dogs, "discovers great dexterity in regaining his stick, which is the greatest difficulty attending his situation; for if he should happen to lose his stick, the dogs immediately discover the circumstance, and seldom fail to set off at full speed, and continue to run till their strength is exhausted or till the carriage is overturned and dashed to pieces, or hurried down a precipice." He concludes the note with the story that in December of 1784 one of these dogs, left by a smuggling vessel near Boomer on the coast of Northumberland, finding himself deserted, began to worry sheep. In time he became

<sup>1</sup> Porridge made of maize.

<sup>2</sup> The Lapland cur, according to Colonel Smith, was black or liver-coloured, and rugged. It was a small dog used as a watch-dog and also for hunting. The people, depending entirely on reindeer for subsistence, had no food to spare for large dogs.

<sup>3</sup> Page 140.

a terror to the countryside. He bit a hole in the right side of the sheep, and after eating the "tallow about the kidneys," left it. He attacked several sheep each day. The dog was hunted with hounds, greyhounds, etc., but when the pack reached him, lay down on his back, as if supplicating for mercy, and in that position they never hurt him. Once he was pursued to a spot thirty miles from Howick, but that same day returned to Howick and killed sheep. In March 1785 he lived upon a rock on the Heughhill near Howick, "where he had a view of four roads," and was eventually shot there.

This story is given again by Taplin in his "Sportsman's Cabinet" of 1803, but the dog is stated to have been a Newfoundland! Taplin, under the title of Greenland dog, tells us that the Greenland dog had greatly the "predominance of a wolfish aspect, and at the first view seems admirably calculated to excite the emotions of alarm. They are mostly much beyond the line of mediocrity in size, are usually white with a black face, not infrequently bald, rarely all brown or black, but sometimes entirely white; they have sharp noses, hair thick and wavy, inclined to a twisty curl; short ears, and an oblique curvature in the tail, and a discordant hoarseness in vociferation which is more of a disquieted howl than an attempt to bark."

"The dog," writes Taplin, "sleeps abroad, forming an excavated bed in the snow, from whence but merely the nose appears above it." He writes that they worked either singly or in a pack in hunting the Arctic fox, seals on the ice, and polar bears, and that they were admitted to be excessively fierce and to attack the few domestic animals which have been introduced into that country (!).

He misses out Bewick's tale of the sheep-killer left on the coast.<sup>1</sup> As to his suggestion that this breed has an instinctive dislike of domesticated animals, I have spoken to Samoyed owners, and they tell me that neither imported dogs nor dogs bred here have more dislike for any domesticated animal than dogs of other varieties. I think Taplin desired to suggest that these dogs were really a variety of wolf, trained to help man, thus their dislike for domesticated animals, for he continues that "it is by different writers considered singular that the race of European dogs show an antipathy as strange to the Kamchatka and American species as to the wolf itself"; and he adds: "It is well authenticated that the dogs of Kamchatka are of wolfish descent." He describes the dog to be in size and shape little different from the "large Russian boor-dog, and so incredibly great is their spirit, that they frequently dislocate their joints in drawing, and their hair is often tinged with red, from the extravasation of blood, occasioned by violent exertion."

The natives, Taplin tells us, so greatly desire a smart "turnout" that large sums were given for good specimens of dogs and elegant harness. He describes the sledges then in use as  $4\frac{1}{2}$  feet long and 1 foot broad, in shape a crescent, made of light tough wood fastened together with "wicker-wood." Those of important people were stained with red or blue, and the seat was covered with furs or bearskins. The carriage was often ornamented in front with tassels of coloured cloth and leather and small bells,

<sup>1</sup> An incident of this kind occurred about 1875. Much to the consternation of the area, "a wolf" made its appearance between Winchester and Southampton Water. It worried sheep, and the farmers armed themselves and shot it. The body was then exhibited at a charge of 6d. to 1d. a head. It transpired later that one of Sir Allen Young's Arctic dogs had been missing, having escaped from the yacht, the *Pandora*, lying in Southampton Water.



and the jingling of these bells was believed to encourage the dogs. The runners of the sledge projected a foot beyond the body of the sledge and were then turned up at each end, and shod with the bone of some sea-animal. The driver sat sideways, his feet on the sledge, his baggage and provisions in a bundle behind him. The reins were fastened on the dogs' collars, "but were of little use," the driver depending on his voice.

"The people sometimes eat their dogs," he writes, feeding them for that purpose, fattening them with vegetables, which when the dogs were unable to eat more was rammed down their throats, "the same way," writes Taplin, "as turkeys are served in England." The dogs, however, on this treatment thrived amazingly and became so extremely fat and palatable that Europeans found the flesh satisfactory. The dogs were strangled, and their blood was collected, preserved in coco-nut shells, and baked for the table. Their skins were used for coverlets, and their intestines were used to make thread. He tells us that towards the end of May the dogs were released from their labours and left to provide for themselves during the summer, and as soon as the snow began to fall they would return to their respective owners.

Colonel H. Smith describes four varieties of "Esquimaux" dogs—the Siberian dog, the Esquimaux, the Iceland, and the Nootka dog.

The *Siberian dog*, or "Kosha" of the natives, varied considerably in size, one exhibited by a M. Chabert at Bath stood over 36 inches high. The ears were bear-like, the head that of a wolf, the tail like a fox's brush in hue and colour; it had the general appearance of a greyish wolf. There might have been, Colonel Smith suggests, a cross of Russian watch-dog in this individual, "for the dogs of Kamchatka were smaller, though similarly formed. Their colour a mixed black-and-white, the tips of the ears slightly drooping; and their attachment to home only a kind of periodical instinct, which brings them to their master's door after they have roamed wild for many weeks to provide for themselves."

He writes that the "Chien Loup" and "Chien de Siberie" (Plate 4) differ from the Kamchatka race by having the hair much longer, and particularly by that upon the forehead overhanging the eyes; the tail being curled close over the back; and the colour on that part of the body a dull ashy-brown. The second is figured much lower on the legs, nearly entirely white, and the face still more marked with a profusion of hair. These two were evidently inland varieties, probably not farther north or east than Tobolsk.

He describes the *Esquimaux dog* as equal to the mastiff in size, and covered with long, rather curling hair and with a bushy tail, very much curled over the back, the ears short and pointed, and the face clothed with short hair as well as the lower parts of the extremities. Many are black-and-white, others of a dingy white, and those on the coast of Labrador are often brown-and-white.

The *Iceland dog*, or Fiaar-hund, Colonel Smith suggests was brought to Iceland by Norwegians, "a race which at present is not found in the parent country, the head rounder and muzzle more pointed than the Esquimaux dog, the ears upright, the colours white-and-black or white-and-brown." The last of these dogs described by Colonel Smith is the *Nootka dog*, a variety which he considers indicates the direction whence the Esquimaux and Newfoundland races are derived. It is large,



with pointed upright ears, and docile, and chiefly valued on account of the immense load of fur it bears on the back, of white-and-brown and black colour, the woolly proportion so great and fine that it may well be called a fleece, for, when shorn off, it is sufficiently interwoven to lift the whole produce of one animal by grasping a single handful. The natives spin and work it along with other wool into garments. This is probably a description of the type of Esquimaux dog, or large Spitz, which was developed by the Samoyede people, and which is known here as the Samoyed dog.

In the history of the breed in England the Esquimaux dog was first allotted a class at the Kennel Club Show at the Agricultural Hall in 1888. For some time a large dog named "Garry" (at that time called, by some, a North American wolf-dog) won prizes. He was pure white, and from the illustration given in Dalziel's book was remarkably sharp-pointed in the muzzle and broad on the skull. He was said to have been the produce of an "Esquimaux bitch crossed nine times by a prairie wolf." (See Plate 147.)

He is described as of "enormous size," with small eyes, pale yellow in colour, and a mouth easily able to take in a man's leg (!). He did not bark, but uttered a loud growl when annoyed, and at night would howl "piteously." Mr. C. E. Fryer, in Dalziel's book, tells us that the Indians took great pride in rearing a white puppy and held feasts in the dog's honour, called the "Feast of the White Dog."

Opinions on the dogs varied considerably: some found them remarkably intelligent and docile; others, again, described them as exceptionally ferocious and quarrelsome and peculiarly vicious to other dogs of this country. It seems from these very opposite opinions that two extremely different types or varieties were being described. One well-known owner of the time, a Mr. Temple, who both bred and imported dogs, writes that he found that when loose they would at once go for "the first living thing they saw, dog, pig, chicken, horse, or cow"! But the bitches went always less time with pups than ordinary dogs, and average about 60 days. The puppies were difficult to rear, and the dogs walked up and down in the kennels like wolves in a cage.

It appears from this that Mr. Temple probably owned wolf crosses, which would account for their ferocity to domesticated animals and their habits and the shorter gestation period<sup>1</sup> (domesticated dog, 63 days).

Their size is given to be from 22 to 25 inches<sup>2</sup> at shoulder, and "Boita," one of the best Esquimaux dogs of the time, the property of this gentleman, a black dog with a little white on the chest and end of tail, stood 25 inches and weighed 90 lb.<sup>3</sup> From nose to end of tail was 64 inches, chest girth 34 inches; girth of skull 22 inches; from tip of nose to midway between eyes, forehead, 9 inches.

Mr. Adrian Neison, of Manitoba, in a letter states that the dogs of his area all had bright yellow eyes, similar to a cat, with great power of dilating the pupils.

Miss Kilburn Scott informs me that the breed has increased in size since importation, that black is difficult, practically impossible to fix, and attempts to do so from occasional black specimens had resulted in whites.

Mrs. Kilburn Scott, in a letter to me in answer to my questions based on

<sup>1</sup> Aristotle states that the mule of wolf and dog are carried longer than the ordinary dog.

<sup>2</sup> Modern dogs, 20 inches at shoulder.

<sup>3</sup> Modern weight, 50 lb.

suggestions of explorers and early breeders, writes that she has not noticed the partiality for fat foods, stated to be characteristic.

In her opinion, "Antarctic Buck," "Southern Cross," "South Pole," Ch. "Fang," and Ch. "Kaifas," are some of the most important pillars of the breed. Also that Ch. "Antarctic Bru" is considered to be one of the best dogs of the time. His carriage is excellent; he has a beautiful head and striking appearance.

In a further letter Mrs. Scott informs me that the colour of the nose varies with the health, and the old idea, given by early writers, that the warmth of the fire changes the colour of the nose is not considered correct.

The puppies have a short, furry coat. In the adult the eyelids and nose are black, the black rim under the eyes being considered a protection from the glare of the snow. In winter the nose frequently changes to a brown colour.

The weight of the dog is about 50 lb., height 21 to 22 inches. The tail curved and carried over the side of the back.

It is interesting that Samoyeds have not the "doggy" smell when wet, but have that curious odour of a wet blanket.

Among the Samoyeds in Plate 59 is Mrs. Kilburn Scott's (of Farningham, Kent) noted winning dog Champion "Antarctic Bru." The team harnessed in a sledge consist of "Starsun Bru"; "Nim"—"Hibeda"; "Tula"—Ch. "Polar Light."

The following are the points of the breed to-day:

Head powerful, wedge-shaped. Skull broad, flat; foreface tapering. Ears set well apart, moderate length, slightly rounded at tips, well covered inside with hair. Eyes dark, wide set, deep. Lips black. Nose, eye-rims black (brown or flesh-coloured allowed). Jaws strong, level. Back: length medium, broad, muscular. Chest broad, deep; ribs well sprung. Hindquarters muscular; well let down stifles. Legs straight, muscular, good bone. Feet long, flattish, slightly spread; soles well padded with hair. Tail long, profuse, carried over back at alert. Coat close, thick, soft, short, through which harsh hair grows forming outer coat, standing straight away from body, free from curl; hair short and smooth before ears. Colour snow-white, white, and biscuit; creams.

### THE POMERANIAN

Xenophon first mentions fox-dogs: "There are two kinds, the castor-dog and the fox-dog," the latter said to have sprung from a union between a fox and a dog.

E. Topsell in 1607 describes a dog which doubtlessly was a Pomeranian. He writes:

"Nowadays they have found another breede of little dogs in all nations besides the Melitœan dogs, either made so by art as inclosing their bodies in the earth when they are whelped so as they cannot grow great by reason of the place, or else lessening and impayring their growth by some kind of meat or nourishment. These are called, in Germany, Brachen Schofhundle and Gutschen Hundle, and in Italian, Bottolo. Other nations have no common name for this kind that I know. Martiall made this distich of a little French dog for about Lyons in France there are store of this kind and solde very deare, sometimes for ten crowns and sometimes for more.



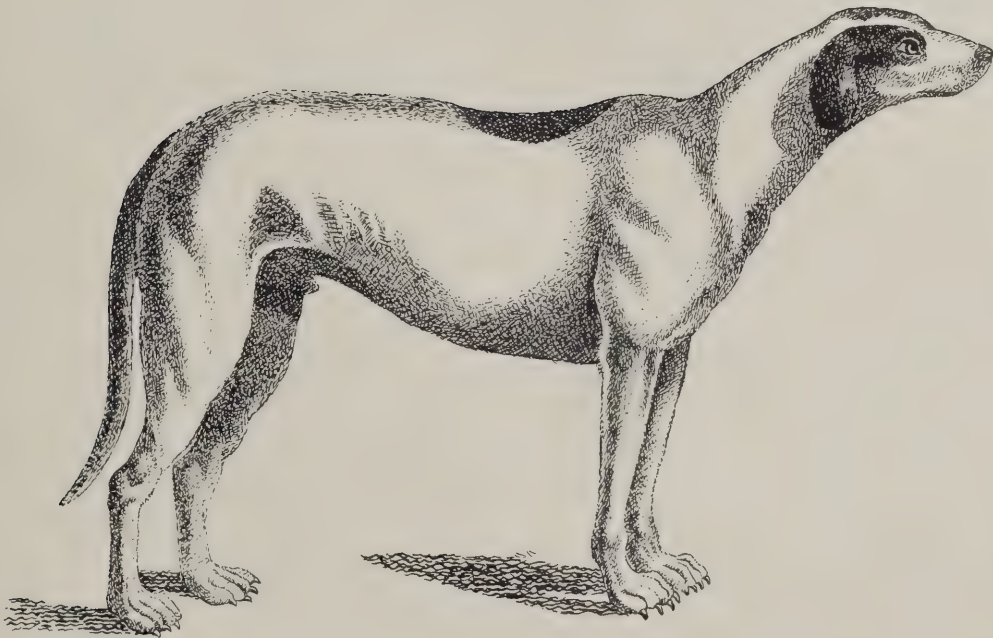


(Top) left. 1. MASTIFF; right. 2. WOLF-DOG. (Centre) 3. HARRIER OF BENGAL. (Bottom) left. 4. IRISH HOUND; right. 5. ICELAND DOG. *Illustrations from Barr's Buffon (1792).*





(1st Row) left to right. 1. WATER-DOG. 2. TURNSPIT. 3. KING CHARLES DOG. (2nd Row) left to right. 4. SPANIEL. 5. SIBERIAN DOG. 6. PUG. (3rd Row) left to right. 7. BULLDOG. 8. LION-DOG. 9. SHOCK-DOG. *Illustrations from Barr's Buffon* (1792).



(Above) SHEPHERD'S DOG. From Shaw's "Zoology" (1800). (Below) IRISH WOLF-DOG. From Shaw's "Zoology" (1800).  
A copy of the illustration of Lord Altamont's dog, given by A. B. Lambert with his paper "Canis graius hibernicus" (1794).





(Right) Toy Pomeranian with Child. Greek tombstone from  
Alexandria (about 3rd century B.C.).



(Left) Pomeranian and Girl. Oinochoe (wine-jug). Late Athenian fabric (4th century B.C.).



They are not above a foote or halfe a foote long and always the lesser the more delicate and precious. Their head like the head of a mouse, but greater, their snowt sharpe, their ears like that of a cony, short legs, little feete, long taile, and white colour, and the haire about the shoulder longer than ordinary is most commended. They are of pleasant disposition, and will leape and bite without pinching, and barke prettily, and some of them are taught to stand upright, holding up their forelegs like hands to fetch and carry in their mouths that which is cast unto them.

"There are some wanton women which admit them to their beds, and bring up their young ones in their own bosomes, for they are so tender, that they sildome bring above one at a time, but they loose their life."

The Pomeranian, wolf-dog, fox-dog, or Spitz, is closely related to the Samoyed, elkhound, and of course to the keeshond. The pom was brought, so we read, from Pomerania. In Germany it is named the Deutsche Spitze. A similar dog, but rather longer, is known as the lupino in Italy and in Belgium and Holland as the keeshond or Spitz. The Pomeranian is a dog of considerable antiquity and its origin is of course unknown.

Ludwig Beckmann in 1894 gives the following table, dividing the Spitz family into :

"I. Langhaarige Spitze (long-haired).

(a) Deutsche Spitze (German).

(b) Nordische Spitzartige Hunde (North Spitz-type dog).

(c) Sudliche Spitzartige Hunde (South Spitz-type dog).

"II. Stockhaarige Spitze (wire-haired).

(a) Sibirische Laika (Samoyede).

(b) Elchund der Lappen (elkhound).

"III. Kurzhaarige Spitze (short-haired).

(a) Belgischer Spitze (Schipperke).

(b) Chinesische Spitzartige Hunde (Chow-chow).

(c) Indische Spitzartige Hunde (Indian Spitz-type dog)."

The Pomeranian given by Ludwig Beckmann as "Deutsche Spitze" is a diminutive form of the wolf-dog or fox-type dog ; and although the word "fox-type" dog is generally used, these animals really bear only a superficial resemblance to the fox, for the head has not the long, narrow, and pointed muzzle of that animal, nor has it the deep stop, and powerful (from the front) flat cheeks, or the characteristic broad forehead and widely placed large ears of the fox. "Fox-dog," however, appears to be a better description than the word "wolf-dog," suggesting as it does the Alsatian carriage, and not the short and somewhat rounded body typical of the Samoyed, Pomeranian, elkhound, and keeshond. It is astonishing how true to type this family has remained, for the Pomeranian on antique gems and on numerous jars of 300 and 400 B.C., and those on the tablets and other ornaments of early Grecian times, show a Pomeranian dog which might step out of its pen at the next Cruft's Show. In the

Street of Tombs in Athens is a stone, carved in the year 56 B.C., of a group in which a Pomeranian of small size is leaping up. On Greek vases the Pomeranian is frequently seen playing with the children; and on comparison with the children, there is no doubt that small Pomeranians, no larger than the pom of to-day, were then quite common. The Pomeranian was called the "Maltese dog" in classical Grecian times.

The earliest record of the name "Pomeranian" is in the writings of George Vancouver, in his "Voyage of Discovery round the World," who reports that on "Thursday, May 24th, 1792," he visited an Indian village, and found there a number of dogs, "resembling those of Pomerania," though somewhat larger. They were all "shaven as close to the skin as sheep are in England; and so compact were their fleeces, that large portions could be lifted up by a corner without causing any separation." The people wore clothing and had blankets of this wool.

Taplin, in the "Sportsman's Cabinet" (1803), is bitterly opposed to the variety. He writes that "the dog so called in this country is but little, 18 to 20 inches in height, and is distinguished by his long, thick, and rather upright coat, forming a most tremendous ruff about the neck, but short and smooth on the head and ears.

"They are mostly of a pale yellow or cream colour, and lighter on the lower parts. Some are white, some few black, and others but very rarely spotted; the head broad towards the neck, and narrowing to the muzzle; ears short, pointed, and erect; nose and eyes mostly black; the tail large, bushy, and invariably curled in a ring upon the back.

"In England he is much more familiarly known as the fox-dog, and this may have originally proceeded from his having much affinity to that animal about the head; but by those who in writing describe him as a native of Pomerania, he passes under the appellation of the Pomeranian dog.

"In general opinion as a house-dog he is held in but slender estimation, being by nature frivolous, artful, quarrelsome, cowardly, petulant, deceitful, snappish, and dangerous with children, without one prominent property to recommend him.

"This breed is common in Holland, and has occasionally been introduced as a hieroglyphic by the caricaturist partisans of the House of Orange (in opposition to the pug) to ridicule the patriots in their political disputes."

Such was Taplin's opinion, but he was very prejudiced against any new breed or foreign breed. How false his description was is proved by the astonishing development of the Pomeranian fancy. For classes grew in numbers and in variety until, at the Ladies' Kennel Association Show in 1897, thirty-eight classes were given and 160 entries were made.

The Pomeranian group has been of considerable service to man. The largest of these dogs have been used for draught purposes in different countries for many years, particularly in the northern areas of Europe. Everard Ysbrants Ides, in his journey across Europe, gives a description of these working dogs. (See Plate 8.)

It is not difficult to understand the value of a variety of dog used to take wild animals, to draw sledges, and able to produce so luxuriant a coat, to a people dependent on home produce for all necessities. Here was a supply of easily obtained wool suitable for clothing, and dog-flesh for food. So useful a dog would spread at a time when utilitarian value was all-important. That the people



realised the value of these dogs and bore them a curious reverence is shown by the treatment and ceremony which followed the death of one of these dogs by illness or accident.

"We had the opportunity," writes Adam Brand, secretary to an Embassy from Muscovy in 1698, "to be present at the Burial of one of their Dogs: He was of a very large size, and had been, as it seems, a good Hunting-Dog in his lifetime; for which reason, these poor Wretches made sad moans and lamentations for the loss of so serviceable a Creature: After having uttered many things in his praise, they put him into a Grave dug for this purpose, with a piece of Wood under his Head, for fear he should lie uneasy; and as a Monument of their gratitude for his past Services, they erected a little Hutt over his Grave. We were credibly informed, that it is a very ancient Custom among these People, to bury all their Dogs, and to reward their past Services in the same manner."<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup>

Wherever it may have originated, the Pomeranian-type dog spread over a considerable area of the world, and is found pure as the Pomeranian, Samoyed, etc., and crossed, as the Chow and other varieties.

On Pomeranians apart from Samoyeds, Bewick in 1790 has no information, and leaves the breed alone; but Edwards, ten years later, not only gives an excellent picture of the Pomeranian, but also describes the variety as having a broad head at the back, narrowing to the muzzle, ears short, pointed, and erect, and to stand about 18 inches high. Its long, thick, and rather erect coat formed a "ruff around the neck," but the coat was short on the head and ears. The colours were pale fallow, lightest on the lower parts; "some are white, some black, but few spotted. The tail large and bushy, curled in a ring on the rump. Instances are few of short-coated ones."

Edwards also describes the pom as noisy, snappish, artful, quarrelsome, cowardly, petulant, dangerous to children, and that it was named "*kees*" in Holland, used by caricaturists of the House of Orange in opposition to the pug, a copy of Taplin.

"There is a peculiarity," he writes, "in his coat; his hair, particularly the ruff around his neck, is not formed by hairs that describe the line of beauty . . . but by inclining the same way in large masses, give him a very beautiful appearance." He concludes his description informing us that the largest are used for draught in Holland, and "although his attachment is very weak, yet he is difficult to be stolen" (!).

Colonel H. Smith describes the race as *kees* of the Dutch, and to differ from the great St. Bernard by being smaller, "nose more pointed, ears erect, and a bushy tail curled over the back." The colours to be white, white-and-brown or buff, and to be used by the Dutch inland navigators to protect their property on board vessels, and were also to be found as watch-dogs on German farms. A large species of this variety was to be found in Southern China, "usually with fine glossy black fur, a pointed nose, pendulous ears and large paws,"<sup>3</sup> and in India "a dwindled offspring

<sup>1</sup> The people referred to are the Wogultzoi, subjects to the Tsar of Muscovy.

<sup>2</sup> An interesting note occurs in Regnard's "Journey to Lapland" (1861): "In a hut were three or four women, one of whom was naked and feeding a child. The cradle was made of a hollow tree and was hung in the air. A dog who was instructed how to rock the child placed his two forefeet upon the cradle and gave it the same motion that a woman does."

<sup>3</sup> The Chow (?).



now mixed with the pariahs, not much larger than lap-dogs, employed to carry flambeaux at night." But of the latter I have no further information.

In 1847 Richardson, writing of the Pomeranian, tells us that it is sometimes confounded with the Italian or Pyrenean wolf-dog, but is small and white, and also alludes to a small Chinese variety, usually yellow or black, so like a Pomeranian in shape to be hardly distinguishable, used by the natives as food, "roasted dog" being regarded as "the very quintessence of good living." Both Colonel Smith and Mr. Richardson were therefore of the opinion that the Chow of China was a Pomeranian.

*Stonehenge* in 1859 has a kindly word for the breed. "This cheerful little dog is extremely common in the continent of Europe," he writes, "where it goes by the name of 'loup-loup.' Until lately it was very rare in England, but within the last twenty years has become very common as a house-dog," and adds that "it is not recognised, however, by the fanciers, and it is not prized highly by anyone, being of no use as a companion." He gives the colours as generally white, sometimes a pale cream, and more rarely black. But in his 1867 edition, for what reason I cannot imagine, unless it was that he did not consider it a British breed, he does not mention poms.

At first the number of Pomeranians kept were few. In 1875 only eight entries occur in the Kennel Club stud book, meaning of course 40 or 50 animals bred during the previous year.

In 1876 three entries are made, followed by seven entries in 1877. These years were an early period in the revival of the variety.

Walsh ("Stonehenge"), in his work of 1878 under "Sheep and Cattle Dogs," writes that the breed had not become so general a favourite as had been expected, as the fashion had been towards fox-terriers and collies, "the latter more of a companion in country rides and drives." He gives the first points of the breed, and the following note:

"Whatever may be the cause, it cannot be denied that the colley is the more general favourite; and at our large dog shows, while his classes are filled by scores, those of the Pomeranian dog are only made up of units.

"In his native country the Pomeranian dog is employed as a sheep dog, for which he is fitted by his peculiarly woolly coat and ample frill, rendering him to a great degree proof against wet and cold. Like the colley, he is impatient of control in playing tricks, and indeed can seldom be taught to display them even for a time, his intelligence not being of a very high order—at all events, if the attempt is made in any direction but that of his peculiar calling, for which, as far as I know, he has never been employed in this country. But he is always cheerful in the house, generally free from smell either of coat or breath, and readily taught to be cleanly in all his habits. He has not the fondness for game generally exhibited by the colley, and on that account is more suited to be a ladies' pet, nor is he so pugnacious as that dog, being as a rule inclined to run away rather than fight, when the choice lies between those alternatives. From these peculiarities it may be gathered that he is quite up to the average in his fitness to fill the position of companion." He continues:

"The following are the generally recognised points of this dog, though hitherto no attempt has been made to define them:

## "POINTS OF THE POMERANIAN DOG

	Value.		Value.		Value.
Head . . .	10	Chest . . .	5	Coat . . .	15
Muzzle . . .	5	Loin . . .	10	Colour . . .	15
Ears and eyes . . .	5	Legs . . .	10	Tail . . .	5
Shoulders . . .	5	Feet . . .	10	Symmetry . . .	5
	25		35		40

Grand Total, 100.

" 1. The *head* (value 10) is very wide between the ears, and tapers towards the eyes still more than in the colley, resembling the head of the fox almost exactly. Upper surface flat, with a slight furrow down the middle. There is a marked occipital protuberance, but not so much pronounced as in some breeds. Brow sufficiently raised to prevent a straight line.

" 2. The *muzzle* (value 5) tapers from the cheeks, which are wide, to the point of the nose, which is very fine and fox-like. The tip should be black. Lower jaw generally shorter than the upper.

" 3. *Ears and eyes* (value 5).—The *ears* must be small and pricked, resembling those of the fox in shape, and only very slightly exceeding them in size. A large ear is a great defect, even if properly pricked. The *eyes* rather large, and generally of a dark brown or hazel colour. Eyelids generally set obliquely.

" 4. The *shoulders* (value 5) are greatly hidden by the frill, but they must be oblique and muscular.

" 5. *Chest* (value 5) round, and rather deep ; but the back ribs are generally very short, leading to a nipped loin.

" 6. The *loin* (value 10), owing to the above cause, is often weak if examined carefully beneath the thick coat, which conceals this defect.

" 7. The *legs* (value 10) are generally straight and strong, with elbows well let down, and clean hocks. Any defect, therefore, in these points will be severely penalised.

" 8. The *feet* (value 10) are cat-like, and rather small ; toes well arched ; but the soles are apt to be thin and unfit for road work.

" 9. The *coat* (value 15) is of a peculiar texture, differing from that of all other dogs in its resemblance to coarse fur rather than hair. It is so marked in this respect that the under-coat, which exists as in the colley, can scarcely be distinguished from it. The frill is of the same character, but rather more hairy in the texture of its long fibres. It is quite as full as in the colley, in the best specimens, and when deficient should be estimated accordingly. In the black varieties the coat is more hairy, and has even a tendency to be silky. In the best strains the coat stands out uniformly from the body like that of the fox or cat, without any disposition to collect in flecks or wavy curls. The fore legs are slightly feathered, but the hind are quite clean. The face is quite bare of all but very short hair.

" 10. The *colour* (value 15) should be a dead flake white, without any mixture of yellow. A patch of fawn is often to be seen on the head or body, but it is very objectionable. There is a black variety highly prized in Germany, though apparently the produce of a cross, as the texture of coat and size of ears are very different from the best specimens of the white breed. A red strain closely resembling the fox in



texture of coat, and in all respects but the tail, is also met with occasionally on the continent of Europe. This strain is in all respects like the Chinese sheep-dog, of which many specimens exist in England, and one or two of them usually go to make up the foreign class in our large shows.

" 11. The *tail* (value 5) is tightly curled over the back, shaggy, and rather short than otherwise.

" 12. In *symmetry* (value 5) this dog equals most of his compeers, all his several component parts being in good proportion.

" The specimen I have selected for illustration is only of average perfection in the shape of body and head, but his coat is highly characteristic of the true breed. He took the first prize at the late Islington Show of the Kennel Club."

Henry Seeborn, in "Siberia in Europe" (1880), after describing the capturing of reindeer by the lasso, and the help afforded by the dogs which herded the reindeer together, "those tied to the sledges barking furiously," tells us that "the dogs were all white except one, which was quite black [see Samoyeds, p. 143]. They were stiff-built little animals, somewhat like Pomeranian dogs, with fox-like heads and thick bushy hair; their tails turned up over the back and curled to one side." "This similarity between the Pomeranian and Samoyede dogs," he continues, "is a rather curious fact, for Erman mentions a race of people who, he says, resemble the Finns, both in language and features, in a district of Pomerania called Samogitia, inhabited by the Samaites."

In 1880 the cover of part xvi of Dalziel's "British Dogs" shows a Pomeranian "Charley," and an illustration of the same dog appears in the text. He describes the breed to be an established favourite, "though it has never attained the great popularity of some other breeds," and adds that "in big coarse specimens of what we now call the well-bred Pomeranians there was a decided approach to the lank, gaunt form seen in all the varieties of northern dogs shown as Esquimaux, Greenland, Siberian sleigh-dogs, etc."

He gives various hints as to care and management, and says that he has seen perfectly black noses change to a brown or flesh-colour, when the dogs were allowed to frequent the hearth and be exposed to heat.

He mentions that a strain of rich reddish fawn were kept about 1860 in the neighbourhood of Birmingham, whilst similar coloured specimens had been seen occasionally elsewhere, and he is of the opinion "that it would not be very difficult to produce" such colours. He adds that white ones were "for the most part coarse and indifferent specimens" and the black "a great deal worse"; the best black he had seen were the property of Dolen's Hotel in Amsterdam. "There was not a show," he writes, "at which the Pomeranians could have been better." The breed, he tells us, have the appearance of being as squarely built as a pug, the thick outstanding coat giving the appearance. The eyes were bright and small, and when out of condition looked "thin, meagre, flat-sided, and ragged." In size they varied from 10 lb. to 25 lb., and he (Dalziel) suggests 16 lb. to be the weight for dogs and 14 lb. for bitches. He is anxious that other colours "should be encouraged"; and mentions "cream, fawn, red, and buffs"—rather amusing, considering what has happened in the colour question since.

Dalziel, in his edition nine years later, repeats the letterpress of 1860, but adds



that "as a rule those of the black variety are much smaller than the white ones." In 1883 a letter on the intelligence of a Pomeranian owned by a noted cricketer appeared in the "Stock-keeper."

"Mr. George Nash, one of the Lancashire County cricketing team, and proprietor of the Alexandra Hotel, Over Darwen, possessed a small Pomeranian bitch called 'Floss.' This hotel is provided (most hotels are) with bells to each room for the purpose of calling the attention of the waiters, each bell having a different sound. There is also an ordinary door-bell, which is rung by a handle at the front entrance to the hotel, this bell being similar in all respects to the others, saving a slight difference in tone, and is fixed on the same board as the others. Now, persons calling at the hotel for refreshments may ring as often as they please at any of the inside bells, and Floss will not take the slightest notice of them; but let anyone ring the door-bell, and though she be to all appearances asleep before the kitchen fire, which is at the opposite side of the house to the front door, Floss will jump up and rush to this door, barking all the while, as if she would clear the house in a minute; and until she is perfectly satisfied that there is nothing wrong she will not return to her warm quarters.

"What is still more remarkable is, that she can distinguish the sound of the door-bell even when one of the other bells is ringing at the same time. Floss is about six years old, but has only been at this hotel about twelve months, and her peculiar qualification was only noticed by her owner a few weeks ago, since which time poor Floss has been repeatedly roused from her quiet slumbers by persons desiring to test the accuracy of the slow bowler's statements."

Mr. Shaw, in his "Book of the Dog" (1890), gives a coloured illustration of a Pomeranian and Maltese against a brilliant red curtain. The Pomeranian is "Charlie" (but in Mr. Shaw's book he is spelt "Charley"), and certainly appears to be one of the plainest and most dreadful-looking poms the writer has ever seen. This "Charley," we read, was born in 1877, and weighed 18 lb. and stood 16 inches high. The author also gives an engraving from a German source showing a black-and-white Pomeranian of entirely different stamp, the typical "keeshond" of to-day. Unfortunate Pomeranians (!), not even Mr. Shaw could find a good word for them; the very first lines read: "The Pomeranian is admittedly one of the least interesting dogs in existence, and consequently his supporters are few and far between."

But the Pomeranian was coming to the front. The history of the breed may be said to have commenced in 1891, when, with Mr. Theo. Marples as Secretary, and nine members, the Club was started. Then came the first shows, in which Pomeranians of all weights, sizes, and colours and of both sexes vied with each other. We read that at the General Meeting of the Pomeranian Club held at St. Stephen's Hall on May 3, 1892, on the occasion of the Pet Dog Show, the words "Chow-chow" under "Description," were to be substituted for "Esquimaux"; that "small" eyes were to be altered to "medium"; and that silky and flowing tails were desirable (to-day a serious fault!). It was also agreed to alter the word "silky" in respect to coats to "glossy" (to-day the coat is far too hard to be considered even glossy).

The following year at the Pomeranian Committee Meeting, held at the Crystal Palace in 1893, it was proposed by a Mr. Addis that the Club should undertake to encourage the providing of classes for toy poms under 7 lb. The Pomeranian at

that time varied in weight from an occasional toy of 4 lb. to others weighing as much as a West Highland white terrier of to-day. In 1894, at the Cruft's Show, a resolution was passed that the weight of poms was in future to be divided as follows: "Over and under 16 lb.; over and under 7 lb. Those below 7 lb. to be called 'toys.'"

The Cruft Show specials, except for one, were all for whites or blacks, the exception being that for "any other colour." And we find that at the Pet Dog Show that year (May 22-24) specials were given for the best under 4 lb., under 7 lb., under 12 lb., and under 16 lb.

In most shows, however, the division, if any, was by colour, either "blacks" or "whites." This system continued for some years. In the meantime the smaller Pomeranians appeared with apple-heads, ugly round skulls, short noses, and protruding eyes<sup>1</sup>; and as breeders found that good whites in miniature were difficult to breed, often coming weedy, the white began to lose ground. Probably to obtain more stamina in the whites, it was not unusual to cross them with the blacks, and it was from this cross that occasionally some new colour appeared, frequently sable. These sables, when mated with each other or with blacks and whites, brought into being the parti-colours—the blues, beavers, browns, and reds, as well as further sables.

But the popularity of the sable commenced when the remarkable little Champion "Mite" was exhibited, soon to be followed by Ch. "Atom," and so much was the beauty of these two little animals admired that the desire became general to have similar colours. It was about then that a good brown was born, Ch. "Tina," the property of Miss De Pass, to stimulate a craze for browns. For "Tina" had made a great sensation, and apart from her colour was considered to be of astonishingly small weight.<sup>2</sup> From the start to the finish of her show career she was unbeaten, and yet "Tina" would ill bear comparison with the present-day champions. Browns did not, however, remain long in demand. It was found difficult to breed them true to colour, and so the demand passed away, and very few of this colour are seen to-day. Whites, too, had suffered loss of support, because of lack of constitution, and because other colours had taken popular fancy. So whites as show dogs were seldom seen, and blacks also took a second place. It is an interesting example of the rise and fall of favour, for whilst during the early days white and black Pomeranians were the only ones considered, the present day sees these once-popular colours no longer in request.

Passing on to 1911, we have the coming of the orange Pomeranian, the first "Offley Henry Drew," a noted light orange, who, when bred with Ch. "Mars," laid the foundations of the orange family. Ch. "Mars" was the first champion of the orange Pomeranian type. The attempt to obtain good orange poms had included the use of several Italian lupinos, orange-coloured Pomeranians with longer backs than was usual in the breed here.

For a time the lupino cross resulted in misshapen dogs, though of excellent colour. Ch. "Mars" was the sire of Ch. "Gold," and he is also a forerunner of the noted "Orange Boy." Indeed he proved himself to be a sire of exceptional value. In the making of orange the red Pomeranian played a part, helping to produce the deep yet brilliant and clear orange so much needed.

<sup>1</sup> Suggesting a toy spaniel cross.

<sup>2</sup> "Tina" weighed 6 lb.



In 1911 the Kennel Club, wishing, with good reason, that dogs shown should be in a natural condition, attempted to stop trimming in all breeds. As it was necessary to trim Pomeranians, the trouble came to a climax when the Chairman of the Kennel Club lodged a protest that Mrs. Langton-Dennis's dog "Daybrook Masterpiece" had had his ears trimmed! The owner happily agreed that this was true. Indignation ran riot. Breeders, knowing that it was essential to trim the Pomeranian, to prevent the coat appearing shaggy and the ears covered with long hair, pointed out that such trimming was in no way undertaken to deceive. The Kennel Club received the protests but remained adamant, and at a later meeting the Pomeranian Club brought in a new rule, that after sufficient time had been allowed for trimmed specimens to grow full coats, all trimming should be reported, and that a subcommittee of three should examine all dogs at every show, commencing with the Kennel Club Show in that October of 1912. The first three doomed to commence these inspections were Mrs. Langton-Dennis, Mrs. Bowler, Mrs. Cornish Bowden, the Honorary Secretary of the Club. But the absurd position was not allowed to remain for long, for on April 14 of 1913 the Kennel Club wrote, asking the Pomeranian Club if they wished to be scheduled among breeds which were to be allowed to trim. The same year, in September, the new standard as it is to-day was brought in. The wording as to the coat was altered; the coat was to be harsh.

It was two years later that the heavy-weight Pomeranian met its Waterloo. It was due to the action of the Kennel Club, who decided that all weights were to be registered together and only two challenge certificates were to be given. The Kennel Club suggested that the heavy weights should have a new title and thus constitute a variety distinct from the Pomeranian under 7 lb. On this a new Club was formed, and the breed was registered as the "Spitz." In Spitz (1915), 247 entries were made, but the attempt to form a Spitz breed failed. In 1916, 831 entries were made in *one* Pomeranian class; the division Pomeranians and Miniatures had ended.

In 1916 the Pomeranian Club, probably hoping to liven up the Spitz breed, offered "certificates of merit" for poms above 7 lb., but finding that very little interest was taken, it was soon afterwards discontinued. The heavy breed had gone and the Pomeranian of 5 lb. to as low a weight as  $2\frac{1}{2}$  lb. had come in. The  $2\frac{1}{2}$  lb. weights are practically useless for stud purposes, but 3 to  $4\frac{1}{2}$  lb. breed quite well, though breeding involves, in many cases, somewhat terrible suffering for the poor little mother. If three puppies are present, the results are less dangerous or cruel; but if only one puppy is present, it is often far too large to produce, with results better imagined than described.

Mrs. Parker, in a recent number of a journal, sums up the situation. After remarking on the beauty of the orange, contrasting with the green of a lawn, Mrs. Parker writes in respect to the various shades of sables that the tendency is towards loss of shadings, and to "sprinklings of black hairs" or "black muzzles." "A shaded sable should have black tips on his coat all over his body. The definition in the standard reads: "Shaded sables should be shaded throughout with three or more colours, the hair to be as uniformly shaded as possible, and with no patches of self-colour."

But it is often commonly remarked that a dog so shaded is "too dark in shadings." There are even some who consider a dark face a fault in sables, which



it certainly is not. A shaded face is preferable, for it often gives the true expression that self-colours often lack. "A pom's expression should be sweet and winning, and at the same time very much alive and full of, for want of a better word, 'contented happiness.' It is noticeable that the sweetest faces are usually deeper in colour in the oranges and nicely shaded with black in sables. The wolf sables are certainly among the prettiest colours . . . and they usually have black faces." Mrs. Parker continues:

"It is surprising that they have not been more cultivated. The soft, low tones of their colouring, relieved by black tippings and points, are most artistic, added to which they are specially adept at coat-growing, and are outstanding type with kind, sweet expressions."

It is an interesting history when you look back. The first class for poms dates back to 1863, at the first annual Grand National Exhibition of sporting and other dogs held in the Ashburnham Hall, Cremorne, Chelsea, from March 23-28, 1863, the show to which so much comment was subsequently directed (see Appendix XXII). At this show the first prize in Pomeranians went to Mr. Barnes's "Mike" and the second to Mr. J. C. McCarthy's "Beauty."

It is interesting that Pomeranians also had a class at the first Great International Dog Show held in May of that year, at the Agricultural Hall, Islington, when Mr. D. I. Larkie's "Snap" won first, with Mr. St. Quintin's "Guess" second and Mr. W. Eaton's "Fox" third; and though from this one might imagine that the pom was recognised as British, yet at Birmingham that same year the Pomeranian was allotted to the "Extra Class, Foreign," where it competed with the "Great St. Bernard"! In this strangely assorted class two St. Bernard dogs took first and second; and extra prizes, without position, appear to have been given to the small dogs, shared out between one or two Pomeranians, a Maltese, and two poodles (!).

It is stated that they one and all obtained a prize. Birmingham, obviously, before their following show, had reconsidered the matter, and in 1864 Pomeranians were honoured by having a class of their own, where "Fritz," Mr. Collies' dog, stood first, whilst Mr. R. Dawson's "Smut" stood second.

In 1875, at Manchester (Pomona Palace), Pomeranians were scheduled, and at the Birmingham Show received similar treatment. At the Alexandra Palace Show of December 14-17 a class was given for white Pomeranians only.

During the next few years Pomeranians were classed, either without definition or as white or white-and-black, and once or twice as "white and any other colour."

Then at the Colchester Show of 1882, held at the Skating Rink on February 8 and 9, the Pomeranian "Patrick" was first in a "Any other variety over 30 lb." class! At the Maidstone Show of that year the Pomeranian and Maltese shared a class together. Stranger still, perhaps, at York, the following year, where the Pomeranians and poodles stood side by side and competed with each other. At Henley-on-Thames that same year this absurd arrangement was continued. Then Hull, in 1884, put pugs, King Charles or Blenheims, and Pomeranians together.

Manchester in 1890, with a total entry of 1,404 head, had no class for poms, nor one for "any other variety," and Liverpool Show was also without them. The Terrier, Fox-terrier, and Toy Dog Club Show at Holborn that year had a class for white Pomeranians, one for puppies, and one for "other than white," Miss Hamilton

taking all the prizes in the white and puppy classes. The Agricultural Hall Show, April 15-18, left the breed out; whilst the Pug-dog, Toys, Spaniel, and Poodle Club's sixth show gave a class for Pomeranians not to exceed 10 lb.

In 1891, at Croft's Dog Show, the Pomeranian for the first time appeared in force in four classes. In the "open white dogs" her Majesty Queen Victoria shared the honour of first prize with Mr. E. Hutton, her Majesty showing "Gena" and Mr. E. Hutton "Roy," Miss Hamilton coming second. In bitches this lady was first and third, and in puppies first, but there appears to have been no other entry. At Bath that same year Miss Hamilton won all the prizes except the second in the dog class, which went to the Hon. Mrs. C. Dutton. The Kennel Club Show at the Agricultural Hall gave a class for white, one for black, and one for any other colour than black or white, also a puppy class. In the "any other colour than black or white," her Majesty the Queen won all the prizes, first, second, and third respectively with "Windsor Marco," "Lenda," and "Nino."

Cruft's in 1892 once again gave a lead: a challenge class, an open for blacks, an open for whites, a class for bitches, a class for any other colour, and a puppy class. Her Majesty the Queen and Miss Hamilton took the greater number of awards.

Sharing the honours appears to have become fashionable, for here are the results:

#### Challenge:

1st, Miss Hamilton's "Rob of Rozelle."

#### Open Black:

1st, Mrs. E. J. Thomas's "Black Boy."

2nd, Mr. F. Crang's "Nubian Prince."

Equal (Mrs. J. Lynn's "Commodore Nut."

3rd (Mrs. J. Lynn's "Peri."

#### Dogs:

1st, Miss Hamilton's "Edelmann of Rozelle."

2nd, Miss Hamilton's "Bettleman of Rozelle."

3rd, Miss Hamilton's "Fürst II of Rozelle."

#### Bitches:

1st, Miss Hamilton's "Königin of Rozelle."

2nd, Mr. Whittle's "Blanche of Hayes."

#### Any other colour:

1st, Her Majesty's "Fluffy."

2nd, Mrs. Lynn's "Bouton d'Or."

3rd, Her Majesty's "Beppo."

#### Puppies:

Equal 1st, { Miss Hamilton's "Königin of Rozelle."  
                  { Mr. F. Crang's "Nubian Prince."

Equal 2nd, { Her Majesty's "Lulu."  
                  { Mrs. Lynn's "Peri."

Equal 3rd, { Her Majesty's "Nino."  
                  { Mrs. Lynn's "Bouton d'Or."

At Cruft's Show the following year "equals" occurred again, the classes were well supported, and her Majesty and Miss Hamilton were the leading winners. Such were the early years of Pomeranian history.

An increase of Pomeranian classes followed. Cruft's now gave: Open Black; Open White; Toy Blacks (under 7 lb.); Any Other Colour (under 7 lb.); Limit Black; White Dogs; Bitches; Any Other Colour. And so the breed condemned by Edwards in 1800, ridiculed by Taplin in 1803, attacked by Mr. Shaw and all the writers of his time as "utterly useless," "brainless," and even "dangerous," from sheer merit developed and became famous. But prejudice dies hard. During a mad-dog scare in New York, it being officially believed that Pomeranian-type dogs were responsible for the disease, any dog in any way resembling a Pomeranian was slaughtered. Probably the sharp-pointed muzzle suggested that the disease was more likely to be present in a Pomeranian to the official mind; but every now and again in the history of the Pomeranian we see a flicker of sympathy for so delightful a little dog. For after all, did not Bardie have her "Pomyoleanian" dog "yite" except for his collar, which was "boo."<sup>1</sup>

The illustrations show "Belper" and "Blossom," two of the lupino Pomeranians used to obtain the orange colour. Also Champion "Mars" (the first orange to win a championship), Ch. "Mite," and Ch. "Atom," the property of Mrs. Parker, of The Bungalow, Manor Road, Richmond, Surrey. (See Plate 140.)

The show points to-day are:

Head wedge-shaped. Skull slightly flat, large in proportion to muzzle. Neck short. Back short. Body compact; barrel well rounded. Chest proportionately deep, not too wide. Fore legs well feathered, straight, length medium. Shoulders clean and well laid back. Hind legs and thighs well feathered down to hocks. Bone fine. Feet small, compact. Ears small, not too wide apart, carried erect like fox. Eyes dark, medium in size, not full nor set too wide apart. Nose black, in white, orange, shaded sables; in other colours self; never white or parti-coloured. Black rims round eyes in white, orange, sable-shaded, and cream. Coat: hair on head and face smooth and short; on body a soft, fluffy undercoat, and long overcoat of perfectly straight, harsh hair; very abundant round neck and forepart of shoulders, forming a frill of profuse, standing-off, straight hair, extending over the shoulders. The hind quarters clad with long hair or feathering from top of rump to hocks. Colours: all whole colours, free from back or white shadings. Whites free from any other colour. Weight various—the smaller the better; some weigh as little as 3½ lb. For full details see Appendix XXV.

### THE ELKHOUND

The elkhound is a member of the Spitz family, known in Norway and Sweden as Norrlandsk Spets, Grahund, Jamthund, and den Graa Dyrehund. In this country he has always gone under the name at the head of this section, from the

<sup>1</sup> "Pomyoleanian dog is yite, yite all over, 'sept his collar, and his collar's boo. And he's gold hair that long, Patty, ever so much longer than yours. And he yun yound and yound, he does. Oh, I do yant my Pomyoleanian dog." (R. D. Blackmore, "The Maid of Sker," 1873.)



fact that he was used in hunting the elk. He is still used, but to a modified extent, since restrictions are now placed upon the number of elk that may be killed. As the national breed of the two countries, when the Norwegian Kennel Club held its first show in 1898, the elkhound was selected to appear upon its medallion. We read that the elkhound was first introduced by Mr. Alfred Strutt, special artist with the Prince of Wales (later Edward VII), on his visit to Norway.

For the last quarter of a century fugitive specimens have appeared on the British show bench. Lady Cathcart exhibited good examples and later Major Hicks-Beach led in the show ring. Just before the war Mrs. George Powell came to the front, and her Champion "Woden," born in 1915, did most of the winning as soon as affairs became normal. Increasing attention to the breed led to the formation of the British Elkhound Society in 1923, with Lady Irwin (then Lady Dorothy Wood) as President, and Lieut.-Colonel G. J. Scovell as the very capable Hon. Secretary. Shortly before this date, Colonel Scovell paid a visit to Norway, and acquired some dogs from Veterinary Surgeon Hensen of Ski, whose strain is distinguished by the affix "av Glitre." Other prominent exhibitors at that time were Mrs. Soames, Mrs. A. Lombe, Commander R. F. Eyre, Mrs. A. Evans, Mrs. Powell, Lieut.-Colonel P. L. Reid, Mrs. Waterhouse, Mr. W. F. Holmes, who imported largely from Sweden as well as Norway (the owner of the bitch "Gaupa av Glitre," the champion of Norway for her sex in 1923-24, the dam of the champion dog of Norway for 1924-5, and of Mr. Hopkinson's dog, Ch. "Rugg av Glitre"), Mr. W. Stuart Thompson, who has some of the purest of the original strain of elkhounds existing. I give his opinions later.

The elkhound is smaller than he looks to be in the published photographs, about 50 lb. for dogs and 45 lb. for bitches approaching the maximum. He is very sturdily built, however, having a considerable girth, and if shown with any fat on him he is too rotund for British tastes. The back is short, the legs of medium length, and the wedge-shaped head denotes intelligence. The ears are erect, and the tail curls tightly over the back. The colour is pleasing, being in the various shades of grey, with black ends to the outer hairs. Black markings are objectionable, and wholly black, brown, or white are not admissible.

The worst fault noticeable in British dogs is nervousness, many of the exhibits refusing to do themselves justice in the ring. They must be treated as sporting dogs and not as pets, and should be put down hard and in muscular condition. The hocks, placed rather high, are not much bent. The forelegs, of course, should be perfectly straight.

In a letter to me, Mr. W. Stuart Thompson writes that "Odin"<sup>1</sup> is of the very purest elkhound blood, his ancestors having been imported into England in the eighties. "It is doubtful," he writes, "if there is any really pure blood left in Norway or Sweden," and recent importations show signs of an out-cross.

"Odin's" line is through Major Hicks-Beach's Champion "King," "Jaeger," "Blue Bell," Ch. "Woden," and "Wolfram."

"The resemblance of their progeny is remarkable, and without exception all possess the correct elkhound tail, tightly twisted over the centre of the back, which the Scandinavians seem to have lost entirely now, the tail being half curled, low down, and on one side, and seems to imply a continual struggle for supremacy between

<sup>1</sup> See Plates 59 and 60, also as a puppy on Plate 142.

the original triumphant corkscrew and a straight downward tail; the heads, too, are coarser than our originals."

In reply to questions as to the colour of puppies, Mr. Stuart Thompson informs me that the puppies are black at birth, with the exception of shoulder markings, which are often plainly visible; whilst on the forelegs some are smutty down to their toes, gradually getting lighter as they grow older. Very little change takes place, except that the expansion or spreading of the fur brings out the variations of shadings which are so attractive.

When quite young, the eyes are blue, afterwards turning to brown. Dark eyes are much sought after, but, like black ears, which occur in a few specimens, this is a preference only and not a "point." In Mr. Stuart Thompson's opinion, if the eyes are too dark they look dull and lack fire and intelligence. At night-time the eyes are often a luminous green.

In respect to the under-colouring, "it is almost white or chinchilla, the ends of the hair only being black. After a moult they are always much lighter till the new top coat is fully grown. Till about three months old the top of the head is nearly always a light fawn, which disappears with the puppy fluff." As to the ears, "when born, the ears are drooping, becoming erect between two and six months old. During teething they are often alternately one up and one down."

In reference to curl of tail, Mr. Stuart Thompson found that in his strain "the tails begin to curl upwards as soon as they can crawl."

About 50 per cent. have dew-claws—some have double ones.

"As puppies they are often described as 'Teddy-bears,' which they much resemble. At three months they are often miniature specimens of the finished type, but from six to twelve months go through the 'awkward stage' before finally making up. It is generally agreed that they are not fully developed till about three years old."

He adds: "They are all delightful companions, very affectionate and gentle, and love children. They are all great ratters, good sportsmen generally, and can be trained to almost anything. They have keen sight and scent, and a soft mouth. I have known them carry an egg a long distance without marking it.

"They have a long memory for their first owners. On two occasions where I have sent puppies away at ten weeks old, and did not see them for nearly a year after, they recognised me at once, and stuck to me as long as I was there, in preference to their owners."

The elkhound in Plates 59 and 60 is the well-known dog "Odin Woodbythii," the property of and bred by Mr. W. Stuart Thompson, Woodbyth, Dogsthorpe, Peterborough. Winner in 1924: L.K.A., third junior; Harrogate, second open; Peterborough, second open; Birmingham, first junior, second limit, second open, and reserve challenge certificate. 1925: Cruft's, first junior, first special graduate, first limit, first open, and challenge certificate; L.K.A., second limit, second open, and reserve challenge certificate; Ranelagh, second limit, third open; Peterborough, first open; Edinburgh, second open and reserve challenge certificate; Metropolitan and Essex, third limit, third open.

The show points are as follows:

Head, capacious, deep, wedge-shaped; moderately broad between ears and



bevelled, the skull not domed. Stop well defined, not too pronounced ; well filled out under eyes, the muzzle of medium length tapering to nose. Nostrils well developed, project slightly over upper lip. Lips meet closely, without overlapping. Jaws strong, teeth level ; canines strong. Ears very mobile at base, of medium size, erect, graduating to a point, carried erect, though capable of being lowered backward when expressing affection and during sleep. Eyes medium size, the iris preferably dark and not prominent ; not set far apart, but have a forward outlook. The oblique position, which gives a wolfish expression, not desirable. Neck powerful, full-throated, proportionate. Body short in the couplings, back wide and straight. Chest rather wide and deep with well-rounded ribs. Loins muscular ; shoulders sloping. Fore legs of medium length, set well back at elbow, strong, straight, and of good bone. Hind legs well rounded at stifle ; the sinewy hocks somewhat high rather than much let down, and not greatly bent. The feet compact, oval in shape, well padded, the toe-nails firm, hard, and prominent. Tail medium length (when untwisted should reach to hock), curling tightly over back, not carried too much to one side or the other, furnished with abundant growth of bristling, out-standing hair, but without "brush." Coat short, close, smooth on head and legs ; on body deep, of medium length and crisp, made of thick, woolly undercoat with harsh hair growing through it, forming the outer coat, standing straight away from body with an even surface quite free from curl. About neck and front part of chest the coat is longer, forming a sort of frill. Colour grey of various shades, with black ends to longer covering hair, light grey, wolf-grey, elk-grey, and brownish grey. A grey with definite black markings is objectionable. A wholly black, brown, or white dog is not permissible. On back and haunches, surface tips of the long hair are darker than at root. The ears may be black. Chest, underparts, and legs light in colour, inclining to silver white. Pronounced dark markings on legs and paws from knee downwards considered a blemish.

#### THE KEESHOND

The keeshond is the well-known Dutch dog, often seen on the barges, running up and down from bow to stern and back, barking. In the towns and villages of Holland he is a very important person, and many of the Dutch hotels have their keeshond. It is indeed the variety Pomeranian before taken in hand by fanciers to develop coat, obtain new colours, and reduce size. The Swedish elkhound is also a near relative, to which the keeshond bears a considerable superficial resemblance.

Keeshonds are loyal, hardy, and attractive. We are told that they have the habit of lying in a corner of the room, watching with one eye open, never interfering, but always on the alert to spring up if needed. At night the keeshond, like its distant relative the Alsatian, is very much awake.

Mrs. G. Wingfield Digby, one of the founders of the breed, writes that the word "keeshond" means "a matey dog"—a "good-fellow dog." "We bought two from a delightful old barge captain with gold rings in his ears."

The Club was formed on October 23, 1925, at Sherborne Castle, Dorset, and named the "Dutch Barge Dog Club," but later the name was changed. In Holland the Dutch Keeshond Club looks after the interest of the breed. No other colour but



the wolf-grey is recognised by that Club. Puppies at birth are black or black-grey. The show points are :

Head wedge-shaped, foxy, little spot ; muzzle short, proportionate, must not be too blunt, slightly bent ; eyes oblong (must not be too large), preferred dark ; ears small, erect, set high. Neck, length moderate, back short, slightly higher in front ; straight chest fairly deep but not over-wide ; barrel well rounded. Legs : fore legs medium length, powerful, straight. Feet small, compact. Fore legs and thighs well feathered. Coat silky, hair on head and face smooth and short. Body : soft fluffy undercoat and long overcoat of straight harsh hair, very abundant round neck and fore part of shoulders, forming frill of standing-off straight hair, extending over shoulders. Hind quarters feathered from top of rump to hocks. Colour : silver-grey with black pointed hairs. Colour lighter round eyes, legs, belly, and tail. Some have black running down from chest. Tail slightly curled, rather long, set high, turned over back. Height at shoulders (about) 18 to 20 inches. Weight about 40 lb. (dog).

The illustration is of "Bartel van Zaandam," the property of Mrs. Wingfield Digby, Sherborne Castle, Dorset.

The Club advises, as the British standard has only recently been fixed, to avoid characters varying from the above, and also tails held too high, or not on back, or held down by side ; also curly coats, light eyes, light noses or lips, or apple-heads or white spots. (See Plate 60.)

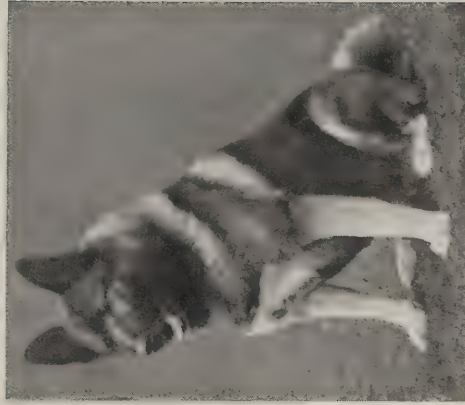


(Above) left. THE NEWFOUNDLAND DOG, "ORIGINAL BREED"; right. POODLE AND BULLDOG. (Below) left. THE BOARHOUND OF GERMANY; right. ESQUIMAUX DOG KEPT IN THE PRINCES STREET GARDENS, EDINBURGH. From Colonel H. Smith, "Jardine's Naturalists' Library" (1843).



THE GREENLAND DOG, BY REINAGLE. From Taplin's "Sportsman's Cabinet" (1803).





(Above) left, SAMOYED CH. "ANTARCTIC BRU." The property of Mrs. Kilburn Scott; right, NORWEGIAN DOG "ROLFE." From "The Queen's Dogs," December 25, 1891. (Below) left, SAMOYED TEAM IN HARNESS. Leading dogs: "Starsun Bru" and "Nim of Farmingham"; behind, "Hibeda" and "Tula of Farmingham"; last, Ch. "Polar Light of Farmingham." The property of Mrs. Kilburn Scott; right, ELKHOUND "ODIN WOODYTHIL." The property of Mr. W. Stuart Thompson.



(Above) ELKHOUND "ODIN WOODBYTHII," *The property of Mr. W. Stuart Thompson ;* (Below) KEESHOND.  
"BARTEL VAN ZAANDAM." *The property of Major and Mrs. Wingfield Digby.* [160d

## CHAPTER III

### GREYHOUNDS

NUMBER 31 of the original Canute Laws, written in Danish and enacted in a Parliament held at Winchester in 1016, and given by John Manwood in his "Laws of the Forest" (1598 and 1615), states that :

"No mean person may keepe any greyhounds, but freemen may keepe greyhounds [greihounds], so that their knees be cut before the verderors of the forest, and without cutting of their knees also, if he does abide 10 miles from the bounds of the forest. But if they doe come any nearer to the forest, they shall pay 12 pence for every mile ; but if the greyhound bee found within the forest, the master or owner of the dog shall forfeit the dog and ten shillings to the King."

Turberville, about 1611, in his observations on coursing, writes :

"If the greyhounds be but yonge or slow, you may course with a lease at one hare, but that is seldom seen, and a brase of dogges is ynow for such a poore beaste.

"It is a galant sport to see how the hare will turn round to save herself out of the dogge's mouth, so that sometimes when you think that your greyhound doth as it were, gape to take her, she will turn and cast them a good way behinde her, and so to save herself by turning, wrenching, and winding."

So in Turberville's time three dogs were used, but a brace was considered enough for such a "poore beaste."

Markham, in his "Country Contentments" of 1615, describes hunting as "a curious search or conquest of one Beast over an other, persued by a natural instinct of emnitie, and accomplished by the diversities and distinction of smells onelie where in nature equallie dividing her cunning giveth both to the offender, and offended strange knowledge both of offence and safety, in a recreation in which is to be seen the wonderful power of God, in his creatures, and how far rage and pollicie can prevaile against innocence and wisdom."

He suggests that the main advantages of hare hunting are the parts of the creature's body thus obtained, for "though the beast is but little, yet are the members worth enjoyment, as the flesh that is good for all manner of fluxes, the braines is good to make children breed their teeth with ease, the wool excellent to stench blood, the Gall Sovereigne for sore eies, the blood which kill rume worms, and the stifling bone which, being worne, taketh away the paine of Crampe, with many other good things besides."

He writes that whilst it is an opinion amongst many men that a greyhound bitch will ever beat a greyhound dog, by reason of her great nimbleness, speed, and agility, that this is not correct, for a good dog will always beat a good bitch, and adds that "the most raw-boned, loose-made, generally unknit are ever likely to make the best Dogges and most shapely."

He gives some coursing rules that not more than one brace of greyhounds were to course a hare at one instant. "That the hare is to have 12 score lawe," and that "if any man shall ride over a Dogge and overthrow him in the course (though the Dogge were the worse dog in his opinion) yet the party for the offence shall either receive the disgrace of the field or pay the wager, for betweene the parties it shall be adjudged no course."

In 1655 Savary of Caen published a Latin poem on hare hunting entitled



"Album Dianæ Leporicidæ, sive Venationis Leporinæ leges," a work of great rarity but containing little of any interest. The writer appears to have had a dislike to the *Canis gallicus*. He treats the greyhound and coursing as Somerville did later.

The etymology of the word "greyhound" has been much disputed. Some suppose it to be derived from Graius (Grecian), because the dog was in high esteem among the Greeks! Caius regards the name as implying rank among its race. Others refer it to the Dutch *grüss-hund*, from *grypen* "to grip."

Whitaker draws the name from the ancient British *grech* or *greg*, "a dog," and this last may be the true origin, though Mr. Bell seems to think that the term applies to the prevailing colour of the ancient breed. There is no evidence that the prevailing colour was grey, but more reason to believe that it was of a sandy red, brindled, or pale yellow, and white.

Other authorities believe that the name implies Gallic hound, and that the greyhound originated in Gaul, and consider that it means *gradus* in Latin, "degree," because it stood so well ahead of the other dogs as an animal of swiftness. To support this contention we have Sir David Lindsay in his "The Complaint of the King's Auld Hound, Bagsche," writing that "though ye stand in the highest gree"; and we find others of those early days using the word "gre" to represent "degree." In Scotland "to bear the gree" means to be the victor above others. We find that it is also suggested that the word signifies Brock the Badger, or "greve," as it was at one time called. Sir Walter Scott in "Guy Mannering" gives "grews"; and Golding in his translation of Ovid gives "grewnde" that "course the sillie hare."

As seen from the Laws of Canute, no one below the degree of a gentleman was allowed to keep a greyhound, which may have led, perhaps, to a corruption of the word "great." People would link high power with the dog—the dog kept by the "great," the people of degree! We have further proof of the supposed superiority of a greyhound over most other breeds, for in the Welsh laws of Howel Dda (who died A.D. 948) the King's greyhound was valued at six score pence, whilst later in the Code of A.D. 1080 and in the Dimetian Code of 1180 the greyhound was valued at half the value of the buckhound, which was priced higher than any other.

There is, however, another possible explanation. At one time a variety of fast running dogs were termed "gazeounds," because they followed entirely by sight. It is conceivable that some people would get this name incorrectly and speak of it as "grazehound," instead of "gazehound."

As Mr. Rawdon Lee points out, it is very difficult to say whether the earliest dogs hunted by sight or scent; but certainly in historical times most of the Canidæ hunted by scent, and to hunt by sight was considered to be exceptional.

Buffon considered the greyhound to be descended from the French *mâtin*, but there appears to be no foundation for this.

The earliest records of dogs show greyhound-type animals, either greyhounds as they are to-day or dogs of Saluki character, which of course is very similar. It is quite possible that from the western portion of Asia, bordering on the Caspian Sea, as the Scythian tribes pushed their way toward Europe, they brought with them the greyhound-type dog. It is one of those things of the past which can never be satisfactorily solved.

The group is very defined. They are all long backed, somewhat high on the leg, with remarkable muscular development, and have a typical, somewhat narrow head. Three if not four varieties appear to have long existed: (1) the wire-haired, more or less rough in coat, found mainly in Tartary and East Russia; (2) a silky-haired, that of Natolia, Persia, and ancient Egypt; (3) a rough-haired and a smooth-haired breed, the deerhound and the greyhound.

We have evidence that greyhounds were kept in the Anglo-Saxon kennels in the days of Elfric, Duke of Mercia, and a ninth-century manuscript shows a Saxon chieftain and his huntsman, attended by a brace of greyhounds.

Illustrations in Count Gaston de Foix's "*Livre de Chasse*" of 1387 show greyhounds of remarkable quality, and it is quite possible, as various writers have stated, that some of these dogs were introduced from France or from Greece, Italy, and India to improve the type existing on these islands.

Some of the ancient Egyptian greyhounds were smooth with bushy tails, as the Bedawin greyhounds of Akaba, the Saluki; whilst in Roumelia there existed a variety with smooth hair, but with long ears like those of the spaniel.

It has been suggested that the most ancient race was of a yellow colour and was wire-haired with short upright ears, whilst Major Topham, in Egan's "*Sporting Anecdotes*," considers the wire-haired greyhound, later known as the Scottish greyhound, and a close relative to the deerhound, to be evolved partly from the wolf. He states that as the wolf remained long in the wolds of Yorkshire, where the last in England were destroyed, the long-haired, curly-tailed greyhounds, formerly the common breed of Yorkshire, "were of this mixed design."

Colonel H. Smith, however, whose writings on dogs in "*Jardine's Natural History*" are so well known, considers that the gazehound was the smooth greyhound. This may be so, but it is strange if such was the case that Dr. Caius in 1570 and Bewick in 1790 should both give a short and separate account of a variety known as the gazehound as well as describing the greyhound.

It is an interesting fact that of all breeds the greyhound has altered least of any, in the many hundreds of years since it was first depicted and recognisable. As a variety they have always been considered of considerable importance and value. They appear, as we have seen, on the earliest records of the Tombs of Egypt and on Assyrian monuments.

Old Persian manuscripts and works of art show the type, and Roman and Greek writers give details as to hunting the hare with these fleet-footed hounds.

The description given by Ovid (63 B.C.-A.D. 17), as translated by Dryden, scarcely needs repetition:

"As when the impatient greyhound, slipped from far,  
Bounds o'er the glade to course the fearful hare,  
She in her speed does all her safety lie.  
And he with double speed pursues his prey,  
O'erruns her at the sitting turns; but licks  
His chops in vain; yet blows upon the flix.  
She seeks the shelter which the neighbouring covert gives,  
And, gaining it, she doubts if yet she lives."

Dr. Caius, in his "*British Dogs*," writes that "the Leporarius is so called from its speed: its value and its use are found in the hunting of hares. Although in catching



fallow deer, stags, roebucks, foxes, etc., they excel in strength and traditional speed, their excellence varies with temperament and plumpness or slimmess of body. For there is a thin sort comprising a larger and a smaller variety; and some have smooth hair. The larger the prey the larger the animal we select for it."

Gesner in his work shows a picture of a greyhound, probably the sketch sent by Dr. Caius with his letter on British dogs.

The popularity of this variety of dog is partly ascribed to the remarkable build, its fine lines, and it is doubtful if there can be anything more handsome than a brace of well-built dogs on the leash, looking out for the hare. This and its astonishing activity and muscular fitness made it a great favourite amongst those people who desired to add to the appearance of splendour with which they were surrounded.

For somewhat similar reasons the greyhound was chosen by artists as suitable to be included in the designs on vases, monuments, and so forth. It gave their work a finish that no other dog was able to supply. Ancient Greek cameos show greyhounds coursing stags and other game, and one depicting a greyhound in the very act of seizing a hare. Amongst the Greek terra-cotta vases in the British Museum can be seen several excellent representations of greyhounds of various centuries before Christ.

Albert Dürer, in the earlier part of the fifteenth century, painted St. Hubert accompanied by several dogs, one being a typical greyhound; whilst in the vision of St. Eustace, painted by Vittore Pisano, about 1450, St. Eustace is seen with a pair of fine greyhounds, one being an animal of remarkable beauty. We learn from mythology that "Cephalus," the first greyhound, was formed by Vulcan. He fashioned it in Monesian brass and, well satisfied and liking its shape, then quickened it with a soul. Vulcan gave the dog to Jupiter, who gave him to Europa, who gave him to Minos, who gave him to Procris, and Procris to Cephalus. We read this dog "had a nature so irresistible that he overtook all that he hunted, like the Teumesian fox, and Jupiter, to avoid 'confusion,' then turned both these 'incomprehensible' beasts into stone"! We are told, however, that it was from this dog that the great fighting dogs and shepherd's dogs known as the Molossus dogs were formed to defend the sheep from wolves and thieves.

The name of the now congested shipping area known as "the Isle of Dogs," converted before 1803 to a commercial reservoir for the West-India shipping, is said to have originated as the receptacle for the greyhounds and spaniels of Edward III; but there is also another version as to the origin of the name, that of a murder perpetrated on the island and the part a dog played.<sup>1</sup>

Certainly at one time the island was for kennelling the King's dogs, to be used in the forest of Epping, the business of coursing then principally appertaining to deer. Queen Elizabeth, who took a great interest in the sport, may have suggested to the Duke of Norfolk the need for the enforcement of rules in respect to the coursing of hares. The only rules at that time were those published by Gervaise Markham, and hare coursing was carried on in many and various ways.

<sup>1</sup> Stow's "Survey of the Cities of London and Westminster" (1598): "A waterman carried a man to the Isle, and there murdered him. The man's dog refused to leave his master, until hunger forced him many times, to swim the Thames to Greenwich. This being noticed by the watermen there, they one day followed the dog back, thus finding the dead body." The murderer, we read, was detected by the dog, who growled at him and, confessing, was condemned and executed.



The coursing of deer known as "paddock coursing" was at that time the more important sport. It took place on a ground specially prepared for the purpose, about a mile in length and a quarter of a mile in breadth, fenced in with a wall or pales. At the far end of this ground was a broader portion, so that it might the better accommodate the company seeing the match. At the narrow end stood the dog-house to enclose and contain dogs who were engaged to run in the match, and along the mile-course were placed posts at intervals, the first 160 yards distant from the dog-house and termed the "law post," the second at  $\frac{1}{4}$  mile from the dog-house, and the third at  $\frac{1}{2}$  mile. The fourth and last post was termed the "pinching post." Farther on, a ditch was constructed to receive the deer, and prevent their being further pursued by the greyhounds. Here close by were the elevated seats for those previously selected as judges to decide the wagers.

Deer and fox coursing in these paddocks were the sport at the time, though the coursing of hares was carried on to some extent. Three, four, or more greyhounds were set after one or more hares, and the whole proceeding was far more of a slaughter than the working of dogs, as it is to-day.

But a change came when the Duke of Norfolk drew up his coursing rules (given in full on page 183). In these he laid down that a hare was never to be coursed with more than a brace of greyhounds, nor to be killed on her seat, for the hare-finder was required to give her three "*so-ho's*" before he put her from her form. Apart from sending her off without panic, the dogs had their attention attracted to see her go, and so not lose time, in looking round, when given their liberty.

To prevent the mere murdering of hares, which has been practised constantly by allowing the dogs to leap upon the hare as soon as she rose, the Duke of Norfolk desired the quarry to have law of 12 score yards before the greyhounds were loosed, with the proviso that if the distance between the hare and the covert would not admit it without the danger of immediately losing her, the law could be reduced.

To put an end to greyhounds tearing the hare to pieces, and there and then feeding on her (the end to many a course), it was laid down that "he that came in first at the death, took up the hare, saved her from being torn, cherished the dogs and cleansed their mouths from the fleck, was allowed to retain the hare for his trouble."

In finding the hare pointers or spaniels were used, and, as often as not, when one of these finders made a point, or suggested the presence of the quarry, the greyhounds were uncoupled. Then off would go the hare with two, three, or four greyhounds, and the badly trained pointer or setter in pursuit. The latter entering wholeheartedly into the sport would cause considerable amusement by its efforts, and somewhat interfere with the coursing proper. The man who slipped the greyhounds was known as the "feuterer."

As the Duke of Norfolk's rules were generally adopted, coursing lost its rough-and-ready atmosphere, and became a finer sport, in which the working powers of the greyhounds were given full opportunity.

In 1776 the Earl of Orford instituted the famous Swaffham Coursing Society, whose members were confined in number to the letters of the alphabet. There was no "I," and so the membership stood at 25. By the rules of this society the matched dogs of each member had to bear a name beginning with the

initial annexed to the owner's name as a member of the club. This club was very successful.

The rules and regulations, one of which is given below, were the type of rules of all clubs more or less. The subscription was moderate, each member to pay annually in November a sum of £1 1s. to the Treasurer to defray the expenses of the society; and half a guinea in February, a subscription to a fund for the purchase of the cup to be run for in the November following.

There were also various monetary fines for not attending meetings or for breaking rules.

The *Society* then consisted of:

Lady Patroness, . . . .	The Marchioness of Townshend,
Vice-Patroness, . . . .	The Countess of Cholmondeley,
Assistant Vice-Patroness, . .	Mrs. Coke, and the
Earl of Monrath, . . . .	Honorary member,

who had the liberty to use any letter or colour he might choose.

For members' letters and colours in the year 1798, see p. 184.

Lord Orford's coursing enthusiasm was of such a kind that Taplin writes:

"Nothing in art or science, nothing in mental or even in manual labour, was ever achieved of superior excellence, without that ardent zeal, that impetuous sense of eager avidity which to the cold, inanimate, and unimpassioned, bears the appearance, and sometimes the unqualified accusation of insanity.

"When a monarch of this country once received the news of a most heroic action maintained against one of his own fleets, and seemed considerably chagrined at the result; the then Lord of the Admiralty endeavoured to qualify and soften down the matter, by assuring the King that the commander of the enemy's fleet was mad.

"The reply came quickly.

"'Mad!' ejaculated his Royal Majesty—'would he were mad enough to bite one of my admirals.'"

After writing this, Taplin tells us that Lord Orford had so much the habit of putting his heart and soul into any hobby he took up that greyhounds at that time were his very life. Indeed, so interested was he that sometimes he had as many as fifty brace, and being afraid that he might lose a good dog, nothing would persuade him to part with a puppy until it had been carefully tried. He attempted endless experiments in training and in breeding.

To improve the blood, he attempted every conceivable type of cross which had anything like a greyhound about it, including English lurcher and Italian greyhound, and eventually, not satisfied with the results of these crosses, he came to the conclusion that a bulldog cross would bring something unusually good, and though this new idea was looked at askance and caused considerable amusement, his lordship persevered. It took Lord Orford seven generations before he obtained by this cross the finest greyhounds of the day, dogs with "small ears, rat-tails, and skins almost without hair, together with that innate courage . . . rather to die than relinquish the chase." We read that some of these greyhounds had the tendency to run by nose, but this fault was soon eradicated.

But it was not altogether Lord Orford's coursing enthusiasm which the public



considered mad. Amongst other experiments he had at one time driven four red deer (stags) in a phaeton, instead of horses, and it might have ended very seriously, for on one memorable day, whilst driving to Newmarket, a pack of hounds crossed the road in his rear, and, scenting the deer, turned at once after the carriage and its strange four-in-hand. A new kind of chase commenced, the novelty of the scene was beyond description, and in vain did his lordship exert all his charioteering skill. Terrified by the cries of the hounds running breast-high, off went the deer with the "celerity of a whirlwind," dragging the vehicle behind them, faster than it had ever travelled before. We are told that the carriage nearly shook to pieces during the great race! It was fortunate for all concerned that the deer, accustomed to being driven into the Ram Inn at Newmarket, on reaching that inn turned into the yard, post-haste, to the surprise of ostlers and stable-boys.

What exactly happened next, history does not relate, but somehow or other the deer found themselves in a large barn, huddled up together with the phaeton and his lordship, just as the hounds in full cry appeared at the gate.

I believe this adventure ended for good his lordship's deer-driving experiments, but his keen interest in coursing continued to the very end of his life. Often mounted on the broad back of a stumpy piebald pony, he would appear on the scenes, however bleak the day. Without his great-coat or gloves, and with a cocked hat fiercely perched on his head, and face and hands crimson with cold, he would canter up, to the astonishment and, probably, the admiration of the crowd.

Gradually his lordship's mind became unhinged, and it was necessary to confine him to his room. Coursing meetings saw him no longer, and they were no longer quite the same. There is something very fine but sad in what follows. It happened to be a day when his lordship's favourite old bitch "Czarina" was to run in a match of more than usual importance, and a crowd was collected waiting the start. Then all at once, to their surprise, his lordship appeared galloping on his piebald pony as fast as the pony could put his short legs to the ground.

It was perfectly clear to all those who knew the situation that his lordship had escaped out of his room, quickly saddled his favourite mount, and had come as fast as horse-flesh could travel. We read that his friends tried to persuade him to go back to the house, but to their entreaties he turned a deaf ear, and galloping behind "Czarina," saw her win the trial. Then, as if satisfied with mutual victory, he suddenly fell from his pony on to his head, and died.

After Lord Orford's death it was agreed to purchase a silver cup of 25 guineas value, to be run for in November of every year as a commemoration of respect to the memory of the founder, and this was the first cup in the coursing world. It was won first by a Mr. Woodley.

Lord Rivers took Lord Orford's place in the coursing world. The celebrity of the first club, the Swaffham Coursing Club, encouraged similar meetings, and associations, institutions, and establishments were started elsewhere. Amongst the most famous was perhaps the Ashdown Park meeting at Lambourn in Berkshire, held at the Red Lion Inn annually on the second Monday in November, instituted and established in 1780 by Lord Craven, a friend of the late Lord Orford, in co-operation with Lord Ashbrook and Lord Sefton. The society consisted of 30 members, and from rules 1, 2, and 12, according to Taplin, it appears that the club was run on



somewhat original lines. Goodlake, in his "Coursing Manual" of 1828, does not give these rules, but probably, by that time, the club had become more serious and the rules revised. The earlier rules stated that (1) each member was expected to appear at the table in the uniform selected by the patroness, and that the honorary members had permission to wear the uniform also.

(2) That a steward was to be named at each meeting for the meeting next ensuing, by a majority of the members then present; and if the steward so appointed or his deputy failed to attend, he was to forfeit a dozen of port wine for the omission!

Rule (12) laid down that if any gentleman, after judgment had been given, "arraigns the decision or finds fault with the judge," he was to be immersed in a gallon of wine at the pleasure of the subscribers!

The Lady Patronesses consisted of Countess of Sefton, Hon. Mrs. St. John, Hon. Mrs. Maddocks, and Mrs. Pickering.

Following this, of the numerous clubs and societies formed, the most important meetings were those at Newmarket started in 1805.

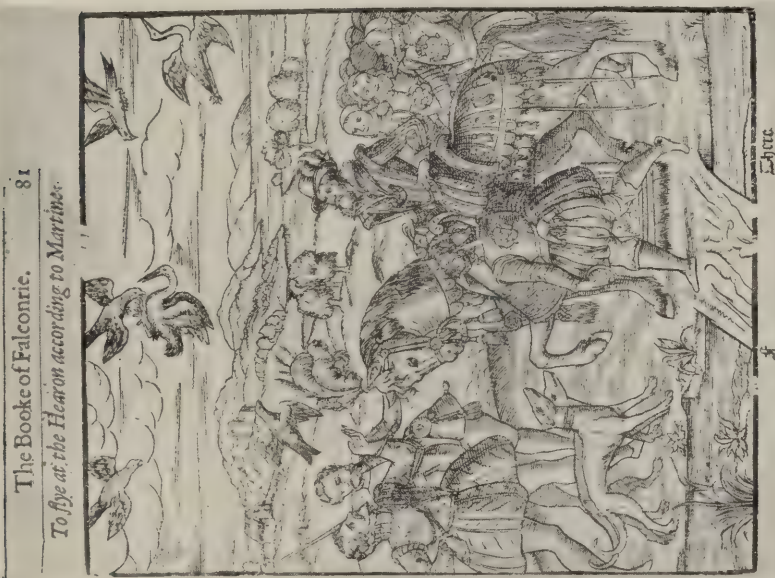
In the meantime the science or organisation of coursing and coursing meetings had made great strides and the pedigrees of the most speedy and celebrated greyhounds were now recorded with as much care and precision as the best-bred horses upon the turf. This seems to have principally originated with Colonel Thornton and Major Topham, both of whom, with some trifling exceptions, for years, had been the sole possessors of the most distinguished of the greyhound breed in the kingdom.

It was at Lord Orford's dispersal sale after his demise that Colonel Thornton bought "Czarina," "Jupiter," and others of the best breeding, giving from 30 to 50 guineas each. It was due to this that the famous coursing blood of Norfolk came to Yorkshire, to improve the type, giving the rougher-haired Yorkshire greyhounds the power to produce smooth-skinned progeny. "Czarina" was purchased by Colonel Thornton with, it is said, the intention of breeding from her in order to improve this strain at Thornville Royal. This "Czarina" had won forty-seven matches without ever having been beaten, but she would not breed until she was thirteen years old, when she brought forth her first family, consisting of eight whelps by the noted dog "Jupiter," who had done so well in Yorkshire.

Colonel Thornton's investment proved good, for two of her puppies were "Claret" and "Young Czarina," both of which challenged all Yorkshire and won; "Claret" was to be the sire of "Snowball" and "Major."

Though hill coursing in Yorkshire was vastly different from that of the flat land of Norfolk, the hares more frequently escaping and sending the dogs tumbling down the slopes, by their quick turns, it is interesting to know that these Norfolk greyhounds showed such exceptional form even under conditions foreign to their education, that the cross with the Norfolk line at once became popular, and was greatly desired by those who wished to breed the very best.

"Snowball" and "Major," both by "Claret," were out, as already stated, of a favourite bitch of Major Topham's, and the latter gentleman sent Colonel Thornton a brace of puppies as a sporting privilege for "the use of the sire." It was indeed a very fortunate episode for Colonel Thornton, for it was one of these puppies that became the famous dog "Major." His full-brother "Snowball" was just as good.



(Left) GREYHOUNDS. From Turberville's "The Booke of Falconrie, or Hawking," (1611), (Right) GREYHOUNDS COURSING. An engraving by Blome, from his "Gentleman's Recreation," (1686), 168a]





CZARINA (and) MARIA,

LORD ORFORD'S "CZARINA." From an engraving in the Rev. William Barker Daniel's "Rural Sports" (1801).





"MAJOR," THE WINNER OF THE THOUSAND GUINEA CHALLENGE ON EPSOM DOWNS. From an engraving by Reinagle in *Taplin's "Sportsman's Cabinet"* (1803).  
1686



*Coursing at Swaffham*



COURSING MEETING ON THE SOUTHDOWNS AT LANGLEY BEACH.—DRAWN ON THE SPOT BY HARRISON WEIR.—(Page 69.)

(Above) COURSING AT SWAFFHAM. From "The Sporting Magazine" 1793. (Below) A SCENE IN THE SOUTHDOWNS, JANUARY 23, 1854. From "The Field" of February 4.



"Snowball" soon made his name, amongst all other achievements, at Malton in 1799, by beating a Scotch greyhound of renown up North, a dog which, having beaten every opponent in Scotland, had a great reputation, winning goodly sums for his backers. We read that "Snowball" was considered the most perfect greyhound ever produced. Certainly he did well. He won four cups, couples, and upwards of thirty matches at Malton and, upon the wolds in Yorkshire, he was never equally faced in the field except by his own blood, the only dog superior in working proving to be his full-brother "Major," the property of Colonel Thornton.

"Snowball," Yorkshire on the dam's side, and just as Norfolk on the sire's side, being, as we know, by "Claret," a son of "Jupiter," proved an astonishing performer on hills, and would race up a long steep hill without appearing to notice that it was a hill at all! We have an example of "Snowball's" powers in the story of the famous course from Flexton Brow. The village stands at the top of a hill, and here the wold starts, after a mile of very steep incline. A hare found near the village was coursed by "Snowball" and his sister and a young dog twelve months old, of some other breed, up the hill to the wold where they coursed her until the hare went down the hill again to the sandy land below. Here, finding the dogs were gaining on her, puss once more went up the hill, and the puppy, thinking it too strenuous, "gave it up" when half-way up. Then back to the wold went the three, the hare, "Snowball," and his sister, the dogs turning puss (so it is said) forty or fifty times. After this long course on the wold, the hare went down the hill once more, and the bitch, exhausted, dropped out, leaving "Snowball" the field, to continue the chase alone. Nothing daunted, he kept to his work, and after a further hard run caught the hare and killed her in the village.

It is stated that the distance taken in a straight line shows that the hare and "Snowball"<sup>1</sup> had run at least four miles, including in this distance the mounting of the hill a mile high twice, and it is little to be wondered at that the story of "'Snowball' and the hare" has passed down in the annals of sporting history as one of the greatest episodes of coursing days.

The remarkable achievement of the "Snowball" family, and of "Major" as a representative of that blood, resulted in a challenge sent by a Mr. Durand (the owner of "Bellissima") that he could produce a greyhound to run any of the "Snowballs" (home and home) for 1,000 guineas.

Colonel Thornton at once accepted the challenge. The meeting was fixed for Friday, March 25, to "play or pay."

Mr. Durand's residence was appointed for this place of meeting, and Epsom as the rendezvous of Colonel Thornton and his friends; but as it was suggested that the curiosity of the multitude, because of the proximity of the metropolis, might prevent a fair trial or interfere with satisfactory sport, Carshalton was chosen as the scene of the contest.

On the day appointed they met on the Sutton Heights about eleven o'clock, and although it appears that certain secrecy had been suggested, yet a large number of carriages and little less than 500 horsemen graced the scene. We are told that it was a fine day, and "the ceremonious congratulations of the morning over," two

<sup>1</sup> Sir Walter Scott eulogised the feats of "Snowball" in a poem, "'Twas when fleet 'Snowball's' head was waxen grey."



brace of greyhounds, adorned with blue and buff sheets, were led from the "chase marine." These were followed by the dog "Major," sheeted in rich buff, bearing on the right side the armorial bearings of the Thornton family, whilst on the left side in letters of gold embroidery the words "'Major' aut ne plus ultra," meaning "Nothing can be greater than 'Major.'"

When stripped, the dog appeared remarkably fine, gay, airy, and in excellent condition, carrying his eleven years with astonishing nonchalance. At that moment, doubtlessly much to the disappointment of the assembly, Mr. Durand came forward and acknowledged that he considered himself beaten, at the same time expressing a wish that the company should not be disappointed, but might be gratified with a sight of "Major's" performance.

A box-hare was then liberated, and we read that "Major" made a most wonderful spring of many yards and killed her in a very handsome style.

A strange and disappointing proceeding—a hare turned out of the confined area of a box on Epsom Downs amidst whiskies, buggies, and gingerbread carts—to afford an exhibition of a famous greyhound's skill.

We read that at that time the similarity in build between a greyhound and a racehorse, and the great speed at which both these animals could travel, had caused frequent conjectures as to their relative powers.

So in the month of December of the year 1800 a match was arranged over Doncaster course for a stake of 100 guineas, between two racehorses and a greyhound, the distance to be four miles. A mare started so that by running the ground she might ensure the wager. After having run one mile out of the four, she was joined by a greyhound bitch, from the side of the course, which entered into the competition with great spirit, and continued to race with the mare, keeping nearly head and head, affording, we read, "an excellent treat to the field by the energetic exertions of each." At passing the distance-post, 5-4 was the betting in favour of the greyhound, but when parallel with the stand, even betting occurred, and we read that any person "might have taken his choice for 5 or 10." The mare, however, had the advantage by a head at the termination.

The race, interesting as it is, was really of no great statistical value, for we feel sure that the greyhound would have no wish to run away from the mare, but only desire to keep by her side. The race merely shows that a greyhound can run as fast as a racehorse.

The "invincible ardour and determined progress of the greyhound," writes Taplin, "cannot be easily restrained by any intervening obstacles." As an example of this he tells us that, when a boy, whilst walking over a field with his uncle, he saw a hare hiding in her form. Not far away was a tempting gap in a hedge leading to a convenient covert, and he was hurriedly sent there to stop the hare if she went that way!

No sooner was the hare put up than, making straight for the gap, without hesitation she passed between his legs. This was bad enough, but worse was to follow, for the greyhound, fully engrossed with the chase and travelling at his utmost speed, instantly followed, passing the same way as the hare! Being decidedly higher on the leg, and bounding along at great speed, his back came into sudden contact with the unfortunate guard. This meeting, at some thirty or forty miles an hour,

sent the guard with an unpleasant feeling of "electrical elevation" 4 to 5 feet above the ground, and before he could recover from the severe pains, and astonishment he had suffered, his infuriated uncle arrived post-haste, only too anxious to give him a thrashing for daring to allow the hare to make her escape. We read he carried out his intentions sufficiently satisfactorily.

Taplin gives further examples of the remarkable keenness of greyhounds, anecdotes then famous, now more or less forgotten. In 1792 a brace of greyhounds, coupled, on seeing a hare, broke from the man leading them, and though obviously seriously inconvenienced by the leash holding them together, did actually course and kill the hare, after a run of three or four miles!

In 1794 a brace of greyhounds ran into each other from opposite directions and with such force that they were both killed on the spot.

There was also a story to show that greyhounds can run considerable distances at full speed—that of a brace of greyhounds in February of 1798 belonging to a gentleman of Carlisle, which coursed a hare from the Swift near the city, and killed her at Clemmell, a distance of seven miles from the start, in remarkably short time. This hare was well known, for she had been coursed frequently, and had always beaten the greyhounds with comparative ease. On being weighed after death she was found to scale 8 lb. 11 oz., proving that light hares are not necessarily the best runners.

There is a rather amusing story of a Mr. Moore, of Windsor, who ordered a greyhound from Yorkshire, which in due course was sent by waggon to London. It arrived safe in Bishopsgate Street, and from thence was conveyed to the "Bell-Savage an Inn upon Ludgate Hill," where it was delivered to the driver of the "Windsor Caravan" and reached its destination in safety.

But after confinement, though every attention in food and family tenderness was given it, the dog, on being allowed liberty about the premises, though fully satisfied and pleased with the fare and the treatment afforded, nevertheless within the next forty-eight hours suddenly took his departure. A few days later Mr. Moore received a letter that the dog had reached the place of his former residence in Yorkshire, though the waggon had not yet returned.

Taplin, also, in giving the history of the greyhound, writes: "The dog of that day which under kings assisted in the sport of hawking, was the long-haired, and somewhat resembled the dogs used by warreners." He also states that "the greyhound then employed was probably larger than even the warren-mongrel, resembling more the shaggy wolf-dog of former times than any sporting dog of the present day"; but this does not seem to be correct, for although some greyhounds might be of such a description, particularly in the North, that we have already seen there is more than ample evidence, that the greyhound in type has been as he is to-day from the very earliest times.

Amongst other greyhound stories are those of Major Osbaldeston's celebrated strain of the "real Yorkshire breed." They were greyhounds *par excellence*, and one of these, his famous dog, "Snail," became the leading dog at the Malton coursing meetings, until his very name became a by-word.

Mr. Heblethwayte, of Burlington, was famous for his dogs, and it is said that he had never deviated from the original stock into any cross whatsoever. It was, however, left to Mr. Hodgson, of Stamford Bridge, in the East Riding of Yorkshire, to



produce a breed which, because of their exceptional merit, surprised the sportsmen of Yorkshire. This stud consisted of three bitches named "The Dents" after family associations, greyhounds remarkable for their coursing.

The Dents are described as having perfectly smooth skins and uncommonly fine and small ears. Their tails were short and curled and their appearance not unlike "a very light, smart rabbit-dog," which means, I presume, a whippet or Italian greyhound. They had qualities which are not usually found together in the breed, for whilst they ran with remarkable fire and speed, yet they were able to turn with the hare, so that they always appeared to be upon their game, rendering their style of killing, we read, "uncommonly great." They were sold for large sums; one of them went to Sir Francis Boynton, Bart., of Burton Agnes; and another to a Mr. Richard Darley, of Aldby Park; the third passed to Major Topham, of The Wold Cottage, and was later the winner of a valuable cup at Malton.

The Dents were of the type described so ably by Dame Berners, who, it is believed, as mentioned elsewhere, obtained the description from earlier writers. Their legs and feet were of exceptional quality. They stood higher than the Derbyshire dogs, whose legs were shorter and stronger and therefore considered better for running up the stony hills typical of that county.

Of the other famous dogs of that time, those bred by a Mr. Swinfen and a Mr. Mundy were distinguished; of these "Old Paramount," the property of the former gentleman, was considered to be the best dog ever known in that part of England.

We read that at Newmarket every jockey liked to possess "a capital galloper of a greyhound," and that many of those bred there were sold for high figures. Many a city man spent his leisure hours following the leash. Of these a Dr. Frampton, known as the "tutelary genius," and a Mr. Clarke, of Vauxhall, entered wholeheartedly into the sport. The latter gentleman sallied out with his "Schoolboy," a dog of great speed, strength, and size; whilst Dr. Frampton brought dogs with him of an entirely different stamp, for he preferred lighter and smaller dogs.

There was a story then of a farmer who, having heard much of a clergyman's greyhounds, arrived one day to tell the reverend gentleman "that if he had a mind to buy the best dog in England," he could supply that need. Later the farmer brought the dog for an experimental run, and away they went together, to see the best greyhound at his work.

The parson was neatly booted and spurred, and rode upon a "bit of blood"; whilst the farmer, carrying a thick stick, was mounted upon a cart-mare.

This strangely assorted couple soon found the hare. The parson, the blood-horse, and the greyhound all feeling their reputations at stake, and put on their mettle, started off at great speed. The hare was strong, and after a hard run began to outdistance her pursuers, the parson, the blood-horse and the greyhound coming off second best. The farmer's dog had given up the chase some time before, and had disappeared, so the hare was finding it easy and making her way towards a thick furze covert. Then as the hare drew farther and farther away, the parson, to his utter astonishment, saw, seated in the covert, the farmer's greyhound quietly waiting for the hare's arrival. Into the covert of security and peace dashed the hare, waking the farmer's dog, which leapt upon her as she passed, and killed her!



"There, parson, I told you what a devil of a dog he was—let him alone, for goodness!" shouted the farmer uproariously as he galloped up on the cart-mare, having taken a short cut.

"That I certainly shall," replied the rector, and he turned his horse and rode away indignantly.

But before leaving anecdotes of greyhounds and their powers, in 1849 the Hon. Grantley Berkeley's "Bang," at Brecon Lodge, whilst coursing a hare, jumped a gate, and landed on a hard road 30 feet from where he had taken off. He damaged his pastern bone, but killed the hare.

It appears evident that since the earliest times greyhounds were kept and bred for one purpose only, and that to hunt down an animal by speed. The natural instinct to use the nose when the game escaped out of sight or to discover its hiding-place was gradually eliminated and the dog taught to hunt by sight only. Stopping to find and follow scent would lose time, which when hunting large and fast animals was a loss to be avoided. A smaller and heavier dog was therefore used to find the game or to follow lost animals by scent.

Chaucer writes of "Greiounds" as "swift as fowl." Markham, of farming fame, describes them as "nimble and swift." The Teutons described them as "Vind-hunden," but whether by constant training they have become faster or more agile we have no evidence. Certainly crosses have been few, and where attempted have been as rapidly eliminated by subsequent selections and close breeding. It is remarkable how accurately olden-day writers describe the points of the breed.

The first to do so in the English language was Dame Berners, who is brought to task in the "Biographia Britannica" for her incongruous occupations in the field and cloister, as a motley masquerade—"an indistinctness of petticoat, and breeches . . . concorporation of sexes—a religious sportswoman or virago—Sir Tristram, the old monkish forester," and as "Juliana, the Matron of the nuns, united to confirm John Cleveland's 'Canonical Hermaphrodite.'" Edward, Duke of York, in "The Mayster of Game" varies the description of a good greyhound somewhat. He describes the dog to have "shuldres as a roe buck; the for legges streight and grete ynow, and nought to hind legges; the feet straight and round as a catte, and great cleas; the boones and the joyntes of the cheyne grete and hard as the cheyne of an hert; the thighs great and squarred as an hare; the houghs streight, and not crompyng as an ox."

Gesner, in 1515, is clearly of the opinion that greyhounds originated in Greece, and also that they were a Scottish variety of some importance. Further information, given later in the chapter dealing with deerhounds, suggests the relationship of the two kinds.

In 1576 A. Fleming writes: "There is another kind of dogge which for his incredible swiftness is called Leporarius A grehounde, because of the principal service of them dependeth and consisteth in starting and hunting the hare, which dogges likwyse are indued with no lesse strength then lightness in maintenance of the game, in serving the chase, in taking the Bucke, the Harte, the Dowe, the Foxe, and other beasts of semblable kinds, ordained for the game of hunting but more or lesse each one according to the measure and proportion of theyr desire and as might habilitic of

their bodies will permit and suffer. For it is a spare and bare kinde of dogge (of fleshe but not of bone), some are of a greater sorte and some of a lesser, some are smooth skynned and some are curled, the bigger therefore are appoynted to hunt the bigger beasts and the smaller serve to hunt the smaller accordingly," more or less what Dr. Caius wrote, with a few additional touches describing a greyhound with fair accuracy.

Whilst Topsell, in 1607, in his work based on Gesner (and other writers) under the title of "Of the Greyhound" adds very little to our information, he writes that "among the diver kinds of hunting-dogs the greyhound or Græcian Dog, called Thereuticos or Elatica, by reason of his swiftnesse, strength, and sagacity to follow and devoure wild beastes of great stature, deserveth the first place, for such are the conditions of this dog, as Plato hath observed, that he is reasonably scented to finde out, speedy and quicke of foot to follow, and fierce and strong to take and overcome; and yet silent coming upon his prey at unawares." (From this it seems that the greyhound at that time hunted by scent as well as by sight.) Topsell continues:

"The best greyhound hath a long body, strung and reasonably great, a neate sharpe head and splendent eyes, a long mouth and sharp teeth, little ears and thin gristles in them, a straight neck, and a broad and strong brest, his forelegs straight and short, his hindlegs long and straight, broad shoulders, rond ribs, fleshy buttocks, but not fat, a long taile, strong and full of sinnews. . . .

"He should have large sides, and a broad midriffe or fibre about his hart [heart], a small belly, for if it is great it will hinder his speedy course. Likewise his legs have long, thin and soft haire and these must the hunter leade on the left hand if he be on foot and in the right hand if he be on horseback.

"The Lacedemon greyhound was the best breed. They were first bred of a fox and a dog."

He also tells us that greyhounds are best which have the longest necks, and for this purpose "they use this artificial invention to stretch their neckes; they dig a deep hole in the earth wherein they set the greyhounds meat . . . where of his necke is so much lengthened." It would be interesting to know whether this was really attempted.

He goes on to tell us that "the swiftest of all are engendered of a dog and a leopard," and that "the French make most account of such that are bred in the mountains of Delmatia or in any other mountains, especially of Turkey, for such have hard feet, long ears and bristle tayles."

An interesting note indeed, suggesting as it does that the rough-haired greyhounds were found in the mountainous areas, where quite possibly they developed the long coat as a protection against the more rigid conditions.

It is, however, to Dame Berners,<sup>1</sup> as already stated, that the honour goes of describing a perfect greyhound for the first time in the English language. It is believed she copied this description, which appears in the "Boke of St. Albans" (1486), from some earlier work.

It is perfectly certain from all this, even if early illustrations were not sufficient evidence, that the greyhound variety was kept pure and distinct.

<sup>1</sup> No information as to this lady has been discovered. She possesses a biography which is more or less mythical and which is due to conjecture, inference, and perhaps not a little imagination.



The description of the greyhound referred to reads as follows :

"A Grehounde shulde be heded like a Snake and necked like a Drake. Foted like a Kat. Tayled like a Rat. Syded lyke a Teme. Chyned like a Beme.

"The first yere he most bezne to fede. The second yere to fel de hymlede. The III yere he is felolb lyke. The IIII yere ther is noon sike. The V yere he is good Enough. The VI yere he shall holde the plough. The VII yere he wilt avayle ; grete bikkys for to assayle. The VIII year likladilt. The IX yere cartsadylt. And when he is commyn to that yere : have hym to the tanner. For the beest hounde that ever bikke hade at IX yere he is fulte badde."

Considerable interest has been attached to the above and much speculation as to the meaning of some of the lines. Certain points are clear, her meaning of "snake-headed," the poise of a snake, and the neck like a duck, the very graceful and pliable neck so typical of the variety. Cat-footed and a rat-like tail, and a body flat-sided, and chested like a bream, need no comment. But the doubt as to her meaning has arisen as to one or other of the lines that follow, and it appears to me that the first year the dog was to make body and internal organs ; the second year he was to be taught to obey (to be led) ; the third year he is proud of himself ; the fourth year there is none like him ; the fifth year he is still useful ; but the sixth year he holds the plough,—that is to say, finds it difficult to move over the earth, for age is telling—the seventh year he is used for stud purposes, and the eighth year he hangs round the farm premises licking up the pigs' food ; the ninth year he is weighed down, as if with a cart-saddle, a heavy and cumbrous affair, and when he comes to that year his value is only his skin.

In colour there seems to have been very little attempt to stipulate any one colour to be better than any other, though Gratius considers black-and-white to show speed, whilst Edmund de Langley prefers red-fallow with a black "moselle." Duns were often in favour, not only in dogs but also in other forms of live-stock, probably because so many wild animals are of a dun-colour more or less.

So although most owners have some preference in colour marking, it has been proved too often and too well that colour has nothing whatsoever to do with great speed. "A good animal can never be of a bad colour," is a very true saying. Brindles, blacks, black-and-whites, blues, fawns, white-and-reds, and other shades have all proved their value by winning high honours.

Some colours, however, appear to be more charming, but it is a matter of opinion. The colours of the Waterloo Cup winners since the inauguration of the meeting are given later.

Size has also caused considerable argument. Very small dogs and over-large dogs are probably handicapped, especially the latter, because they are less able to turn as quickly as is necessary. Small dogs, again, although more able to turn, may not have the strength for a long contest or sufficient speed. For these reasons medium-sized dogs are on the whole the most popular. Yet both large dogs and small ones have been successful, and I have seen at marsh coursing meetings, where hares are more than usually strong, the larger dog show that size is not so great a handicap as one is led to suppose.

"Coomassie," whose wonderful performance we describe later, weighed 42 lb., and was considered a bad-coloured bitch, a washed-out fawn, yet this lilliputian



won the Waterloo Cup twice. "Master McGrath," known as the "Irish Terrier," weighing 52 lb., won the coveted trophy three times. In heavier dogs, we have "Honeywood" and "Misterton," both weighing 63 lb., and both winning the cup.

I have never been to Altcar or seen any of the great coursing meetings, so I am unable to describe them from personal knowledge, but I have, on many occasions, witnessed the coursing on the marshes of East Anglia, where the sea-air sparkles with its brilliancy. You can picture the arrival of the coursing people at the farm-house, where welcome hospitality awaits them; the shedding of coats, wraps, and mufflers; the "liberating" of the dogs from the backs of carts for a little exercise before the sport commences. Each dog is in a smart "rug" coat, with the owner's initials in large clear letters. On the walk down to the marshes there is constant opening and closing of gates, until they have arrived there. The leash-holder (known as the "slipper") takes the first two in hand and the semi-circular line moves along. Perhaps out of a ditch wild duck rise, quacking hoarsely as they go soaring round and round; here and there a snipe, disturbed whilst feeding, dashes like an airman up into the air with sharp k'necks, zig-zagging and turning and twisting as it goes. Then comes a "halloo," a hare is running along over the marsh, her ears well down, hoping to escape unobserved. The man holding the now straining dogs on the leash, with ears well up and eyes sparkling, anxious to be gone, stiffens himself to give the awaited pull to liberate the dogs. The hare has the law allowed her, then the slipper pulls the release and the two greyhounds "fly" forward into the air, and are racing neck to neck over the marsh. The hare hears them and redoubles her efforts. The greyhounds reach her and, with one ear up, puss turns quickly and leaves the hounds, as they sweep round. But the dogs reach her, and she turns and again for a moment is free. And so it goes on, and on, and each moment the hare is getting closer and closer to the wall gate, through which means safety. Sometimes she is successful, turning sharply so close to the wall that her pursuers are perhaps deposited head-first into the ditch. But sometimes there is a heartrending scream, the greyhounds stand with the fluff dropping from their teeth, and all is over.

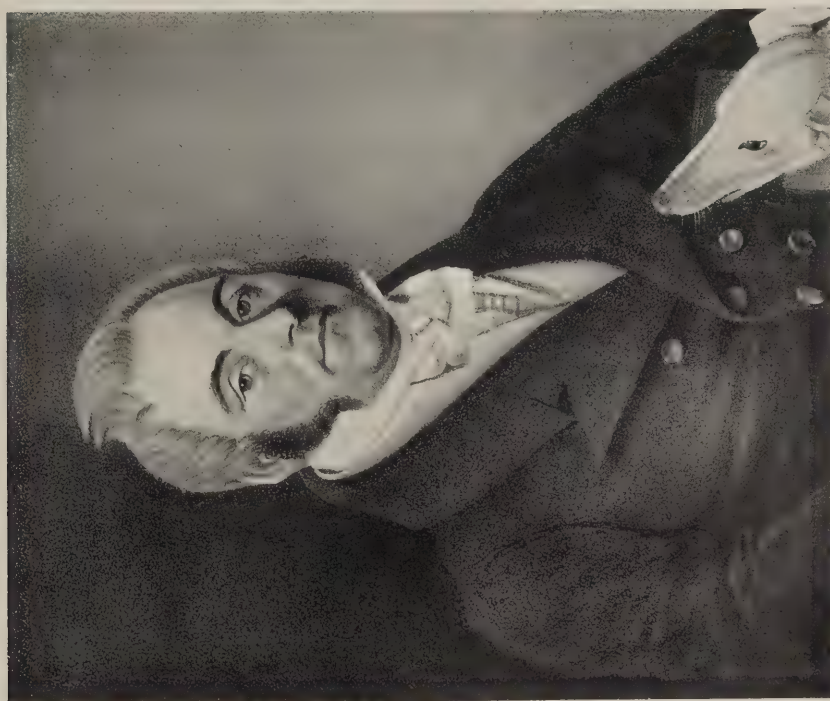
The light gradually changes from the light of mid-day to the sombre shades of blue as the chills of evening are creeping up. The day is nearly over. Some of the older of the sporting crew turn up coat-collars, half-sheepishly, then home they go, greyhounds, men, and women.

The roaring fires give a reddened welcome, and the day's work is done; horses and ponies reappear from out of many doors; motors tune up with rumbles and short cracks.

Before describing classical coursing meetings, I should like to draw attention to the fact that the Irish greyhound, dealt with in the section devoted to Irish wolf-hounds, was a dog of considerable note at early times and was smooth-skinned and not unlike the modern greyhound, though perhaps much larger.

#### THE NATIONAL COURSING CLUB AND THE WATERLOO MEETING

When in 1858 the National Coursing Club was established, and a code of rules was drawn up, partly based on the Duke of Norfolk's laws of coursing of Queen



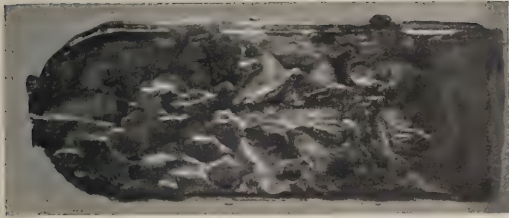
(Left) THOMAS GOODLAKE, *The Editor of "The Courser's Manual" (1828).* (Right) GEORGE CUPPLES (1894), THE WELL-KNOWN DEERHOUND OWNER.





(Top) left. "HARMONICON," WINNER OF THE WATERLOO CUP, 1916; right. FOUR WATERLOO CUP WINNERS IN ONE KENNEL. "Fabulous Fortune," 1896; "Fearless Footstep," 1900, 1901; "Farndon Ferry," 1902; "Father Flint," 1903. (Centre) "PENTONVILLE," WINNER OF THE WATERLOO CUP, 1925. (Bottom) left. "LONG SPAN," WINNER OF THE WATERLOO CUP, 1907; right. "MASTER McGRATH," WINNER OF THE WATERLOO CUP THREE TIMES.





(Above) left and right. DEERHOUNDS ON THE SCULPTURED STONES AT MEIGLE, MENTIONED BY MR. A. MACNEIL. By courtesy of Mr. W. Leslie. (Centre) DEERHOUND "MIMIC OF ROSS," The property of Miss H. M. Longbrey. (Below) IRISH WOLFHOUNDS, Standing, Ch. "King Shane of Brabyns"; reclining, "Fionn ma coul of Brabyns," a famous stud hound. The property of Captain T. H. Hudson (photo by Spillers).



(Left) THE FIRST PICTURE MARKED "IRISH GREYHOUND." From "The Book of Animals," (1665). Author unknown. (Right) above. "IRISH GREYHOUND OR WOLF-DOG." From Bingley's "British Quadrupeds," (1808); (Right) below. "THE IRISH WOLF-DOG" ACCORDING TO H. D. RICHARDSON. From "The Irish Penny Magazine," (1841). 176d]



Elizabeth's reign, they fixed the routine of coursing meetings not only in the British Isles, but for all over the world. No dog is allowed to run in any meeting of importance held under the rules of the Coursing Club, unless it has been registered with its pedigree in the Stud Book.

The National Coursing Club Committee is representative, for it consists of men chosen by interested clubs with more than twenty members, and in a similar way to the Kennel Club in doggy matters, or the Jockey Club in racing matters, the National Coursing Club are the final rulers of any controversial matters in respect to coursing, and have the final word in disputes.

The Waterloo Cup meet had been instituted in 1836, the Derby of the coursing world. It was instituted as a result of the 1835 meeting at Sefton Altcar, a village near Liverpool, the Waterloo Hotel there being the rendezvous. Up to 1903 there was no cup, but a stake and silver collar, but in that year a £100 cup was presented to the winner of the Waterloo Stakes. A portion of the money is allotted to two minor stakes, known respectively as the "Purse" (value £215) and the "Plate" (value £145), for which dogs beaten in earlier rounds are eligible. The two prizes are shared out, the winner in either event obtaining £75, the runner-up £30, the rest divided in order.

At one time the Waterloo Cup was an 8-dog stake, in 1837 it became a 16-dog stake, in 1838 a 32-dog stake, and in 1857 a 64-dog stake, at which it remained. The entry fee is £25 for each nomination, and only one nomination can be made. The winner obtains £500 and the £100 cup, the runner-up obtains £200, and the next two in order £50 each, the next four dogs £30 each, and eight dogs £20 each, and sixteen share £160 equally.

Whilst speed is a *sine qua non* for success, clever work is of great value. Stamina is essential, for it is a trying experience for any dog out of condition and such a dog has little chance, though the Cup on one occasion was won by a bitch in bad condition.

Among the famous dogs of "the turf" was "Bab at the Bowster," a red-and-fawn bitch considered one of the finest greyhound bitches which had run. She weighed 44 lb., and though she never won the Cup, was the winner of many other important stakes, and was a bitch to be reckoned with, whenever she appeared.

The most famous of them all was "Master McGrath," a black with a few white marks, weighing 54 lb., who won the Stake three times, and was noted for the way he used his teeth and the speed at which he could move.

"Coomassie" holds the record still, I believe, as the smallest greyhound that has won the Cup, and she did this on two occasions. Her weight was 42 lb. "Fullerton," a strong, brindle-coloured dog, standing very straight on his front legs, according to illustrations, was purchased by Colonel North for 850 guineas. He weighed 65 lb., and won the coveted trophy four times. In all the meets in which he ran, out of thirty-one courses he was only once beaten.

There was also a fawn-and-white, "Cerito," who won the Cup three times when it was a 32-dog stake. There were many others too—the dam of "Fullerton," "Bit of Fashion," "Fabulous Fortune," "Miss Glendine," "Lady Lyons," "Greengage," "Thoughtless Beauty," "Canaradzo," "Herschel," "Under the Globe," and that remarkably smart little dog "Long Span"—with great muscular



development of the hind limbs—purchased, so we read, for 90 guineas. The poor little dog, owing to severe weather in Scotland, could not get fit, but nevertheless won the Cup in 1907.

There is so much of interest about these dogs that I feel no apology is needed for dealing with them more fully later. “McGrath,” the Irishman, was introduced to her Majesty Queen Victoria, and fêted as the hero he certainly was; and died in his kennels at Brownlow House. “Fullerton,” who once shared the Cup with his kennel companion “Troughend,” was no use at stud, though his list at 40 guineas was well filled, and he too lived his old age in peace and comfort, back in his old home with Mr. James Dent, who had bred him. On his death he was presented to the Natural History Museum, where he now stands.

#### POINTS OF THE COURSE IN STONEHENGE’S TIME

(For a copy of to-day’s points see Appendix XXV)

*Speed.* 1, 2 or 3 points according to speed.

*Go-by.* 2 points; or if passed in the outer circle, 3.

*The Turn.* 1 point.

*The Wrench.*  $\frac{1}{2}$  point.

*The Kill.* 2 points, or in a descending scale in proportion to the degree of merit displayed.

*The Trip*, or unsuccessful effort to kill or where a greyhound flecks a hare and cannot hold her, 1 point.

*The run-up* on speed—1, 2, or 3, depends on the distance the dog is ahead of its competitor and the way that lead is obtained.

*The go-by* counts 2 points; but if the dog passes on the outer side, an extra point is allowed, making the total 3.

*The turn*, the hare being forced to turn at right angles from her direction, is valued at 1 point to the dog which is leading, and then considered to have caused this movement. If the hare turns without being forced to do so, no point is allowed.

*The wrench*, for which  $\frac{1}{2}$  point is given, is the movement of the hare, not at right angles, but just a deviation from the line on which she was travelling.

*The trip*, an unsuccessful effort to kill, the greyhound throwing the hare off her feet or flecking her, but being unable to hold her, counts 1 point.

*The kill* depends on whether the dog accomplishes it unaided, that is to say, without the hare being driven towards it by the opponent dog; if unaided it counts 2, or otherwise only 1.

If a dog having obtained the first 6 points is still in possession of the hare, his points are afterwards doubled, so that for a wrench he would obtain 1 instead of  $\frac{1}{2}$  point, for a go-by 4 or 6, for the kill 4 and the trip 2.

There are also certain deductions and penalties:

When a dog from his own defect refuses to follow the hare at which he is slipped and where he stands still.

When a dog goes off the line, no points made afterwards are considered; or if he has equal points to his competitor, he is considered to have lost the course.

If a dog refuses to *fence* when his opponent has got over, no further points can be

scored by him. A greyhound must follow the hare at which he is slipped or he loses the course.

In 1882 enclosed meetings were inaugurated, but they did not do well. The hares, often turned down the night previous, were sent through an opening close to where the slipper stood. At a distance of sometimes 800 yards a further refuge was arranged in the form of another small covert.

At the meetings held at Kempton Park the stake to be won was £1,000. Meetings were also held at Haydock Park (Liverpool) and at Gosforth, near Newcastle.

Haydock still survives, and two or three smaller meetings.

Walsh, in 1878, tells us that "experience has convinced all coursers that a dog with plenty of length from his hip to his hock is likely to be speedy, because there is a greater than usual length of muscle to act upon the hock, and also a longer stride."

He gives two, "Riot" and "David," on his plate, and states that they were perhaps the best greyhounds for all kinds of ground that "ever ran, not even excepting the two treble winners of the Waterloo Cup. "Cerito" and "McGrath" are the two he meant, though he does not give the names. "Riot" had won seventy-four courses and lost ten; "David" had also done remarkably well.

Walsh writes that he considers that no strain has done more, over all sorts of ground, than the combination of "Bedlamite" and "Blackfly" in "Riot," and that of "Motley" and "Wanton" in "David," and again in his son "Patent." It is a repetition, more or less, of the wording in *Stonehenge's* "Dogs of the British Isles," published in 1867.

#### FAMOUS WATERLOOS

We cannot leave greyhounds without describing some famous Waterloo dogs. The first year that field stewards appeared to control the crowd, 1867, proved to be a great Ladies' year: the four places in the Waterloo Cup were won by bitches, "Lobelia" winning the Cup, "Royal Seal" coming second, "Trovatore" third, and "Bettelheim" fourth. Strangely enough, the gentler sex were also the winners of both Purse and Plate, "Sky Girl" and "Woman in Blue" being first and second in the Purse, whilst "Princess Royal" and "Lady Cecil" stood first and second in the Plate.

*Vindex* tells us, in his remarkable book "Fifty-six Waterloo Cups,"<sup>1</sup> how the bells of Christ Church, Southport, were rung when the news came through that "Lobelia," the local representative, had won the Cup, and that the vicar, discovering the reason for this, put a stop to it—probably the first and last time in history that church bells have been used in connection with a greyhound, though on one occasion a church bell was rung when a bulldog had a litter (see p. 522).

It was in 1868 that "Master McGrath" came on the scene. The favourites at the calling over of the Waterloo were "Brigade" and that afterwards famous bitch "Bab at the Bowster." "McGrath" caused little interest except for his Irish friends, but the whole tone altered after his remarkable behaviour against a smart bitch "Belle of Scotland," and his good work when competing with "Kalista"; so much did opinions change that backers made him second favourite.

It was a day of thrills. "Lobelia," who had won the Cup the previous year

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Lowie Hall, "The Sporting Chronicle."

(and had church bells), beat the famous bitch "Bab at the Bowster," and the rounds were gradually run off. At last the two favourites were to meet, "Brigade" and "McGrath." "McGrath" beat "Brigade," and now only three other dogs remained in the trial, including "Lobelia." It was, I suppose, one of the most exciting contests of the meeting. We read that a roar of excitement greeted "Lobelia" as she drew ahead, but "Master McGrath" carried out his work well and beat her.

Then the final and deciding course took place: "McGrath" met "Cock Robin" and won.

In 1869, after a series of exciting victories, the champion and "Bab at the Bowster" met.

*Vindex* describes him as "coming out like a lion refreshed on the Friday morning" when he met "Lobelia," though he had found a very trying course when he met and beat "Charming Mayo."

In 1870 both "McGrath" and "Bab at the Bowster" were defeated, and a bitch, "Sea Cove," won.

It was in 1871 that "Master McGrath" once more came into his own. *Vindex* tells us that Lord Morgan had decided not to run "McGrath," but to use him for stud purposes, and four bitches had visited him in the spring of 1870. He was taken out (we read) in the autumn to give the younger generation a lesson, and he did so well that it was decided to run him in the Brownlow Stakes. His performance persuaded Lord Morgan to enter the dog again for the Cup. *Vindex* gives most fascinating details as to the event; all I can add here is that "McGrath" won the Cup for the third time.

It was in 1877 that the famous bitch "Coomassie" came to the front by winning the Cup. Nothing could stand up to her, and her work was brilliant in the extreme. The way she killed her hares was one of the finest exhibitions of this part of the work that had been seen.

"It is no exaggeration to say," writes *Vindex*, in the work already alluded to, "that a Waterloo Cup was never more brilliantly won."

In 1878 "Coomassie" won again. It was not quite such a brilliant performance, but "Coomassie" had not then recovered from her family duties and was out of condition.

The 1885 Cup was divided between "Miss Glendyne" and "Bit of Fashion," the former bitch winning the Cup in 1886.

It was in 1889 that "Fullerton" won the Cup for the first time, "Fullerton" with "Bab at the Bowster" in his blood. "Bab at the Bowster" had never won the coveted honour, but had been the runner-up to "McGrath" in 1869 in the Cup and had won event after event at the more important meetings, beating many of the crack stars of the coursing world. "Fullerton" was not the favourite, though there certainly was a feeling about that he might do better than expected, and we read that the betting was 10 to 1, and the closing price 100 to 11. "Fullerton" was nearly beaten by "Barbican II," but having just managed to win the course, everyone waited the coming of the great contest between the dog "Herschel" and "Fullerton." "Herschel" was the winner with "Greater Scott" of the Cup in 1887, a dog which had been the favourite in 1885, but at that meeting "Fullerton" had beaten his



opponents with comparative ease. A strong hare gave the two great dogs ample opportunity. "Herschel," who was not in form, did so well that there seemed to be quite a chance that he might win, but "Fullerton" beat him.

In 1890 "Fullerton's" victory in the Cup was generally expected, and *Vindex* tells us that he was freely backed in hundreds at 9 to 2, the odds dropping to 6 to 4 after his first day's running.

At the 1891 meeting "Fullerton" met his younger brother "Simonian" and beat him; then he faced "Faster and Faster" and, after an exciting course, won. So in the history of the Waterloo Cup three dogs held the record: "Cerito," "McGrath," and "Fullerton" had each won three Cups.

"Fullerton" was still the same keen and capable worker, but he was getting old in the coursing world, and though this was generally realised, yet in the following meeting, that of 1892, 100 to 30 was freely taken, and *Vindex* tells us that "Fullerton" had the public confidence. In the rounds, indeed, so well did he do that public confidence became still stronger. In this meeting he met "Patrick Blue," a dog of excellent form, and beat him. Then came "Race-course," and at last "Fitz Fife," and "Fullerton" triumphed, having broken the record and won the Waterloo Cup four times.

It is easily understood that when in 1893 "Fullerton" appeared once more, and in the first round won so easily, that his support seemed well merited. But the wonderful dog now at last met his Waterloo; he found his opponent "Full Captain," an Irish dog, too much for him.

In 1907 the meeting opened in very unfavourable weather; it poured in torrents. In the semi-finals Sir R. W. Buchanan Jardine's dog "Long Span" beat "Platonic," and in the finals "Glenbridge," the first Scottish victory since 1880, when "Honeywood" had carried away the Cup.

In the 1908 meeting "Long Span" reached the semi-finals, losing to "Hallow Eve," who won the Cup by beating "Schouette." "Long Span" again appeared in 1909, and was beaten, but won the Plate. Such is the story of some of the most exciting Waterloos.

Of all the olden-day coursing characters, one of the most interesting is a spinster, a Miss Richards. This lady lived at Compton Beauchamp, near Ashdown Park, Berks, and had considerable means and a country estate. She resisted the efforts of many a man to storm the citadel and claim her as a wife.

The remains of what was known as the Wig Avenue, as it was then commonly called, still existed at Compton in 1831, and it was at its farther extremity that the gay gallants of the vale were accustomed to doff their ordinary riding-wigs, and receive from the band-boxes, which the servants carefully bore on the pommel of the saddles, the grand peruques of ceremony. Thus duly prepared for an attack on the heart of the young heiress they would appear on the scenes.

But in spite, however, of this setting of wigs, the lady remained adamant. She certainly was a remarkable person. Not a day passed, fair or fine, in the coursing season but this indefatigable sportswoman was dragged in her coach-and-six to the downs, when she coursed on foot for the rest of the morning, sometimes walking as much as twenty to twenty-five miles.

She gave all visitors to the house refreshments and a tankard of home-brewed beer, also a bonus to all sick neighbours, which increased the list of Sunday patients

who came to be bled by William Carter, the old body-coachman, and added to the worthy man's celebrity as a gratis doctor.

Honest William's appointments and those of his five brothers, fixtures stiff with family lace, were all of the first order, except on one occasion when a supplementary tail, which had been contrived to eke out the natural deficiency of a veteran coach-horse, was switched off, on the Burford race-course, during a hot persecution of flies.

In this interesting establishment, Miss Richards, on engaging a cook, would ask, "Young woman, do you love dogs?" If the answer came, "Yes, please your ladyship, in their proper place," Miss Richards would reply, "If you are disposed to stay with me, remember their place in my house is wherever they think fit to go." In every sitting-room a large ottoman or bed was provided for the exclusive use of dogs of all descriptions and ages.

On Miss Richards's death she consigned her greyhounds and spaniels with her personal property to her adopted child Miss M. Watts, the dogs to be taken care of as long as they lived. So well did this lady carry out her duties that some of the dogs under Miss Watts's care reached the age of 16 to 20 years. Several of these dogs were used by Lord Craven to improve his stock.

After Miss Richards's death an epitaph written by herself for her tomb was found among her papers, signed in her writing. It reads:

"AN EPITAPH ON MISS ANN RICHARDS, OF COMPTON BEAUCHAMP, WRITTEN BY HERSELF

"Reader, if ever sport to thee was dear,  
Drop on Ann Richards' tomb a tear,  
Who when alive with piercing eye  
Did many a timid hare descry;  
Well skill'd and practis'd in the art,  
Sometimes to find and sometime start,  
All arts and sciences beside,  
This hare-brained heroine did deride:  
An utter foe to wedlock's noose,  
When poaching men had stopt the meuse.  
Tattle and tea! she was above it,  
And but for form appeared to love it.  
All books she laughed at, Pope and Clarke,  
And all her joy was Ashdown Park,  
But Ann at length was spy'd by death,  
Who cours'd and ran her out of breath;  
No shifting, winding turn could save  
Her active life from gaping grave:  
As greyhound with superior force  
Seizes poor puss and stops her course,  
So stopp'd the fates our heroine's view,  
And had her take a long adieu  
Of shrill so-ho! and loud halloo."

The classic story of the "Hartshorn Tree" or the "Westmorland Staghound" we find allocated to the greyhound. In Nicholson and Burns's "History of Westmorland and Cumberland" it is stated that:

"In the time of the first Robert de Clifford, 1333 or 1334, Edward Balliol, King of Scotland, came into Westmorland and stayed with Robert de Clifford at his Castle of Appleby, Brougham, and Pendragon, and during this time they ran a stag by a

single greyhound out of Whinfell Park to Redkirk in Scotland and back again to Whinfell Park. The stag leapt over the pales but died on the other side, and the greyhound, also attempting to leap, fell and died there. The staghorns were nailed upon a tree close by, and the tree from that day bore the name Hart's horn Tree. The Horns in the course of time were nearly covered by the growth of the tree and another pair were put up in their place. The tree stood by the side of the wood leading from Penrith to Appleby."

In the MS. "Lives of the Veteripants and Cliffords" appears the following:

"This summer (1658) by some mischievous people, secretly and at night, was there broke off and taken from the tree near the pales of Whinfeld Park (which for that cause was called the Hart-horn tree) one of those Hart's-horns which were set up in the year 1333, at a general hunting when Edward Balliol, then King of Scots, came into England by permission of King Edward III and lay for a while in Robert Lord Clifford's Castles . . . remained there ever since till that in the year 1648, one of these horns were broken down by some of the army: and the other was broken down, as aforesaid, this year . . ."

#### COURSING—COMPLETE RULES (DUKE OF NORFOLK)

1. No hare to be coursed with more than a brace of greyhounds.
2. The hare finder to give the hare three so-hos before he put her from her form, that the dogs might have notice to attend to her being started.
3. The hare to have law of twelve score yards before the greyhounds were loosed unless the small distance between the hare and the covert would not admit it without danger of immediately losing her.
4. The dog that gave the first turn and during the course, if there was neither cote, slip, nor wrench, won.
5. A cote is when a greyhound goes endways by his fellow, and gives the hare a turn.
6. A cote served for two turns, and two trippings or jerkins for a cote; if the hare did not turn quite about she only wrenched, and two wrenches stand for a turn.
7. If there were no cotes given between a brace of greyhounds, but that one of them served the other at turning, then he that gave the brace most turns won; and if one gave as many turns as the other, then he that bore the hare won.
8. If one dog gave the first turn, and the other lose the hare, he that bore the hare won.
9. A go-by, or hearing the hare, was equivalent to two turns.
10. If neither dog turned the hare, he that led last to the covert won.
11. If one dog turned the hare, served himself, and turned her again, it was as much as a cote—for a cote was esteemed two turns.
12. If all the course was equal, the dog that bore the hare won; if the hare was not borne, the course was adjudged dead, that is, undecided.
13. If a dog fell in a course, and yet performed his part, he might challenge the advantage a turn more than he gave.



14. If a dog turned the hare, served himself and gave divers cotes, and yet in the end stood still in the field, the other dog, if he ran home to the covert, although he gave no turn, was adjudged the winner.

15. If, by accident, a dog was run over in his course, the course was void, and he that did the mischief was to make reparation for the damage.

16. If a dog gave the first and last turn, and there was no other advantage between them, he that gave the odd turn won.

17. He that came in first at the death, took up the hare, saved her from being torn, cherished the dogs and cleansed their mouths from the fleck, was allowed to retain the hare for his trouble.

18. And those who were appointed judges of the course were to give their decision before they departed from the field.

#### SWAFFHAM COURSING SOCIETY

##### MEMBERS, THEIR LETTERS AND COLOURS, IN 1798

A.	Mr. Colhoun	.	.	.	.	.	Red, white, and blue.
B.	Mr. Holt	.	.	.	.	.	Brimstone.
C.	Mr. Coppin	.	.	.	.	.	Yellow.
D.	Mr. Pottinger.	.	.	.	.	.	White.
E.	Marquis Townshend	.	.	.	.	.	Blue and white.
F.	Earl Cholmondeley	.	.	.	.	.	Pink.
G.	(then vacant)	.	.	.	.	.	White and purple.
H.	Mr. Dashwood	.	.	.	.	.	Pea Green.
I.	Mr. Mickethwaite.	.	.	.	.	.	Red and white.
K.	Mr. Nelthorpe	.	.	.	.	.	Rose.
L.	Mr. Motteux	.	.	.	.	.	Green and white.
M.	Mr. James Parson	.	.	.	.	.	White and black.
N.	Mr. Denton	.	.	.	.	.	Sky-blue.
O.	Mr. Wilson	.	.	.	.	.	Lilac.
P.	Sir John Sebright	.	.	.	.	.	Garter-blue.
Q.	Mr. Hammond	.	.	.	.	.	Quaker
R.	Mr. Hare	.	.	.	.	.	Red.
S.	Mr. Crowe	.	.	.	.	.	Orange.
T.	Mr. Tyssen	.	.	.	.	.	Pompadour.
U.	Sir Samuel Fludyer	.	.	.	.	.	Aurora.
V.	Sir John Berney	.	.	.	.	.	Brown and red.
W.	Mr. Woodley	.	.	.	.	.	White and crimson.
X.	Mr. Cooper	.	.	.	.	.	Yellow and green.
Y.	Mr. James (Junior)	.	.	.	.	.	Orange and black.
Z.	Mr. Forby	.	.	.	.	.	Red and blue.

## THE WATERLOO CUP

Meeting.	No. of Dogs Competing.	Winners.	Sex.	Colours.	Owners.
1836 . . .	8	Milanie	Female	Red	—
1837 . . .	16	Fly	Female	Black	Mr. Stanton
1838 . . .	32	Bugle	Male	Blue	Mr. Ball
1839 . . .	32	Empress	Female	Red	Mr. Robinson
1840 . . .	32	Earwig	Male	Black	Mr. Easterby
1841 . . .	32	Bloomsbury	Male	Red	Mr. King
1842 . . .	32	Priam	Male	Fawn-and-white	Mr. Deakin
1843 . . .	32	Major	Male	Fawn	Mr. Pollok
1844 . . .	32	Speculation	Female	Red-and-white	Mr. Slater
1845 . . .	32	Titania	Female	Black	Mr. Temple
1846 . . .	32	Harlequin	Male	Black-and-white	Mr. Sampson
1847 . . .	32	Senate	Male	Red	Lord Sefton
1848 . . .	32	Shade	Female	Black-and-white	Sir St. G. Gore
1849 . . .	32	Magician	Male	Black	Sir St. G. Gore
1850 . . .	32	Cerito	Female	Fawn-and-white	Mr. Cooke
1851 . . .	32	Hughie Graham	Male	Fawn	Mr. Sharpe
1852 . . .	32	Cerito	Female	Fawn-and-white	Mr. Cooke
1853 . . .	32	Cerito	Female	Fawn-and-white	Mr. Cooke
1854 . . .	32	Sackcloth	Male	Black	Lord Sefton
1855 . . .	32	Judge	Male	Red	Mr. Jefferson
1856 . . .	32	Protest	Female	Fawn	Mr. Peacock
1857 . . .	64	King Lear	Male	White-and-fawn	Mr. Wilson
1858 . . .	64	Neville	Male	Fawn	Mr. Casser
1859 . . .	64	Clive	Female	Black	Mr. J. Jardine
1860 . . .	64	Maid of the Mill	Female	Red	Mr. Blackstock
1861 . . .	64	Canaradzo	Male	White	Mr. Campbell
1862 . . .	64	Roaring Meg	Female	Black	Mr. Gregson
1863 . . .	64	Chloe	Female	White-and-black	Mr. T. Lister
1864 . . .	64	King Death	Male	White-and-black	Dr. Richardson
1865 . . .	64	Meg	Female	Red or fawn	Mr. Carruthers
1866 . . .	64	Brigadier	Male	Black-and-white	Mr. Foulke
1867 . . .	64	Lobelia	Female	White-and-brindle	Mr. Legh
1868 . . .	64	Master McGrath	Male	Black-and-white	Lord Lurgan
1869 . . .	64	Master McGrath	Male	Black-and-white	Lord Lurgan
1870 . . .	64	Sea Cove	Female	Red-and-brown	Mr. Spinks
1871 . . .	64	Master McGrath	Male	Black-and-white	Lord Lurgan
1872 . . .	64	Bed of Stone	Female	Fawn	Mr. Briggs
1873 . . .	64	Muriel	Female	Red, white	Mr. Jardine
1874 . . .	64	Magnaro	Male	Red	Mr. Morgan
1875 . . .	64	Honeymoon	Female	Black-and-white	Mr. Hutchinson
1876 . . .	64	Donald	Male	Black	Mr. Douglas
1877 . . .	64	Coomassie	Female	Fawn-and-white	Mr. Gittus
1878 . . .	64	Coomassie	Female	Fawn-and-white	Mr. Lays
1879 . . .	64	Misterton	Male	Black-and-white	Mr. Miller
1880 . . .	64	Honeywood	Male	Red-and-white	Earl of Haddington
1881 . . .	64	Princess Dagmar	Female	White-and-brindle	Mr. Postle
1882 . . .	64	Snowflight	Female	Black	Mr. Hall
1883 . . .	64	Wild Mint	Female	Red	Mr. Alexander
1884 . . .	64	Mineral Water	Male	White-and-black	Mr. Mayers
1885 . . .	64	Miss Glendyn }	Female	Brindle	Mr. Hibbert
1885 . . .	64	Bit of Fashion }	Female	Brindle-and-white	Mr. Lent
1886 . . .	64	Miss Glendyne	Female	Brindle	Mr. Hibbert
1887 . . .	64	Herschel and }	Male	Red	Mr. Hornby
1887 . . .	64	Greater Scott }	Male	Black	Mr. Gladstone
1888 . . .	64	Burnaby	Male	Black-and-white	Mr. Pilkington
1889 . . .	64	Fullerton	Male	Brindle	Col. North
1890 . . .	64	Fullerton	Male	Brindle	Col. North
1891 . . .	64	Fullerton	Male	Brindle	Col. North
1892 . . .	64	Fullerton	Male	Brindle	Col. North
1893 . . .	64	Character	Male	Brindle	Mr. Cotterell
1894 . . .	64	Texture	Female	Red	Count Stroganoff.
1895 . . .	64	Thoughtless Beauty	Female	Fawn	Mr. Carruthers

THE WATERLOO CUP—*continued*

Meeting.	No. of Dogs Competing.	Winners.	Sex.	Colours.	Owners.
1896 . .	64	Fabulous Fortune	Male	Red	Mr. Fawcett
1897 . .	64	Gallant	Male	Brindle	Mr. Hale
1898 . .	64	Wildnight	Female	Fawn-and-white	Mr. Hardy
1899 . .	64	Black Fury	Male	Black	Mr. Thompson
1900 . .	64	Fearless Footstep	Female	Black	Messrs. Fawcett
1901 . .	64	Fearless Footstep	Female	Black	Messrs. Fawcett
1902 . .	64	Farndon Ferry	Male	Brindle-and-white	Mr. G. F. Fawcett
1903 . .	64	Father Flint	Male	Brindle	Mr. Bibby
1904 . .	64	Homfray	Male	Red	Mr. Margett
1905 . .	64	Pistol II	Male	Brindle	Mr. Pawson
1906 . .	64	Hoprend	Male	Fawn	Mr. Hardy
1907 . .	64	Long Span	Male	Fawn	Sir R. W. Jardine
1908 . .	64	Hallow Eve	Female	Red	Mr. E. Hulton
1909 . .	64	Dendraspis	Male	Red	Mr. Dennis
1910 . .	64	Heavy Weapon	Male	Brindle	Mr. Hill-Wood
1911 . .	64	Japperwock	Male	Red	Sir R. W. Jardine
1912 . .	64	Tide Time	Male	Black	Mr. Townshend
1913 . .	64	Hung Well	Male	Brindle	Mr. Hill-Wood
1914 . .	64	Dilwyn	Female	Red-fawn	Messrs. J. E. & S. M. Dennis
1915 . .	64	Winning Number	Female	Fawn	Sir T. Dewar
1916 . .	64	Harmonicis	Male	Brindle	Mr. E. Hulton
No Meetings owing to the War					
1919 . .	64	Victory Cup	Female	Brindle	Sir Robert Jardine
1920 . .	64	Fighting Force	Male	Fawn	Mr. N. Dunn
1921 . .	64	Shortcoming	Female	Red	Lady Sefton
1922 . .	64	Guards Brigade	Male	Fawn-red	Lord Tweedmouth
1923 . .	64	Latto	Male	Fawn	Earl of Lonsdale
1924 . .	64	Cushey Job	Male	Red	Mr. T. Cook
1925 . .	64	Pentonville	Male	Red-fawn	Mr. H. C. Pilkington
1926 . .	64	Jovial Judge	Male	Fawn	Mr. J. L. Jarvis

## EARLY COURSING DEFINITIONS (USED BY STONEHENGE)

*The Draw* takes place the evening before a meeting. Corresponding numbers to the entry of each dog in a stake are put into a hat and taken out in pairs, the first of each pair always running under the red, the second of each pair under the white flag.

*The Meet*.—The place where the first course is to come off, usually nine or ten o'clock.

*Saplings*.—Greyhounds born after January 1 of one year and running before the following January.

*Puppies*.—Born after January 1 of one year until January 1 of the following year.

*All Aged*.—Dogs of any age.

*Ties*.—A term applies to the number of courses to be run by each set. I, II, III, IV means first, second, third, and fourth round.

In an 8-dog stake, one dog must win three courses to decide.

In a 16-dog stake, the winner must win four courses.

32-dog stake, five courses.

64-dog stake, six courses.

*Collars*.—There are two, white and red, and are only used when the two greyhounds are so alike in colour that the judge cannot distinguish between them.



*Beaters.*—Men who walk up the hares, moving them from off their forms, slight depressions in the earth.

*Field Stewards* regulate the order and position of crowd.

*Stewards* have complete control, and complaints must be made to them.

*Judge.*—His decisions are always final, and he is elected by the subscribers and stewards.

*The Slipper.*—The man in charge of a brace of dogs. He slips them either by order of the judge, or by order of a slip steward, or on his own judgment when this power is delegated to him.

*The Slip.*—Distance according to ground, usually about 80 yards.

*Red Collar.*—The dogs on the left-hand side of the card, and also on the left-hand side of the slipper, run under this badge. In the second, third, and following ties the uppermost dog of each brace always runs under red.

*White.*—Contrariwise to above.

*Flags.*—The flag steward receives orders from the judge. If both the red and white flags go up, it means a "no-go."

*Guarding.*—A term used when a person has more than one nomination in the same stake, and his dogs are drawn or afterwards come together. The next two below them do not run together, but each runs a course with the two guarded dogs. There is no guarding in the Waterloo Cup as no one is allowed more than one nomination, though one owner may run several dogs, but each must have a separate nomination.

*Field Ticket* (to allow entry of visitor).—Often worn on the hat or affixed to the coat. A different coloured ticket is issued for each day.

*Steward's Orders.*—Stand still during a course and keep silent.

*No-go.*—Means "undecided." The judge takes off his hat and both flags go up.

#### EARLY ABBREVIATIONS IN COURSING DATA (USED BY STONEHENGE)

The colours are distinguished by :

bk. for black.	gr. for grey.
be. „ blue.	r. „ red.
bd. „ brindle.	fr. „ fawn and red.
br. „ brown.	y. „ yellow.
cr. „ cream.	tn. „ tanned.
dn. „ dun.	t. „ ticked.
f. „ fawn.	

w.bk., w.r., etc., when the white prevails over the colour.

bk.w., r.w., etc., when the colour prevails over the white.

#### EARLY MISCELLANEOUS ABBREVIATIONS (USED BY STONEHENGE)

d. stands for dog.	rh. stands for rough.
b. „ bitch.	dr. „ drawn.
br. l. „ broken leg.	dr. l. „ drawn lame.
p. „ puppy.	

"N.S." after a name means that the nominator is not naming his own dog but someone else's.

Illustrations on Plate 66 show some of the important Waterloo Cup winners and have been kindly loaned by the National Coursing Club.

#### ABBREVIATIONS USED TO-DAY

bk. for black	d. for dog.
be. „ blue	b. „ bitch
bd. „ brindle	p. „ puppy
f. „ fawn	dr. „ drawn
r. „ red	N.S. (same as given)
fr. „ fawn and red	
t. „ ticked	

The others as given by Stonehenge are no longer recognised officially. (For to-day's Coursing Rules see Appendix XXIV.)

#### ITALIAN GREYHOUND

"The small Italian greyhound," writes Bewick,<sup>1</sup> comparing the variety to the greyhound, "is not above half the size but perfectly similar in form. In shape is exquisitely beautiful and delicate. It is not common in this country, the climate being too rigorous for the extreme delicacy of its constitution." Taplin<sup>2</sup> states that it is "little known in England," and suffers from "a constitutional want of animation," and "seems to be entirely destitute of the powers naturally appertaining to that stock."<sup>3</sup> He continues that there has not been even a "plausible or satisfactory" suggestion as to the origin of the variety, "which seem only calculated to sooth the vanity, and indulge the frivolities of antiquated ladies," and that they are so deficient of the spirit, sagacity, fortitude, and self-defence that they are "not able to officiate in the services of domestic alarm or protection; and in consequence are dedicated over to the comforts of the tea-table, the fireside carpet, the luxurious indulgencies of the sofa, and the warm lap of the mistress." Then, continues Taplin, "it is averred that if one of these dogs is held up by its legs, against strong light, its intestines can be seen."

Colonel H. Smith only devotes six lines to "*Canis italicus*, Cm.," describing it as a breed of great beauty, but of little use so far as its speed is concerned and almost solely patronised by ladies; whilst Richardson<sup>4</sup> strikes a happier note by stating that such is the esteem in which the variety is held by the fair sex, that they fetch high prices, from 5 to 10 guineas, such prices being nothing out of the ordinary. A Mr. Nolan, of Bachelor's Walk, Dublin, had one 9 inches high, "a vast soul in a little carcass." In 1859 *Stonehenge* shows "Billy" and "Minnie"—"Billy," a black, better known as "Gowan's Billy," of 22 Dean Street, Fetter Lane, a son of "Gowan's Prince" out of "Fly" ("Barker's Fly," a bitch imported from Italy. The pedigree of this remarkably handsome dog is an interesting one, for "Prince" was by "Anderson's Bill," who was also from Italy, and his dam "Viola" was sired by "Anderson's Bill," and so was her mother and grandmother and great-grandmother. The breeding of "Gowan's Billy" was therefore that the grandsire, g. grandsire, g.g. grandsire, g.g.g. grandsire, and the g.g.g.g. grandsire were one and the same.

<sup>1</sup> 1790.

<sup>2</sup> 1803.

<sup>3</sup> He alludes to greyhounds.

<sup>4</sup> "Dogs, their Origin and Varieties," with illustrations on wood: 1s.

We read that this beautiful little dog "Gowan's Billy" stood  $14\frac{1}{2}$  inches high and weighed  $8\frac{3}{4}$  lb.; unfortunately his line is extinct. It is possible that he was not often used for stud purposes, or his powers in this direction failed, or it might have been his stock died, or, more likely still, no one took the trouble to register his progeny. We see in the first Kennel Club Stud Book only one, a bitch, "Rose," 3737, is entered with "Gowan's Billy" as her sire, but she and any sisters or brothers she possessed did not, so far as Stud Book history is concerned, leave a single descendant. So to all intents and purposes the famous "Gowan's Billy" became extinct. We read that he won a silver collar in 1856, and find, by examination of show entries, that after 1860 he never was shown, and it is possible that he died about then. In a "fancy" breed, appearances and especially the colour were of considerable importance. That is why, I suppose, *Stonehenge* tells us that the favourite colour was a golden fawn, whilst dove-coloured fawn came next. After this came the cream-coloured and the blue-fawn, or fawn with blue muzzle, the black-muzzled fawn, the black-muzzled red, the plain red, the yellow, the cream-coloured and the black, the white, the blue, the white and the fawn, and the white-and-red. At that time he states that "if the dog was whole-coloured, there was to be no white either on the toes or legs or tail, and that even a star on the breast was considered a defect, though not so great a defect as white on the feet." The weight then most desired was 6 to 8 lb., but "dogs of this weight had seldom perfect symmetry." In *Stonehenge's* 1867 book, under "Naturalised Foreign Dogs," he leaves it to Idstone, who, after describing the variety as "one of the most beautifully proportioned in creation, a smooth English greyhound in miniature," states that it varied slightly from it, only the eye was not to be so large and full and the chest was to be "wide but not round." The number of good specimens were very few, "and we have no hesitation in saying," he writes, "that it is the rarest dog of the day." Certainly if we refer to the Kennel Club Stud Book, entries were not large, being in 1874, 40; 1875, 2; 1876, 4; and at many of the early shows one or two entries only are made. The breed was not generally kept, possibly partly because of the exaggerated ideas as to its delicacy.

Idstone writes that in Staffordshire these Italian greyhounds had been crossed with the small bull-terrier; the results were often of a slate-blue or blue-tan, "very like the blue terrier known in London as the 'blue Peter.'" Walsh, eleven years later, places the Italian greyhound amongst the toy dogs, where it remains to-day. He tells us that to improve the stamina it was then being crossed with the toy terrier, which was in some cases resulting in large round skulls and short faces, and occasionally falling terrier-like ears, as well as often an increase in size. A Mr. Bourke's bitch "Molly," a perfect little creature, had, so we read, a head a trifle "bulletry," and this bitch and a Mr. Pern's "Bismarck" were the leading dogs. Not that the latter was equal to "Gowan's Billy." The illustrations of "Bismarck" show a typical Italian greyhound, but one apparently a little coarse in the neck and in the muzzle, when compared with the famous "Billy."

*Stonehenge*, in 1878, deals more fully with the variety, and gives the following description:

The colour, he writes, giving it a value of 15, "is largely to be taken into consideration, and I have consequently estimated it at a high figure. Fawns are now



far in the ascendant, and no other colour would the full value be accorded. I should place them as follows: 1, whole golden fawn (value 15); 2, whole dove-fawn (14); 3, whole blue-fawn (13); 4, whole stone-fawn (12); 5, whole cream-colour or white with black tips (10); 6, whole red or yellow, with black muzzles (6); 7, whole black, or plain red or yellow (5); 8, whole blue (4); 9, parti-coloured (0). A small star on the breast or a white toe takes off a point or two, according to the extent of white; but in all cases the toe-nails should be dark."

For symmetry he gives 15 and for size 15, bitches to be a little over 5 lb. and dogs 7 to 7½ lb. "Beyond these weights a specimen, however good in other respects, has little or no chance of a first prize in anything like a good class."

Dalziel, in 1879, gives "Wee Flower," 7763, a somewhat coarse type with very large ears. "No more elegant dog exists," he writes; "a refinement of form and a grace in every movement—a beauty of form matched with a delicacy of frame exquisitely attractive . . . tender handling alone is light enough to save from effacement the peach bloom that seems to adorn them." They are too fragile for the "rough touch of masculine hands," and though usually exhibited by men, Dalziel writes that he "experiences a feeling of relief" when he sees them "freed from the coarse and heavy hands of men exhibitors."

Though their native home is Italy, "under the azure skies, they are brought to the greatest perfection under clouds of dense London smoke, and in defiance of the raw, chilly mists" of their Scottish homes.

The imported dogs were coarse, but under the "magic skill of English breeders" they were greatly improved.

It was "at Edinburgh that shows saw the Italian greyhound in good strength," "one of the features of the gathering, for nowhere else is seen classes of this kind so strong in numbers and quality."<sup>1</sup> But from the Stud Book and Calendar it appears that only one class was allotted to the variety at the Edinburgh Shows of 1865, 1871, 1872, 1873, 1878, and 1879, in which the total entries present numbered 2 or 3. From 1873 to 1880, there was only one Edinburgh Show, in 1875, with 2 entries.

"The weight of an Italian," writes Dalziel, "should not exceed 7 lb.; and those between 4 lb. and 5 lb. are preferred." He blames a cross with the apple-headed toy terrier in order to reduce size as having caused the greatest defect at the time, that of a high forehead and prominent skull. He states that eyes too full and watery were not uncommon. In his 1889 edition "Wee Flower" again appears, and a coloured illustration of "Snipkin," an animal unlike "Billy" or the type of to-day. Mrs. Burke, of Barnsbury, was then winning many prizes with her "Silvey," "Silvery," and "Sophy." Then came the renowned "Molly,"<sup>2</sup> a dove-coloured bitch who did so well on the bench as to go to her grave literally burdened with honours. But the breed had not improved; indeed, "Billy" and "Molly" types had been weakened by crosses.

Mr. Shaw suggests that a terrier cross at some time more or less remote had been used, and this would account for the slight loss of character. Italian greyhounds, except for one here and there, were useless for sporting purposes. Walsh states that whippets are bred by crossing Italian greyhounds with greyhounds; whilst Mr. Shaw,

<sup>1</sup> He probably alludes to the Edinburgh Show of 1877, when he and Mr. William Lort were judging.

<sup>2</sup> We read that Mr. Macdonald refused 100 guineas for his "Molly" at the London Show in 1871.

in his "Book of the Dog," writes that "there is a great inclination on the part of Italian greyhounds, as in other toy dogs, to contract mange, blotch, and other skin diseases."

Probably the generally accepted, but I believe exaggerated, constitutional delicacy of the breed has made people chary of keeping them, so that the breed has merely kept going, and is to-day seldom met with.

Bitches are difficult to find, and though the breed has remarkable charm, they are not sufficiently well known to obtain the support they need. As to the antiquity of the variety, very little appears to be known. A picture of Queen Anne mounting a horse attended by a black servant and small Italian-like greyhounds is to be seen at Hampton Court. Van Dyck, Kneller, Watteau, show Italian greyhounds in their pictures.

There is a story of an Italian greyhound, after his master was beheaded, lying down on the body and dying there, but where this story originated, and whether there is any truth in it, I have not been able to discover. Several stories of a somewhat similar kind will be found in the Appendix, but no clue as to the variety of dog is given.

We read that Lobengula, the Matabele warrior-king, gave 200 head of cattle to a Mr. Murcombe Searelle for a dog of this breed. Its prancing manner pleased his Majesty exceedingly.

#### THE WHIPPET

The whippet, a small greyhound weighing some 8 to 28 lb. and standing about 18½ inches high, was developed for rabbit coursing and was undoubtedly bred in more than one way, the main line being probably the Italian greyhound crossed terrier, to obtain more stamina, whilst others were Italian greyhound crossed greyhound. At one time the terrier-crossed dogs were coarse, but subsequently, by using Italian greyhound, this coarseness was eliminated and the whippet of to-day is as beautiful in build and as graceful as the greyhound. It can therefore be set down that the whippet of to-day is greyhound, terrier, Italian greyhound, of which the former and latter predominate, whilst the terrier is to all intents and purposes bred out. At one time the breed was known as the "snap-dog," because of the habit dogs had when running to snap at each other.<sup>1</sup>

Often the whippet is alluded to as the "Hitalian" or "running" dog, the former suggesting its origin.

In 1891 the Kennel Club gave the breed a class in the Kennel Club Stud Book, and 5 entries were made.

In 1895 the Ladies' Kennel Club Show in the grounds at Ranelagh Club had whippet races, and similar races took place at Richmond. As a show dog the whippet has never become very popular.

I have been favoured with the following notes from G. F. Turton :

"Whippets are used for 'straight running' and rabbit coursing. For straight racing they are bred purely for speed. Racing takes place in an open track, or down strings, nets, or canvas, so that each is kept to its own 'lane.'

"Handicapping, except for championship events, is solely by merit (i.e. on known

<sup>1</sup> Or to snap and hold an object quickly.



performances), and so closely are they brought together by skilful handicappers that the writer has known two dogs to dead-heat from different marks four and five times in succession. Bitches are reputed faster than dogs by about three yards in 200; but at 25 lb. and upwards they appear to be nearer equality. For championship events the scale for handicapping is (broadly): over 23 lb., 1 yard to the lb.; 23 to 18 lb.,  $1\frac{1}{2}$  yards; 18 to 12 lb., 2 yards, and 11 lb. and under, 3 yards. 200 yards is the 'standard' distance (although races are run from 100 yards upwards), and a really first-class dog will cover that in round about 12 seconds, progressing by tremendous strides or 'jumps.' These, in a dog of 18 or 19 lb., will often exceed 15 feet.

"Heavy wagering often takes place and, needless to say, nothing is spared either in time, trouble, or money to bring dogs to the acme of physical condition—in which women play no mean part. Individual idiosyncrasies are studied; trials are run, timed by competent men 'holding' instruments that 'split' seconds to hundredths.

"Lancashire is undoubtedly the home of whippet racing, and Lancashire-bred dogs and their descendants are pre-eminent. At Oldham two cinder-tracks are of world-wide fame—Higginshaw and the Borough. Many other noted cinder-tracks are in existence. Some few dogs perform better on grass, but a good cinder-track is conceded to be 3 or 4 yards faster, and it is on the latter that all the best times are made.

"The many brilliant feats accomplished renders it almost invidious to mention individuals. Much depends on climatic and track conditions, the sizes of dogs, etc. Dogs of extreme speed and with the right temperaments and courage (important essentials) occasionally electrify the whippet racing world by sensational accomplishments. One such was 'Cowboy,' credited with 5 yards inside 12 seconds for 200 yards at 'The Snipe' ground, Audenshaw; another, 'Collier Lad,' 4 yards inside, in competition at the Borough ground, Oldham, and won with ease. It was claimed that 'Collier Lad,' if pressed, was equal to 8 yards inside. There is also Mr. Shelton's Lancashire black dog 'Moley Rat,'  $26\frac{1}{4}$  lb., the fastest dog of recent years, capable of 200 yards 2 yards inside 12 seconds. At ten months old 'Moley Rat' won a £100 handicap at Newcastle, and amongst other stakes £100 at Powderhall, £100 Gilmerton. At the age of seven he ran third in world's championships at Ranelagh, handicapped on strict yardage for weight terms. 'Moley Rat' was sired by that greatest running dog sire of all time, 'Tom from Heyside,' who has produced several world champions and whose progeny and descendants have accounted for some hundreds of handicaps.

"For rabbit coursing a type of whippet somewhat different from the exponents of extreme speed on a track is required, and with the object of intensifying stamina and courage other blood has at times been introduced—that of bull and Bedlington terriers, as examples.

"Matches and sweepstakes are held in enclosed grounds, the dogs handicapped either according to weight or height. Matches may be for the best of any number of courses up to 21, and on occasion even 31. Rabbits are allowed usually 60 yards 'law,' and a close hard match with good fast rabbits is both a severe test of condition and of courage.

"The achievements of many men and dogs famous in this sport could be given if space permitted,"—amongst others is Mr. Steve Myers, of Bolton, and his "Hattie."





SALUKIS HUNTING. A beautifully coloured Turkish bottle (16th century). *British Museum.*



TYPICAL SALUKIS. Indra, King of the Celestials, appears as a low-caste man with a number of dogs, at the request of Krishna. From a 16th century painting (Mughal School) in the collection of His Highness the Maharajah of Jaipur, by kind permission. [192b



GREYHOUNDS OR SALUKI TYPES DEPICTED IN PERSIAN PAINTINGS (about 1400). (Left) THE DOG WORSHIPPER. See Appendix XXIII. From the collection of His Highness the Maharejah of Jaipur, by kind permission.



GREYHOUNDS OR SALUKI TYPES DEPICTED IN PERSIAN PAINTINGS (about 1400). (Left) THE DOG WORSHIPPER. See Appendix XXIII. From the collection of His Highness the Maharejah of Jaipur, by kind permission.





(Left) above. "NAFISOAH," A SALUKI OF REMARKABLE CHARACTER. The property of the Hon. Florence Amherst; below. AFGHAN HOUNDS, "KIHAN OF GHAZNI," AND "SIRDAR," The property of Mrs. M. Amps, of Penn. (Right) A HEAD STUDY OF "SIRDAR OF GHAZNI," 192d]

## CHAPTER IV

### VARIETIES OF THE GREYHOUND FAMILY

#### THE SALUKI OR GAZELLE-HOUND<sup>1</sup>

THE very name conjures a picture of yellow sands and the vivid glorious colours of the unchanging East. For though Arabia has indeed seen "many strange vicissitudes and many histories known," yet in the far-away deserts the daily life of the nomadic tribes remains unchanged; a picture of to-day is a picture of bygone centuries, of flocks and camels, of crawling caravans, of heated arguments, of tribal wars; of horses, greyhounds, and the capture and death of antelopes and other game.

It is claimed that the Saluki is the oldest pure breed in the world; their origin is of course unknown. Special interest attaches thereto, for research shows that the antiquity ascribed to the breed is not imagined, but can be proved by the many glimpses that can be obtained by following the paths and by-paths taken by students of archæology, literature, and art, and by the sportsman and lover of dogs. The reason for their discovery in such varied fields lies in the fact that Arabia has been on the fringe of, and connected in some degree with, all the civilised nations of the world—Egypt, Persia, Babylonia, Mongolia, Greece, Rome, and Europe—the last example being our own Great War, which has brought us into closer touch with Iraq.

Whenever the Saluki figures amid these changing scenes, it is as something greatly valued. They have been kept pure and pedigree-bred from time immemorial in the deserts of Arabia, in Syria, the Sahara, and Egypt, and away to beyond Persia. For many thousands of years they have been used to hunt gazelles in the deserts, and with the horses of their masters have been greatly prized. Typical Salukis are depicted on the Tombs of ancient Egypt, notably in a procession on the Tomb of Rekhma-re,<sup>2</sup> 1400 B.C. They appear at Hierakonpolis as early as 3600 B.C., and frequently in later periods. Old Persian pictures show them in many situations, but always very much Salukis. They are especially noticeable in the beautiful miniature paintings of the Mogul period. It is remarkable how like the present-day Salukis they are, especially in the hind limbs.

Tradition has it that the Saluki originally came with the horses from Syria; the Arabs claim to have introduced it into Egypt through their traffic with that country. To confirm this, some of the earliest records of the breed are obtained there. The word *slughi* is colloquial Arabic, in classical Arabic *saluki*; to the Arab it means a "hound" or "greyhound," and not a "kelb," the despised dog of Islam. The Arab speaks of the Slughi as *el hor* ("the noble one"). According to the Arab, the name is derived from Saluk, a long-since-vanished town in Southern Arabia, once famous for its armour and its hounds, or from "Seleukia," of the Greek Empire in Syria. The word *slughi* represents the male, the female being *slughiya*. The classical *saluki* means the male, whilst *silaija* stands for the female. The plural is *salag*.

The Bedawin, relying as they do for much of their food on wild animals, have carefully bred Salukis from time immemorial. They have a great love for these dogs,

<sup>1</sup> The reader is also referred to the Domesticated Dog, Dogs in Egypt and Dogs in Ancient Chinese Times chapters (pp. 38, 52 and 59).

<sup>2</sup> The Grand Vizier of Thothmes III. A painting of these dogs, done for the Hon. Florence Amherst by Mr. Howard Carter, is shown on Plate 13.

the only canines to enjoy the esteem of their masters. The Arabs give them interesting and poetical names; such names as "Laaman" ("a flash of light" or "as swift as light") or anything denoting speed are most popular. An Arab speaks of the hounds in the abstract way typical of his race and their surroundings. He says, "He is my butcher; he makes me independent of imports and importers"; "My Saluki will catch gazelle and bring them down, even if they should gallop over the stars."<sup>1</sup> It is said, "When a Saluki perceives a gazelle cropping a blade of grass he overtakes her before she has time to swallow what she already holds in her mouth."

"I let him go, my heart darts out with him, over hill and dale and over the sands, until I see him overtake his prey, and I hear my hunting companions at my side exclaim, 'A-ah, yours is indeed a wonderful Saluki!'"<sup>2</sup>

There is a story of a puppy looted from a tribe on the Persian Gulf and taken well beyond Mecca. It can be pictured as being hurriedly concealed and then carried away on a fleet Arab steed. The descendants of that puppy close to the Persian Gulf are especially prized; "they are better than any other," the (Umtair) Meteyr tribe will tell you. Mussulmans believe that these hounds will be allowed in the next world.<sup>3</sup>

The Saluki, in Arabia, is classed into four varieties, the two most distinctive being the "Shami" or Syrian, smooth-coated, but with feathered ears and tail and slight feathering on the legs and between the toes; and the "Nejdi," a perfectly smooth variety with no feathering.

Europeans, having found the feathered variety in Persia, occasionally speak of it as the Persian.<sup>4</sup> The natives of Persia name the breed "Tazi," which means "Arab"; the same word they also apply to the Arab horse, denoting that the original stock is Arabian. These dogs are often larger and heavier than the average "Shami."

Europeans who visited Persia during the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries write of these dogs as a "Persian greyhound." Arabistan and Khorassan, both settled to a great extent by nomadic Arab tribes, are the districts where they are said to have been first known in Persia.<sup>5</sup> In North Africa the "Nejdi" variety is the best known, supposed to have been brought there by migrating bands of Arabs, or, as is popularly believed, by the semi-mythical tribe of the Beni Hilal. These are a large smooth-coated type well known in the Sahara. The fact that the Saluki has remained free from crosses is the result of the great expanse of uninhabited lands which surround the Arab, who thus, in a world of his own, has continued to breed his favourite type of hound without the interference of outside influences. This adds a special and very great value to the breed, as it affords a study in heredity from countless centuries.

Each tribe specialised in its particular type of dog, being anxious to have something equal to, or if possible better than, that kept by a neighbouring people.

In certain districts one colour will predominate, but as the Arabs are constantly

<sup>1</sup> From a translation (the Hon. Florence Amherst).

<sup>2</sup> The Hon. Florence Amherst.

<sup>3</sup> "And will give evidence against men" (Smith).

<sup>4</sup> Both *Stonehenge* and Dalziel describe the breed as the Persian greyhound (see p. 199).

<sup>5</sup> Arab tribes still exist in this area.



moving farther and farther over the desert, the colour of the dogs goes more with certain tribes than certain areas. There are several colours: "ripe corn," golden, blacks—which have always the same tan markings—whites, and parti-coloured.

The great Anezieh tribe have a strain of which they are particularly proud, a remarkably fast Saluki, small, and of a pale biscuit colour. There is a well-known white strain in Maan.

In their desert home Saluki puppies are cared for with the children, and in moving camp are often placed on camel-back.<sup>1</sup> The hound may share the luxury of his master's tent, which is denied to any other dog. He is often carried on the front of his owner's saddle, to rest and be readily available for spying game. When galloping beside their master, they will keep running up to rising ground for this same reason. They have extremely keen sight. An Arab praising his favourite hawk observed, "Eyes like a Saluki." Outside the tents the Saluki plays with the sheikh's pet gazelle, both playmates handsomely decorated with coloured beads and amulets round the neck to ward off the "evil eye."

When the bitch has puppies, the litter is never lost sight of for an instant.<sup>2</sup> The women will sometimes give their own milk to them. Visitors arrive in troops, their numbers varying according to the reputation of the mother-dog. They surround the owner, offering him dates, kouskoussou,<sup>3</sup> etc. There is no sort of flattery they will not lavish upon him in the hope of obtaining a puppy. The owner will not decide which he will keep until he has discovered which of the puppies is seen to get on the back of another when removed from its habitual position. If it returns to its old position each time for seven consecutive days, the owner builds his hopes upon that puppy. We read that "he would not accept a negress in exchange."<sup>4</sup> They also value the first, third, and fifth puppies—all the odd numbers. She-goats are set aside for their nourishment, camels' milk<sup>5</sup> is also used and thickened with dates or kouskoussou, and some hunters prefer sheep's milk for giving strength.

When the puppies are three or four months old their education commences, and jerboas or rats are driven out for them to catch. At this early age they are often trained with a young falcon, the puppy and "eyas" being educated together. Then at six months old they are tried on hares, and afterwards on young gazelles. At twelve months old the Saluki has nearly reached full strength, and his scent is developed, but he follows the gazelle by sight, for it is only when he has reached fifteen to eighteen months that he is regularly allowed to hunt. At two years old he should be fully qualified.

As with all other animals the Bedawin has a preference for the female Saluki. They are more easy to rear and more adaptable than the dog, and are said to have better staying powers and to endure the heat better. The females are always smaller than the dogs. He is said to be able to travel at 32 yards per second, which is over 43 miles an hour.

When hunting at first the dog is held in leash—often with great difficulty, for the Arabs say that when the hound scents the game, his muscular power becomes so great that if he stiffens himself upon his paws a man can hardly make him lift a leg. On sighting a herd of gazelles, the Saluki, they say, trembles with joy, and

<sup>1</sup> Doughty, "Arabia Desert."

<sup>4</sup> Colonel H. Smith.

<sup>2</sup> Martin.

<sup>5</sup> Some prefer to use sheep's milk.

<sup>3</sup> Sweet Cielda.

looks up at his master, who cries to him, "Ah, son of a Jew! thou canst not say this time that thou didst not see them." The hunter, holding back the dog, tries to get within 500 yards<sup>1</sup> of the gazelles, then he lets the dog free to bound forward. At first, if need be, the hound tries to hide himself, stooping down and following a circuitous course, until when within easy reach he springs forward and picking out his victim, the finest male in the herd, begins to run it down. (Notice the account of the gazehound.) When the gazelle is taken and cut up, some of the flesh is thrown to the hound.

The pursuit of the gazelle is generally undertaken with the aid of a hawk. This sport of coursing with falcon and greyhound has been known for centuries, and is still practised in the desert, a district where gazelle abound. It is a favourite sport of the Bedawin sheikhs and princes of the East. The rider carries his hawk on his wrist, and when gazelle are sighted, the hawk is flown (generally a "Saker" falcon) and the Saluki is slipped. The Saluki, by training, is taught to pursue the same animal as the hawk. When the hawk has struck its prey, the Saluki holds it down till the hunters come up. These riders on their swift Arab horses have been speeding over sand, and often dangerously rough ground, with their eyes fixed on the hawk, which adds great zest to the chase. So well are the hounds trained to work with the hawk that if the scrub is thick where they are pursuing hares, they sometimes follow entirely by watching the bird's flight.

It needs a good dog to catch a gazelle on a long course unaided by a hawk.

Not all Salukis will attack jackal. A plucky little Saluki is described by an English sportsman hunting with one from the Anizieh tribe. "She was run into by a more clumsy dog as she was turning a jack which had jinked, and her fore leg was broken close to the shoulder, in spite of which she went on and killed the jackal single-handed."<sup>2</sup>

It is stated that "a well-bred Saluki will not drink from a dirty vessel and will refuse milk in which a hand has been dipped." The Salukis accompany their master on visits, and receive the same hospitality as he does, a portion of every dish. "O hound," an Arab will say, "listen to me!—you must buy me some meat; I am tired of eating dates." On the death of a Saluki the whole tent goes into mourning, women and children bewailing him as if he were one of the family. Gazelle-hounds are usually given as gifts of great value to favoured and honoured friends. Occasionally some are exchanged for camels, sheep, or horses, but they are rarely sold. Their value varies: one that can catch with ease the smaller gazelle is sold for a lower price than is expected for one that can catch a gazelle of greater strength. Those which can catch the largest size are worth a she-camel, but one that can overtake the "rim," a long-horned gazelle with a white belly and thighs, is worth the very best horse.

The Arab is said to enumerate twenty-six special points in choosing a Saluki, and looking primarily to those which govern speed and endurance. Details such as that the tail, when passed under the thigh, should reach the backbone are considered important.<sup>3</sup> It was customary to "fire" the forearms in five lines, to harden the muscles of a dog not considered fast enough.

The Bedawin are said to tie a ball of rag dipped in crude oil round the neck of

<sup>1</sup> Colonel H. Smith.

<sup>2</sup> Dogs' wounds are dressed with henna.

<sup>3</sup> The Arab likes to find the width of four fingers between the ilia (Colonel H. Smith).



the Saluki, as a protection against bad smells. By some tribes the lower part of the ear is cut off, to lessen the risk of being torn in encounters with jackals. One writer describes how he had sometimes seen "a spirited horse break loose and run away at full speed, when one of these dogs has set after him like an arrow, and soon getting ahead of him, taken an opportunity of seizing the bridle in his teeth, which he held so firmly that although he was of course not strong enough to stop the horse, yet, as he was dragged along, he continued to pull and confine the horse, so as to hinder him very much, till some person was able to overtake and secure him."<sup>1</sup> It has been stated (in Cassell's "Book of the Dog") that the scattered tribe of the Soleyb, hunters of the desert, who live in parts of Syria and Mesopotamia, are especially famed as breeders of slughis.

Salukis, we are told, were brought into Europe by the Crusaders, and the portrait of Duke Henry of Saxony, known as "the Pious," and an enthusiastic destroyer of infidels, is seen with one of these hounds. He wears the pilgrim's badge, the dog bearing a similar design on his collar.

The Arab on his horse, with his gun at his side and his Saluki on his saddle, is out on the sand hunting as you are reading this story; or perhaps it is night, and you will hear the murmur of voices which carry through the still air the stories of great deeds done by dogs renowned in the books of recollection of these story-telling people. Accounts are handed down from father to son, and passed on in a story which is never written, but never forgotten. These tales are very much the same, how a puppy brought down a gazelle unaided when six months old, how another caught a fast Arab steed which broke away; and then perhaps you will hear some old Arab tell again the story of an old sheikh, blind and near his death, not knowing whether it is night or day, in the desert, going out to feel the strain on the leash, the quiver of excitement, that eagerness to be off just once again, and always once again.

In Turkey the Saluki was used several hundred years ago and is described in early Turkish works. In 1780 a dog of Saluki type is shown by Riedel and named Turkish (Plate 50).

The Saluki was unknown in England, except for an occasional dog exhibited more in the light of an "unknown" rarity, until his first introduction in 1895, when a dog and a bitch puppy were presented by Mr. W. Jennings-Bramley to the Hon. Florence Amherst.<sup>2</sup> They had been obtained from the Bedawin tribe of Tahawi (in the district of Selia and Ismailia, Egypt, famous for their Syrian stock). On their arrival the puppies were under ten months old. Miss Amherst found no signs of delicacy, and they soon proved themselves to be as hardy and as capable of standing our often erratic climate as any other breed. These two, "Laaman" ("a flash," or better, perhaps, "the swift glance of a lady's eye") and "Ayesha" (after the second wife of Mahomet), both named by the Arab breeder Saud and Magelli his brother, grew up to be of a pure golden colour and were greatly admired. It was from this pair that "Sama" was bred (a traditional name meaning "the sky"). The breeding of Laaman and Ayesha was said to be the same as that in the kennels of the Shah of Persia. Until 1922 that breed had no class of its own. For some years the Salukis made occasional appearances in the "foreign variety" classes and in special classes arranged by Miss Amherst in order to introduce the breed here.

<sup>1</sup> The Saluki is trained to hold down the gazelle so that the hunter can kill it according to Mohammedan law.

<sup>2</sup> It is greatly due to the work of the Hon. Florence Amherst that the breed has made so much headway.



During those early days of Saluki history on the British show-bench Miss Amherst's dog "Sultan" was a great winner of remarkable stamp, being one of the fastest desert varieties. He stood on excellent legs and was well proportioned and had an expression of remarkable charm, which is one of the Arab characteristics of the breed. His power of stamping his character on his progeny was such that his strain is recognised as one of the powers in the breed in England.

It was about the same time that Miss Lucy Bethel, of Newton Kyme, Tadcaster, imported from Syria, Wadi Sirhan, beyond Jordan, a bitch, "Reish." From this bitch, by "Laaman," came "Riechan" and many of the present-day dogs and bitches.

Again, later, the Hon. Florence Amherst obtained through friends in Alexandria, from the Beni Hasan tribe (a people inhabiting the Western Desert), a bitch golden in colour, marked with white, named "Valda,"<sup>1</sup> also a dog from Bethlehem, and a pair from the Hauran where the Druses live in the Lejae, an area situated on the south-east of Damascus and north of Bosra, from the Sheikh Atrash.

Major-General Sir Reginald Hoskins, K.C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O., brought a pair from Mesopotamia (one of them, "Wallah," a small bitch of the smooth variety).

The chief importers after the War were Brigadier-General F. Lance (the first Vice-President of the Saluki Club<sup>2</sup>), Miss S. Kerrison,<sup>3</sup> Major Bayne-Jardine, Major H. Bentinck, Captain Cartwright, Mrs. Foster Mitchell, Mrs. Armstrong, Mr. Vereker-Cowley, Miss J. Mitchell.

Many noted owners of kennels took up the breed and imported fresh stock, including Mrs. Crouch (last famous for her remarkable poodles: see Section VI, Chapter I), Miss Doxford (of deerhound fame), Miss Grey (of Shetland sheep-dogs), and Mrs. Barr (the breed of Irish wolfhounds). Other people returning from the East added to the stock in the country.

On July 1, 1923, the breed was accepted by the Kennel Club as a British breed, and the first show after the registration was the Crystal Palace of September 1923, when appeared in the class:

#### *Winners of Challenge Certificates, 1923*

- "Orchard Shahin," 1370 D.D. (b.), Mrs. W. L. Crouch, 1.
- "Sarona Kelb," 1369 D.D. (d.), Mrs. F. F. Lance, 1.

#### 1924

- Ch. "Orchard Shahin," 1370 D.D., Mrs. Crouch, 3.
- "Yaffa," 560 E.E. (d.), Mrs. Crouch, 1.
- "Alla of Ruritania," 883 E.E. (d.), Miss Doxford, 2.
- Ch. "Sarona Kelb," 1369 D.D. (d.), Mrs. G. M. Lance, 4.
- "Sarona Nada," 196 E.E. (b.), Mrs. G. M. Lance, 1.
- "Zobeid," 880 E.E. (d.), Hon. Florence Amherst, 1.

<sup>1</sup> The markings are curious, in that one leg has a greater area of white than the other, and that dogs from far-separated areas have been found to have identical markings.

<sup>2</sup> The Club was formed in 1912. The officers were: President, the Hon. Florence Amherst; Vice-President, Brigadier-General Lance; Hon. Sec., Mrs. Lance (through whose initiative the Saluki Club was formed); Hon. Treasurer, Mr. Crouch.

<sup>3</sup> "Zobaid" and "Malik." Two remarkable dogs for symmetry and quality.

1925

Total number of Challenge Certificates won :

Ch. "Sarona Kelb" (9).

Ch. "Orchard Shahin" (4).

Ch. "Zobeid" (3).

Among the most valuable of the imported Salukis are the black-and-tan pair, "Sarona Kelb" and "Sarona Sarona," imported by Brigadier-General Lance, a golden pair ("Kataf" and "Reeshan") also imported by this officer, and a white ("Safedi") from Maan; Mr. Vereker-Cowley's pair from Mesopotamia, a golden and a cream ("Malik-el-Zobair" and "Zobeida-el-Zobair"). Miss Doxford's "Sarawan of Ruritania" is a typical grizzle-and-white. "Hama of Homs" (with ears cut across, a practice with certain native hunters), a well-known cream bitch, was imported by Major B. Jardine, and is now owned by Mrs. Barr, the wolfhound breeder. Major Bentinck's "Reishan" and "Feena of Kurdistan" are black-and-white. Miss J. Mitchell's "Nablous" strain (brown-grizzle) are of light fast build.

*From the "Diwan of Abu Nuwas," Court Poet and Jester, A.D. 800<sup>1</sup>*

"If one liked, one could join his head and his feet in his collar, and if he stretches himself, his length numbers full ten spans."

"It is as though behind the place where his eyelashes meet there are burning coals constantly kindled."

"His master is to him as a slave; at night he is the nearest to his cradle, and if the dog is naked he covers him with his cloak."

"He runs about on the leash like a proud man. We urged him on, and he hastened to the attack. He saw the gazelle on a high mound. My heart was pulled out. I let him go, and he passed after him, caring not for hill or dale, or sand, and overtook him on the most difficult of hills, and someone standing by me said, 'How cunning is this noble dog.' The death of the gazelle and the mountain-goat has been ordained."

"He counts the dark days as one of his days, and he went forth as one chilled in his garments, before the heat awoke from its sleep."

"Like a hawk swooping on sand-grouse, he peels the skin of the earth with four feet. He runs so swift! They do not touch the earth as he runs. In his eagerness his feet have scratched his armpits, and putting and pulling of his arms to his sides have cut his ears; in his eagerness the dust is cut from round him."

### *Earlier History*

Stonehenge gives a note on the breed in his work of 1889, and Dalziel in his work of 1880. Stonehenge describes the breed: "The Persian greyhound is about 24 inches high. The ears are pendulous like those of the Grecian dog, and hairy like those of the English setter; but in other respects he resembles the English smooth greyhound, with the exception of the tail, which may be compared to that of a silky-coated setter."

Dalziel states the most beautiful specimen he had seen was Mr. H. Allan's "Tierma," "a delicate fawn, standing 22 inches to 23 inches at the shoulder. 'Tierma' has often been exhibited, and her great beauty has always secured her a first prize on these occasions."

<sup>1</sup> For these translations I am indebted to the Hon. Florence Amherst.

The show points of the breed to-day are as follows :

Head long, narrow, wide between ears (not domed), slight stop. Ears long, hang close to skull, covered with long, silky hair. Eyes dark to hazel, oval, large (not prominent). Nose black or liver. Teeth strong, level. Neck long, supple, muscular. Chest deep and moderately narrow. Shoulder sloping, set well back, muscular (not coarse). Fore legs straight, long from elbow to knee. Hind quarters strong, hip-bones wide apart, stifle moderately bent, hocks low. Back moderately broad, muscles slightly arched over loin. Feet moderate length, toes long, well arched (not splayed), well feathered between toes. Tail set low, carried in a curve, well feathered on under-side with long silky hair (not bushy). Coat soft, silky; slight woolly feather on shoulders and thighs, allowed slight feather on legs and back of thighs. The *smooth variety* same, but coat minus feathering, colour white, cream, fawn, golden, red, grizzle-and-tan, white-black-and-tan, black-and-tan. Height 23-28 inches, weight about 42 lb.

The illustrations on Plates 13 and 72 are of dogs the property of the Hon. Florence Amherst, of Foulton, Norfolk, and of 6 William Street, Knightsbridge. The names of the dogs are stated below the photographs, whilst a study of a Saluki puppy is also given.

#### AFGHAN HOUNDS

We can go back to when Lieutenant Younghusband, of the Guides, took back with him, with the regiment on its move to India, some Afghan hounds to use for coursing at Marden. It is quite possible, as a well-known authority suggested to me, that the Saluki was brought into Afghanistan by the Syrians and developed to greater strength and heavier coat.

Information as to the earlier history of the breed is rare. The Hon. Mountstuart Elphinstone, in 1815, in his "Account of the Kingdom of Caubul and its Dependencies," writes: "The dogs of Afghanistan deserve to be mentioned. Their greyhounds are excellent; they are bred in great numbers, particularly among the pastoral tribes, who are much attached to hunting." Major Lumsden, of the Guides, also later mentions that the Afghans kept a variety of greyhound, in the appendix to his book. But otherwise works examined dealing with Afghanistan contain no mention of these hounds; and there is considerable difficulty in obtaining information from the Afghans.

The hound is of a distinctive type of the Eastern group of the greyhound family, a heavier and somewhat altered one, but clearly of the same family containing the Saluki of the Sahara.

The puppies when young show no signs of the heavy, fleecy coat of the adult. The long type of head, Mrs. Amps writes me, starts to develop at a month old in the East, but in England the development may be slower.

The Afghan was exhibited for the first time at Cruft's in 1910, in the "foreign and other variety" class. "Zardin," who appeared there, caused considerable comment, on account of his strange appearance; no such coat had been seen before.

The coat varies according to the season. The shedding of the coat is gradual in the spring, and becomes thicker with the approach of winter, and it was found that when moving hounds from the warmer parts of India into the hills, that within



a month the coats had perceptibly thickened.<sup>1</sup> The bitch carries more coat than the dog, and the coat of both is of a fine, silky wool. They are exceptionally hardy under conditions which would try most other varieties. In a letter to me Mrs. Amps writes that on trekking to Lesser Thibet 20 or 30 miles daily at altitudes varying from 3,000 to 17,000 feet, the dogs showed no signs of fatigue, and when crossing the Yarnbeur Pass, at the end of a long journey, they dashed up the mountain-side after marmot.

The history of the breed is unknown. They have been kept by the Afghan shikaris and used by the maleks and governors of the towns and villages when hunting. The Afghans will tell you with all seriousness that it was their breed taken into the Ark by Noah. As far as can be ascertained, the type has not altered within the memory of man. They vary according to district, in some places heavier or lighter, depending on whether they are required for small or large game.

There are certain differences between the Afghan hound and the Saluki. Afghan hounds are much heavier and more sturdily built, carrying a stronger and more profuse coat. The feathering on the ears and legs and tail is distinctive, and there is also the topknot of long silky hair, which the Saluki does not possess. The head on examination has very little stop.

The Afghan hounds are also known as Cabul dogs, or Barukhzy. The suffix "zai" means "son of." The Barakzai are an important family in Afghan history.

The native chiefs and shikaris have so carefully guarded the breed that it is said that their present shyness is the outcome. Kept in seclusion and carefully looked after as if they were Arabian mares, they have in consequence become timid, but this timidity is not exactly lack of courage.

One has been known to kill a leopard. Hunting is done in couples, the dog tackling the throat and the bitch the hind parts of the quarry.<sup>2</sup>

The Afghan dog stands about 28 inches high at the shoulder, the bitch 26 inches; the dog weighs about 66 lb.

If brought to England under a year old, Afghan hounds are sometimes affected in their development.<sup>1</sup>

The points of the Afghan hound, according to the latest ruling, are:

Skull oval, little or no stop, occiput bone pronounced, jaw long. Neck long, strong, and arched, shoulders sloping and set well back. Back strong, slightly arched, well ribbed and tucked up under loin. Great length between elbow and ankle, hip and hock. Feet long. Coat on hind quarters, flanks, on ribs and fore quarters, distinctly heavy; on back short and coarser; on head long silky tuft; on feet long and soft. Colour brindle, fawn, red, cream, white. Black muzzles and black tips to feathering of ears frequent in brindles, fawns, and reds.

The illustrations are a head study of "Sirdar of Ghazni," a red-fawn dog, and of "Khan of Ghazni" and "Sirdar of Ghazni," the property of Mrs. M. Amps, of the Ghazni Kennels, Ambleside, Penn, imported from her kennels at Cabul.

#### DEERHOUNDS AND IRISH WOLFHOUSES

In the original work of Hector Boethius, "The History of Scotland," known as "Pitcottie's History, the first edition (published in Latin) translated into English

<sup>1</sup> Mrs. Amps.

<sup>2</sup> "Dogs, and How to Know Them."

by Bellenden,<sup>1</sup> we find that the wolves were a nuisance to the tame animals, and that dogs of "marvellous nature," of three kinds, were to be found there but not in any other part of the world. They first were sure, hardy, and swift, and were quite possibly deerhounds, though there is no more evidence than this; the second, the rache, were used for finding birds, etc., by scent; and the third the "sleuthhoundis." The word deerhoundis (or deerhound or greyhound) does not appear in the chapter. Later in the part dealing with King "Craithlynt" and how the "Scottis and pichtis" fell out whilst hunting, we read that the Pichtis in "thair huntynge" used "strang" nets and drove the "hertis" into these nets, and that the "Scotties" dogs were better than those of the Picts. The Picts then slew the deer with arrows and darts, "and that the Scottis na thyng content of this game (because it was contrai thair lawis) hunted the pray with swift hounds." The Picts, finding their hounds of less value than the Scottish, desired certain of every kind of hound to be given them. Their wish was fulfilled, and they perhaps unwisely "stale ane certaine houndis, one more speedy than any other," and the "Master of hutis" (Hunting?) missing the hound hurriedly set out to reclaim it. Argument followed, the Master was killed, and the nobles and commoners of Scotland, attempting to take revenge, set upon the Pichtis. In this unhappy "bergane," we read, were slain "60 Scott gentlemen" with great numbers of commoners and of the Picts more than 100.

Unfortunately Boethius gives no description of the swift dog, which caused such serious consequences; and except for these allusions to dogs, there seems to be no other. This volume ends on the marriage of Margaret, the daughter of King James I, to the Dauphin of France.

In a 1575 *Latin* edition the work ends with the birth of James II of Scotland.

The Holinshed "Chronicle" edition of 1536 does not include the description of Scotland, and in the Craithlynt story the word "greyhound" is not used; but in the 1577 edition the history goes up to 1571. It is stated to be "now translated finally into English, for the benefite of such as are studious in the Histories." In the Craithlynt story the word "greyhounds" appears. In the volume on the section dealing with the description of Scotland, and on the "properties of sundry Scottish Dogges" the writer describes the first as a hound of great swiftness, hardiness, and strength, fierce and cruel on all wild beasts and against thieves that may offer their master violence. I made this search through the various editions of the history to discover the lines given by Dalziel,<sup>2</sup> which he states were contained in the text of Pitscottie's "History of Scotland," published about 1600 and referring to

<sup>1</sup> "Heir beginnis the hystory and cronikles of Scotland" (in red print). The work ends with: "Heir endis the hystory and croniklis of Scotland, with the Cosmography and dyscription thair of, Compilit be the noble clerk maister Hector Boece channon of Aberdene. Translatit laity in our vulgar and commoun langage, be maister Johne Bellenden Archdeacon of Murray. And Imprintit in Edinburgh, be me Thomas Davidson, prenter to the Kyngis noble grace. Cum privilegio."

<sup>2</sup> These lines are: "The 'Irish greyhounds' mentioned by Taylor in 1620 were most certainly deerhounds; but, to save any quibbling on terms, I will now proceed to show that the specific word 'deerhound' was used long ago, before any degeneracy from the wolfdog can be supposed. In Pitscottie's 'History of Scotland,' published about 1600, occurs the following passage: 'The King (A.D. 1528) desired all gentlemen that had dogges that war guid to bring thame to hunt in the saidis boundis, quhilk the most part of the noblemen of the Highlandis did, sick as the Earles of Huntlie, Argyle, and Athol, who brought their deir houndis with thame and hunted with his majestie.'"



an incident of 1528. But none of these histories, as we have seen, except the Holinshed "Chronicle," covers this date, and none of them contains the text described.

But it so happened that in 1728 Robert Linsay, who is named "of Pitscottie" on the title-page, wrote his history of Scotland entitled "Chronicles of Scotland." In this work there is a somewhat similar passage to that given by Dalziel and later authorities, but differing in the most important detail, that neither the word "dierhoundis" nor "deerhound" nor even "greyhound" occurs. This passage reads:

"And also warned all Gentlemen that had good Dogs to bring them, that he might hunt in the said country, as he pleased, the whilk, the Earl of Argyle, the Earl of Huntley, the Earl of Athole, and so all the rest of the Gentlemen of the Highland did, and brought their Hounds with them in like manner, to hunt with the King, as he pleased."

In an 1814 edition of Robert Linsay's work<sup>1</sup> is the quotation given by Dalziel, and so constantly repeated as evidence that the deerhound was so named previous to 1600 (!).

We see from this that the word "dierhoundis" is first used, as far as history shows, in 1814, to add, it must be supposed, local colour to a revision of an older work.

The story of James I's letter to Anne, in reference to the shooting of the King's favourite hound, because of which his Majesty sent her a legacy in the form of a jewel value, we read, £1,000, and a letter "not to be troubled as he would love her none the worse," occurs in Nichol's "Progress of James II," and not in Arthur Wilson's work, to which it is constantly referred.

In the 1577 edition of the Holinshed "chronicles" is a woodcut of a huntsman or soldier with a large greyhound by his side. Though it is in the section devoted to Scotland, it does not follow that it is designed to show a Scottish dog, for illustrations are constantly reproduced in other sections dealing with England and Ireland. Probably the first evidence of a deerhound is a woodcut of a rough-haired dog in Aldrovandus, for Conrad Gesner's dog, so frequently stated to be the first illustration of a deerhound, is a typical greyhound, drawn, according to the description of Dame Berners, "headed like a snake, and necked like a drake, and tailed like a rat." Below the Aldrovandus illustration given on Plate 35 are the words: "Canis Leporarius hirsutus albus cum caepa canina, seu hyacintho Dioscoridio."

Though Aldrovandus refers to Hector Boethius and the three species of dogs described by him, he does not describe the rough-haired greyhound illustrated to be the swift dog of Scotland, but as a white hairy greyhound.

Pennant visited Scotland in 1769, and at Gordon Castle saw "a true Highland greyhound," which had become very scarce. "It was of large size, strong, deep-chested, and covered with very long and rough hair." It had been used, so Pennant informs us, "in large numbers at the magnificent stag chases by the powerful chieftains."

Dr. Johnson, alluding to the dogs in the Isle of Skye on his historic visit<sup>2</sup> (a work

<sup>1</sup> "The History is a very singular and tantalising work"; "The inaccuracy and confusion of dates are exasperating, and exceed that of the worst medieval chronicle"; "It can scarcely be deemed a trustworthy history." ("Dictionary of National Biography," 1893.)

<sup>2</sup> Johnson's "Tour of the Hebrides."



that greatly perturbed Scottish opinion), tells us "that a race of brindle greyhounds, larger and stronger than those with which we course hares," were to be seen there.

There is unfortunately nothing more to be noted until the Earl de Folcville,<sup>1</sup> greatly interested in the breed, always anxious to collect the very best, had his noted Colonsay strain. He made it a rule that no puppy was to be preserved beyond the number required for his deer-forest, and he only occasionally gave the honour to a chosen friend of having a puppy supplied him. At the end of each season his lordship moved from his estate, and with him went his dogs in a van or vans, specially constructed. On the death of the Earl, the strain was practically at an end, probably because his lordship's powers and interest had lapsed and because of the too close breeding which had been followed.

In Scrope's work (1838), in a chapter on the deerhound, is the first detailed description of the breed in the annals of British literature. It is written by a Mr. Macneile, and it is worthy of note that the illustrations in Mr. Scrope's book are of deerhounds of the type of to-day.

In this chapter devoted to deerhounds, Mr. Archbold Macneile of Colonsay writes that among the "Scotch antiquities are some sculptured stones in the churchyard of Meigle, a village in Perthshire," bearing dogs of a strong resemblance to the deerhound, and that these sculpturings were believed to be of the ninth century.<sup>2</sup>

He tells us that the dogs used on the mountains of Macedonia for coursing deer were similar in figure, colour, disposition, and in the texture of their hair to those used in Scotland, and that they, these Macedonian dogs, were exceedingly rare and only in the possession of the nobility. He describes the finest deerhound at that time and "apparently the purest specimens" to be "Buskar" and "Brass," and two bitches "Runa" and "Cavack," the property of his brother.

Though these dogs were related they varied considerably in colour, two pale yellow, the other two of a sandy-red. They were similar in having the tips of their ears, eyes, and muzzles black, and were all of an even colour. Deerhounds varied from the ordinary greyhound in shape, in being of greater height at the shoulder, and in the thickness of their necks, and also in the size of head and muzzle and strength of bone.

"Buskar," in August 1836, stood 28 inches at the shoulder, had a chest girth of 32 inches and weighed in working condition 85 lb.

"This dog is of pale yellow," writes Macneile, "and appears to be remarkably pure in his breeding, not only from his shape, and colour, but from the strength and wiry elasticity of his hair, which by Highlanders is thought to be a criterion of breeding." In the districts of Badenoch and Lochaber dark grey deerhounds were to be met with. This colour was believed at one time to have prevailed in the Highlands. There was between the latter and the yellow-coloured dogs a decided difference in texture of hair, for the grey dogs' hair was softer and more woolly than the yellow. Macneile adds that the grey dogs also appeared to be "less lively, and did not exhibit such a development of muscle, particularly on the back and loins, and have a tendency to cat hams."

He concludes the description with the warning that deerhounds would not be easily re-made if once the original stock was allowed to become extinct. There was

<sup>1</sup> 1842.

<sup>2</sup> These stones I show on Plate 67 by kind assistance of Mr. W. Leslie, of Meigle.

evidently good reason for this warning, for Scrope states that so rare had the deerhound proper become that he had been compelled to make a new variety of his own by various crosses. Fortunately the owners of these interesting dogs held the breed together, and by 1842 the deerhound had increased in numbers to be considered comparatively common in Highland districts. Good prices were obtainable; 50 guineas for a first-rate dog was considered usual, whilst 20 and 30 guineas were given for obviously only a "tolerable one."<sup>1</sup> But the use of deerhounds in the forest gradually declined. Deer coursing was no longer undertaken; stalking had become the one and only sport. For a time the stalker found dogs of value to bay a wounded stag, but soon even this was no longer wanted.

Remarkable stories are told of deerhounds facing stags, and I give here one from Scrope. It was after the shot.

"We must louse a doeg, sir, or he will gang forrat to the hill," he writes. They let go two dogs, "Tarff" and "Derig," a young dog, in order to give him an opportunity to learn. Later from under the hill came the baying of the hounds. "The stag stood on a narrow projecting ledge of rock within the cleft, in the mid-course of a mountain cataract, of which the upper fall plunged down behind him, coursing through his legs, dashed into spray and mist around him, then leapt down into the abyss with that rush only water knows . . ." and there just at the edge of the precipice, and on the very brink of eternity, the dogs were baying furiously; one rush of the stag would have sent them down into the chasm.

"Whenever the deer turned his antlers aside to gore 'Tarff,' 'Derig' seized the moment to fly at his throat.

"The stag at length, maddened with these vexatious attacks, made a desperate stab at 'Derig,' and, in avoiding it, the poor dog lost his footing—his hind legs passed over the ledge of rock, only his fore legs bore upon the ledge, and he scraped and strove with them to the utmost; but in the position of a drowning man, who attempts to get into a boat.

"In struggling with his fore legs he appeared to advance a little, and then to slip back again, gasping painfully in the exertion; at length he probably found some slight bearing for the claws of his hind feet, and, to the inexpressible relief of everyone, he once more recovered his footing, and sprang forward at the deer as rash and wrathful as ever."<sup>2</sup>

But times and fashions changed—some believed that dogs disturbed deer and sent them into neighbours' forests, where undisturbed they remained. The up-to-date rifle and expanding bullet meant few chances of escape. If dogs were used at all, it was considered preferable to use them on a leash, tracking the wounded stag by scent, and not by sight. The numbers of owners of forests of the older school preferring to use deerhounds on stalking expeditions were few, and the interest in the breed had ceased. But fortunately the dog-fancy started, and the show-bench took the place of heaths and heathers.

There has been considerable question as to the relationship between the dog known as the Scottish greyhound or rough-haired greyhound and the deerhound. We find that Youatt<sup>3</sup> describes the Scotch deerhound to be a typical greyhound, but rather stronger in build, and to have a rough coat; whilst he states that the Highland

<sup>1</sup> St. John.

<sup>2</sup> From "The Art of Deerstalking."

<sup>3</sup> 1845.



greyhound or deerhound was larger than the Scottish greyhound, standing about 2 inches taller. The deerhound was stronger and fiercer, and had pendulous ears, dark eyes, and long hair which covered its face. From this it appears that the variation was merely a matter of degree, and that whilst the larger dog was considered suitable for deer because of its size, the smaller one was probably mainly concerned with hares. It is certain that they were bred together, to increase or reduce size as an owner might desire.

Youatt describes the Scotch greyhound as being a typical greyhound, but rather stronger built than the English dog and having a rough coat. He had, so Youatt informs us, the reputation of being slow and sly, and when used for hares "resorting to artifices in order to get them." He describes the Highland greyhound or deerhound as being larger than the Scotch greyhound, about 2 inches taller and stronger and fiercer, having pendulous and dark ears and long hair which almost covered its face. The Irish greyhound, he tells us, differs from the Scottish in being larger and more muscular and in having shorter and finer hair of a pale fawn colour.

1859.—*Stonehenge*, writing about deerhounds, states that the rough greyhound is identical in shape and make with the pure deerhound and "can only be distinguished by their style of running when at work and play," the deerhound keeping its head much higher than the greyhound. It was rapidly becoming extinct, being supplanted for coursing purposes by the English greyhound. The pure breed, then extremely rare, was replaced by numerous animals somewhat resembling it in form, bred by foxhound, bloodhound, bulldog, and so forth.

He writes that "Maida" was famous because she was the property of Sir Walter Scott, and was a cross of greyhound and bloodhound; but this appears to be incorrect, as she is given by Captain Graham to have been by a Pyrenean wolf-dog. The rough-Scotch-greyhound, as *Stonehenge* names it, was still bred in considerable numbers. These dogs were of all colours, fawn-red, brindle, grey, and black, and the coat was harsh, long, and rough, "especially about the jaws, where the hair stood out like that of a Scotch terrier. They were as fast as a smooth greyhound." In *Stonehenge's* book of 1867 he places the deerhounds amongst the retrievers, and tells us very little more about them, but it is clear from the tone of his note that the deerhound as a breed had been taken in hand and efforts made to revive it.

Two years later *Stonehenge* states that whilst retaining its position as one of the retrievers, the dog was more ornamental than useful, and that the most successful exhibitor at the shows for the last ten years had been a Mr. Chaworth Musters, of Kirk Langton, with his two famous dogs the "Torunns," father and son of Monzi strain. From the older dog of the two came "Brenda," "Hylde," "Meg," Mr. Parkes's "Bevis," "Hilda," and "Teeldar" all of which (except "Brenda" and "Hylde") were from a sister to the well-known prize-winning dog "Morni," old Torunn's chief competitor. "Countess," a bitch with unknown pedigree, the property of Mr. J. N. Beasley, *Stonehenge* describes to be the most beautiful deerhound he had ever seen. Her Majesty Queen Victoria was interested in the breed, and "Hylde," the dam of the famous "Morni," was by a dog in her Majesty's kennel, old "Kieltar," whilst old "Kieltar" was by "Hector," a dog presented to



the Queen by Mr. Campbell, of Monzi. At that time several noted dogs were related to Mr. Cole's breed, Mr. Cole being a keeper to her Majesty.

The first show at which deerhounds had a class was at the third show in the history of dog shows at Birmingham in 1860. There were two classes, one for dogs, the other for bitches; but the entry was indifferent, and both the leading prizes were taken by Lieut.-Colonel Inge, of Thorpe, near Tamworth, with "Valiant" and "Brimstone." No second prize was awarded. The "Field" in the issue following the show reports "a fine class," but probably it was considered so, being the first experience of open classes for non-sporting breeds.

At Leeds in 1861 there was only one entry in the dog class and none in the bitch class.

In 1862 at the Birmingham show ten entries appeared in the dog class, stated to have been a mixed lot, and "Alder," bred by Sir John Macneile, but shown by Mr. J. N. Beasley (reported "a splendid specimen") won.

About this period Lord Henry Bentinck took a great pride in his deerhounds. Among others we find that the Duke of Sutherland, Mr. W. Gordon, Lord Breadalbane, Dr. Hadden, Mr. Spencer Lucy, bred deerhounds. In 1870 Sir St. George Gore, Captain Graham, of Durnock, Mr. H. C. Musters were frequent exhibitors.

In 1871 a Cameron of Lochiel sent to Curzon Hall a dog "Bruce," and took first prize with him—a matter which was noted and considered well worth recording.

In the first Kennel Club Stud Book, in 91 entries, several of the dogs have lengthy pedigrees. "Arran" (73), by the Duke of Hamilton's "Bran" out of "Lufra," had, so it is stated, on "Bran's" side a pedigree of 70 years, whilst "Lufra," by Cox's "Ross," and "Ross" by the Duke of Devonshire's "Roswell," was of a pure strain of 100 years. Though this might appear exaggerated, we have only to consider the type of dog shown in Scrope's work of 1838 to feel satisfied that the breed had been kept pure for a considerable period.

In Dalziel's book of 1879 *Senex* contributes a special article and depicts a somewhat plain bitch, "Linda." He gives several hints on choosing the best-bred dogs. He writes that the flaps of the ears are to be turned a little outwards, so that one sees inside the ear—"always noticed in the best-bred ones." He advises avoidance of large ears, and suggests special notice to be taken of a black fringe on the tips of the ears. He adds that he always doubts the purity of a deerhound with a head narrow between the ears or with a silky coat.

The year 1880 sees Captain Graham, of wolfhound fame, writing on deerhounds. He describes the faults of the breed to be a short body, over-thick jaws, or open and loose flat feet. He tells us that the oldest deerhound strain was that of a Mr. Menzies, of Chesthill, Loch Tay, a strain which has been in that family's hands for close on a hundred years. These dogs had been very much inbred, for, according to Captain Graham, during that hundred years three times only had outside blood been used.

He alludes to the popularity of the variety, helped on, he suggests, because a Mr. Potter, the member of Parliament for Rochdale in 1860, had a dog named "Oscar" and a bitch "Lufra," both of the Menzies strain. This Menzies strain in the changes of ownership that occur from time to time had passed to a Dr. Cox, of Manchester, by a bitch presented to the doctor by this Mr. Potter. "Oscar"

also carried his strain to other lands, for he passed into the hands of Prince Albert Solms, of Braunfels in Germany, who was the owner of "Duchess" and "Morven," described in Dalziel's book of 1879.

"Bran" was of the Morrison strain and was given by Mr. Morrison to Macneile, of Colonsay, who later presented the dog to Prince Albert. "Bran" was the sire of the famous dog "Torrann," the grandsire of Gillespie's "Torram" out of "Loy." "Torrann" was remarkably well formed, and of a steel-grey colour. It is stated that two of the finest deerhounds, "Torrish" and "Morven," were the property of Mr. Bateson, of Cambusmere, Sutherlands. Both were very rough and of great height and power, "Morven" being of a reddish colour, whilst "Torrish" was a dark grey-brown. A dog "Giaor" carried on the strain. There was also "Bran," who stood 29 inches and was  $37\frac{1}{2}$  inches round the chest, was a great worker, and, we are told, faced his first stag when nine months old, and his last when he reached the old age of nine years. On one occasion he killed two unwounded stags, 10 to 11 pointers, by himself, in three-quarters of an hour. Amongst other ancestors of the dogs of to-day was "King of the Forest," then the property of the Marquis of Breadalbane, a dog noted for his exceptional size, standing 33 inches high. There were also Lord Henry Bentinck's "Fingal," a large red dog almost smooth, and "Carrac," a bitch of the same line. Many of these earlier dogs failed in coat. Sir St. George Gore's "Gruim" stood 32 inches, and Mr. Beasley's "Alder," alluded to in the Birmingham 1862 Show report, weighed 110 lb. and stood  $31\frac{1}{2}$  inches high.

Old Champion "Torrann's" son, Mr. Masters's young "Torrum,"<sup>2</sup> was smaller than his father and never won many prizes, and the whole family had long sweeping tails.

Captain Graham tells us that when red deer were coursed by deerhounds, the larger and more powerful dogs were needed, as long as they did not lose speed by over-much size. But large dogs had one disadvantage, they being more liable to injure themselves. He added that "in these degenerate days" a dog that finds and bays a wounded stag is all that was required, and because of this he feared a gradual lowering of size.

When the revival started, here and there in the attempted remaking of the breed various crosses were used. We read of Cuban bloodhound and Pyrenean wolf-dog; from the latter occasional good results were obtained. But on the whole such outcrosses proved a failure. Sir J. Macneile (later Lord Colonsay) stated that he had tried wolfhounds from Russia of fair speed and great size, but the result was far from satisfactory, and after mentioning various other crosses, which likewise had failed, he adds that the race of deerhounds can only be improved by selection and by the crossing of different deerhound strains.

In 1880 the following measurements are given as characteristic of the variety:

A dog in height to be 29 to 30 inches; girth of 30 inches; forearm below elbow,  $8\frac{1}{2}$  inches; weight 95 to 105 lb.; and a note that several strains, "really good ones," show a hairy ear.

The change of tone in Dalziel's second edition (1887) is remarkable. He now deals entertainingly with deerhounds, but the unfortunate Irish wolfhounds get more blows and kicks than kindly remarks.

<sup>1</sup> 1845.

<sup>2</sup> The name "Torrum," "Torrann," "Torram" is spelt in so many different ways that it is difficult to know whether one dog or many dogs are referred to.—E. C. A.

In the same edition he writes that the Scottish rough-haired greyhound resembled the deerhound, and was frequently sold as such, and gives the measurements and weights of some of the leading deerhounds of that day (B. stands for bitch, D. for dog) :

	Height.	Girth.	Weight.
B. " Meg " . . . . .	26 $\frac{1}{4}$	28 $\frac{1}{2}$	No weight given
B. " Hilda " . . . . .	27	29	"
B. " Teeldar " . . . . .	27	29	"
B. " Mona " . . . . .	28	29 $\frac{1}{2}$	"
B. " Braie " . . . . .	26 $\frac{1}{2}$	30 $\frac{1}{2}$	"
B. " Hylde " (Musters) . . . . .	27	30 $\frac{1}{2}$	"
B. " Hilda " (Mistrop) . . . . .	27	30 $\frac{1}{2}$	"
D. " Morni " . . . . .	30 $\frac{1}{4}$	34	"
D. Old " Torunn " . . . . .	30 $\frac{1}{4}$	31	120 lb.
D. Young " Torrum " . . . . .	30 $\frac{3}{4}$	33	No weight given
B. Prince Albert's " Duchess " . . . . .	27	29 $\frac{1}{4}$	70 $\frac{1}{2}$ lb.
B. Prince Albert's " Morven " . . . . .	28 $\frac{1}{2}$	31 $\frac{1}{2}$	79 $\frac{1}{2}$ lb.
B. " Lufra " . . . . .	25 $\frac{1}{2}$	28 $\frac{1}{2}$	71 $\frac{1}{2}$ lb.
D. " Bevis " . . . . .	30	32	No weight given
B. " Maida " (Dr. Hadden's) . . . . .	27 $\frac{3}{4}$	29	64 lb.
D. " Oscar " (Smith) . . . . .	26	30	No weight given
D. " Roy " . . . . .	29 $\frac{1}{4}$	32 $\frac{1}{4}$	84 lb.
D. " Somerset " . . . . .	29 $\frac{3}{4}$	35	No weight given
D. " Bran " (Dr. Alexander's) . . . . .	28	33	82 lb.

Mr. Rawdon Lee, in his "Sporting Dogs" (1896), informs us that in 1892 the best of the race were probably "Sir Gavin," "Fingal II," "Ensign," "Shepherd," "Swift," "Earl II," "Enterprise," "Royal Lufra" (a beautifully headed bitch), "Rossie Bluebell." He suggests that 30 inches for dogs should be the maximum, and bitches 28-29 inches.

In 1892 the Deerhound Club was formed.

The breed has seen many vicissitudes. We read of a sale at Aldridge's Horse Yard in 1895. The Yard is situated close by Aldersgate Street Station, where great vans hung with sides of bullocks and carcasses of pigs and sheep amble past in the early hours of the morning. Here, at this Sale Yard, the Duke of Richmond and Gordon dispersed his kennel. Years of Highland history, dogs and bitches, with the secrets of those great forests, of the stags, of the mountain-sides, of rushing, frothing, roaring waters in their souls, were sold. The prices were bad : the average was one guinea each, and the highest price that day was six guineas !

We might, if space allowed, deal with many a famous dog of more recent times that have left their mark on deerhound pedigrees : "Sir Gavin," "Fingal II," Champion "Swift," "Earl II," and others, and amongst bitches "Royal Lufra." We must leave deerhounds now, perhaps on a grey dusk of the evening, amid the quiet hills, only disturbed by the sudden cries of birds awoken by distant thunder or the curious high-toned bark of a lonely fox. We must leave them with a fleeting vision of a keeper returning, a grey automatic shadow, moving slowly across the horizon as the last light is lost in the blue-grey sky. Close by his side, in silhouette, moves another automaton, a deerhound. Then the darkness swallows them up. But we cannot leave the breed without repeating the old story of "Help" and "Hold." It happened, so we learn, in the days of Bruce that a white deer escaped the hounds of the King on each occasion. "Help" and "Hold" were two hounds of Sir William St. Clair,



and he had said that they would take her. The King offered the Forest of Pentland Moor to the head of Sir William, that the deer would reach the other side of March Burn in spite of "Help" and "Hold." The white deer, roused, reached the burn and plunged into the water. A few more yards and she would have gained the other side. But "Help" and "Hold" bayed her, attacked, and held her, so that Sir William saved his head and obtained the broad acres of Pentland Moor. He rests now below a canopy of stone in Rosslyn chapel, a deerhound at his feet.<sup>1</sup>

There is also the story how a Lord Tankerville purchased from a poacher a deerhound, one that had never missed a deer. The poacher lived some seventy miles away. The dog, "Bran," was placed in an enclosure, high palisades surrounded him, and his late master the poacher went homewards filled with misgivings, so much richer but so much poorer. On nearing his cottage, out rushed "Bran" to welcome him. We read there were only two ways home, one was by the road his master had travelled, and the other by swimming Loch Errich, and it is to be presumed that "Bran" chose that way to return to the home he loved so well.

The points of the breed to-day are :

Head at ears broadest, tapering slightly to eyes; muzzle tapering more decidedly to nose. Muzzle pointed. Teeth and lips level. The head long, skull flat, a slight rise over eyes, but with nothing approaching a stop. The skull coated with moderately long hair, softer than rest of coat. The nose black (though in some blue-fawns blue) and slightly aquiline. In lighter-coloured dogs a black muzzle is preferred. A good moustache of silky hair, a fair beard. The ear soft, glossy, black or dark, the smaller the better, set high. In repose, folded back like greyhound's (in some semi-erect), in excitement raised above head without losing fold. The shoulders sloped, blades well back, with not too much width between them. Stern tolerably long, tapering, reaching to within  $1\frac{1}{2}$  inches of ground, and about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  inches below hocks, hanging straight down or curved, well covered with hair; on inside, thick and wiry; and towards end, a slight fringe. Eyes dark brown or hazel, moderately full, the rims of eyelids black. Chest deep rather than broad, not narrow or flat-sided. Loin well arched, drooping to tail. Hind quarters drooping, broad, powerful; hips set wide apart. Hind legs well bent at stifle, with great length from hip to hock. Coat: hair on body, neck, and quarters, harsh, wiry, 3 or 4 inches long. Hair on head, breast, and belly softer; a slight fringe on inside of fore and hind legs, but nothing approaching the feathering of collie. Coat thick, close-lying, ragged, harsh or crisp to touch. White on chest and white toes occur in many of darkest-coloured; not greatly objected to; also slight white tip to stern. Weight, 85-100 lb. dogs; bitches 65-80 lb. Height, 30 inches or more; bitches, 28 inches or more.

For the illustrations of modern type I have to acknowledge the courtesy of Miss Loughrey, of the famous Rosslyn Kennels, Londonderry.<sup>2</sup>

#### IRISH WOLFHOUNDS

Whilst romance helped to assure popularity, speculation has been rife as to the type of the ancient dog which the present dog is supposed to represent. Considerable and painstaking research has been undertaken, and numerous unfounded

<sup>1</sup> For illustration see Appendix XXIV.

<sup>2</sup> A note on the type of to-day from Miss Loughrey appears in Appendix XXIV.

suggestions have been noted and written down and fully believed, and have subsequently appeared in all histories. Now and again descriptions of other breeds have been purloined, frequently without even so much as an attempt to suggest a good reason for using them, until entirely erroneous ideas have become generally accepted. Here and there, in the confusion of myths and legends, truth peeps out, as if half-ashamed.

One thing is certain, that at an early time in history Ireland was known for greyhounds of considerable size, dogs more than usually large used to protect the flocks and herds and, if needs be, from the wolves that might wander round for prey.

The now famous Ossianic literature is replete with descriptions of hunting scenes, and portrays a charming devotion to the dogs, the helpmates of the hunters of those days; but there is little, if any, evidence as to the type or types of dogs to which legends or descriptions refer, except that they refer, we can suppose, to the greyhound.

It is in this Ossianic literature that we read how in the first century A.D., when the sons of Uisnech fled from Ulster into Scotland, they took with them 150 greyhounds,<sup>1</sup> and also that a King of the Leinstermen, Mesroda, a son of Dáthó, had a greyhound, "Ailbé," that defended the whole province. So great was his fame that for him the "King of Connacht" offered 6,000 cows and other things, and the King of Ulster made a similar offer. So war broke out between the Kings, and the hound "Ailbé" joined the Ulstermen, and did well in war, playing great havoc amongst the enemy, until, seizing the axle of the chariot of the "Connacht King," he clung to it by his teeth, whilst his head was cut off. So the chariot drove over the plain of Mag-Ailbé, with the head of the hound clinging to the axle.<sup>2</sup>

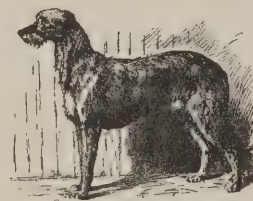
In another story we read that Fraich received from his aunt a present of seven greyhounds adorned with chains of silver and a golden apple hung between them.<sup>3</sup> Seven is a favourite number in these stories and recurs frequently.

About the year A.D. 250, Oisín, the son of Finn, tells St. Patrick of the battle of Gabhra; and of all the great deeds of that day. He says:

"Sweeter to Mac Cumhaill,  
And the nobles of the Fenians;  
To hear the voices of the hounds,  
Than to solicit mercy!"

And the saint replies:

"Oh! how sorrowful was the choice  
The Fenians if Fionn preferred;  
That their hounds should be sweeter to them  
Than to be praying to the saints"—



DEERHOUND "SIR BRIAN."

leading up to a very charming passage; for Oisín, his story ended, asks to be told of the heavenly city. "It is a place without thirst and hunger; without necessity or affliction," is the answer he gets; and Oisín is not satisfied—its pleasures or its freedom from pain is not what he desired to know. "Has penury hardened their hearts, or do they refuse everyone?" he continues: "O Son of Calphurn the liberal, since it is thou thyself that hast the learning: wilt thou allow to go to the

<sup>1</sup> "The Book of Leinster."

<sup>2</sup> Halidays Keating.

<sup>3</sup> Tain Bo Fraich, "Book of Leinster." N.B.—The word "greyhound" is the word of the translator.—E. C. A.



Kingdom of God my own dog or my hound?" and the saint answers: "Not the buzzing gnat, nor even the sunbeam, can unknown to the Omnipotent King enter the heavenly city"—a somewhat ambiguous reply, which does not answer "yes" or "no," "not even the sunbeam can unknown enter."

In the same Ossianic literature in A.D. 300-400 mention is made of 300 hounds. "Bran," Finn's favourite hound, would pursue even the magical wild boar of Benn Gultain,<sup>1</sup> and in the forests and wilds the cry of hounds and rattle of chains and the shouts of the hunters could be heard.

In a somewhat similar collection, "Tales in the Irish"<sup>2</sup> (1892), is an account of Finn, the great warrior and hunter, a son of Cumall, who was attached, we read, to the household of King Cormac as Master of the Hounds. He had with him a body of men of exceptional bravery and devotion, and of great skill as huntsmen, selected by trials. They were hunted, and had to escape capture, with only the length of "a forest bough" given them as law. They must keep cool, to negotiate obstacles the better; the braiding of their hair undisturbed, no twigs cracked under foot. Such people were the heroic Caelite and his band, with their great dogs.

We have a description of a shaggy-haired dog, not one of Finn's or Caelite's stock, but that of a "thieving monster and most hideous pirate," "a son of mishap, who lived on the black rocks out in the sea." So great was his strength, ferocity, and skill that he was a match "for 400," and his great hound a match for "300," and "his daughter for 300 more." It is a pleasing thing that he had a daughter; it makes him distinctly human. It was Caelite who waited for him. Early one morning he—alone, except for his sword and shield and spear—made his way towards the impregnable rock beside the bay, and waited there. Then all at once he spied a currach being driven towards the shore, with three in it—"the man, his daughter, and a shag-haired dog of a dirty grey, that round his neck wore a rude iron chain."

The pirate spoke to his daughter—"a great lump of a wench, bald and swart, that from a distance loomed like some jutting point of rock"—to loosen the hound to feed on the man they saw waiting on the land, before it started the day's work. The hound prepared to leap overboard, and Caelite felt afraid. "My Creator and my Tailchann both, I put forth against you three," and with this he sent a small copper dart at the approaching boat, striking the hound in the face, fixing the upper and lower jaws together. In frantic struggles it fell into the sea and perished.

De Jubainville tells one more which suggests the greyhound type. For the *Formorlians* asked some warriors whence they came. "We are from Ireland," they replied. "Have you any hounds with you?" asked the *Formorlians*. "We have," said they. There was a trial between the dogs, and those of the goddess Dana proved to be the fleetest.<sup>3</sup>

There are frequent references to dogs and hounds in these ancient stories, showing the Irishman's interest in this subject. They were of great size and strength, and of considerable adeptness in the chase. We read elsewhere, in the ancient "Laws of Wales" of Howel the Good, A.D. 930 (published in 1730 in Welsh and Latin), that dogs were divided among other ways, into Gell-gi . . . Irish dog, and Bleidd-gi . . . wolf-dog, and that the value of a gell-gi, if the property of a king, and trained, was

<sup>1</sup> Oss. Soc., vol. vi, pp. 111, 114, 128, 134, 143.

<sup>2</sup> Silva Gadelica.

<sup>3</sup> De Jubainville's "Cours de littérature celtique," vol. v, p. 416.



worth 240 pence, but if untrained, 120 pence ; a puppy under 12 months old, 60 pence, and under 9 days old 15 pence ; whilst a greyhound, of whatever age and training, was only worth half these sums.<sup>1</sup>

Interesting as this is, it must be remembered that the word "greyhound" may have been coined by the space of changing times, and the stories would be altered. For certainly no man would tell the story as it was told a hundred years and more before. The greyhound, because of its speed, beauty, and graceful build, would appeal to the poetical imagination of the raconteur more than, perhaps, the mastiff.

Edward I, we read, ordered deerhounds (*Brachetti cervisicii*) to be sent to him from Ireland.<sup>2</sup> Wolf-dogs are frequently mentioned, but not with Ireland. See Appendix XXI.

Probably the earliest verifiable record of the Irish dog or an Irish greyhound is in 1335, when Reginald, huntsman to the King, was sent by Edward III to bring dogs from Ireland. He had an order for £7 16s. 5½*d.* for wages at 4*d.* a day and two boys at 3½*d.* a day ; and a further ½*d.* a day was allowed for food for each dog, nineteen of which he had obtained from diverse Irish lords. There is also a sum of 10s. for cost of passage.<sup>3</sup>

It appears from "The Book of Fenagh" <sup>4</sup> that the priests in Ireland were becoming addicted to sport, causing considerable comment, which in those times had outlet in verse :

" Oh, Ireland, unhappy for thee will be  
The bishops of the end of the world ;  
Numerous will be their hounds and servants ;  
They will not uphold the truth."

But whether this and other attacks on the Church by those who considered that hunting and religion were not compatible had effect, we do not know.

It was left to Mr. H. D. Richardson in 1847, whose great interest in the breed gave the very impulse to start a movement, that later became a matter of historic interest. In this gentleman's book, in the chapter on greyhounds, under subdivision A, "The Rough Greyhound," he gives the "Irish wolf-dog—*Canis graius hibernicus*," and devotes considerable space to its history and character. He writes that this dog was renowned and redoubted, from age to age, and handed down in tradition and in song, as one of the glories of the "Sacred Isle," "the giant Irish deer . . . with his kindred unrivalled race." Thus he stood in "peerless dignity, *facile princeps*, at the head of the whole dog family."

Certainly Irish dogs had attained considerable note, because of some particular trait or advantage in their use or in their character, for on December 9, 1545, of Henry VIII's reign, the Deputy sent four greyhounds from Ireland, and wrote to James Hancock, of Dublin, reproaching him because of wilful obstinacy, by which his Majesty was in danger of being disappointed as to certain dogs for a nobleman in Spain, which he, the Deputy, had promised.<sup>5</sup> Whilst in a Privy Seal of the same

<sup>1</sup> "Irish Sportsman" of May 1885. I have been unable to substantiate this further than the "Irish Sportsman" of that date.

<sup>2</sup> Bartholomæus Anglicus, "De Proprietatibus Rerum," xv (article Hibernia).

<sup>3</sup> Grace's "Annals of Ireland," 1842, p. 128 ; Note, Rot. Cl. 9 and 10, Edward III.

<sup>4</sup> "The Book of Fenagh," originally compiled by St. Carlin, copied from Dr. John O'Donovan's transcript of a MS. of 1516.

<sup>5</sup> Henry VIII, Rot. Canc., December 9, 36 H. 8. Cal. State Papers, Ireland, 1548. Shan O'Neill. Public Rec. Office, vol. No. 40.

reign, to the Lord Deputy and Council of Ireland, where his Majesty takes notice "that at the instant Suit of the Duke of Alberkyrke of Spain [of the Privy Council to Henry VIII], on the behalf of the Marquiss of Defarrya and his Son, that it might please His Majesty to grant to the said Marquiss and his Son, and the longer Liver of them, yearly out of Ireland, two Goshawkes and four greyhounds, and forasmuch as the said Duke hath done the King acceptable service in his Wars, and that the King is informed that the said Marquiss beareth to him especial good will, he therefore grants the said Suit, and commands that the Deputy for the Time being shall take order for the delivery of the said Hawks and Greyhounds unto the order of the said Marquiss and his Son, and the longer liver of them yearly; and that the Treasurer shall pay the charges of buying the said Hawks and Hounds."<sup>1</sup>

Campion, in 1571, states that the Irish "are not without wolves, and greyhounds to hunt them, bigger of bone and limme than a colt";<sup>2</sup> and there is an interesting note in Moryson's "Itinerary"<sup>3</sup> that the cattle are brought in at night for fear of thieves or else of wolves, the latter having greatly increased, so that "the destruction whereof being neglected by the inhabitants, oppressed with greater mischiefs, they are so much growne in numbers, as sometimes in winter nights they will come to prey in villages, and the subburbes of cities," and we learn that the cattle were "in general very little, and onely the men and the greyhounds of great stature."

There is also an amusing paragraph in Taylor's "Pilgrimage,"<sup>4</sup> where the "Pennyles" and doubtlessly hungry pilgrim describes the Earl of Mar's hunt, a vivid picture of venison "bak't, sodden, rost and stu'de Beefe, Mutton, Goates, Kid, Hares, fresh Salmon, Pidgeons, Hens, Capons, Chickens, Partridge . . . all these and more than these wee had continually, in superfluous abundance . . ."; and gives a picture of the scene when, after they had waited three hours or thereabouts, "wee might perceive the Deere appeare on the hills round about us (their heads making a shew like a wood), a hundred couple of strong Irish Greyhounds which had been waiting on each side of the vallee were let free."

A few years later, when Sir Thomas Rowe was Ambassador at the Court of the Great Mogul,<sup>5</sup> the Emperor desired him, we read, to send for some Irish greyhounds, and so pleased was the Great Mogul that he presented Sir Thomas Rowe not only with "his picture" but with "several things of value."

The well-known Lord Deputy of Ireland, Sir Henry first Viscount Falkland, a year before his death, also refers to greyhounds in a letter dated 1632:<sup>6</sup>

"MY LORD,

"I have lately received letters from my Lord Duke of Buccleuch, and others

<sup>1</sup> Rot. Canc., December 9, 36 H. 8. Dorfo. (Ware, "Hist. Ireland," W. Harris, 1764.)

<sup>2</sup> Edmund Campion, sometime Fellow of St. John's College, in Oxford.

<sup>3</sup> "An Itinerary written by Fynes Moryson, Gent., First in the Latine Tongue, and then translated by him into English."

<sup>4</sup> "The Pennyles Pilgrimage or the Money-lesse perambulations of John Taylor alias the King's Majesties Water-Pot. How he travailed on foot from London to Edinborough in Scotland, not carrying any Money to or fro, neither Begging, Borrowing, or asking Meate, Drinke or Lodging, with his description of his entertainment in all places of his Journey, and a true report of the unmatched Hunting in the Brea of Marre and Badenoch in Scotland with other observations, some serious and worthy of memory, and some merry and not hurtfull to be remembered. Lastly that (which is Rare in a Traveller) all is true. London. Printed by Edw: Alde, at the charges of the Author, 1618."

<sup>5</sup> 1615.

<sup>6</sup> H. D. Richardson.



of my noble friends, who have entreated me to send them some greyhound dogs and bitches out of this Kingdom, of the largest sort, which I perceive, they intend to present unto diverse princes, and other noble persons ; and if you can possibly let them be white, which is the colour most in request here. Expecting an answer by the bearer, I commit you to the protection of the Almighty, and am,

“ Your Lordship’s faithful and attached friend

“ FALKLAND.”

Twenty-nine years later Charles Richard Elrington, in “ The Whole Works of the Most Rev. James Ussher, D.D.,” writes that Cardinal Richelieu sent the Primate a gold medal and a complimentary letter, and the Primate in return sent the Cardinal a present of two Irish greyhounds.

It is two years later, in 1653, that Dorothy Osborne, writing to Sir William Temple, gives us further information, for after telling him that he has so often reproached her with the loss of his liberty, she suggests that to make him some amends she was contented to be his prisoner that summer : “ but,” she writes, “ you shall do one favour for me into the bargain. When your father goes into Ireland, lay your commands upon some of his servants to get you an Irish greyhound. I have one that was the General’s ; but t’is a bitch, and those are always much less than the dogs. I got it in the time of my favour there, and it was all they had. Henry Cromwell undertook to write to his brother Fleetwood for another for me : but I have lost my hopes there. Whomsoever it is that you employ, he will need no other instructions but to get the biggest he can meet with ; T’is all the beauty of those dogs or of any kind, I think.”

Her wish was fulfilled, for later she writes that, in the little space left in the letter, she must tell him what a present she had made her that day. “ Two of the finest young Irish greyhounds that ere I saw ; a gentleman that serves the General sent them me.”

I have not been able to verify this letter, which occurs in Richardson’s book on dogs, but even so, we have ample evidence of interest in the Irish greyhounds.

In 1658 appeared the second edition of “ Jacobi Warelli—De Hibernia & Antiquitatibus.” He mentions dogs once in this chronicle. “ I must here take notice,” he writes, “ of these dogs, which from their hunting of wolves, are commonly called Wolf-Dogs, being creatures of great strength and size, and of a fine shape,” and to this volume is a frontispiece, an allegorical picture of Ireland, a land of milk and honey, in which is depicted Diana with a pair of greyhounds by her side. In 1665 (about) a work was published on animals, and a dog is shown marked “ Irish greyhound ” (see Plate 68). It is a smooth-haired dog of a thicker type than the ordinary greyhound.

Joanne Raio (John Ray), in 1693, tells us that certain varieties of dogs are bred in this country. He gives “ The Irish Greyhound. The largest dog of all we have yet seen, greater even than the ‘ molossus,’ as far as shape and habits go exactly like the ordinary Greek dog [i.e. Greyhound.] These are used to catch wolves.”

From there we have no further reference until in the “ Gentleman Farrier ” of 1732 appears the following amusing passage :

“ The wolf-dog is of the Make of a Greyhound, is pretty common in *Ireland*, it is very large, even of a bigger Make than the Bear Dog ; this Sort came originally



from *France*, where its Business was to kill Wolves, but with us to kill stags, and does very well to turn a Water Wheel."

Dr. R. James (1760), in his "Treatise on Canine Madness" (printed for J. Newbery, at the "Bible and Sun" in St. Paul's Churchyard), reviews cases brought to his notice, and writes that a "young lady almost five years old" was bitten by an "Irish wolf-dog of uncommon size." He found on his arrival the dog was "raging" and it was immediately shot, "for," he writes, "I was not then at leisure to try experiments upon an animal capable of so much mischief," and that he was informed that the dog had had the young lady's whole head several times in his mouth (!).

The careful work and accurate observations which this small work contains suggest that the doctor fully credited the assertion contained in the last paragraph. This dog, therefore, must have had a far larger muzzle than the present-day wolf-hound. It is probable that in 1764 fresh interest was aroused in the Irish wolf-dog, because of the "History of Ireland newly translated into English, revised and improved with many material additions, and continued down to the Beginning of the present Century by Walter Harris."<sup>1</sup> In this work, in chapter xxii of vol. ii, under the title of "The Natural Advantages, Commodities and some Special Privileges of Ireland," after describing the horses of that country, he repeats Sir James Ware's wording: "I must here take notice of those *Hounds*, which from their hunting of Wolves are commonly called Wolf-Dogs, being Creatures of great strength and Size, and of a fine Shape," and adds: "I cannot but think that these are the Dogs which Symmachus mentions in an epistle to his brother Flavianus. I thank you," says he, "for the present you made me of some [*Canes scotici*] Scottish dogs, which were shewed at the Circensian Games, to the great astonishment of the People, who could not judge it possible to bring them to Rome otherwise than in Iron cages." Walter Harris continues: "I am sensible," he writes, "that Mr. Burton, treading in the footsteps of Justus Lipsius, makes no scruples to say, that the Dogs intended by Symmachus in this passage, were the British Mastives."

"But," continues Harris, "though he regarded such weighty opinion with deference, yet he could not believe that the British Mastiff would be described as *scoticus* in the age when Symmachus<sup>2</sup> lived, and that as Ireland was well known by the name of 'Scotia' at that time, it makes more than ever certain. Besides," he continues, "the English mastiff was no way comparable to the Irish wolf-dog, either in size or elegant shape, nor would it make 'an astonishing Figure in the Spectacles exhibited in the Circus.'" He adds that the reason the breed had become so rare, "grown so scarce amongst us," was that the Irish wolf-dog had been so often considered "a valuable present to the greatest monarch," and so sought after and sent abroad to all quarters of the world, that, apart from its rarity due to the extinction of the wolves in Ireland, it had degenerated, for, "even of what remains [the wolf-dogs] the Size seems to have dwindled from its ancient stateliness."

In 1774 or so Goldsmith, we are told, gives a story of "Bran," an Irish wolfhound,

<sup>1</sup> The "'History and Antiquities of Ireland.'" Printed for Robert Bell in Stephen Street, opposite Aungier Street; and John Fleming in Sycamore Alley, published in that year by Walter Harris, Esq. (Written in Latin by Sir James Ware Knight.)"

<sup>2</sup> Consul of Rome, end of fourth century.

which saved his mother's life.<sup>1</sup> On a visit to the country a gaunt, lean, and hungry wolf confronted her, but "Bran" hurried up, and the wolf was left dying on the roadside. Goldsmith, in the chapter "Animals of the Dog Kind," writes: "The last variety, and the most wonderful of all that I shall mention, is the Great Irish Wolf Dog; that may be considered as the first of the canine species. This animal, which is very rare even in the only country in the world where it is to be found, is rather kept for show than use, there being neither wolves nor any other formidable beasts of prey in Ireland, that seem to require so powerful an antagonist." The largest of those he had seen, and he had seen about a dozen of them, was "almost four feet high, or as tall as a calf of a year old." He was made "extremely like a greyhound, but rather more robust and inclining to the figure of the French mâtin, or the great Dane. His eye was mild, his colour white, and his nature seemed heavy and phlegmatic." He was informed that a mastiff would be nothing when opposed to one of them, and that the Irish wolfhound generally seized an antagonist by the back, and could worry even the strongest bulldog, in a few minutes, to its death, and, funnily enough, he adds that this strength did not appear in their figure or their inclinations, but that they seemed rather to be more timid than the ordinary race of dogs, and their skin was much thinner.<sup>2</sup>

Twenty years later, in 1794, "A. B. Lambert, F.R.S. and F.L.S.," read a paper on an "Account of the *Canis græius hibernicus*, or Irish Wolf-dog," to his society. He gives an illustration of an Irish wolf-dog, one given him by Lord Altamont, "done exactly the natural size" of one in his Lordship's possession at Westport, in the county of Mayo, Ireland, during his stay there in 1790 (see Plate 55).

He had frequent opportunities of observing these dogs; Lord Altamont having eight of them, the only ones now in the kingdom. He took the measurements of one of the largest, which was as follows:

From point of nose to tip of tail	. . . . .	51 inches
Tail	. . . . .	17½ "
Tip of nose to back part of skull	. . . . .	10 "
From back part of skull to beginning of tail	. . . . .	33 "
From toe to top of foreshoulder	. . . . .	28½ "
Length of leg	. . . . .	15 "
From the point of the hind toes to the top of the hind shoulders	. . . . .	30 "
From the point of the nose to the eye	. . . . .	4½ "
Length of the ears	. . . . .	6 "
Round the widest part of the belly (about 3 inches from the fore legs)	. . . . .	35 "
Round the hind part close to the hind legs	. . . . .	26 "

The hair was short and smooth, and the colour of some was a brown-and-white, and others were black-and-white. "They seem good-tempered animals," but, from the accounts he had received, were degenerated in size. They were "formerly much larger and in their make more like a greyhound."

Pennant, in 1797, in his "History of Quadrupeds," places the Irish greyhound in

<sup>1</sup> This is not in his "Animated Nature," nor have I been able to locate it.

<sup>2</sup> Since writing this I found in "A Tour in Ireland, 1775" the following: "The last wolf was killed in this country in 1710, since which time none of these animals have been found in Ireland. The Irish wolf-dog, which formerly abounded here, is now nearly extinct. I saw two of them in Dublin; they were much taller than a mastiff, or than any dog I have seen, and appeared to be of great strength. Their shape was somewhat like that of a greyhound; they were the property of a nobleman and were valued at 20 guineas each."



Clause IV, Dogs with short pendant ears, long legs and bodies: "of which kind," we read, "is this breed."

He spells it "gre-hound," and states that it was once very frequent in Ireland, used in the chase of the wolf, but now very scarce; and to be a dog of great size and strength. *Le mâtin* of Buffon; *Canis graius hibernicus*.

Bewick, in 1790, gives us very little information. His account is mainly a copy of Goldsmith, except that the Irish greyhound is "the most beautiful and majestic . . . only to be found in Ireland," where it was "formerly of great use in clearing the country from wolves." "Now extremely rare," and is kept rather for show than use, being "equally unserviceable for hunting either the Stag, the Fox, or the Hare."

He states that M. Buffon supposes the great Danish dog to be only a variety of the Irish greyhound, and continues that "next to this, in size and strength, is the Scottish Highland greyhound or wolf-dog."

It is certainly significant that Bewick does not describe a wiry coat to be characteristic of the Irish greyhound, the more so as he mentions a wiry coat in the paragraph on the Scottish highland greyhound or wolf-dog, and it suggests that the deerhound in Scotland was then known as a wolf-dog, and was not, in coat at least, similar to the Irish dog, then known as the Irish greyhound.

In 1803, Taplin gives a chapter to the Irish greyhound (see the illustration given on Plate 73). He writes that it is rarely seen and that it is doubtful if one of the pure unmixed breed is to be found even in the most remote parts of the country. He continues that in whatever state of ambiguity the origin of the Irish greyhound may remain, that the similitude between the dog "of this description" and the Danish dog "is so exceedingly correct," that they were doubtlessly of the same race. He suggests that the name (Irish greyhound) has, because of disuse, become buried in oblivion, and the few dogs of this breed remaining were known as Danes.

So much for the Irish wolfhound. The rest of the chapter is devoted to the Dane.

He does, however, state that the dog that killed the wolf, in Buffon's breeding experiment, which Buffon himself described to be a sheep-dog (p. 17), was a wolfhound, proving, he tells us, (!) that as far as wolfhounds are concerned, "one was more than a match for that fierce animal."<sup>1</sup>

In 1837 Thomas Bell tells us that this magnificent breed is no longer to be found pure even in Ireland, and after repeating former authorities, continues that "it appears" that the breed was originally produced from the great Danish dog crossed by the greyhound—at least, its points in general warrant such a supposition. He then gives extracts from Mr. Lambert's paper.

In 1841 the great move in Irish wolfhounds' history started when Mr. H. D. Richardson wrote an article on the breed in the "Irish Penny Magazine," with an illustration—an article which later he embodied in his small book on dogs.

Colonel H. Smith, in 1843, is of the opinion that the Irish greyhound was originally the same as the Scottish and the mystical bitch of Druid lore, and refers to "this species both in Britain and Ireland." "It may be," he writes, "that the ancient race, similar to the Scottish, was crossed with the great Danish dog by the Northmen."

<sup>1</sup> Taplin so frequently altered the breed of dog in a story to suit his mood, that it becomes monotonous.—E. C. A.



It was in 1847 that Mr. H. D. Richardson's book appeared, and in the chapter on the breed he states that when Ireland was peopled by the *Belgæ*, they brought the ancestor of the Irish wolfhounds with them, and that if Scotland was peopled by the Irish, under Reuda, as was believed, they took the Irish wolfhound to Scotland, where it then became the Scottish wolfhound.

He states that a Mr. Robert Evatt, of Mount Louise, county Monaghan, and a Mr. Francis Carter, of Vicar's Field, county Dublin, had done much for the breed, the latter gentleman in particular had been "most assiduous" in keeping it by crossing it with the best Scottish and Welsh dogs he could obtain.<sup>1</sup>

Richardson tells us that he was never able to perceive any difference between Irish, Scottish, and Welsh dogs except that the Irish dogs were thicker and not so high in the legs, as either the Scottish or Welsh. He claims that Mr. Hamilton Rowan's dogs, stated by Martin to have been bloodhounds on the authority of a Dublin correspondent, were without any doubt Irish wolfhounds. He admits that Mr. Rowan had Great Danes, but states that he possessed one wolf-dog and called it "the last of the race." Mr. Carter remembered the dog and described it to be of a large size. Richardson then gives the story of "Fingal" and "Bran," a story which relates to the Scottish dog and not to an Irish wolfhound at all.<sup>2</sup>

The ever-prepared *Jesse* in his book "Anecdotes of Dogs" adds further interest by the story of an Irish wolf-dog with so good a nose that he was able to wind the descendants of the Irish Kings!

"A gentleman of an ancient family with a name unnecessary to mention, he having been engaged in the troubles which agitated Ireland some forty years before," went into a coffee-room at Dublin, accompanied by a noble wolf-dog, supposed to be one of the last of the breed. There was only one other person in the coffee-room, who, on seeing the dog, went up to him and began to notice him. "The owner, considerably alarmed, begged him to desist, as the dog was fierce, and would never allow a stranger to touch him. The gentleman resumed his seat." The dog then went up to him, exhibiting considerable pleasure at being fondled. "His owner did not disguise his astonishment. 'You,' he said, 'are the only person whom the dog would ever allow to touch without showing resentment. May I beg the favour of your name?'"

"The stranger complied (he was the last of his race, one of the most ancient and noble in Ireland, and descended from one of its kings). 'I do not wonder,' said the owner of the dog, 'at the homage this animal has paid you. He recognises in you the descendant of one of our most ancient race of gentlemen, to whom this breed of dogs most exclusively belonged, and the peculiar instinct he possesses has now been shown in a manner which cannot be mistaken by me, who am so well acquainted with the ferocity this dog has hitherto shown to all strangers.'"

"Punch," on May 23, 1846, comments on this "Dog of Dogs," and suggests that if the reader can swallow that he can, of course, "bolt the whole book of *Jesse* without wincing." They pointed out "the use of such a dog to discover the true lineage

<sup>1</sup> It reminds one of the "old bat" story from "Punch." It was the original, had been in use for a considerable time, and had 5 new blades and 3 new handles! I forget the actual figures, but the above are sufficiently accurate.

<sup>2</sup> It is obvious all the way through Richardson's work that he was claiming the rough-haired greyhound or deerhound of Scotland as the Irish wolfhound.

of O'Connell, whether he is a descendant of Smith O'Brien or King Brian Borohme," and that no Heralds' College could be considered complete without a specimen of this breed.

In 1859 *Stonehenge* has little to say about this breed and states it is a fine animal, extinct, "though there are still some gentlemen who maintain that they possess the breed in all its pristine purity of blood." That they were much larger than the deerhounds, some of them standing 35 or even 38 inches high, but resembled the deerhound in shape, generally of a fawn colour with a rough coat, and "pendent ears." It is the first mention, since Richardson's article and illustrations of 1841, of a rough coat, and doubtlessly Mr. Walsh had been misled by these writings and illustrations.

In 1885 the Irish Wolfhound Club was founded. The following notice appeared in the "Field" of April 18 :

#### "THE IRISH WOLFHOUND

"A club to 'promote the more complete recovery of this grand dog, and to fairly establish the race, by endeavouring to make the qualities and type of the breed better known,' has lately been formed, with officers as follows: President, Lord Arthur Cecil; Committee, Messrs. J. Davies, B. Olive, G. W. S. Lennox, B. Clifton, A. Russell, A. F. Laloe, M. L. B. Kennedy, and Lieut.-Colonel Garnier; Hon. Secretary and Treasurer, Captain Graham, Rednock, Dursley; Hon. Sec. for Ireland, Mr. R. Clifton, Usher Street, Dublin. The annual subscription to the club is two guineas, with honorary members at the reduced rate of one guinea; already twenty-three members have been made, and prospects for the future success of the club are bright.

#### "Standard of Points.

"The following description or standard, by which the Irish wolfhound is in future to be judged, has already been drawn up.

"1. *General appearance*.—The Irish wolfhound should not be quite so heavy or massive as the Great Dane, but more so than the deerhound, which in general type he should otherwise resemble. Of great size and commanding appearance, very muscular, strongly though gracefully built, movements easy and active; head and neck carried high; the tail carried with an upward sweep with a slight curve towards the extremity.

"The minimum height and weight of dogs should be 31 inches and 120 lb.: of bitches 28 inches and 90 lb. Anything below this should be debarred from competition. Great size, including height at shoulder and proportionate length of body, is the desideratum to be aimed at, and it is desired to firmly establish a race that shall average from 32 inches to 34 inches in dogs, showing the requisite power, activity, courage, and symmetry.

"2. *Head*.—Long, the frontal bones of the forehead very slightly raised, and very little indentation between the eyes. Skull not too broad. Muzzle long and moderately pointed. Ears small and greyhound-like in carriage.

"3. *Neck*.—Rather long, very strong and muscular, well arched, without dewlap or loose skin about the throat.

"4. *Chest*.—Very deep. Breast wide.



" 5. *Back*.—Rather long than short. Loins arched.

" 6. *Tail*.—Long and slightly curved, of moderate thickness, and well covered with hair.

" 7. *Belly*.—Well drawn up.

" 8. *Fore-quarters*.—Shoulders muscular, giving breadth of chest, set sloping. Elbows well under, neither turned inwards nor outwards. Legs, fore-arm muscular, and the whole leg strong and quite straight.

" 9. *Hind-quarters*.—Muscular thighs, and second thigh long and strong as in the greyhound, and hocks well let down and turning neither in nor out.

" 10. *Feet*.—Moderately large and round, neither turned inwards nor outwards. Toes well arched and closed. Nails very strong and curved.

" 11. *Hair*.—Rough and hard on body, legs and head ; especially wiry and long over eyes and under jaw.

" 12. *Colour and Markings*.—The recognised colours are grey, brindle, red, black, pure white, fawn, or any colour that appears in the deerhound.

" 13. *Faults*.—Too light or heavy a head, too highly arched frontal bone, large ears, and hanging flat to the face ; short neck ; full dewlap ; too narrow, or too broad a chest ; sunken or hollow or quite straight back ; bent fore legs, over bent fetlocks, twisted feet, spreading toes ; too curly a tail ; weak hind-quarters and a general want of muscle ; too short in body."

In 1886, the Kennel Club Stud Book allots a class (No. 54) to the breed, but there are " No entries."

In 1887 nine entries are made, all of which are prize winners. These are : "Cuculain," 21,753, the property of Mr. J. F. Bailey, of Waterloo Road, Dublin, date of birth about June 1883, breeder and pedigree unknown : a black, grizzle brindle, and second prize winner at Dublin. "Fionn," 21,754, a fawn, bred by the Rev. L. H. O'Brien, of Adare, co. Limerick, by Captain Butler's "Wolf" out of one of his own bitches, "Brenda." "Doyle," 21,755, red-and-brown brindle, bred by Mr. W. L. Clare, of Kingsbridge, Devon ; by Captain Graham's "Brian," who was by "Swaran II" out of "Clultra," 11,058. "Greeta," 21,756, bred by Captain Graham. "Hecla," by "Cedric the Saxon" out of "Lufra," the property of Lieut.-Colonel J. Garnier. "Norah Creina," mastiff fawn, bred by Mr. Clifton, date of birth about February. "Rathlin," one of Mr. Clare's, a grey brindle (light), by "Brian." "Shawn," a red, born in 1884, bred by Captain Graham. "Sheelah," wolf-coloured, bred by the Captain.

The following year, the Irish Wolfhound Class in the Kennel Club Stud Book has fifteen entries. The greater number of these are by Captain Graham's "Brian," some by Mr. Jessop's "Hydra," and some by "Cedric the Saxon," with the numbers 12,205, and 15,205, and so no wolfhound.

The following year, 1889, no increase takes place, but to the contrary, the entries suffer a loss by three. Captain Graham and Colonel Garnier's names occur in many of the pedigrees—the latter gentleman then residing at Taunton, whilst Captain Graham's residence was at Dursley, in Gloucestershire. It is interesting that in this list should appear the name of Mr. Crisp, of Playford Hall, Ipswich, the noted Suffolk Punch horse-breeder of that noted farming family, registered as the owner of "Irene," 26,168. There is also one entry from Paris, that of "Hecla,"



21,757. In the greater number of pedigrees Captain Graham's dog "Brian" appears as the sire and "Lufra" as the dam or great-dam.

In 1861, though he states that "a Welsh rough greyhound" does not differ in shape or colour from the Scottish breed, Meyrick, in his little handbook, gives us no useful information; and five years later *Stonehenge* does not even allude to Irish wolfhound at all, though he mentions the breed in his work of 1859, nor does he mention such a breed in his 1878 book, and *Idstone* (1872) also leaves the breed entirely alone (!). All this is significant: the Irish wolfhound was in the making, feeling was running high, and *Stonehenge* and *Idstone* thought it best to leave well alone.

In 1879 Captain Graham, in Dalziel's work, writes that "to do full justice to the subject is practically impossible as there is a genuine impression that this noble dog is extinct," but suggests, however, that there is enough of the true breed in the race known in Ireland as "Irish wolfhounds" and in our modern deerhound to allow a complete recovery.

In Dalziel's second edition we find the claim that the Irish wolfhound was imported by the Romans reasserted. In the early part of the nineteenth century in the Doggie world a kind of "Romanphobia" existed in virulent form. Writers, therefore, on any of the larger breeds frequently claimed that their particular variety was the one chosen by the Romans and used in their combats in the amphitheatre; it may come as a calm to those who desire to keep such legends alive that there is no evidence to support the claim of one breed more than another. Captain Graham writes that the mastiff was not used against wolves, being too small, and that a dog must needs be at least 33 inches in height to attack and destroy so powerful an animal as a wolf, so the wire-haired great greyhound was the breed.

It has been suggested that some of the true Irish wolfhounds remained in their purity, hidden away in distant villages surrounded perhaps by impassable peat-bogs; but, romantic as it is, there seems to be no evidence to support it.

Some of these were reported to be at Droghmore about 1850, similar to the deerhound but more massive and powerful and shorter on the leg; and two of these dogs, Captain Graham tells us, were the property of a lady at Ryde in the Isle of Wight, "of which I have a photo," he writes, but the photograph, interesting as it must have been to the devotee of the breed, was not reproduced and suggests that the photograph failed to be of the type considered desirable by Captain Graham. In March 1878, in "The Country" (a newspaper of New York), a sketch and a short account of the Irish wolfhound appeared, and in a later issue a letter from a Mr. Frank Adcock, of Shevington Hall, Wigan. He writes that he was the possessor of the actual breed in all its purity. Dogs "blackish-grey and grizzle in colour with stiff, wiry coats, like deerhounds in shape but more stoutly made."

But no one, not even Captain Graham, reports a visit to Wigan to see such an interesting discovery in the Irish wolfhound history.

Lord Caledon (1878) stated that his father had kept the Irish wolfhound and that he remembered them as a child, but only vaguely. Inquiries of his keepers and tenants had led to his gleaning that the Irish wolfhound had been as large, but rather more stouter made, than the deerhound, rough but not long in coat, and in colour fawns and grizzly and dun, some having a mixture of white. The then recently deceased Earl of Derby had kept the breed and had given one to a clergy-

man about the year 1858. It is said to have been about 32 inches high and of massive build.

The year 1879 saw the Irish wolfhound come to a fuller life. The Irish Kennel Club Show was held in Dublin. A class had been allotted to dogs showing the nearest approach to the old Irish original wolfhound, whatever that might mean. To the credit of all concerned, no false claims were made. It was stated that none of the old breed proved re-discovered. Captain Graham, the judge, in his report states that the class was composed of dogs differing very widely. That the first prize had been given to a deerhound of enormous stature, "Brian," a "dog wanting nothing but more bone and substance to be our ideal of an Irish wolfhound!"

We get no more information on this interesting breed until in Shaw's book of 1889, where Captain Graham writes that Sir James Warr in his "Antiquities of Ireland," about 1630, has a frontispiece to that book showing two dogs bearing a very strong resemblance to the Irish wolf-dog or Scottish deer-dog. This picture is given on Plate 41. Captain Graham must have been misinformed (see page 215).

The Irish wolfhound of to-day is indeed a wonderful creation. It is difficult to imagine a finer type of large, wiry-coated dog than this. The coat handles like a coarse hard rug of wiry hair, yet is set so well down as to appear free from roughness. The dog is built like a powerful Great Dane. It has great strength and considerable activity. The original Irish wolfhound was no dog of this type, but a large smooth-haired greyhound. The present breed is a Scottish deerhound cross Great Dane, a deerhound with more strength and weight and a squarer jaw. The legend<sup>1</sup> of Llewellyn, Prince of Wales, and his ill-fated but noble hound "Gelert," presented to him by King John, has made the Irish deerhound, which looks quite capable of the task legend has allotted to it, a hero.

"Gelert," a great favourite of the Prince, "failed to start with the other hounds. Llewellyn had no heart for the chase," and started home.

" But when he gained the castle door,  
Aghast the chieftain stood ;  
The hound was smeared with gouts of gore,  
His lips and fangs ran blood."

The Prince had left his infant son at home, unattended by either mother, nurse or servants, and he, horrified at the appearance of "Gelert" after—

" He called the child—no voice replied—  
He searched, with terror wild ;  
Blood, blood he found on every side,  
But nowhere found the child"—

killed the dog. His boy was alive and well all the time, and close by his side stretched out lay the body of a gaunt wolf, bearing the marks of "Gelert's" teeth. . . . We will leave the story there. It is a very old one, told over and over again in many different lands, about many different kinds of dog. It has, by common consent, here been allowed to allude to an Irish wolfhound, so that it appears a pity to disturb it.

<sup>1</sup> "The Grave of the Greyhound." See also Section I, Chapter III.



The Kennel Club Stud Book is the pulse of every breed. In 1890 we see a reduction in entries, a total of four, whilst 1891 shows eight entries. In 1892, among the new names which appear, is that of Mr. Townshend, of Gloucestershire. In 1896 the to-be-famous "Old Oscar" is registered.

I believe it was at Brighton in 1895 that Mr. W. K. Angelo showed a particularly fine Irish wolfhound, standing 34 inches high at the shoulder and weighing 134 lb. at eighteen months old. It was an extremely handsome hound, which had a borzoi, "Korotai," for his grandsire on one side, with both deerhound and Irish wolfhound blood and in addition his grandsire, on his dam's side, was an imported Siberian wolf-dog.

It is somewhat significant that in the Kennel Club Stud Book of 1897 Irish wolfhounds, instead of being at the end of the book as heretofore, were now allotted a position after borzois. Mr. Everett's name also appears for the first time with "Felixstowe Mavourneen," bred by Mr. E. Crisp, and twenty-six dogs and bitches appear in the list.

In 1897 the Rev. Edmund Hogan, S.J., wrote his remarkable and painstaking "History of the Irish Wolf-dog," to which I owe the discovery of some of the works alluded to and quoted in this chapter. Except for one or two amusing claims, the work is marked with accuracy. It is somewhat difficult to use, for occasionally the pages given in references are wrong in the number or chapter. It is also not an easy book to read, as it is in numbered paragraphs, of which there are 186. It commences with Quintus Aurelius Symmachus, Roman Consul in the year 391, and ends with a summary of evidence on the breed's antiquity. An amusing claim is one contained in the paragraph entitled "Some Fanciers of the Irish Wolfhound"; the author places there, with Captain Graham and breeders of recent time, Quintus Aurelius Symmachus!<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Lee, in considering the problem of the original type of Irish wolfhound, writes that he was shown by the Earl of Antrim a life-sized portrait of an enormous hound which had been in his lordship's family for some hundred years. It was a painting handed down to be that of a true Irish wolfhound which had saved one of his lordship's ancestors under peculiar and extraordinary circumstances. "This dog," writes Mr. Lee, "was a huge southern hound in appearance, marked like a modern foxhound, with long pendulous ears." "The painting gave the idea that the subject stood about 34 inches at the shoulder" (see Plate 129).

The history of the breed has caused considerable argument, much of it in the form of letters in the Press. On June 27, 1885, the "Field" commented on Mr. Graham's pamphlet "The Irish Wolfhound," circulated to members<sup>2</sup> only, and wrote that whilst considerable pains had been taken with the work, and most of the facts brought together were interesting if not original, that they could discern no attempt to claim any survival of the old strain, "which, so far as their impressions went, had been extinct for some time," "a century, probably."

The pamphlet, we read, contained photographs of "Scot" and "Colin," which the "Field" took to be typical portraits of the author's favourite animals. "The appearance of neither is elegant," is their comment, "and with so many pure-bred

<sup>1</sup> He brought some dogs, of some kind, from somewhere, presumably Scotland, to Rome to fight and probably die in the amphitheatre.

<sup>2</sup> Members of the Irish Wolfhound Club.



dogs more handsome, and quite as useful, we are sadly afraid the hobby of the promoters of the Club will scarcely be ridden to a successful issue."

Captain Graham replied to this letter the following week.

#### " THE MODERN IRISH WOLFHOUND

" July 4, 1885.

" SIR,—With reference to your obliging notice of my brochure on the Irish wolfhound in your issue of the 27th ult., permit me to point out that your deduction 'that it is not claimed that there is any pretension to a true strain still being in existence,' will, I hardly think, be found to be the case on reপরusal. If so, I have failed to express my meaning. Though I by no means assert that we still have a pure strain, yet I distinctly contend and affirm that more or less true and authentic blood does exist—quite sufficient, indeed, whereon to rebuild the old breed, with the aid of analogous crosses, in its correct form. Whilst I freely allow that the Great Dane is an extremely fine and imposing looking-animal, I fail to perceive his claims to elegance of form or beauty, and though the deerhound has in most cases both elegance and beauty (closely resembling the Irish wolfhound in all but stature and massive build), yet he has not the great size, power, and majestic look of the old Irish dog. The members of the Irish Wolfhound Club hope to produce a dog that shall have the stature and power of the Great Dane combined with the looks and beauty of the deerhound. Excuse my so saying, but I hardly think the breed will be any more manufactured than has been the case with many that are now looked on as 'pure.' Recovered would strike me as a more appropriate term, and had it not been for this 'recovery,' many of our best national breeds would have disappeared altogether, and, believe me, Sir, it has not been accomplished without reverting freely to outside crosses. On this head my evidence is positive.

" G. A. GRAHAM, Hon. Sec. Irish Wolfhound Club."

"[The question in dispute is whether the 'recovered' breed of Irish wolfhound can be traced *in any line* to the original breed. We do not dispute that many other breeds have been crossed to arrive at their present form, but, as far as we know, there has been a foundation of some kind to commence with, reputed to be of the particular breed. Can this be fairly said of the modern Irish wolfhound?—ED.]"

In the issue of July 11, in "Country House Notes and Queries" columns, is a note that steps are being taken for "the resuscitation of this noble breed," and that some time ago the writer had come across the following—that "The late Sir Wheeler Cuffe, a celebrated sportsman, had hunted with the great Mr. Meynell, in the West of Ireland, where there was a pack of hounds used for the purpose of hunting fox and hare, all one colour—black-and-tan—of great size, and which had been kept up in that country from time immemorial, probably ever since the last wolf hunt." A footnote asked for any of their readers to give particulars respecting the pack referred to.

In the next issue appears the following note, July 18, 1885 :

"THE IRISH WOLFHOUND.—I think the pack of black-and-tan hounds referred to by J. N. D. in last week's issue must be a pack that has been kept at Glenville,

co. Limerick, for generations. At present they are kept there by Mr. J. B. Massy, who hunts both fox and hare. They are very large, and more resemble a bloodhound in the head than any other dog. They give very good tongue—a deep bay—and when once on a fox nothing will stop them. Any more particulars J. N. D. requires I shall be most happy to give him, as I keep a few couple of them myself.—CHAS. H. STANLEY (Monaloo, Tallow, co. Waterford, July 13).

“—In answer to the query of your correspondent J. W. D., though I am unable to speak about the black-and-tan pack he alludes to as existing (?) in the West of Ireland, I can inform him that the grandfather of the present Mr. Watson, of Ballydarton—a well-known master of hounds in co. Carlow, kept a pack of hounds for wolf-hunting, and that he killed his last wolf at Myshall, close to Ballydarton, about 1786. The hounds are described as coarse, powerful animals, in no way resembling the grand old giant rough greyhound, commonly known as the Irish wolfhound. If J. W. D. is sufficiently interested in that breed to apply to me, I shall have much pleasure in communicating with him or any other gentlemen thereon. The Irish Wolfhound Club hope to establish classes for the breed at the next mid-summer show of the Kennel Club.—G. A. GRAHAM, Hon. Sec. I.W.H. Club.”

It was followed in the “Field” of February 12, 1887, under “Country House Notes and Queries,” by:

“IRISH WOLFHOUSES.—The number of so-called Irish wolfhounds exhibited at the recent show of the Kennel Club has once more drawn attention to a variety of dog which many writers considered had been extinct for a considerable number of years. Whether this was so or not, the breed has now certainly been resuscitated, and from various materials, the Scotch deerhound and the Great Dane mostly, an animal resembling the Irish greyhound (wolfhound), drawn by Reinagle, A.R.A., in the “Sportsman’s Cabinet,” published 1803, is produced. But was the old Irish wolfhound an animal of this sort? Now hanging on the wall of the reading-room at the Kennel Club, is a full-sized painting of what has been handed down in a nobleman’s family as a true specimen of the Irish wolfhound. This picture, given or lent to the club by the Earl of Antrim, and painted by a now unknown artist some one hundred years or more ago, is the portrait of a hound which saved the life of an ancestor of the present earl, according to tradition, handed down through an old retainer, who died at Glenarm, co. Antrim, some four or five years ago. Upon the canvas is painted an enormous hound, possibly standing 36 inches at the shoulders (no doubt, this is an exaggeration); but, so far from being the type drawn by Reinagle, and adopted at the present time, it is, pure and simple, a gigantic specimen of the old southern hound—hound marked, with long, pendulous ears, and other attributes possessed by that variety, which is, however, not to be found in its purity in this country at the present day. Here we have authentic evidence of an Irish hound strong and big enough to cope with the wolf, and not only this, but with power to hunt by nose, as the foxhound and harrier do at the present day, and the bloodhound, too. A hound of this description would be much more likely to be useful for the purpose of exterminating wild beasts than the one reproduced now, whose power of scent is but slight, and who would have, almost altogether, to trust to sight and speed to reach his game. Wolf hunting is



still followed on some portions of the Continent, and there strong, powerful hounds are used, who find their quarry by nose alone. Given these facts, but at the same time expressing admiration of those gentlemen who have recently done so much towards popularising a race of big dogs, is it not possible that the members of the Irish Wolfhound Club are breeding an animal quite different from the one which hunted the wolf in the green isle of Ireland many centuries ago?—R. B. L.”

This aroused Captain Graham again, who replied on February 19, 1887 :

“ IRISH WOLFHOUNDS

“ SIR,—As a matter of fact, there were only six or seven out of the twenty entries in the Irish wolfhound classes at the late Crystal Palace show of the Great Dane and deerhound cross. In the other entries there is no Great Dane blood for certainly many generations, to my positive knowledge. Excuse my saying so, but the supposition that such a dog as depicted as belonging to an ancestor of Lord Antrim being an Irish wolfhound is too absurd to require refutation. Every known authority unites in representing this dog as a gigantic greyhound of great power, added to which, would so good an artist as Reinagle, only twenty years later, represent so entirely different a dog as the correct animal?

“ The smallest consideration of the matter must conclusively point out to everyone that the dog now brought forward is the correct type of animal, and his full development on every point is only a question of time. I may add that the present Irish wolfhounds possess considerable powers of scent.

“ G. A. GRAHAM.

“ Hon. Sec. Irish Wolfhound Club.”

And an amusing letter on the controversy appears the following week :

“ THE IRISH WOLF-DOG

“ SIR,—I suppose my cacography is to blame for the curtailment of the pedigree of my nobly descended greyhound, which I mentioned in your last paper, to fourteen generations, from ‘ Bran,’ the dog of Fingal, instead of eighty-four, to which he—or, rather, his breeder—laid claim.

“ Poor fellow, he was short-lived himself, having been cut off in his fifth year by distemper (the only dog I ever knew to die of that malady at so advanced an age and was, like every Irish wolf-dog I have heard of, ‘ the last of his race ’—an honour to which there seems to be as many claimants as there are to being the locality which witnessed the demise of the last wolf.

“ Being of a sceptical turn of mind, I cast some doubt on the pedigree, on the ground that eighty-four canine generations would, I thought, hardly go back to the times of Fingal ; but was put to silence—first, by an assurance that the dogs of Fingalian days, besides being bigger and better than any other dogs ever were, would seem to have lived a great deal longer, as ‘ Bran ’ appears to have kept Fingal company for the greater part of that hero’s natural life ; and, secondly, by an inquiry if I knew how long it was since Fingal lived. On this point I was obliged to confess ignorance, and had to beat a retreat in confusion.



"On the whole, I am afraid that the attempt to resuscitate the Irish wolf-dog of the type of 'Bran' out of existing materials is about as hopeless as it would be in these degenerate days to raise again a race of bipeds to match Fingal and his comrade.

"AQUARIUS."

R. B. L. made his answer. He suggested that he merely did his duty to point out the portrait and its history. There is also a letter, signed "Patrick," from Limerick, attacking R. B. L., referring to Captain G. A. Graham as having collected "such specimens of the race that he could find, having pedigrees," and refers to a puppy, "Duhart," the first-prize winner at the Kennel Club Show. He suggests that the "genuine wolfhound bitches are of more value than Great Danes, and are likely to be.

From then onwards the correspondence on the Irish wolfhound increased. R. B. L.'s very fair criticism of the type bore its fruit, and a very important letter appears in the issue of that journal of March 19, 1887:

### "THE COUNTRY HOUSE

#### "IRISH WOLFHOUNDS

"SIR,—I was much interested in reading the letter of R. B. L. on this subject calling attention to the portrait of the wolf-dog belonging to a former Earl of Antrim, and I should be very glad to hear if the exact date of the picture could be determined.

"It appears from the description to show an animal of the same type as that described by Mr. Lambert in 1794 to the Linnæan Society, a drawing of which appears in the transactions of that society, and a more finished one in 'Shaw's Zoology.'

"I was fully prepared for and expecting the protest of the modern 'revivers' of the breed, and was not disappointed, as the letters of my friend Captain Graham and 'Patrick' testify. Their objection, apparently, is the same to this as to Lord Altamont's dog, viz. that the Irish wolf-dog was a greyhound; and this dog has more of the mastiff, and, therefore, cannot have been the Irish greyhound.

"Now this argument supposes that there was but one Irish wolf-dog, and that that term and 'Irish greyhound' were synonymous. But that is an assumption by no means certain, and several writers on this debatable subject have expressed an opinion that there were two kinds of wolf-dogs—the greyhound and the mastiff, and one writer of authority states distinctly that 'the great wolfedogges' were not the same as the Irish greyhounds mentioned by Camden.

"It is true that Mr. Lambert did describe Lord Altamont's dog as the *Canis graius hibernicus*, stating at the same time that the breed must have been formerly more of greyhound form, and had doubtlessly degenerated, and it is true that many writers followed him in the mistake. But Lord Altamont wrote to the Linnæan Society some years after to correct the error, and stated that there were in Ireland formerly two kinds of wolf-dogs, the mastiff and the greyhound wolf-dog, and that until within two years previously, he had possessed both, but that the dog portrayed by Mr. Lambert was the mastiff wolf-dog.

"When, too, we consider that in the travels of Duke Cosmo (A.D. 1668) mention

is made of the wolves in Ireland 'for the hunting of which the dogs called mastiffs are in great request,' and in many writers also of the last century the wolf-dog is described as somewhat like the mastiff, it is rather difficult to believe that the animals possessed by Lords Antrim and Altamont had no claim to be considered wolf-dogs. The wolf-dog was always a scarce and much-prized animal, and was never to be found except in the hands of the great. It was so scarce that its exportation was prohibited in 1652, and it must have got still more so, and almost extinct a hundred years after. But, if any were then to be found, in whose hands were they to be looked for, but in those of such men as Lords Altamont and Antrim? and the latter would not be likely to put forward and consider certain dogs as wolf-dogs, if they knew, as they would have every opportunity of doing, that other noblemen possessed quite a different kind of wolf-dog.

"There is, therefore, a very great deal to be said in favour of the mastiff wolf-dog, especially when we have Lord Altamont's direct assertion that there were two kinds of wolf-dogs.

"No doubt the greyhound wolf-dogs he mentions were what we find called by Goldsmith and others 'the Irish greyhound.' The proper title is not simply 'Irish Greyhound,' but 'The Great Irish Greyhound,' to distinguish the breed from minor sorts of common greyhounds, which must have existed in Ireland as elsewhere. These would be the dogs described by Buffon, Goldsmith, Ray, Pennant, and others, and depicted by Schreber, Ridinger, and Bewick, all which, as I have elsewhere shown, point to a big, long-legged, somewhat coarse greyhound-shaped dog, white, or white with brown patches, with a lazy, sleepy expression, and a perfectly smooth coat.

"There is not the slightest foundation in any of the writers up to the close of the last century for the inference that the Irish wolf-dog, whatever he was, had a rough coat, or was anything like the type adopted by the modern revivers of the breed. In fact, all the evidence we have is, either directly or indirectly, to the contrary.

"It is, therefore, no wonder that Captain Graham is so anxious to rely on the authority of Reinagle's picture in the 'Sportsman's Cabinet,' for this is the only authority (such as it is), either by way of picture or by description, for the assertion that the wolf-dog was a rough-coated dog. And what is the value of Reinagle as an authority? His picture is, in the first place, opposed to the text he is illustrating. The writer, in a fairly long article, states that in his opinion there was no pure-bred Irish greyhound to be found, and goes on to say that such as there were had degenerated into, and could not be distinguished from, the Dane. Reinagle illustrates this by a representation of a half-bred deerhound. Now, which is to be believed in such a case—the writer, who, we presume, has studied his subject, or the illustrator, who does what he is told?

"From the writer's statement, that there was not a dog of the pure breed for Reinagle to draw, and as the latter had to draw something, it is pretty clear that he was allowed to draw a fancy portrait. In any case, what could be the value of Reinagle's opinion against even that of Bewick alone? But what can it be when it is opposed to that of every other naturalist, as it can be shown to be?

"Captain Graham states that the opinion of all the best authorities, and 'Patrick' says that all traditions and many detailed descriptions, are in favour of a dog of the



type they are advocating and introducing. Will they kindly state what such authorities and detailed descriptions are ?

“ ‘ Patrick ’ asserts that the revivers are not solely manufacturing from the deerhound and Great Dane, but that Captain Graham has authentic blood of the old breed. To this I reply that the authentic blood is simply the remains of similar experiments to the present one, set on foot by private individuals some forty years or so ago, when the theory of the Irish wolf-dog being an enlarged deerhound was started by Richardson and others, and that the dogs so bred then have no more claim to be considered pure than the descendants of those now being bred by the Irish Wolfhound Club will have forty years hence, if unfortunately any then be found.

“ But how much, or rather how little, even of this so-called authentic blood is to be found in any specimens of the Wolfhound Club ? How much is there in Captain Graham’s ‘ Brian,’ the sire of nearly all the wolfhounds one finds on the bench, and how much of the deerhound ?

“ I am sorry to oppose Captain Graham, whose indomitable energy I greatly admire, and who has accomplished what I think no other man could have done in establishing his Wolfhound Club, and obtaining recognition of his breed from the Kennel Club ; but I cannot admit that Reinagle’s picture is sufficient authority for the creation of a type of dog utterly irreconcilable with all the accounts of the most celebrated naturalists, who wrote when there must have been specimens of the breed in existence, and whose accounts are really the substance of all that we know on the subject ; and I for one hold it absurd to think for a moment of placing Reinagle’s authority in opposition to that of Buffon, Goldsmith, Linnæus, Ridinger, Schreber, Bewick, Brown, Hamilton, Smith, Pennant, Bingley, and others, whose accounts or representations all point to or show a totally different kind of animal to that which the Wolfhound Club is now seeking to revive.

“ G. W. HICKMAN.

“ WESTFIELD, SELBY HILL.”

Three weeks later Mr. G. W. Hickman, in the “ Field ” of April 30, 1887, sums up the situation :

#### “ IRISH WOLFHOUSES

“ SIR,—I am afraid my reply to ‘ Patrick ’ will occupy more space than I ought to ask for, but it is the interest of the public that the claims of the modern manufacture should be properly sifted.

“ ‘ Patrick ’ charges me with setting up the theory that the Irish wolf-dog was a mastiff. I did so such thing. I said there was considerable evidence that there were mastiff wolf-dogs as well as greyhound ones, and R. B. L.’s picture was a corroboration. ‘ Patrick ’ is wrong as to Lord Altamont. He was a breeder, and he states expressly that he had had both mastiff and greyhound wolf-dogs in his possession, and that he had then dogs bred between the two sorts, and I think Lord Altamont’s positive statements on these points strong evidence.

“ Whilst on this point I will reply to ‘ Orion ’ in respect of the Irish wolf-dog of Charles V in the gallery at Madrid. ‘ Orion ’ says that this portrait would at once set at rest the question. Without going this far, I may say that if this is so, the question appears settled in favour of a mastiff kind of dog. In a controversy,



originated by me in 1879 in the 'Live Stock Journal,' one of the writers quoted the letter of an American friend to this effect: 'At Madrid in 1858 I saw a painting of Charles V in the Great Gallery there, and in which his favourite Irish wolf-dog is also painted. The dog is more like a mastiff than a greyhound or a Russian wolf-dog.' This is said by a gentleman who owned he was disappointed as he expected to find a rough greyhound.

" 'Patrick' charges me with the rendering of the word 'mastiff' in Duke Cosmo's travels; but it is the translation of the English editor who is responsible. I have not the original, but it is doubtless 'mastino.' But whilst asserting that there is evidence as to a mastiff wolf-dog, I admitted that there was also a great Irish greyhound, which seems to have been also a wolf-dog; but that it was a smooth dog, of somewhat heavy greyhound form, and not a rough-coated one like a large deerhound.

" In saying that the authorities I quoted all 'point to or show' a totally different animal to that advocated by the Irish Wolfhound Club, I was particular in my language. I meant to say that the portraits we have—such as Redinger's, Schreiber's, Bingley's, Bewick's, and Brown's—show a smooth dog, and these pictures harmonise with the descriptions of Buffon, Goldsmith, and others, and leave us little or no doubt that they all referred to the same dog, which we see from the pictures to be smooth-coated. This similarity can be shown if I had greater space to do so. I do not say that Ray and Goldsmith say directly that the coat was smooth, but it is certainly to be inferred. But as to Goldsmith, what reasonable doubt can there be when he says that 'they seemed more timid than the ordinary race of dogs, and their skin much thinner, and consequently less fitted for combat?' Is this a description of a rough-coated giant deerhound?

" The canine skulls in the Royal Irish Academy I cannot accept, as 'Patrick' asks me to do, as a testimony of his truthfulness. In the first place, they may well be those of dogs, such as I say the great Irish greyhound was; and next, they may be those of pre-adamite animals, like the great Irish elk, and as extinct as the dodo.

" Your correspondent 'Aquarius' treats the claims of the dog of Montargis to rank as an Irish wolf-dog in the proper light. I myself saw him once in my youth in a booth at a fair, and he was a sort of Landseer Newfoundland. Seriously speaking, can anything be more absurd than this claiming every legendary dog as an Irish wolf-dog? The dogs of Pliny, of Ælian—who killed lions and elephants—of the Roman arena, the faithful Gelert, and the dog of Montargis, we have been told, were all Irish wolf-dogs, and with equal truth. As to the dog of Montargis, the legend is doubted altogether, and Ballet shows that it is a mere story, much older than the time stated.

" I asked 'Patrick' to furnish me with the many detailed descriptions in favour of his views, and he replies that he is 'hopeless of persuading anybody who has read Richardson and is not convinced.' For my part, I have read Richardson, studied him, spent hours in trying to verify his authorities, and I am convinced, as 'Patrick' will see. I well know that Richardson's essay is the gospel of the modern revivers of the breed, and I admit that, if his authorities had any existence, or his inferences were deduced from facts, and were not mere assumptions, it would be difficult to refute. But it is worthless. The strongest and most direct proofs he gives are fabrications, and he ignores all the evidence on the opposite side. On these terms, it will be conceded that anyone can make out a strong case.

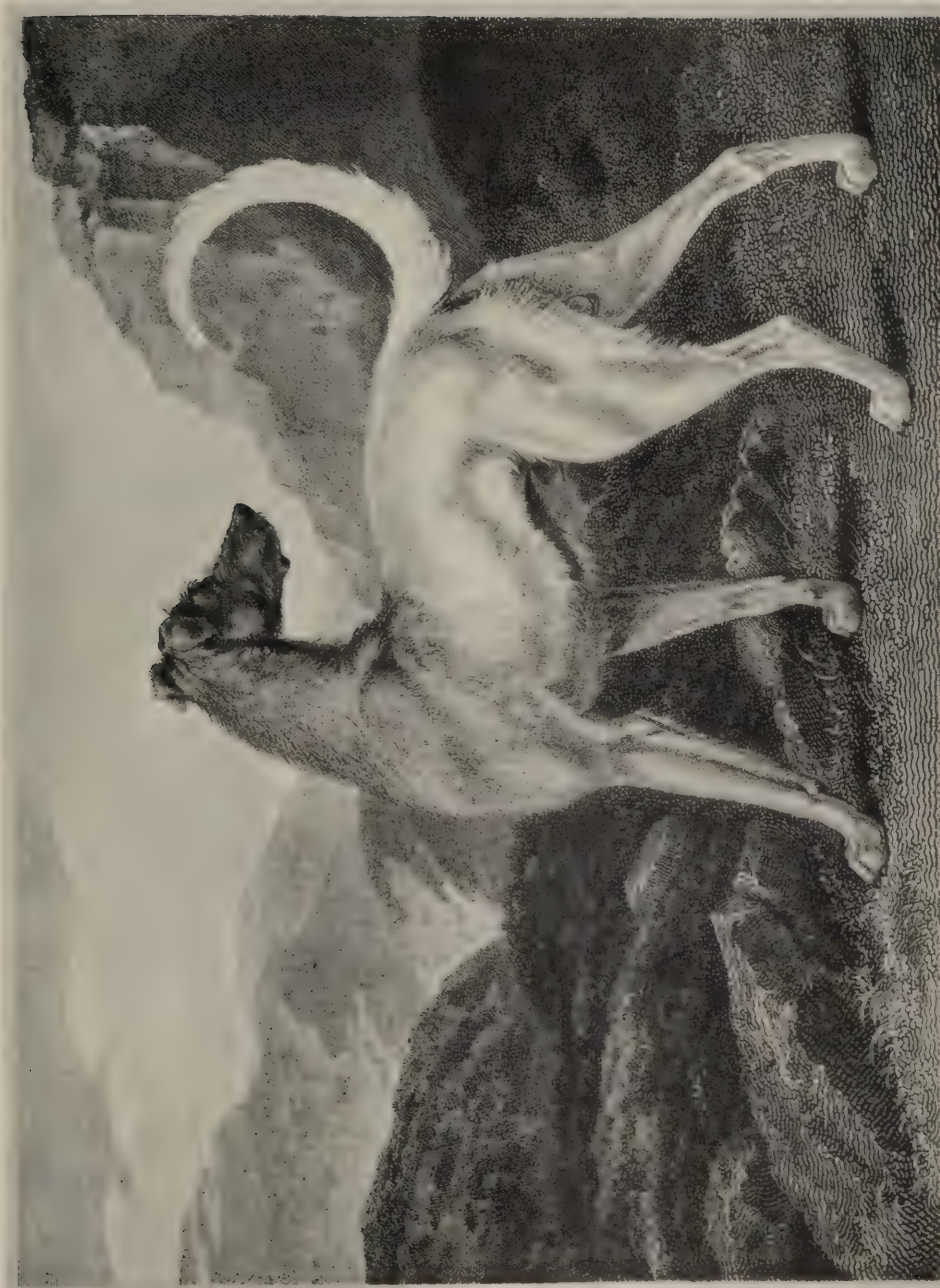
“ Richardson set out with the fixed idea that the Irish wolf-dog was a gigantic, rough greyhound, like an enlarged deerhound, and he made his evidence fit in with his theory, and stopped short at no misquotation and fabrication of authorities to prove his point.

“ Now, the essay of Richardson may be divided into two parts—the inferential and the direct. The inferential is the argument he makes use of to prove that the deerhound is a smaller and degenerate wolf-dog, and, consequently, that the Irish wolf-dog was a gigantic deerhound. To arrive at this conclusion, he infers that as Scotland was peopled from Ireland, the settlers probably took the wolf-dog with them ; that at first the Scotch dog was called the wolf-dog, but that, when wolves disappeared, it degenerated into and became a deerhound, and thus with change of occupation came a change of name. In proof of the latter argument, it has been asserted that the name ‘ deerhound ’ is not met with until comparatively modern times. In further support of this view, Richardson adduces the Ossianic legends—the common property of both Irish and Scottish Celts—with their account of ‘ white-breasted, hairy-footed Bran,’ to show that the Irish wolf-dog was a rough greyhound.

“ To take the last instance first, it is absurd to base any serious argument on these legends, even leaving out of consideration the question of their authenticity ; and, as your correspondent ‘ Aquarius ’ says, it would be as reasonable to expect to resuscitate the Fingalian heroes as their mythical hounds. In opposition to the deerhound argument, I have shown elsewhere, at length, that the term, ‘ deirhoundes ’ is used in regard to the Highland dogs by Pitscottie, in his *History*, published about A.D. 1600, when wolves were in existence, and before any deficiency, through their disappearance, could be inferred in the deerhound. I have also shown by examples and evidence that many of our modern deerhounds are too big for their natural work, and that there is therefore no reason to infer that they were ever larger when kept for work alone, and consequently there is not the shadow of a foundation for saying that they are degenerate in size. In further disproof of the identification of the Irish wolf-dog with the ancient deerhound, I have shown that, about the time when the deerhound could be mustered by the Earl of Mar in hundreds, Buckingham was writing to Ireland to the deputy to procure him one or two Irish greyhounds as a great favour ; and only a few years before an Irishman arrived in Glasgow with a present of ‘ four great dogs ’ for the King (A.D. 1591). Surely this would hardly be a rare present to a King, when the dogs (assuming with Richardson that the Irish wolf-dog and the deerhound were identical) were so numerous that, a few years later, one of his subjects could muster hundreds ; nor would Buckingham, the favourite of James I, have had to send to Ireland, begging, as a great favour, for Irish greyhounds as a present to ‘ divers princes and other noble persons,’ when his sovereign could procure him any number in Scotland ; nor would dogs that were so common, as the deerhound appears then to have been in Scotland, be a much-prized gift for princes. On the other hand, we know that the Irish wolf-dog was always very rare, and, moreover, we never read of their being exported from Scotland.

“ These considerations will, I think, in the judgment of all impartial critics, utterly negative the theory of the identification of the wolf-dog with the deerhound, which is the basis of Richardson’s essay.





IRISH GREYHOUND. By Reinagle. From Tiplin's "*Sportsman's Cabinet*" (1803).



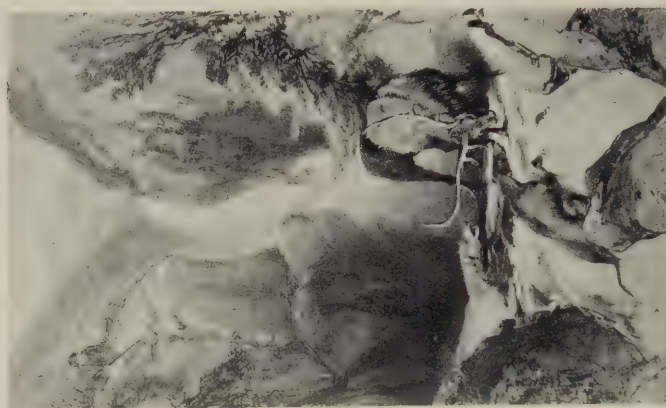
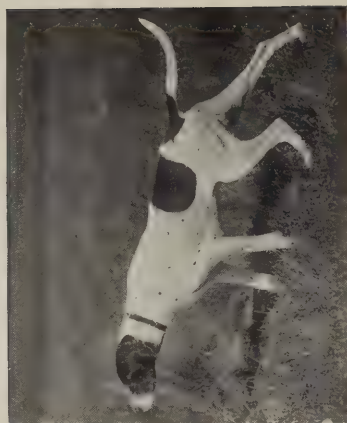


BORZOIS. (*Above*) "KING AND QUEEN OF DIAMONDS OF ADDLESTONE," (*Centre*) CH. "NIZAM OF ADDLESTONE," (*Below*) CH. "QUEEN OF HEARTS" (a typical position). *The property of Mrs. Vlasto.*



THE COACH-DOG. From an engraving by Reinagle in Taplin's "Sportsman's Cabinet" (1803).





(Above) left to right, DALMATIAN CHI, "THE WHIP," The property of Mr. G. A. Bury. LANDSEER'S PICTURE OF HIS DOGS, SHOWING "MAIDA," HIS DEERHOUND. From Scrope (see below). POINTER "RIOT," (Below) DALMATIAN CHI, "GRAN SEMINANT," The property of Mr. G. A. Bury. "TAREE" AND "DERIG" FACING THE STAG (see p. 205). An illustration from Scrope's "Art of Deerstalking" (1838). DALMATIAN "PRINCE UMBRIA," The property of Mr. G. A. Bury.



"I will now examine Richardson's chief 'authorities.' He felt that mere inference was not sufficient, and that he must show some historical evidence, especially on the point of roughness of coat, so as to fit in with his deerhound theory. That his task was difficult as to the latter will be admitted when I state, what I believe to be the fact, that there is not a single direct statement in any writer anterior to the beginning of this century, or any picture, to show that the Irish wolf-dog was a rough-coated animal.

"However, Richardson was not daunted, and produced some very strong evidence in support of his theory, which has no doubt convinced 'Patrick' and others, and has been quoted by writer after writer. But a reference to the various authors quoted will show that the so-called quotations are either distorted, or altered, or do not exist at all.

"To prove my statement, I will now give the passages which Richardson cites to prove his rough-greyhound theory :

"'Ray has described the Irish wolf-dog as a tall, rough greyhound ; and so has also Pennant, who descants at some length on his extraordinary size and power.'

"Now, Ray says not a word about roughness of coat ; on the contrary, his remark, 'similar in all respects to the ordinary greyhound' ('*vulgari cani Græco per omnia similis*'), is, I maintain, in favour of a smooth coat.

"Neither has Pennant a syllable describing the wolf-dog as a rough greyhound. On the contrary, he remarks, after describing the lyemmer as, in the form of its body, a medium between the hound and gre-hound : 'This probably is the kind now known to us by the name of the Irish gre-hound. . . . I have seen two or three in the whole island ; they were of the kind called by M. de Buffon *le grand Danois*' ; and we know that the latter was a smooth-coated dog. Nor does Pennant descant at length on the dog's size and power, for in this description he never mentions those points at all.

"What then, can we say of these the chief authorities for a rough-coated greyhound, except that they are gross and deliberate misstatements ? In his first essay Richardson quotes a very strong and what would be a conclusive authority if true, and has, no doubt, been deemed such by many. His words are : 'Buffon says he saw an Irish greyhound which measured five feet when sitting, and says that all other sorts of greyhounds are descended from him, and that in Scotland it is called the Highland greyhound ; that it is very large, deep-chested, and covered with long rough hair' ('*Irish Penny Journal*'). (See Plate 68.)

"With the exception of the height, there is not a syllable of this to be found in Buffon. This, then, is another fabrication.

"Again : 'Pliny relates a combat in which the dogs of Epirus bore a part. He describes them as much taller than mastiffs, and of greyhound form, detailing an account of their contests with a lion and an elephant. This, I should think, suffices to establish the identity of the Irish wolf-dog with the far-famed dogs of Epirus.'

"This 'identification' is a fine example of the Richardsonian inference, and of the amount of evidence necessary to support it in his eyes.

"Unfortunately, there is not a word in Pliny describing the dogs at all. In his first essay, Richardson stated that Pliny called these dogs *Canes graii Hibernici*.

This is, of course, an invention, and a ridiculous absurdity also to suppose that Pliny used a term of scientific nomenclature first invented by Ray, I believe. At all events, the word *hibernicus* is not to be found in the classics.

“ ‘ In the Welsh laws of the ninth century we find heavy penalties laid down for injuring the Irish greyhound, or, as it was styled in the code alluded to, ‘ *Canis Graius Hibernicus* ’ (Richardson’s ‘ *Irish Penny Journal* ’ ).

“ Richardson appears to have ‘ *Caius Graius Hibernicus* ’ on the brain, for there is no mention of such a term in these laws, which I presume are the laws of Howell of the ninth century, and it is ridiculous to expect such mention. The animal really mentioned is the king’s buckhound or covert-hound.

“ I will give one more instance, which also shows how eager Richardson was to prove his rough-grey-hound theory, even where the authority, if correct, would only be a mere opinion. He states, ‘ A gigantic rough greyhound was found by Dr. Clarke on the confines of Circassia, and by him described as identical with our old Irish greyhound.’

“ But all Dr. Clarke says is this : ‘ We also saw several of that gigantic breed which goes by the name of the Irish wolf-dog.’ As to what they were, rough or smooth, Thibet mastiffs or Circassian wolf-dogs, we have not the slightest hint from Dr. Clarke. So this is another deliberate fabrication.

“ Richardson further says that ‘ the faithful Gelert was an Irish wolf-dog, presented to Llewellyn by King John, and we know that the dog presented by John was a tall, rough greyhound.’ This is truly Richardsonian. Here we have a dog, the hero of a mythical legend common in various forms to many countries of the world, treated as an historical fact, with the astounding statements—for which not a word of authority is given, that it was an Irish wolf-dog, and ‘ we know ’ it was a rough greyhound.

“ Again, Richardson asserts that the canine skulls found by Surgeon Wyld ‘ were evidently those of rough greyhounds.’

“ How can this assertion be made from any mere skull ? But it is only another instance of Richardson’s determination to prove his theory through thick and thin. By the way, it now appears from ‘ Patrick’s ’ letter that the largest skull in the Royal Irish Academy is only 10 inches long ; but Richardson says distinctly that it was 11 inches—no inconsiderable difference. This appears to be another of his misstatements.

“ I have now mentioned all the chief authorities adduced by Richardson to prove his theory ‘ of a rough-coated greyhound,’ and I now put it to your readers whether I am not justified in the assertion that Richardson started out with a determination to prove his theory, and that to do so he misquoted, distorted, and fabricated authorities, and that his essay, when examined, proves to be utterly worthless, and crumbles to the touch. Yet this essay has been copied by writer after writer—Martin, Jesse, and others—who have blindly accepted and reproduced its misstatements, and has been accepted by the Irish Wolfhound Club and the modern revivers of the breed as conclusive proof of the type of dog they are now seeking to produce.

“ Impartial persons can now judge for themselves how far such an essay as this is a justification for the production or manufacture of the new type of wolf-dogs and



of the expenditure of so much time, money, and misdirected enthusiasm as we see lavished on this new craze.

“G. W. HICKMAN.

“WESTFIELD, SELBY HILL, BIRMINGHAM.”

And in the issue of the “Field” of May 28, Mr. Hickman completes his arguments as follows :

#### IRISH WOLFHOUSES

“SIR,—Your correspondent Mr. O’Brien expresses a hope that our controversy may have done something towards fixing the type of this animal. Whether that be so or not, it has undoubtedly been the means of introducing into the question an utterly novel argument, which is quite refreshing after the threadbare and stale quotations from Richardson’s essay with which he has favoured us, but which he was the first to deprecate beforehand in his first letter.

“I cannot do full justice to this argument unless I reproduce it *verbatim*, as follows : ‘How different, then, his [Mr. Hickman’s] information from that of the Irish commonalty, who, *though he has never before seen a specimen*, recognises the breed at sight ; who unhesitatingly writes of it, draws it, prints it, sculptures it as a great rough greyhound ; who remembers its characteristic attitude, sitting upon its haunches, and *knows* that in that posture it was face to face with a man.’

“Now, I at once admit that my information is indeed utterly different from this. When the Irish peasant ‘recognises’ an animal he has never seen, ‘remembers’ its characteristic attitudes, with which he was familiarly unacquainted ; when he can draw, paint, and sculpture it, and absolutely ‘knows’ that it was as tall as a man—all by mere instinctive intuition—I do not see what answer can be made—at least, what serious answer—to such a remarkable piece of evidence, and I have no doubt your readers will estimate it at its proper value. The only parallel I can remember is the case of the man who, never having seen or heard of one, evolved a camel out of his moral consciousness. But perhaps there is some peculiar instinctive relation between Irishmen and the Irish wolf-dog which enables the former to recognise the latter, just as the latter can, according to Jesse, recognise a person of the royal blood of the Irish kings by the smell.

“But I cannot help fancying that the knowledge of the characteristic attitude must have arisen from an intuitive recollection of a certain passage in Buffon, who is the only author who mentions this posture and height.

“For my own part, my information has been derived from writers who lived at the time when some relics of the breed must have been in existence, for I contend that the logical mode of proceeding is to endeavour to ascertain from authors of repute what were the current opinions, descriptions and representations of writers who lived when undoubted specimens of the Irish wolf-dog were to be found, and before the breed had become a matter of speculation. We know, from the proclamation against their export, that these dogs must have been in existence, and without degeneration, in A.D. 1654, and they would probably not die out or degenerate greatly for another hundred years. The nearer, therefore, we can get to the beginning of the last



century, the more valuable is the evidence, and this is why I think the representations of Redinger and Schreber are of the greatest weight.

"Mr. O'Brien's supposition, that 'these gentlemen with the German and English names' (viz. Schreber, Redinger, Bewick, Bingley, and Brown) 'are moderns,' shows what a slight knowledge he has of the subject; and it appears strange that anyone who undertakes to enlighten us on this disputed question should not think it worth while or incumbent on himself to gain some knowledge of what is to be said on both sides, and should be totally unacquainted with such an author as Bewick, at all events.

"So far from their being 'moderns,' the respective dates of the works of these writers, who all represent the Irish wolf-dog or greyhound as a smooth dog, are as follows: Redinger, A.D. 1721; Schreber, A.D. 1771; Bewick, A.D. 1800; Bingley, A.D. 1809; and Brown, A.D. 1829.

"In regard to his charge of my passing by his points and answering what was not in his argument, I fail to discover its justice.

"In my first letter I remarked that it was no wonder that the revivers of the breed laid so much stress on Reinagle's picture, as this was the only authority, either by picture or description, for the assertion that the wolf-dog was a rough-coated dog. Mr. O'Brien retorted that it was hopeless to convince anyone who had read Richardson's essay and was unconvinced.

"I therefore took up the challenge, especially as all Mr. O'Brien's arguments are simply derived from Richardson, and showed that the latter's chief authorities were gross misquotations and fabrications, and proved such a total want of *bona fides* as to entirely destroy the value of his essay in all minor points. Therefore, I deemed it unnecessary to notice such of the latter as Mr. O'Brien mentioned, as they are comparatively of no importance.

"How does Mr. O'Brien meet my charge against the author on whose infallibility he has so blindly relied? Does he frankly own that he has been deceived? Nothing of the kind. He simply blames me 'for attacking a dead man on the ground of some of his ingenious, but less authenticated speculations.' So that the gross fabrication by Richardson of imaginary statements fathered on Buffon, Ray, Pennant, Pliny, Dr. Clarke, and others, as to the chief points which he wished to substantiate, Mr. O'Brien does not attempt to deny, but palliates under the peculiar euphemism of 'ingenious but less authenticated speculations.'

"I find, too, that Mr. O'Brien charges me with passing by two 'unmanageable authorities which he had mentioned.' I suppose, on looking to his letter, that he means the hackneyed quotation from Hollingshead and Evelyn to the effect that the Irish wolf-dog was a tall greyhound. I did not notice them, as I do not see in the least how they affect my argument.

"Though questioning if it was the only wolf-dog, I have all along admitted that there was a great Irish greyhound, which was apparently a wolf-dog, but I denied that it was rough-coated, so that these two passages, which say nothing as to the latter point, do not concern me in the least. So much, then, for Mr. O'Brien's 'unmanageable' authorities. The latter in his last letter says that my argument dwindles to this, that the dogs are not proved to have had rough coats. This is a distortion of facts. I stated that certain authors depicted them as smooth, and

these representations agree with the written accounts of other writers in other general points, showing that they referred to the same dog even though no smooth coat is specially mentioned. But, besides this positive evidence, I said that there was no negative evidence on the other side, that is, that not a single authority could be produced stating that the animals were rough-coated. Although Mr. O'Brien produced two authorities to prove this, I have shown him they were fabrications of Richardson, so he now has to admit that 'the direct evidence is not as conclusive on this as on other points.' So that it is his argument that has dwindled down to what I asserted at first, viz. that he cannot bring any direct evidence as to roughness of coat.

"Mr. O'Brien's proposition, whilst making this admission, that it is for me to prove that the dogs were smooth, is clearly illogical. It is for those who claim that they are reviving the true type of a breed to prove their case, not simply for them to assert the fact and leave others to disprove it. Otherwise, anyone may set up an imaginary breed without a shade of proof. As for the other points which Mr. O'Brien blames me for not noticing, I really did not think them sufficiently important, and they have been threshed out in Captain Graham's and my own articles on the subject elsewhere. For instance, the case of Hamilton Rowan's dogs, which he cites from Richardson, is of little or no value, because at this time (about 1825) the wolf-dog was as much a matter of speculation as it is now, and what Rowan chose to term a wolf-dog can be no authority, and merely his individual opinion.

"I have discussed the point in my article in Dalziel's 'British Dogs,' and there shown that his dog 'Bran' is described both by Sir Jonah Barrington and Lady Morgan as a Newfoundland; and it is quite clear, as your correspondent will find, on reading Captain Graham's article in Shaw's 'Book of the Dog,' that Rowan had certain smooth Dane-like dogs, which he called wolf-dogs: in fact, any big dog that looked imposing and uncommon seemed to answer his purpose.

"Your correspondent must indeed be hard up when he goes so far as to cite from Richardson the passage from 'The Biography of a Tyrone Family.' This is about the only one of Richardson's authorities I have not tried to verify, for I never thought anyone could attach the slightest weight to a mere tale, in a work published in 1829, relating the killing of one of the many 'last' wolves in Ireland a century before, in regard to the description of the dog employed. But I feel no doubt that even this authority would turn out in all probability to have been manipulated in some degree.

"As to Goldsmith, I still maintain that no superficial observer would make the statement that the wolf-dog's skin was thinner than that of other dogs, in regard to a rough-coated animal like the deerhound.

"Mr. O'Brien further says that no breeder is anxious to identify the Irish wolf-dog with the Scotch deerhound. Yet in his first essay Richardson says: 'I hold that the Irish wolf-dog and the Highland deer-dog are one and the same.' And Mr. O'Brien forgets that he himself, in order to prove the Irish wolf-dog a rough-coated animal, had in the very same letter cited Richardson's statement that Rowan's dog was 'perfectly similar to our Highland deerhound.' But the Richard-



sonians have short memories. When they want to prove the Irish wolf-dog a rough greyhound, they insist on its identification with the deerhound; but when they are asked, 'Why not, then, accept the present deerhound, which it can be proved has not degenerated in point of size?' they reply, 'Oh, the dog we mean was very different to the deerhound, which can never be raised to the height or strength of what we want.' To use an argument for one purpose and reject it for another is hardly logical or ingenuous.

"Mr. O'Brien says that no one would claim 'Brian,' 'Dhutart,' and 'Sheelah' for deerhounds. Well, I have seen the latter and should not be anxious to do so, though I have no doubt their pedigrees would show that they are chiefly so in blood. 'Brian' I have not seen, but I should think he is very like a deerhound, as he won once or twice at Dublin in the deerhound class before he turned wolfhound; and his dam 'Linda' was a true deerhound, and his sire 'Swaran' was by 'Young Torrum' a deerhound, so that here we find he has three-fourths of deerhound blood, and as his grand-dam no doubt had a great deal of the same blood, I should say that 'Brian' is at least seven-eighths of a deerhound. His son 'Hydra' must have more of the blood, and is, barring his ears, a very good deerhound compared with some we see.

"In order to dispose of this controversy, and that your correspondent may not charge me with passing over any of his arguments, I will just refer to the passage he quotes from the Water Poet, as if it were a new authority, though it is very well known, and was quoted by MacNeil fifty years ago, who admitted that the expression 'Irish' was applied to everything connected with the Highlands, and was at that time equivalent simply to the latter term or 'Celtic.' I have shown this at length in the essay alluded to, and demonstrated that these 'Irish greyhounds' were simply Highland deerhounds, and that only thirty years after the time they could thus be mustered in hundreds in Scotland, the exportation of the wolf-dog from Ireland was prohibited, as they were so scarce; and shortly before this time we find that Irish wolf-dogs were sent to Scotland as a gift to the king, which two facts show conclusively against the identity of the Irish wolf-dog with the Scotch deerhound, as it is absurd to suppose that a dog that was so rare then in Ireland, and, as we read, always greatly sought after for its rarity, should be found in hundreds in the possession of the Earl of Mar in Scotland, or should be exported there as a rare and kingly gift.

"Lastly, I will now deal with the canine skulls in the Royal Irish Academy, which Mr. O'Brien so persistently charges me with ignoring. In my first letter I simply mentioned them to call attention to the absurdity of Richardson's stating positively, without an atom of proof, that they were the skulls of rough animals, and in my last letter I said that they might even be the skulls of extinct animals like the Irish elk, or, if not, of dogs such as I admitted the Irish greyhound to be. But this does not satisfy Mr. O'Brien. The skulls are evidently his great card. He says they are not fossil, but he probably means they are not petrifications, which they need not be to be prehistoric, and the fact that the bones of the domestic animals were found with them does not of itself prove that they were not skulls of extinct animals, as the Irish elk, an admittedly extinct animal, is found in conjunction with such remains, and even the bones of men. But we require to know more about these



skulls before that point can be settled, and it does not affect my argument at all. But as Mr. O'Brien so triumphantly refers to them, and blames me for pooh-poohing what he asserts 'afford ocular proof of the existence of a greyhound in Ireland that did not stand less than 37 inches or 38 inches at the shoulder,' I will just take the trouble to show him how baseless are his assertions, and how little he must have considered the subject.

"Now, the statement is simply copied from Richardson—the source of all Mr. O'Brien's arguments—whose mode of argument was as follows: Taking the longest of these fossil skulls at 11 inches (it now appears that it is only 10 inches) in the bone, he added on 3 inches for cartilage, skin, and hair, making a total length of 14 inches. Then, taking as his standard the skull of a living deerhound, which he assumed to be 10 inches long in the case of a dog 29 inches at the shoulder, he worked out a simple proportion sum, and arrived at the conclusion that a dog with a head 14 inches long would be 40 inches in height; but as this was by far the largest skull, he placed the average height of the wolf-dog at from 36 inches to 40 inches.

"But Captain Graham is too candid and too experienced to endorse such an absurdity, and shows the fallacy of this reasoning in his essay which is before me, and of which Mr. O'Brien appears to be ignorant, although it emanates from the secretary of the Wolfhound Club. The latter truly says that the allowance of 3 inches for skin, cartilage, etc., is absurd, and that  $1\frac{1}{2}$  inches are quite sufficient (in which everybody will agree), and that a skull of 11 inches in the bone would be  $12\frac{1}{2}$  inches in the living animal. Moreover, that a deerhound 29 inches high would have a skull at least 11 inches long, whence he deduces the height of the owner of the skull to have been  $33\frac{1}{2}$  inches (it should be a trifle under 33 inches), and that the general height, therefore, would range from 31 inches to 34 inches.

"But it is a marvellous case of oversight that Captain Graham forgot that, in the very same article in which this calculation occurs, he was giving the measurements of his so-called wolfhound 'Scot,' which, of course, was the very animal to furnish the comparison. Now, 'Scot's' height is given as  $29\frac{1}{2}$  inches and length of head 12 inches, so that on the same rule of proportion, adopting this head as a standard, a living dog with a head  $12\frac{1}{2}$  inches long would only be  $30\frac{3}{4}$  inches high. This supposition is exactly confirmed by facts, for Mr. Musters's 'Old Torrum' was  $12\frac{1}{2}$  inches in the head, and 31 inches high, and so was his son 'Young Torrum.' So the largest of these skulls only represents a dog 31 inches high, instead of 40 inches, even granting it to be 11 inches long.

"But, it now turns out to be only 10 inches, so we must reduce our calculation, and, in order that I may not be charged with taking exceptional cases, I will compare this 10 inches skull with the heads of Captain Graham's wolfhound, of male and female deerhounds, and of greyhounds.

"Mr. O'Brien mentioned some comparison with the Dane, but there he is clearly wrong, for, in the words of Richardson himself, 'As the skulls are those of greyhounds, we must take the head of a greyhound to furnish the analogy.'

"Assuming then, this 10-inch skull to have represented a living head of  $11\frac{1}{2}$  inches we obtain the height of the animal, as compared by the rule of three, with

each of the following dogs. The dimensions are, in all but the case of my own dogs, taken from Dalziel's 'British Dogs.'

	Length of Head.	Height.	Proportionate Height of Dog with 11½-inch Head.
Deerhounds:			
Mr. H. C. Musters's 'Torrum' . . . . .	12½ inches	31 inches	28½ inches
Mr. Harris's 'Young Torrum' . . . . .	12½ "	31 "	28½ "
Mr. G. W. Hickman's 'Lord of the Isles' . . . . .	12 "	30 "	28¼ "
Mr. G. W. Hickman's 'Morna' . . . . .	10½ "	26 "	28½ "
Dr. Haddon's 'Maida' . . . . .	11 "	27½ "	29¼ "
Wolfhound:			
Captain Graham's 'Scot' . . . . .	12 "	29½ "	28¼ "
Greyhounds:			
Mr. Salter's 'Snapdragon' . . . . .	10½ "	27 "	29½ "
Mr. Benstead's 'Chimney Sweep' . . . . .	10½ "	26½ "	29 "

"We thus see, by most conclusive testimony, that the largest of the skulls in the Royal Irish Academy does not represent an animal of more than 29 inches high, so that the general height of these dogs—wolfhounds, if you like—ranged from 26 inches to 29 inches, some 2 inches less than that of our modern deerhounds.

"How are the mighty fallen! From 40 inches of imagination to the sober 29 inches of fact is indeed a great drop; but the miscalculation of Richardson is easily accounted for when we consider his process. He exaggerated the largest skull by an inch; he allowed an absurd amount for skin, etc.; and he understated the length of head of a living deerhound by more than an inch—the last two of which charges Captain Graham himself admits. No wonder, then, at the result obtained. All this proves my constant statement that Richardson stopped short of no misstatement or exaggeration to prove his point; yet the passage in question has been cited for the past forty years to prove the gigantic stature of the wolf-dog.

"Perhaps Mr. O'Brien will pass this by as merely one of his 'ingenious but less-authenticated speculations.' I have now given your correspondent facts. Let him either show them not to be so, or candidly admit he has grossly deceived himself.

"As regards Mr. O'Brien's great reliance on the authority of the Ossianic poems, I must decline to consider them as entitled to serious consideration. Our knowledge of 'White-breasted Bran' is chiefly derived from Macpherson's or the Scotch Ossian; but, as we read in the 'Encyclopædia Britannica,' amongst other places, 'the poems of Ossian as they appeared in the pretended translations of Macpherson, are substantially a forgery.' And, so far as these poems have any other existence, they are mere legends of doubtful origin, and with all the exaggerations common to such productions. It must be remembered that most unprejudiced people, except Highlanders and Irishmen, have considerably more than a doubt whether, in the words of Gibbon, we can safely indulge 'the pleasing supposition that Fingal lived and Ossian sung'; but no one, I conceive, will have the slightest doubt as to the question whether these legends are sufficient from a natural history point of view to fix the type for the production of an animal in the nineteenth century.

"In conclusion, I must beg leave to thank Mr. O'Brien for intervening in this discussion, as he has thus given me the opportunity of exposing the fallacies of Richardson, and demonstrating that his essay is an unparalleled compound of



exaggeration, unfounded inference, and fabrication, and that this gospel of the revivers of the breed must be relegated to the apocrypha.

"As regards my own conclusions, as Mr. O'Brien challenges them, my opinion is that, whilst there is some evidence that there was also a mastiff wolf-dog, the great Irish greyhound wolf-dog was a tall, heavy, thick headed, pointed-nosed dog, with a mild, sleepy look, mostly white in colour, with a perfectly smooth coat, totally unlike the deerhound or the type of animal set up by the Wolfhound Club, and now wholly extinct."

The illustrations given on Plates 68, 53, 55, 73, 67 show the Irish wolf-dog from 1665 to the present day. The original Irish wolf-dog was a heavy greyhound—heavier and larger than those known elsewhere. For modern types we have the remarkable wolfhound "King Shane of Brabyyns," the property of Captain T. H. Hudson, of Binley House, St. Marybourne, Hants. Writing to me, Captain Hudson states that he is more interested to obtain sound, healthy stock, than to develop abnormal size.

The points of the Irish wolfhound to-day are:

General appearance: The Irish wolfhound is of great size, commanding appearance, muscular, strong, graceful. Movements easy, active; neck and head carried high. Head long; forehead, frontal bones slightly raised, very little indentation between eyes; skull not too broad. Muzzle long, moderately pointed; ears small, greyhound-like in carriage. Neck rather long, strong, muscular, well arched, no dewlap nor loose skin on throat. Chest deep; breast wide. Back long, loins arched. Tail long, slightly curved, moderate thickness, well covered with hair, carried with upward sweep, slight curve towards extremity. Belly drawn up. Shoulders muscular, sloping. Forearm muscular, the whole leg strong and straight. Thighs muscular; second thigh long, strong, as in greyhound; hocks well let down. Feet moderately large, round; toes well arched and closed, nails strong, curved. Hair rough, hard, especially wiry and long over eyes and under jaw. Colours: grey, brindle, red, black, pure white, fawn, or other colour appearing in deerhound. Minimum weight of dog 120 lb., height about 36 inches; bitches, minimum weight 90 lb., height 28 inches.

#### BORZOIS

The first mention of the variety which I have found in English works occurs in 1812. In "A Picturesque Representation of the Manners, Customs, and Amusements of the Russians," by J. A. Atkinson and James Walker, is a note on the *yaeger*, or huntsman, stating that "the dress is invariably green, and consists of a leather helmet cap, a shooting-jacket, pantaloons, and leather gaiters fastened to them, with a *couteau de chasse* by their side; they seldom hunt with anything but greyhounds, of which they possess a most beautiful species called the *fan-tailed greyhound*, which differs from the Italian in this respect, that it is covered with a long silken hair, instead of the smooth short coat which characterises the former, and is considerably larger. The court is at very considerable expense to keep up this establishment, though it seldom partakes of the amusement."

There is also a reference to wolf hunting with Siberian greyhounds in "The Journal of a Tour in Germany, Sweden, Russia, and Poland, during the years 1813 and 1814," written by J. T. James.



In 1847 Richardson describes the Russian greyhound as a dog of tremendous size and power, closely resembling the Highland deerhound, except in courage, in which the Russian greyhound was inferior. He writes: "Two of these dogs will not infrequently race alongside a wolf for many hundred yards before either of them can make up his mind to grapple with him." That the dog stood 28 to 30 inches high at the shoulder, and that a brace had then recently been presented to her Majesty, stated to stand 3 feet high, the measurement having been taken from the ground to the top of the head (!).

In 1859 *Stonehenge* tells us the Russian greyhound was used for the destruction of wolves and bears by the Russians, also for coursing deer and hares. He writes: "The Russian greyhound is about 26 or 27 inches high, with short pricked ears, turned over at the tips; he is rather thin and weak in the back and loins, and long on the legs. The coat is thick, but not long, excepting the hair of the tail, which is fanlike, with a spiral twist of a peculiar form. The colour is dark brown or grey. I am not aware of any undoubted specimen of this breed having been imported into this country, nor of a correct portrait having been painted; so my readers must depend upon description alone."

But in his works of 1876 and 1878 he does not mention the breed; though Dalziel, two years later, under the heading "Siberian Wolfhounds," also describes the variety to resemble the Scotch deerhound except in colour, and that the majority seen at shows were white with fawn or yellow markings. The best he had seen were Lady Emily Peel's "Czar," by the Duke of Hamilton's "Moscow" out of the Rev. J. C. Macdona's "Sandringham." "Czar" was white and lemon. He remarks that the borzoi had a milder look than one would expect in a breed used for the work to which they were appointed.<sup>1</sup>

In his second edition (1887) he gives two chapters, one on the "Siberian Wolfhound," and one on the "Circassian Wolfhound," and remarks that the two were probably related, the Circassian modified from the borzoi. He is anxious to see more specimens in this country, and states that they are "as active as cats in their movements, so possess a great advantage over "the majority of show mastiffs and St. Bernards, whose gallop was decidedly bovine." He gives details from the pen of M. Zambaco. According to him the "Circassian Orloff wolfhound" was a distinct variety, and not the same as the Siberian. The coat, instead of being wavy, was flat, and about 2 inches long. The hind part of the front legs, the thighs, and the lower part of the tail were heavily feathered, and around the neck was a sort of frill. It also had longer legs than the Siberian, and the head was shorter, the forehead not so sloping back between the ears. The eyes were more open, and the colouring was dark fawn or black. The Circassian, he writes, was swifter and possibly more intelligent than the Siberian.

In the early days of dog shows, Siberian or Russian wolfhounds, as they were then termed, were sometimes benched. The first specimen to be shown was "Katae," at Birmingham in 1863, by the Duchess of Manchester. She was bred by the then Tsar of Russia. Eight years later at the Crystal Palace a class for foreign dogs was almost entirely one of borzois. It was not long after this that the Prince of Wales (later Edward VII) exhibited "Molodetz" at Laycock's Yard, Islington. This

<sup>1</sup> This is certainly a very remarkable fact.—E. C. A.

hound was one bred by the Tsar and presented with "Owdalзка" to the Prince. Later, in 1867, a grandson of "Molodetz," "Cossack," was shown by Mr. J. Wright. Fresh interest was aroused when a painting by Landseer of Lady Emily Peel with two borzois appeared.

In 1885 Lady Innes Ker started the present-day borzoi. "Krillutt," exhibited by Colonel Wellesley in 1888, was the first to become a champion here; the same owner showed "Daman," a wonderful-headed hound whose name still appears in some of to-day's pedigrees. Gradually this remarkably handsome variety became popular. In 1890 the Duchess of Newcastle took up the borzoi, her first being a bitch she called "Spain," her keenness for the breed and the excellent quality of her kennel doing much for the variety. In 1891 Mr. Blees imported a big team, and the Duchess purchased from him "Ouslad," "Kaissack," and "Malodka." "Ouslad" appears in nearly all pedigrees. Other very important dogs in the early years were "Korotai," and the Champions "Vikra" and "Golub."

At the Agricultural Hall at Islington, in February, 1892, there were several classes of borzois and an entry of fifty. The Imperial kennels entered a team. Most of them were the property of the Grand Duke Nicholas, but three of the dogs were the property of the Tsar, including the beautiful bitch "Lasca," and two dogs, "Oudar" and "Blitsay." "Oudar" stood 30½ inches at the shoulder, and weighed 105 lb. The dogs, according to instructions, were sold, "Oudar" making £200. According to Mr. Rawdon Lee, the best dogs seen in England up to that time were "Krillutt," "Korotai," "Oudar," and "Ouslad." "Korotai," a white dog, had slight blue markings. "Krillutt" was the property of Colonel Wellesley.

The same year the Borzois Club was formed, and a special show took place at Southport in 1897, but it was not altogether a success.

We read that at the Tsar's kennels fourteen men were kept to train the hounds, and it was usual for forty or sixty borzois to be in residence there, and about as many puppies.

The late Queen Alexandra was devoted to borzois, and owned a large kennel of first-class hounds. In 1895 the Tsar presented the Princess with "Alex," a dog which subsequently won 100 first prizes and numerous challenge certificates.

Mrs. Vlasto, to whom I am indebted for considerable information, owned her first borzoi in 1905. Mrs. Vlasto gives an insight into the thoughts on development then current. The kennel was started by a bitch of the then famous Ramsden strain, a kennel that exists no longer. Mrs. Vlasto, writing to me, states that "finding heads counting for far more than soundness," she purchased "two heads, and the owners of these two heads had backs like hoops, . . . and legs and feet, the least said about them the better." Deciding that this would never do, Mrs. Vlasto worked for constitution with the desired heads.

So from the Ramsden strain came Champion "Trumps of A," and Ch. "Queen of Hearts of A." These had the required arched head and good bodies, feet, and legs.

To-day soundness is essential, in strength of limb, jaw, neck, and brisket, as well as heart room.

In borzois, the bitches are considerably smaller than the dogs. The dogs stand about 32 inches; though the club standard is lower. It is not easy to get a heavy hound full of type, free from coarseness. The bitches are large if 30 inches tall. The



Russian judges the dogs from a working point of view and bitches more for the stock they are likely to get, but type is always kept in view.<sup>1</sup>

Among the leading sires of the breed are Ch. "Ramsden Ranger," and Ch. "Trumps of Addlestone." Of latter years "Sparrowhawk of Addlestone" has sired more champions than any other dog. In bitches Ch. "Miss Piostre" of the famous Ramsden kennels was unbeatable both on the bench and as a dam; whilst another successful bitch was "Czarina of Addlestone," and of the present-day champions, "Marie of Addlestone" is the dam of four full champions.

Borzoi have the tendency to have big litters, ten and twelve, and occasionally a litter of eighteen. The puppies are very deceptive. Born very small for their ultimate size, they have little indication of their great length of head or height. During the first week the outline is there, but then it seems to go, reappearing when the puppies are from three to four months old. The tail carriage of puppies when strong and healthy is apt to be far too gay; their knees generally have huge knobs. This really means "size," and straightening out takes place by the time the puppy is about ten months old. Adult borzois carry the tail low, and when running use it as a rudder. It is never carried higher than the spine nor curled over the back. The back is well arched, especially in dogs (the nearer this arch starts to the shoulder-blades the better); the quarters sloping with a good crouch and great strength; brisket deep, ribs nicely sprung; legs straight, elbow not out, the bone flat, and like a blade, never round; neck very strong, head long, lean, the veins showing; stop the less the better; eyes dark and haunting; ears small, set back and close; jaw and teeth strong, and neither over nor under shot.

Good borzois fetch good prices, and just after the War prices both here and abroad were high. Borzois now can be purchased at more reasonable figures.

We find in the "Field" of 1887 a letter that, as the borzoi was so highly bred, it had because of this inbreeding become rare, and that it had been found necessary to cross with the deerhound to give the breed new life. The writer also stated that from the earliest times, the most important Russian families had bred them. There were then several kinds of borzois, the smooth and short-tailed, etc., but he considered the most handsome the rough-haired, long-tailed variety. He also informs us that the favourite colour in Russia was a pure white, but most of the dogs were marked with fawn, lemon, red, or grey.

We have some interesting information in an article by Mr. F. C. Low, who visited the South of Russia as the guest of Mr. Kalmoutzky, the well-known sportsman. Mr. Kalmoutzky had some 20 square miles of land, and large kennels. Three hundred benches were on two sides, and on each end a room for a man. Kennelmen were on duty day and night. At that kennel he had seen what he considered the finest pack of wolfhounds in the world, numbering twenty-two couple. No expense had been spared, as much as £300 had been paid for one dog, and the total value of the kennel was reputed to be over £5,000.

He writes that "the perfect wolfhound must run up to the wolf, collar him by the neck, just under the ear, and when the two animals roll over, the hound must never loose his hold, or the wolf would turn round and snap him through the leg. Three of these hounds hold the best wolf powerless. The men can dismount from their

<sup>1</sup> Mrs. Vlasto.



horses, and muzzle the wolf and take him alive." He described such a scene when a wolf is bowled over. The chasseur dismounts, and "getting astride of the wolf gathers him up by the ears," the hounds still holding on "like grim death."

The illustrations include Mrs. Vlasto's noted dog Ch. "Nizam of Addlestone," by Ch. "Trumps of Addlestone" (see Plate 74), also puppies at her kennels at Binfield Park, Bracknell, and a remarkable head study.

The show points to-day are :

*Head.*—Long and lean. Skull very slightly domed and narrow, stop not perceptible, inclining to Roman nose. Head so fine that the direction of the bones and principal veins can be clearly seen. Bitches' heads should be finer than the dogs'. Jaws long, deep, and powerful; teeth even, neither pig jawed nor undershot, nose large and black, never pink or brown.

*Ears.*—Small and fine in quality; not too far apart, and when in repose touching the occiput or nearly so.

*Eyes.*—Dark, intelligent, expressive, set somewhat obliquely, placed well back but not too far apart; eyelids dark—eyes should not be light or staring.

*Neck.*—Clean, slightly arched, continuing the line of back, powerful, and well set on, free from throatiness.

*Shoulders.*—Clean, sloping well back, fine at withers, free from lumpiness.

*Chest.*—Great depth of brisket, rather narrow.

*Ribs.*—Nicely sprung, very deep.

*Back.*—Rising in a nice arch, the arch being more marked in the dogs, rather bony and free from any cavity.

*Loins.*—Broad, and very powerful, with plenty of muscular development.

*Thighs.*—Long, well developed, with good second thigh.

*Fore Legs.*—Lean and straight. Seen from the front narrow like blades, from the side wide at shoulder, narrowing down to foot; elbows neither turned in nor out, pasterns strong.

*Hind Legs.*—Long, muscular, stifles well bent, hocks broad, clean and well let down.

*Muscles.*—Highly developed and well distributed.

*Feet.*—Rather long, toes close together and well arched, never flat.

*Coat.*—Long and silky (never woolly), either flat, wavy, or rather curly. Short and smooth on head, ears, and front of legs, on neck the frill profuse and rather curly, fore legs and chest well feathered, on hind quarters and tail feathering long and profuse.

*Tail.*—Long, well feathered, carried low, not gaily.

*Height.*—At shoulder—dogs from 29 inches upwards; bitches from 27 inches upwards.

*General Appearance.*—Very graceful, aristocratic, and elegant, combining courage, muscular power, and great speed.

#### JUDGING POINTS

Head complete (eyes and ears included)	15
Neck	10
Shoulders and chest	15
Ribs, back, and loin	15
Hind quarters, stifles, and hocks	15
Legs and feet	15
Coat, tail, and feather	10
General appearance	5
Total	100



BORZOI "GOLUB."



BORZOI "KOROTAL."



BORZOI "SOKOE."



BORZOI "OUSLAD."

## SECTION V

### *DALMATIANS, GREAT DANES, AND SHEEP-DOGS*

#### CHAPTER I

##### DALMATIANS AND GREAT DANES

THE plum-pudding dog, Bengal harrier, Dalmatian, or, as it is better known, perhaps, "the carriage dog," is an old variety. Its name, "Dalmatian," is a mystery. In 1253, in a Dutch account of a visit to Dalmatia,<sup>1</sup> we find a description of dogs kept there, of so large a size and of such considerable strength that they fought successfully against bulls, and even, according to this account, overcame lions. But their use to the people of that country was their great power to pull along the carts, just like their oxen. Unfortunately, no mention is made of the colour of these great dogs, nor in any way is it suggested that they had black or brown spots. We can feel confident that these dogs were of no particular colour, or the explorer would have made a note of it in his works. It is also curious that natives of Dalmatia to whom inquiry has been recently made, know of no spotted dogs with ancient history in their country, and it is perhaps possible that the name "Dalmatian" is used because the spots resemble to some extent the curious volcanic rocks of that country, with round holes, formed by the gas-bubbles in the molten metal which has cooled rapidly.<sup>2</sup> Yet there is considerable evidence that the Dalmatian was an Italian variety.

In tracing the Dalmatian dog in English history, we find that Dr. Caius in his letter to Conrad Gesner, gives the following passage: "Recently (so fond are we all now of novelties), a new variety has been imported from France, all white, with black spots; this is called the Gallican." Abraham Fleming adds to the translation, which confuses matters, and has led authorities to believe that the description appertains to the ticking on spaniels and setters: "There is also at this day among us a new kinde of dog brought out of France (for we Englishmen are marvellous greedy gaping gluttons after novelties and covetous cormorants of things that be seldome, rare, strange and hard to get). And they be speckled all over with white and black, with mingle colours incline to a marble blew, which beautifies their skins and affoordeth a seemly show of comliness. These are called French dogs as is above declared already."

Topsell writes that in Italy "they make account of the spotted ones, especially white and yellowish, for they are quicker rised," and although this quotation refers probably to dark-coloured dogs with white or yellow spots, it is, all the same, of interest.

Spotted dogs were known in France, for the picture of the Dauphin of France, 1655-1732, is of his Highness fondling a spotted dog, somewhat of Dalmatian type; and Aldrovandus gives in 1637 a spotted dog, supposed to be an Italian, with the wording "Spotted sporting dog trained to catch game with English dog plant."

That the Dalmatian is an Italian breed we find supported in later times. During the stormy period of Cromwell's power, when anti-Roman Catholicism was rampant,

<sup>1</sup> "Tartaryen en China in't Jaar onses Heeren, 1253."

<sup>2</sup> Volcanic rock, such as pumice stone.



many illustrated leaflets, often extremely vulgar, show Roman Catholicism depicted in the shape of a Dalmatian dog of the very same type as such dogs are to-day.<sup>1</sup>

Spotted dogs were known and remarked upon in classical times, for mention is made of them by Greek and Roman authors, but unfortunately with insufficient detail to allow us to feel with any certainty that the dog mentioned as spotted was a Dalmatian. The discovery of a model of a dog of the Mycenæa period of Grecian history shows that at that time, 1600 years B.C., a dog with round black spots had been noticed or was desired. This model, in terra-cotta, has upright ears, the body is white, marked with black spots, and to some extent conforming with the standard description of the Dalmatian. The model is much worn with age.

Again, in the Tombs of Egypt occasionally a spotted dog is depicted, but it is not of the Dalmatian type. All this is of interest, because we can feel certain that attempts would be made to obtain further dogs marked in a similar manner. Spotted dogs would be bred when possible with spotted dogs, and thus the marking would become fixed. The model of the Mycenæa dog suggests a bushy tail; but it is possible that the sculptor, considering that a pencil tail was likely to be broken off, formed it as a flat piece, and, by the lines drawn across it, suggests the centre portion merely a support. (See Plate 20.)

Colonel H. Smith, in his notes on dogs of 1843, has an illustration of a spotted dog, somewhat greyhound in shape, and states that, having noticed this print, one of a specimen brought from India, "with a white fur marked with black spots, small half-dejected ears, and a greyhound-like form," he had the suspicion that our present coach dog was derived from "this Indian individual and his breed."

Unfortunately the gallant officer does not state either the date of the print or the area in India from which the print was obtained, neither where the variety was reported to have existed, nor whether such dogs were kept in any numbers. I give this picture on Plate 50. In 1780 Riedel shows a spotted dog, and marks it *English*.

The Bewick woodcut of 1790 is of a strongly made dog, rather closely and more frequently spotted than the Dalmatian is to-day. It is heavier in body and has the carriage of a Great Dane, rather than that of to-day's Dalmatian. The spotting conforms perhaps with Abraham Fleming's description of a "marble blew." The illustration shows the dog standing on the alert, close to a carriage drive. We find two pages further on a charming little vignette of a carriage with postilion passing along the turnpike. A gentleman is peering out of the window, and the door is marked "T. B.," the letters suggesting that the vignette is that of the talented artist on his way in his private carriage. A coach dog runs gaily by the side. In the description of the breed, Bewick tells us that "the Dalmatian or coach dog has been erroneously called the Danish dog, and by M. Buffon the harrier of Bengal, but for what reason it is difficult to ascertain, as its incapacity of scenting is sufficient to destroy all affinity to any dog employed in pursuit of the hare."<sup>2</sup>

"It is very common in this country at present," continues Bewick, "and is frequently kept in genteel houses, as an elegant attendant on a carriage, to which its attention seems to be solely directed." He adds that "we do not, however,

<sup>1</sup> Tracts and leaflets, British Museum.

<sup>2</sup> Dalmatians, on several occasions in recent times, have been trained and used successfully for the retrieving of game.—E. C. A.



admire the cruel practice of depriving the poor animal of its ears, in order to increase its beauty."

Though Edwards in 1800-3 gives a picture of Danish dogs, of Great Dane type, he does not show a Dalmatian. He writes, however, that "the common Coach Dog is an humble attendant of the servants and horses," whilst "the Dane appears the escort of his Lord." Taplin, in the "Sportsmen's Cabinet" three years later, shows a remarkable specimen of the breed, given on Plate 75. "It is a breed of no value, except to contribute to the splendours of the stable establishment, the magnificence of which has never before reached its present state of unprecedented elegance, and emulative opposition for a display of fashionable superiority. An attendant in a state of inactivity, . . . exulting, conscious of dignity, preceding the carriage, to announce its approach, with authority to clear the way."

Unfortunately, Taplin, evidently displeased with such "fashionable superiority, unprecedented elegance, emulative opposition, and authority to clear the way," then leaves our friend the Dalmatian, and enters into a lengthy and somewhat strange eulogy of the dogs of Holland, who have their working days, and aid the poor.

Thomas Bell (1837) shows a picture of a somewhat clumsy type of Dalmatian with a weak head. In the same picture at the background stands a closed landaulette, a coachman on the box—a noticeable development in the carriage, since Bewick's postilion-mounted vehicle. He gives us no information, merely that "showy and beautiful as it is, little that is interesting can be said."

Youatt (1847) depicts a Dalmatian of a racy and somewhat foxhound type, badly marked; and Stonehenge, in his book of 1859, twelve years later, describes the dog to be handsome, well formed, and to stand 24 to 25 inches high; and compares it with the Danish dog, "smaller than the Dalmatian," but being spotted in the same way and characterised by the same fondness for horses, which because of this were generally confounded under the term "coach dog."

It is possible that Stonehenge meant to write exactly the opposite to what he did, for his earlier work shows that he was not yet accustomed to "doggie" matters, and relied greatly on what was told him. Stranger still, perhaps, is it that in his work of 1867, "Dogs of the British Isles," he makes no mention of either the Dalmatian or the Danish dog, although he had in 1860 acted as a judge at the Birmingham Show and had considered the Dalmatian dogs exhibited insufficiently good to be awarded prizes. He had also judged, according to a later account, a fairly good class at Leeds in the year 1861, and reports in his later works the excellence of certain dogs at that time.

It was about 1866 that a dog, "Cribb," was bred by Mr. Rowland Hale. He won at all leading shows, carrying off the first prizes with monotonous regularity. Classes were never strong either in numbers or in the quality of the exhibits. This dog was sired by Mr. J. Harrison's "Carlo," a dog purchased from a Mr. W. Batty at "Astley's Theater."

In 1872 Idstone's book appeared. We read that the Dalmatian, "a spotted carriage dog, had of late years become comparatively rare."

It was six years later that Walsh's<sup>1</sup> book saw the light of day. He gives no

<sup>1</sup> "Stonehenge" is the *nom de plume* of Walsh.

explanation, neither why he had omitted the variety in his 1867 work nor of the erroneous statement in his previous book. He now allots two and a half pages to the breed. He tells us that both the Dalmatian and the pointer will run close by a horse's heels, and from this suggests that the Dalmatian is a true pointer. He describes "Captain," a dog bred by Mr. Burgess out of "Countess," as the chief prize winner since 1874, "monopolising all the first prizes at the London, Birmingham, and other important shows." This "Captain," in his spotting, is very similar to the dog of the present day. The shape of the head and the shape of the body are also of modern type, only heavier and stronger. He gives the value of the points of the Dalmatian, and the following details as to type :

	Value.		Value.		Value.
Head . . .	10	Legs and feet .	10	Coat . . .	5
Neck . . .	5	Tail . . .	5	Colour . . .	10
Body . . .	5	Symmetry . .	10	Markings . .	40
	<hr/> 20		<hr/> 25		<hr/> 55
Grand Total 100					

"1. The *head* (value 10) exactly resembles that of the pointer, but so long as the nose is cleanly cut under the eyes, and square at the point, great breadth is not insisted on, and there should be no flews. The ears should not be long and hound-like, but flat, thin, and vine-shaped, lying close to the cheeks, and rather smaller than those of the pointer. Eyes small, dark, and brilliant.

"2. The *neck* (value 5) should be arched like that of the pointer, without any throatiness or approach to dewlap.

"3. The *body* (value 5) must be moderately strong, but not heavy and lumbering ; sloping shoulders and a muscular loin are imperative.

"4. In *legs and feet* (value 10) the Dalmatian ought to be perfect, as his sole employment is on the road ; very strong bone is, however, not demanded, as he has no shocks to withstand, and useless lumber of any kind is to be deprecated. However, straight limbs, united with elbows well let down, and clean hocks, form the *desideratum* in this breed. The *feet* must be strong and close, whether hare or catlike ; and the horny sole should specially be regarded as of necessity thick and tough.

"5. The *tail* (value 5) should be small in bone after it leaves the root, and should be gently curved in one direction only, not with any approach to a corkscrew twist.

"6. The *symmetry* (value 10) should be examined closely, and, if deficient, penalised accordingly.

"7. In *coat* (value 5) this dog resembles the pointer in all respects, being short, without any approach to silkiness.

"8. The *colour* (value 10) is either black, liver, or dark blue. Sometimes there is a stain of tan about the head and legs, which is not objected to. A clear jet black is more highly valued than black-and-tan, the liver and blue being of equal value.

"9. The *marking* (value 40) is the point on which the judging of this dog mainly depends, some breeders valuing it at 50 out of the 100. I cannot, however, think that a well-marked cripple should prevail over a moderately well-marked dog perfect in all other respects, and I have consequently lowered the valuation of this point to 40. In no case should there be a black patch on any part of the body or head exceeding the size of half a crown, and the nearer the spots approach to the size



intermediate between a shilling and half a crown, and to the circular shape, the higher the estimate made. None should be smaller (if possible) than the shilling; but no dog has ever yet appeared without a few such "flecks" or "freckles." A well-spotted tail is greatly admired, but it is very rarely met with. The white ground should be quite distinct from the spots, without any approach to freckles on it, and the more regularly the spots are distributed the better. It is usual to divide the valuation of the several qualities in the markings as follows: Size, 15; shape and well-defined edges, 15; regular distribution so as to avoid patches of white, 10."

It is the first detailed description of the breed, and is of considerable interest on this account.

Dalziel (1879) shows "Spotted Dick." The spotting is not only indistinct but sparse, and the dog is far too long in the muzzle, bad in the back and shoulders, and in the front limbs. Yet he describes this dog as "the best-built dog of this breed" he has ever seen.<sup>1</sup>

"Spotted Dick" weighed 43 lb., and stood 21 inches at the shoulder; his head from occiput to tip of nose was  $8\frac{3}{4}$  inches. Dalziel tells us that for two and a half centuries the Dalmatian had been one of the domesticated dogs of Italy,<sup>2</sup> and that they were at that time unusually plentiful "in the charming districts surrounding the Crystal Palace"<sup>3</sup>; and he continues to suggest that the Dalmatian might easily be trained to accompany the "iron steed" of the "bicycling tourist," which would be a "highly ornamental adjunct to his travelling equipage."

In Shaw's book is a picture of "Traviser," 2579, bred by Mr. Boyce, but afterwards re-named "Uhlán" by Mr. Oldham, of Manchester, who had purchased him. Later again, this dog was named "Captain" by Mr. James Fawdrey, though no mention of the last change of name occurs in the Kennel Club Stud Book. The famous "Captain," 5394, bred by Mr. Burgess, is not to be confused with "Traviser," afterwards "Captain," but both, strange to say, were whelped in the year 1870.

The breed was, when show days started, more popular in the North of England than elsewhere. At Kirkby Lonsdale the famous "Spotted Dick" was bred by Dr. James, and Lakeside, Windermere, was the home of Mr. Newby Wilson. This gentleman obtained his stock from a Mr. Hugo Drosesse, of London, by the purchase of Ch. "Acrobat" and Ch. "Berolina," "Coming Still" and "Prince IV." "Coming Still" is the ancestor of most of the best in the liver spotted. It was at the dispersal sale of Mr. Newby Wilson's kennel that the two important dogs "Acrobat" and "Berolina" passed to Mr. E. T. Parker, of Bristol, at ten pounds each. Ch. "Acrobat" is the sire of the noted dogs "Moujik," "Primrose," "Defender," "Challenger," and "Ribblesdale Beauty," and is considered the sire of the breed.

The famous kennel of Mrs. J. C. Preston, of Ellel, Lancaster, contained stock of "Moujik," "Primrose," and "Defender."

We read that Mr. Herman's Ch. "Fontleroy" was noted for the uniformity of size, and distribution of his markings, and that Mr. William Proctor's Ch. "Balette"

<sup>1</sup> Dalziel states that tricolours have black spots on the body, and bright well-defined liver spots on the back of the fore legs, and inside and on the front of the thighs, and sometimes on the jaw.

<sup>2</sup> I have found no verification of this, except the notes I give on previous pages.

<sup>3</sup> Nor this!



within eighteen months won a hundred first prizes without once suffering defeat. Mrs. Bedwell, yet another noted breeder, showed "Rugby Bridget" and "Rugby Brunette," and Mr. J. Dawson, of Preston, "Superba" and "Partington."

We might add here that the Dalmatian is similar to a pointer except in head points and marking, not so long in muzzle nor so pendulous in lip. The eyelids (sears) are edged with black or brown, but not with flesh-colour. Both density and pureness of colour are required. The spots are evenly distributed and free from black patches.

Dalmatian puppies are often born pure white, without any signs of spots, and the whiter they are the better. This suggests perhaps that the dogs were at some time or another bred from pure white stock. At about a fortnight old a dark ridge appears on the belly, and spots show themselves about the neck and ears, and as the puppy grows to a sense of worldly wisdom, the spots come along the back.

The illustrations are of Ch. "The Whip," and Ch. "Gran Spumanti," and also the noted dog "Prince Umbria," the property of Mr. George A. Bury, of Allandale, Blackpool.

The points of the breed to-day are :

Strong, muscular, active, symmetrical, free from coarseness, capable of endurance combined with fair speed. Head fair length. Skull flat, broad between ears, moderately defined at temples, a moderate stop, entirely free from wrinkle. Muzzle long, powerful. Lips clean, fitting jaws moderately close. Eyes round, medium size, intelligent, moderately wide apart. Colour depending on markings; in the black-spotted variety the eyes dark (black or dark brown); in liver-spotted variety, light (yellow or light brown). The rim never flesh-coloured, in black-spotted, black; in liver-spotted, brown. Ears carried close to head; thin, fine, and profusely spotted; set rather high, moderate size, wide at base, gradually tapering to a round end. The neck fairly long, arched, light, tapering, entirely free from throatiness. The shoulders moderately oblique, clean, muscular. Chest deep, capacious, not too wide, Ribs moderately sprung, never round barrel-like. Back powerful, loins strong, muscular, slightly arched. Fore legs perfectly straight, strong, heavy in bone; elbows close to body. Fore feet round, compact. Well-arched toes (cat-footed), round, tough elastic pads. Hind legs, muscles clean, well defined, hocks well let down. Nails in the black-spotted variety, black and white; in liver-spotted variety, brown and white. Tail spotted profusely, not inserted too low down, not too long, strong at the insertion, gradually tapering towards end, free from coarseness; carried with slight curve upwards, never curled. Coat short, hard, dense, fine, sleek, glossy, not woolly nor silky. Ground colour in both varieties pure white; decided, not intermixed spots, the deeper and richer the colour, the better; well-defined, size from sixpence to a two-shilling piece. Spots on head, face, ears, legs, tail, and extremities smaller than those on body. Height, 19 to 23 inches. Weight, about 55 lb.

#### THE GREAT DANE

There is a possibility that the breed is to be traced back with more or less certainty to early Egyptian times. Several of the dogs depicted on the Tombs appear to be of such distinctive Great Dane character that we cannot easily mistake them for anything else.

The greyhound type of dog, perhaps the Saluki, or a variety long ago extinct, was crossed with a heavier dog to obtain one more suitable for facing larger game.

There is considerable evidence, but not of a very reliable character, to suggest that the "tiger-dog" of the ancients was indeed a breed of Great Danes.

The pictures from Aldrovandus and Cirino, especially the latter, are often somewhat Great Dane-like, and though we cannot feel certain as to the variety they are supposed to represent, we are justified in considering them as of this breed.

Blome, in 1686, in his "Gentleman's Recreation," shows a plate of a boar hunt in Denmark, and the dogs depicted there are typical Great Danes. This is the first evidence we have that the breed is actually, as the name suggests, of Danish origin.

The first mention of a Danish dog occurs in that amusing short work of instruction concerning dogs either for the field or for the lap, in which we read: "The Danish dog, which is generally large and smooth hair'd, is next to this<sup>1</sup>; it may be taught many useful things, as to carry a Lantern before you in a dark night, or if you leave any Parcel behind you, when you are gone five or six miles, you may send it back and he will bring it you with more Expedition than a Man and Horse could do, as hath been often experienc'd; and moreover, if you should sleep in any strange place, while he is near you, nobody dare touch you or any thing belonging to you."

Whitaker, in 1779, writing of the household dog, describes it as identical with the dog of the Cunobeline coin, and this, as will be seen by reference to that section of this work (p. 91), is very much more of a Great Dane than anything else—in fact is a dog of exactly similar type.

The evidence, therefore, of the antiquity of the breed is that in 1779 Whitaker knew a dog as the household dog similar in type to that shown on the Cunobeline coin (A.D. 43). A year later (1780) Riedel shows a Danish "Jagd-hund" (Plate 49).

Bewick does not allude to the breed, except to mention that the Dalmatian is erroneously called the Danish dog, and again—in the paragraph on Irish greyhounds—to state that M. Buffon supposes the great Danish dog to be originally a variety of the Irish greyhound. Edwards in 1800, however, describes the Danish dog as about 28 inches high, whilst some, but these were uncommon, stood 31 inches. In form between the greyhound and the mastiff, "head straight, muzzle rather pointed, ear short, half-pendulous, usually cropped, eyes in some white, in others half white or yellow; chest deep, belly small, legs straight and strong, tail thin and wiry, in some curled over the rump, in others more straight, colour sandy-red or pale fallow, with often a blaze of white on the face." He alludes to "a beautiful variety called the harlequin Dane," which has "a finely marked coat, with large and small spots of black, grey, liver-colour, or sandy-red, upon a white ground; the two former have often tan-coloured spots about the face and legs."

He writes that the dog was used as a carriage dog, "his bold muscular action as he trots or gallops in fine style" before the carriage added greatly to the pomp of the noble and wealthy. It was meet for the Great Dane to accompany the highest, most exalted and important in the realm, whilst the coach dog or Dalmatian went with the carriages of the less important, "a humble attendant of the servants and horses."

"I certainly think," writes Edwards, "no equipage can have arrived at its acme of grandeur until a couple of harlequin Danes precede the pomp."

<sup>1</sup> "The Gentleman Farrier," 1732.



Edwards tells us that the dog had not always played the part of escort, but that his ancestors had thrown down wolves, torn down wild cattle and stags, held the shrieking boar, and hunted in the dark forests of mediæval times. Sometimes the Great Dane went with his master to the wars, as did Lord Cadogan's Dane depicted in the tapestry of the siege of Blenheim, in the actions of the gallant Marlborough.

There is a very significant passage in Edwards, for after describing the Danish dog and the harlequin Dane, he writes: "I do not know at what time he was introduced into England, nor whether he was ever used here for any but the above purpose," alluding to the use of the Dane as a carriage dog.

Taplin, in his "Sportsmen's Cabinet," is also of the opinion that the breed is the produce between greyhound and the mastiff. It stands 28 to 30 inches high. A straight head, long muzzle, nearly pointed; ears naturally short, and half-pendulous; eyes mostly grey or white, etc. The colour sandy-red or pale yellow, with frequently but a snip or blaze in the face. He thus copies Edwards, but states that the harlequin Dane and the Dane (as if these two constituted separate varieties) were part of the pomp and magnificent retinues of the noble and wealthy and independent, "before whose emblazoned vehicles he trots or gallops."

Thomas Bell in 1837, in his "History of British Quadrupeds," does not mention the variety at all, probably because the name suggested it to be a foreign breed and, therefore, to have no right in a work with such a title. Whilst Colonel H. Smith, years later, gives a picture of the boarhound of Germany and describes it to be "one of the largest breeds known," and to be most likely the true Molossian hound of antiquity; to be a variety full in the mouth, coarse in aspect and rugged in fur; the colours to be tan, with dark brown or blackish on back, shoulders, and about the ears. But his illustration gives a dog that in no way conforms with the description. Indeed it appears to be a great cross-bred terrier, and by no means the powerful boarhound. He tells us that these dogs were used to guard the frontiers, during the war between Austria and Turkey, by the Moslems, and that many were captured by the Austrians. That one presented to the King of Naples was supposed to be the largest dog in the world, standing 4 feet high at the shoulder, and that one he had seen at Brussels, marching at the head of the regiment of *Cherfayt*, was as large as a Shetland pony. The head, he tells us, resembles the *Danish Dog* rather than the mastiff, and that the watch-dogs of Hungary and East and South Germany were of this type, but smaller in size. They were used for boar hunting, and were figured by Redinger under the name of *Sau-hunden*.

That Colonel Smith should compare the boarhound to the Great Dane shows that in his opinion these two breeds were not one and the same thing. In a further paragraph he describes the Danish dog under *Canis glaucus* to be found in Western Russia, Denmark, and Northern Germany, and to be smoother than the German boarhound, with a rounder forehead. The colour of these dogs was generally a light slaty-blue, with some white about the mouth, breast, and limbs, a tall and very handsome dog, frequently crossed with other breeds. In Sweden these Danish dogs were used in couples, to assist the elk finders.

The *mâtin* dog he considered was also one of this family, probably imported by the Franks or previously by the Cymbers.

The *mâtin* was, he tells us, as large as the Dane, and very similar to that dog in



appearance, except for a flatter forehead, a longer and more pointed nose, and a rougher coat. It also was dissimilar in colour, being more usually white, with one or more large clouds of brown in the coat. It was a fierce dog, but not remarkably brave.

He then describes the drover- or cattle-dog of Cuba and Terra-Firma, which in his opinion is related to the feral dog of San Domingo, considered by him to be the wild representative of the Dane family. The cattle- or drover-dog had the form of the Dane, he writes, and was wolf-coloured, with a black spot over each eye and a rough coat. He gives the following interesting account of how these dogs were used:

"We have often witnessed, when vessels with live stock arrive in our West India colonies, and the oxen are hoisted out by a sling passed round the base of their horns, the great assistance they afford to bring them to land. For, when the ox first suspended by the head is lowered, and allowed to fall into the water, men generally swim and guide it by the horns; but at other times this service is performed by one or two dogs, who catching the bewildered animal by the ears, one on each side, force it to swim in the direction of the landing-place, and instantly release their hold when they feel it touches the ground, for then the beast naturally walks up the shore."

In 1847 Richardson, in his handbook on dogs, shows a dog of somewhat Great Dane type, except for an exaggerated square jaw, and describes it to be a dog of gigantic stature. He considers that possibly the Danes brought these dogs to Ireland when they invaded that country and used them in wolf hunting. The dog had a muzzle which ended abruptly, "as if brought to a termination by a chop of a hatchet."

*Stonehenge* (1859) gives a picture of a powerfully built, thick-set boarhound, and tells us that this dog had so frequently been represented on canvas that it would be idle "to refuse a description of it, in a work professing to treat of the dog, in all its varieties." Following this somewhat curious paragraph, he informs us that it "does not appear to be a distinct breed, but rather a compound of the greyhound, the mastiff, and the terrier." He admits that by some writers it is considered a distinct breed, and that possibly it may be so.

He describes the colour to be that of the mastiff, brindle or fawn, but sometimes of a bluish slate, with blotches of brown, and the height to be 30 to 32 inches. The head "long and narrow, but the muzzle square like that of a mastiff. Tail fine, and slightly curved upwards"; and although he shows a boarhound, he states that "this is the same dog as the Great Dane," and "is used for boar hunting in Germany and for hunting elk in Denmark and Norway." It is interesting that in *Stonehenge's* article on the breed the word "great" is used for the first time, previous authorities having termed it the "Danish dog" or the "boar-hound."

Meyrick, in 1861, leaves the breed without mention, though he gives a short paragraph to the *mâtin*. Though we might expect further information on the breed in a later edition of *Stonehenge's* work, yet in 1867 this somewhat mystifying author leaves both the Dane and the boarhound out of his work. Eleven years later, however, in the Appendix of his work of 1878, there is an editorial note that "in spite of Mr. Adcock's urgent pleading for this breed, I cannot consider it as one of 'The Dogs of the British Islands'"; and following the note he devotes over two pages to the breed. The article is not written by him, but by Mr. Adcock. "It is impossible or useless," writes Mr. Adcock, "to speculate upon the origin of the breed," except, he tells us, that it must have come into existence after the Flood (!). He alludes to

a fifteenth-century painting in the South Kensington Spencer collection of the head of a Great Dane. He hopes that there will be classes at our larger shows, as was the case in Paris and other large continental cities.

He gives an extract from Richardson's work, and refers also to dogs kept in the town of Heidelberg, more than a match for any wolf, dogs in special esteem among the students of the University there. He states that in 1863 a dog, "Sam," the property of Sir Roger Palmer, a brindle-and-white,<sup>1</sup> a very large and heavy dog (Dalziel tells us it weighed 200 lb. and stood 35 inches at the shoulder) was exhibited at the Cremorne show.

At the conclusion of this article Mr. Adcock suggests giving *Stonehenge* further information and illustrations and also his dog "Satan," as long as *Stonehenge* may desire to keep him for personal study. But *Stonehenge* refused both offers with thanks.

Shaw, in his work of 1881, somewhat unjustly, I suggest, describes the Great Dane amongst the foreign dogs as "German mastiff."

It appears from this work that a Herr Gustav Lang, of Stuttgart, had written to Mr. Shaw to the effect that they in Germany were intending to call all the Great Dane type of dogs one name, and that "German mastiff." Certainly the numerous names used to describe this breed and presumed varieties had led to considerable confusion. In Germany and elsewhere it had been known as the Ulmer dog, boarhound, tiger-dog, Great Dane, Danish dog, Dänische Doggen, Parade Doggen, and as the Deutsche Dogge. Constant were the disputes as to suggested differences between so-called races, and these "differences," when examined with care, more often than not proved to be of such a confusing nature that they were too involved to be of any service.

Though Herr Gustav Lang and the supporters of the Great Dane in Germany had come to the decision to claim the Danish dog once and for all, and to eliminate all names except the "Deutsche Doggen" (German mastiff), it seems to me that they had really no just basis for either naming or claiming the variety as a national one. Indeed, all evidence suggests that the breed is not by any means a German national one, but in historical times a Danish one, though it had been adopted in Germany and greatly developed there.

Even Dr. Fitzinger, in his book "Die Hunden und die Racen," published in 1876, gives the Danish dog and the German boarhound to be two separate breeds. The first he names the "Dänische Hunde," and the other he describes as the "Schweiner Hund."

There is an interesting note from the pen of the Editor of "Der Hund," Herr R. von Schmiederberg. He writes that some years ago they had the "Ulmer Doggen, Hatzrüden Dänische Doggen (Danish mastiff), etc., but it had been impossible to settle with any clearness, whether they were separate races. The fabulous race of Hatzrüden had often been mentioned, and all that could be said was that it really had been in existence at one time, and was then being produced afresh on the type suggested by old pictures and the Scriptures.<sup>2</sup> He tells us that these dogs were almost entirely used for boar hunting, and were mostly rough-haired, and of "a high and strong stature, and by no means animals of a decidedly pure class." The

<sup>1</sup> Dalziel gives "black-and-white."

<sup>2</sup> This is rather amusing. See Dogs in Biblical Times, p. 56.



"Parade Doggen," mostly owned and much thought of by the nobility, were comparable with the English mastiff, but, with few exceptions, they were no longer suitable for exhibition because they did not belong to a distinct race.

The "Ulmer Doggen" received their name in consequence of the very large "tiger Doggens" having become scarce. They were easily distinguished from the Dalmatian, which does not belong to the class of Doggen at all.<sup>1</sup>

He goes on to tell us that "the large tiger Doggen in shows ought really to have a separate class, together with the German mastiff or Deutsche Dogge." Having enlightened us so far, he gives the following points of the Deutsche Doggen: "Figure high, elegant; head rather long; nose of medium length, thick—not pointed; lower jaw-bone to project only a little; front of nose, large, black (except with tiger Doggen, where the same may be flesh-coloured or spotted); lip trifle overhanging; ears placed high and pointed; eyes brown, not too light (except with tiger Doggen, which often have glassy eyes)." After a further description which suits a Great Dane, he gives the colour to be "bright black, wavy, yellow, blue, if possible without any marks; or if striped, usually with glassy eyes."

The above notes and descriptions of the various Doggen appear to me to be far from clear. It seems to suggest, firstly, that the tiger Doggen and German mastiff are not one and the same thing, and that they should have the two separate classes together! The tiger Doggen is allowed a butterfly nose and wall eyes, and is therefore presumably the harlequin Dane; but in the German mastiff these were to be faults. It therefore suggests that the German breeders intended to divide the Great Dane, which they then claimed as a national breed, into two varieties, divided by colour.

Turning to Shaw's illustrations, we have a full plate of the German mastiff-dog and a picture of Herr Wriester's tiger-German-mastiff, "Flora." The first, the German mastiff-dog, has the appearance of an overgrown Manchester terrier, but of a whole colour, with cropped ears; whilst "Flora," described by Mr. Shaw as "in every way an admirable likeness of a specimen of the breed recognised by German authorities, and sent him by Herr Gustav Lang for publication," is certainly a Great Dane, but not one that a breeder would exhibit with any pleasure in a class to-day. It is by no means so good an animal as those depicted by Edwards in 1800, and which, according to that authority, had been in England for many years.

I think I have said enough to suggest that the German claim to this breed cannot be substantiated, even if the word "Doggen" was not in itself sufficient evidence against such a claim.

I am afraid Mr. Shaw's happy regard for his German friends allowed him to accept their point of view somewhat too fully, for towards the end of the section devoted to the breed he adds: "With reference to the German mastiff, as it at present exists in this country, . . . English Committees have, however, been slow to acknowledge the name of German mastiff, and consequently confusion has arisen, which, until the donors of the prizes have the good sense to follow the example of our German friends, will always recur. A class for boarhounds at present seems anomalous when no such breed exists upon the Continent; and German breeders naturally feel the slight which is put upon them," etc.

<sup>1</sup> Which appears fortunate.—E. C. A.





To his Royal  
Prince of



Highness George  
Denmark &c.<sup>z</sup>

This plate is most humbly

Dedicated by Richard Blome.



From Edward's "*Cynographia Britannica*" (1800).





SATAN, AND CHESNUT - MARKED PONEY.



*Beaver Hounds*

(Above) "SATAN," A LARGE NEWFOUNDLAND DOG OF LORD MONTROSE'S STRAIN. "Sporting Magazine" (1814).  
 (Below) "HANNIBAL" and "PRINCESS." "WILD-BOAR HOUNDS OF THE SECOND CLASS—SOMETIMES CALLED THE TIGER-DOGS," Brought from Hesse-Cassel, presented to Her Royal Highness the Duchess of York (1807). ("Sporting Magazine.")  
 256c]





THE MODERN TYPE OF GREAT DANE. (*Above*) Grand Champion Rex Lendor von Zettmerschloss, a harlequin, an undefeated Champion of Germany, Austria and Switzerland. (*Below*) Rolf of Owborough, a red-fawn. *Both the property of Mr. J. V. Rank.* [256d

Eight years later Dalziel (1889) devotes one section to "the Great Dane" and another section to the German boarhound, which he suggests has been bred from Great Danes. "To that ancient breed, I believe, the German boarhound owes much," he writes, "and are of a diversity of size, style, and colour—some not unlike gigantic Dalmatians with the spots much exaggerated." He tells us that he does not pretend to draw a clear and distinctive line between the two breeds.

He mentions a specimen of the German boarhound which had grown to the extraordinary height of over 40 inches, and one a winner at the International Show at Hamburg, measuring 3 feet 4½ inches. He gives the weights of Prince Albert's "Cora" as 121½ lb.; "Nero," 132 lb.; and of the celebrated Ulmer dog, Mr. R. M. Leo's "Sultan I," at 180 lb.

He gives Mr. Adcock's "Proserpina" ("Satan's Wife," as she was popularly known) to weigh 135 lb., and to stand 30 inches at the shoulder, and gives the extended pedigree of "Leon" to his dam's g.g.g.d. on the sire's side. This dog, he states, a great prize winner, "combines some of the strains most noted as prize winners in this country," and was also "a considerable prize winner" amongst "exhibiting Great Danes."

He tells us that "none of our Great Danes can boast of a long pedigree, most of them having been imported from Germany," and adds that our Teutonic cousins do not appear to pay so much attention to kennel pedigrees as we do."

The illustration, a coloured plate, shows "Cid Campeador," Kennel Club Stud Book 16,755, the sire of "Leon," a heavily made, coarse Great Dane.

The Great Dane in England owes much to the work of Mr. Adcock, who for so many years had tried to get it taken up and considered a British dog. He had at one time two very powerful specimens, known popularly, as already stated, as "the Devil and his wife." They bore the names of "Satan" and "Proserpina." The latter stood 30 inches high and weighed 135 lb., and her length, he tells us, from the tip of nose to set-on of tail was 51 inches; length of tail, 20½ inches; girth of chest, 34½ inches; girth of loin, 31 inches; girth of head, 21 inches; girth of fore arm, 9 inches; length of head from occiput to tip of nose, 12 inches; girth of muzzle midway between eyes and tip of nose, 12½ inches. In 1889 30 inches and 120 lb. were the minimum for a dog, whilst a bitch was to be 28 inches and 100 lb. Anything below was debarred from competition. He gives the weight and measurements of a Mr. Wilby's "Leon," which, in poor condition at two years old, weighed 165 lb. At the shoulder this dog stood 33½ inches.

In the chapter on the German boarhound we learn that this variety was not so tall nor, as a general rule, quite so long in body as the Great Dane, though the weight was more or less the same.

In 1884 the first special class for the breed occurred at Birmingham; and in 1885 a Great Dane dog show took place with sixty competitors.

The Great Dane had an honour paid it unique in kennel history. On the death of Bismarck's Great Dane "Tyras," the news was cabled round the world. We are told that the Kaiser sent another dog of the same type to the Chancellor on his birthday. But it was "Tyras" who had gone with Bismarck to the University of Göttingen, and to whom the story is attached that once, when his master was summoned before the Rector for "the crime" of throwing a bottle out of his window,

"Tyras" went with him, causing the irate Rector hurriedly to seek safety behind a convenient chair. From this safe situation he increased Bismarck's fine by a further 5 thalers. "Tyras," until his death, went with Bismarck through his diplomatic career, always in attendance, sharing his walks, following close by on his riding excursions, lying by the chair in his business hours, and seated close by him during his meals. At night he retired with his powerful master to his room on guard. It is related that once during a conversation between Prince Bismarck and the Russian Prime Minister Gortschakoff, the Great Dane, on seeing the Russian moving his arms somewhat violently during the heated argument, all at once leapt up to his feet and before Prince Bismarck had time to interfere had hurled himself upon the horrified Russian, bearing him to the floor.<sup>1</sup>

In 1883 His Royal Highness Prince Albert Solms wrote to the Editor of the "Kennel Gazette" as to the formation of the Great Dane Club. The letter reads as follows:

"SIR,—

"I read with great interest Mr. Adcock's letter in the last 'Kennel Gazette' concerning the formation of a 'Great Dane Club,' and having always been a great admirer of this noble breed, I was glad to see that it is on the best way to be cultivated in England. I have no doubt that this breed, which combines in such a marvellous way strength, bone, substance, and elegance, and on the other side high courage with intelligence, will soon become quite a favourite amongst English dog-fanciers. Your countrymen are such experienced breeders, and so full of energy in all their undertakings, that I am sure also this breed will be brought in a short space of time to its highest perfection, and will take a similar position in the canine world to the grand and noble St. Bernard. Mentioning this, I presume that the starters of the club wish to understand under 'Great Dane' that breed we call in our country, and at our leading shows, 'Deutsche Dogge,' which is one of our oldest and finest breeds, and mostly known in England under the name of 'German Boarhound.' I am well aware that one of our German authorities on the breed who has written about it some time ago in the 'Live Stock Journal' is very much opposed to the name of 'German boarhound,' as in our days, he says, no such dogs are used for 'wild boar hunting,' but all sorts of ferocious mongrels. This is true, but in the Middle Ages such dogs *were* used for this kind of sport, and were called 'Kammerhunde,' also 'Hatzrüden,' and were the favourites of our noblemen. Some good specimens are to be found represented in the old pictures of Van Dyck. The same gentleman proposed to call our 'Deutsche Doggen' in English, 'German mastiff.' I am very much opposed to this name, as I am afraid this would give quite a false opinion of the breed, and lead to a false standard of points, as the real type of the 'Deutsche Dogge' is nothing like that of a mastiff, but, on the contrary, nearly just the reverse. The 'Deutsche Dogge' is rather like a dog between a mastiff and a greyhound, and built like a race-horse. He has great size, substance, and bone, plenty of muscle, beautiful

<sup>1</sup> After "Tyras'" death, the Kaiser asked the Minister Bötticher to get another dog for Bismarck. Bötticher knew little about dogs and purchased a dog at a dog-training establishment. The dog on arrival had its ribs showing. On the following morning the Emperor came to see Bismarck to congratulate him on his birthday. Bismarck thought it wiser to keep silent as to the dog. The firm which supplied the unfortunate specimen actually wrote for permission to describe themselves as "dog dealers to Prince Bismarck"!



loins, and is full of elegance—in fact, built to jump any fence and ditch like a good hunter would do. If well trained for defence, what we call ‘auf den Mann dressort,’ there is no better dog to protect his master against the attack of several men, as he always attacks, on command, the assaulter from behind and at the neck, and pulls him down with great ease; otherwise, these dogs are, like the St. Bernard, very good-tempered and affectionate. I know several cases of men’s lives saved by such dogs.

“Some years ago there was still great confusion concerning this breed in Germany, as the same dogs went under the names of ‘Däntsche Dogge,’ ‘Ulmer Dogge,’ ‘HatZRüden,’ and ‘Saupacker’; therefore it was decided at a general meeting of our leading clubs and breeders to recognise only *one* breed, under the name of ‘Deutsche Dogge,’ and the points of this noble and ancient breed were fixed by all the members present. Very good specimens of the breed were shown at Berlin in 1880, and at Hannover and Spa in 1882. I send you a portrait of this dog, which, in my opinion and that of our best judges, is quite a model specimen of the breed we call ‘Deutsche Doggen.’ Perhaps it would interest your readers to see this portrait published. Dr. Boddinus proposed last year at a meeting to form two distinct classes of ‘Deutsche Doggen,’ one like the new recognised breed, of which ‘Léo’ is a representative, the other more mastiff-like, with broader skull, shorter, and more massive head, short neck, throaty, etc., in the belief that this breed also did exist, and I dare say he was right, but he was seconded by no one.

“The difficulty for the new proposed club will be to start under the right name, and to make it clear if only one distinct breed is to be patronised, and which are to be the points, or if the name ‘Great Dane’ means *no distinct breed*, and is merely a collective name for different breeds or types. I should think the best name would be ‘The Great German Dogge Club’ (why not use that name as well as the name of ‘Duschund,’ which has been accepted for another German breed?), or to keep the name under which the breed seems to be known in England, ‘German Boarhound,’ and to patronise only *one type*, making separate classes as to colour, and to do away with all the suspicious names of ‘tiger mastiff,’ ‘German mastiff,’ and others.

“To be able to unite our efforts with those of the English breeders, it would be of the greatest importance to have the same standard of points, and I think the one unanimously accepted by our clubs and breeders for our ‘Deutsche Doggen’ is very good to start with. At the end of May, when the Berlin Show takes place, a grand class of this breed will appear and all the breeders and German judges will be present. This, I think, would be the best opportunity for the gentlemen who intend to start a club of the breed in England to come over and discuss the matter in the presence of a large collection of fine specimens. If the English Club is willing to unite their efforts with our German breeders, I do not doubt we shall easily come to terms as to the desirable type and points of the breed, and a great many of our breeders will certainly be happy to join the English Club. The Committee will certainly with pleasure arrange at this occasion, if desired, a special meeting of all the breeders and fanciers of the ‘Deutsche Doggen.’

“Yours, etc.,

“PRINCE ALBERT SOLMS.

“BRAUNFELS, PRUSSIA.”

That Great Danes have as much intelligence and are as docile as any other breed under proper control and handling was brought to public notice in 1884 by a troupe of performing Danes which were to be seen at the Oxford Music Hall. These dogs were of large size, averaging 32 inches, and they had been taught to dance, march, jump through paper hoops held 9 feet from the ground, to go lame, etc. The trainer, a Mr. Felix, stated that he found the Great Dane the most intelligent and docile dog he knew.

In 1886, at the Liverpool Show, a most astonishing thing took place. After the class had been judged, the winner, "Cæsar," of the first prize was disqualified for not being registered. Hardly had the astonishment at this passed by when "Laurita" and "Viking," the winners of the second and third prizes, were also disqualified, for not being identified under Kennel Club Rule No. 1. The result was that three dogs with "highly commended" to their names obtained the first and second prizes.

The dogs shown on Plate 80 are the property of Mr. J. V. Rank, of Barn Ridge, South Nutfield, Surrey, both imported. Because of their cropping are ineligible for competition.

The points of the breed are :

Neither mastiff nor greyhound. Muscular, strong, elegantly built, alert, brisk. Head: the muzzle, or fore face, broad; skull proportionately narrow, so that whole head viewed from above and in front has appearance of equal breadth throughout. The head length varies with height of dog. A dog 32 inches at shoulder, 13 inches from tip of nose to back of the occiput, is good. Length from end of nose to point between eyes equal, or of greater length than from this point to back of occiput. Skull more flat than domed, slight indentation running up centre. Occiput peak not prominent. A decided rise or brow over eyes; no abrupt stop between them. Face chiselled. Fore face long, depth equal throughout; well filled in below eyes with no pinched appearance. Muscles of cheeks flat, no lumpiness. Angle of jawbone defined. Lips square in front, forming right angle with upper line of fore face. Head underline viewed in profile, almost in straight line from corner of lip to corner of jawbone, allowing for lip-fold. The lower jaw should be level, or project no more than the sixteenth of an inch. The bridge of nose wide, with slight ridge where cartilage joins bone. (This is characteristic.) Nostrils large, wide, open, giving a blunt look to nose. A butterfly or flesh-coloured nose not objected to in harlequins. The ears small, set high on skull, carried erect, tips falling forward. Neck important; long, well arched, clean, free from loose skin, held well up, snake-like in carriage, well set in shoulders; junction of head and neck well defined. Shoulders muscular, not loaded; well sloped back, with elbows under body, so that, viewed in front, dog does not stand too wide. The fore legs perfectly straight; bone big, flat. Feet large, round; toes well arched and close; nails strong, curved. The body deep, ribs well sprung, belly drawn up. Back and loins: strong, loins slightly arched, as greyhound. Hind quarters: thighs extremely muscular. Second thigh long, well developed as in greyhound; hocks set low, neither turning out nor in. The tail, reaching to or just below hocks, ends in fine point. When dog in action carried in straight line level with back, slightly curved at end; must not curl over back. Coat short, dense, sleek (not coarse). Gait or action lithe, springy, free, the action



high; hocks move freely, head held well up. Height dogs 30 inches; weight about 120 lb. Bitches, height 28 inches; weight 100 lb. (For colours see Appendix XXV.)

Great Danes are fully developed at about a year and a half, and sometimes not until two years and older.

The type desired is one combining grace and power, an agile and yet strong animal. Light and weedy dogs are not wanted, nor those of over-heavy type. The animal, when well built, is so perfect in its symmetry that even slight faults have an exaggerated significance.

In the breeding for colour, I am informed that if brindles are bred together, and re-bred with brindles, too frequently the "striping" is lost, and the stock becomes darker. In order to recover the marking, the brindles are then mated to fawns. A similar difficulty is experienced with the harlequins—the black patches are likely to disappear. To prevent this, black dogs are crossed occasionally with the harlequin.

In the modern but earlier history of the breed we have the noted dogs and bitches, some imported, others bred here.

Of the former, "Flora," the dam of Ch. "Vendetta," was one of the best bitches seen. This "Flora" stood 32½ inches, and weighed 144 lb. The Redgrave blood became more or less invincible, and the type of dog, though differing from to-day's type, was remarkable and excellent.

Of these were "Hannibal of Redgrave" and "Viola of Redgrave." "Hannibal" was bred by Miss Evelyn Mackay-Scott. He stood 34 inches. "Chance," half-brother to "Hannibal," was by some considered to be a better dog. He stood 35 inches, and had, so we are told, "a typical head, good square muzzle, and level jaws."

In recent times the Great Dane has steadily increased in popularity, and nowadays is frequently in the first three for largest entry at the principal shows. It easily heads the heavy breeds.

The breed suffered by the War, and after it was over the material for carrying on was of poor type, invariably indifferent in colour, weedy, long and weak in back, and coarse in head. The breed to-day is becoming very even, many specimens verging on perfection, and in consequence competition is keen. But good as the dogs are, the heads still need careful attention, for in some they are still too long, and not sufficiently strong in muzzle. Necks also can be improved to get more of the supple, snake-like form. To-day's type excels in general contour and movement.

The trouble some breeders find is texture of coat. It is often too coarse, in consequence of which the dog loses its appearance of quality. Bad feet spoil the "stance" of a dog, as he will not get "up on his toes," and so loses the desired alert look, which adds to any dog's appearance.

In reply to my query, Mr. Rank states that it is very difficult to say which dogs and bitches have done the most for the breed without appearing prejudiced, but that there is little question that the greatest sire among brindles and fawns in the past ten years is Ch. "Viking of Readymoney"; such present-day winners as Ch. "Rufflyn Regan," Ch. "Primley Nina," Ch. "Pampa of Oub," and hosts of others, being descendants. Ch. "Magpie of Etive" has proved the greatest harlequin sire of recent years, closely followed by Ch. "Shikari of Bellary." The blue strain in Great Danes is in a bad way, the most successful sire among those in recent years being "Roland of Rungmook."



## CHAPTER II

### SHEEP-DOGS

IN early books considerable space is given to shepherd-dogs, but the word "shepherd-dog" is used in so wide a sense and the descriptions so often do not refer to the collie, the bearded collie, or the bob-tailed sheep-dog, that much of this is of little value. The dog was often a large and somewhat savage cross-bred, useful for protecting flocks from robbers and wolves. It appears that the control of sheep by dogs was then a secondary consideration.

Varro, in 116 B.C., gives an interesting note on sheep-dogs. He writes that P. Aufidius Pontianus of Amiternum had bought some flocks of sheep in furthest Umbria, and in the bargain the sheep-dogs, but not the shepherds themselves, were included and the shepherds were to take the sheep down to the forest clearings near Metapontum and the market at Heraclea. They performed their task and returned home; but a few days later the dogs, missing their human friends, came back of their own accord to the shepherds in Umbria, foraging for themselves on the way, and this though the journey took many days. Yet none of the shepherds had followed the advice of Saserna, an authority on farming, to the effect that anyone wanting a dog to follow him about should throw him a cooked frog.

After this astonishing information, he tells us how to feed a sheep-dog:

"A dog's food is more like a man's than a sheep's, for it feeds on scraps of meat, etc., and bones; not on grass or on leaves. You must be very careful to give them food, for if you do not, hunger will drive them to hunt for it, and to desert the flock; if indeed they do not (and some people think they will) falsify the saying 'Dog doesn't eat dog,' or give a practical illustration of the Actæon story by turning their teeth against their master. And you must give them barley bread, and the bread should be well soaked in milk, for when once accustomed to such diet they are slow to desert the flock. They are not allowed to eat the flesh of a dead sheep for fear that the good flavour might weaken their self-restraint."

Aldrovandus clearly copied Conrade Heresbach; indeed he mentioned him in his text. He writes that:

"The farm-dog is similar to the hunting dog in the general make-up of his body. He ought to be tame in relation to those in the house, but so fierce to strangers as not to be corrupted by coaxing. He ought properly to have a strong and muscular body, and while in the house he barks loudly but pleasingly to the ear; he should, with a bold and threatening tone, terrify intruders at a distance wherever they come from. His eyes should be suffused with blood-shot lightning and he should threaten enemies and ruffians with the thunderbolt of his teeth. In the colour of his hair he should be black, that he may appear all the more terrible to thieves in the daylight; and being the same colour as the night when it is dark, he may not be perceived while he approaches near to enemies and thieves. But if the farm-dog happens to be white, he still has such characteristics as I have explained. Porta<sup>1</sup> tells us that he ought to be dyed black colour. His practice is, to take some quicklime, and boil it in water along with a solution of oxide of lead; with this he smears the body of the dog and, without any trouble, turns it into a black colour. Amongst the Turks the farm-dogs, according to the authority of Bellonius,<sup>1</sup> have no one master, and so they do not enter

<sup>1</sup> Pierre Belon.

the house, but they lie on rugs spread for them in the yard, and in the walls there are recesses in which bread and superfluous oddments and refuse food are thrown, for them to feed on. Each of them protects the particular place in which he was bred up and wards off from it burglars and other dogs and wolves. The nautical dog, classified with this breed of dog, protects the rigging and the freight and the whole ship in fact.

"Shepherds, too, are unable to preserve unharmed a large flock of sheep without the fidelity and watchfulness of sheep-dogs armed with iron collars. And so it is said that the dog that guards flocks and houses lies all night awake before closed doors. In old times among the Romans, pastoral wealth increased to such an extent that as many as five hundred dogs were absolutely necessary to keep the pens safe. Conrade Heresbach thinks that the male dogs should preferably be chosen for this duty, though he also says that spayed bitches are sufficiently vigilant and sufficiently prone to bite also to be of use. A sheep-dog should preferably be of a white colour, not only to enable you to distinguish him from the wolves, but also, and this is important, that at night he may be seen from far away and feared by thieves and wolves."

Leclerc Buffon was, as we know, of the opinion that the shepherd-dog was the original or primitive type from which all varieties of the domestic species are descended.

In the British Islands shepherd-dogs have from some years previous to 1800 been of two, three, or four types. (1) The rough-coated collie, shown by Bewick. (2) The cur-dog, a smooth-coated bob-tailed collie. (3) The bearded collie, shown by Taplin.

Edwards, in 1800, shows both the rough- and smooth-coated collie.

To-day we have four more or less distinct varieties—collie (rough-coated); collie (smooth-coated); bearded collie and old English sheep-dog, which are practically the same; and the Shetland sheep-dog, a miniature collie about the same size and weight as the collie was in Edwards and Taplin's time. These breeds, except the bearded collie, are registered by the Kennel Club. It is interesting that sheep-dogs all over the world, with few exceptions, are somewhat of the collie or bearded collie type. Abroad, these sheep-dogs may be Alsatian types or Pomeranians, pure or crossed, but they frequently bear a noticeable similarity to the collie.

In Spain a dog, described by Colonel H. Smith as "the great wolf," was used with sheep. It was a large race, in size little inferior to the mastiff, but with a pointed nose, erect ears, and a long silky coat. The tail was bushy and carried over the back. The colour was mostly white with clouds of red-brown colour, white being a favourite colour for sheep-dogs, as it prevented them from being mistaken for wolves. According to Colonel Smith, Olaus Magnus described a similar variety of dog as common in North Norway and Sweden. Olaus Magnus mentions dogs, but I see no reason to consider his brief reference suggestive of dogs of this type.

Hughes, in his "Travels in Greece," vol. i, p. 484, gives details of the sheep-dog there, an animal of considerable ferocity. He had a somewhat exciting meeting with one of them.

"In returning to Ioannina," he writes, "I was attacked by one of those fierce Molossian dogs which the shepherds of this country keep as the guardians of their flocks; the animal flew with such fury at my horse's heels, who plunged and kicked



most violently, that I was obliged to turn and discharge my fowling-piece over him, or I should certainly have been unhorsed: probably a single shot touched him, as he gave a howl and ran off immediately. I have not unfrequently been exposed at different times to very considerable danger by the attacks of these ferocious animals: on one occasion during our tour in Upper Albania, as I loitered a little behind the party, three of them set upon me at once, one of whom actually leaped from the high ground on the side of the mountain path upon my horse's back, and might possibly have dragged me from the saddle but for a blow which I dealt him from a large iron-handled hunting-whip which I had carried from England."

The colour of these sheep-dogs varied through different shades from a dark brown to a light dun, their long fur was soft, thick, and glossy. In size they were equal to an English mastiff, but with a long muzzle, delicate, finely-pointed ears, and a magnificent tail. Their legs were of moderate length, the body nicely rounded and compact. Mr. Hughes writes that there seems reason to think that, while the human inhabitants of that area had "been strangely intermingled with degenerate strangers," these four-footed tenants had preserved their pedigree unimpaired since Greek and Roman times; indeed that the Molossian of antiquity and the sheep-dog he met with during his visit to Greece were one and the same. He appears to base this suggestion on their ferocity and his experiences as narrated.

Even to-day the method of using sheep-dogs varies considerably. In the British Isles sheep-dogs are employed to collect and round up sheep, to bring them to the shepherd, and to help him to control them. When a flock moves from one field to another, or along a highway, it is customary for the sheep to go first, followed by the shepherd with one, two, or three dogs.

In some countries the shepherd's dog is still used as the guardian of the flock, keeping away and attacking wolves.

Kohl, in 1842, tells us that in South Russia, when the evening meal is done and the dusk creeping over, the head Tshabawn retires to the waggon, and the other shepherds, who have driven the sheep as closely together as possible around the waggon, then form a complete circle with them. Each shepherd throws his furs down on the spot assigned to him and at equal distances from his neighbours. Beds for the dogs are then made, three or four dogs being placed between every two shepherds. So many dogs, so many rugs, each dog knowing its own rug by the smell, and therefore staying in it.

In "A Summer in the Pyrenees"<sup>1</sup> the Hon. E. Murray gives a vivid picture of the shepherd and his work. The man whistles, and the sheep leave off feeding and obey the call; or if they are far off and scattered, he utters a shrill cry, when instantly the flock are seen leaping down the rocks and scampering towards him from all directions. Having waited until the sheep have mustered round him, the shepherd then sets off on his return to his cabin or resting-place, his flock following behind him like so many well-trained hounds. Their fine-looking dogs go with them, a couple being generally attached to each flock. They take no interest in this except to protect it from the attacks of wolves and bears. "So well aware are the sheep of the fatherly care of these dogs, and that they themselves have nothing to fear from them, that they crowd round them, as if they really sought their protection;

<sup>1</sup> 1837.



and dogs and sheep may be seen resting together, or trotting after the shepherd in the most perfect harmony."

Kohl visited Scotland about 1844 and describes the drover accompanied by a wild shaggy wolf-dog, "Bran." In another chapter of this work he writes that "The weather was glorious, the magnificent hills surrounded the plain we were crossing, and there barked and frisked about us a right poetical dog. The 'Colly' [a sheep-dog] . . . presented to my friend the Minister by the Ettrick Shepherd, a little before his death. They have long hair, a bushy tail, a sharp countenance, and a greyish colour." He clearly refers to rough-haired collies.

To-day the sheep-dogs of the British Islands are of two distinct types—on the one hand we have the bearded collie and old English sheep-dog, broad-headed, shaggy haired; on the other, the collie and the Shetland sheep-dog, a "wolf type," comparatively narrow headed with a long and narrow muzzle. It does not seem probable that these two types are in any way related, and though crosses may have taken place, they have been eliminated by a return to the same type.

The bearded collie type is represented to-day on the bench by the old English sheep-dog—which, in the hands of the fancier, has developed into a broad, stocky, and remarkably massive dog.

The origin of this breed is probably identical with that of the Russian Owtchar or Russian sheep-dog, closely related to the bearded collie. The peculiar "habit" of being born with a short tail suggests relationship also to the cur-dog of Bewick and Edwards, then known to be often born in the "self-tailed" condition.

It is difficult to say if the bearded collie was in the distant past indigenous to Scotland, or whether at some early age these heavily-built matted-haired dogs evolved in some northern area of Europe and spread to Scotland.

Early writers on Scotland, Hector Boece and others, do not suggest its existence. It is possible that they were bred in Scotland during the eighteenth century from the cur-dog, and quite possibly from the shepherd's Mastie described by Googe. The so-called Russian pointer of Edwards or the water-dog of Taplin may have one and all lent their aid.

Barnaby Googe's translation tells us that: it was not to be so gaunt nor swift as the greyhound, "nor so fatte nor heavy as the Mastie of the house, but very strong, and able to fight and followe the chase, that he may be able to beat away the Woolfe, or other beastes, and to follow the thiefe, and recover the praye, and therefore his body would rather be long, than short and thicke: in all other poyntes he must agree with the Bandooge." He prefers "the Dogge" to a bitch, because of the trouble "she bringeth when shee is sawte: howbeit, the Spayde Bitches doo byte sorest, and are more waking. For theyr age, they must neyther be Whelpes, nor too old: for as yet the olde hath some use about a house." He tells us how to choose a good dog. "If you have a Whelp (which age is better to be trayned, eyther for the house or the folde) you shall perceave by his foote whether he wyll be great or no. His head must be great, smooth, and ful of vaines, his eares great, and hanging, his ioyntes long, his forelegges shorter than his hinder, but very strayght and great, his clawes wyde, his nayles hard, his heele neyther fleshy nor too hard, the ridge of his backe not to much appearing nor crooked, his ribs round and well knitte, his shoulder poyntes well distant, his buttocks fatte and broade, and in all

other parts (as I sayd) of the Bandogge before. The house 'Dogge' was to be 'blacke:' but the pyed colour is indyed bought in them both. The white they commend, because he may be discerned from the Woolfe in the night, whereby they shall not strike the Dogge in steede of the Woolfe. The blacke agayne for the house, is best commended because of his terrour to the theefe in the day, and the hurt that he may doo by night, by reason of his not being seene: the dunne, the branded, and the redde, doo not mistike me, so they be well marked beside. Thus must you judging him as a Lyon by the clawe, either buye one, or bring one up for your purpose. Howe much teaching, or bringing up preuayleth appeareth by Lycurgus, his example in Xenophon. To make them fierce and curst, you must plucke them by the eares, set them togeather with your hands, and keepe them from being hurt: so shall you have them the bolder and the fiercer, and such as wyll never give it over. You must use him first to the chayne, by tying him to a clogge, letting him drawe it a while by his necke, and when you have a little space used him in this sort, then may you either leade him, or tye: it is best to keep them tyed in the day time, to make them the curster, and to let them loose in the night time: so shall they in the night time watch, and in the day sleepe. To arme them agaynst the Woolfe, or other wyld beastes, you may put brode collers about theyr necks full of nayles, and iron studdes, lyming it with soft leather within. You must looke that your Dogge be of a good kind and (if you can) all of one kinde, so shall they sticke the better togeather. Choose them that have the curstest dammes, and suche as have theyr puppies even. They begin to litter at a yeere olde, and continue niene yeers, after tenne they be woorth nothing."

Bewick, in 1779, shows a picture of a short-tailed drover's dog which he terms the cur-dog, "a trusty and useful servant to the farmer and grazier," used especially in the North of England, where such attention was paid to its breeding that he, Bewick, cannot help but consider it "a permanent kind."

They were mostly black-and-white and short-haired, their ears were half-pricked, and many were whelped with short tails, "which seem as if they had been cut." These were called self-tailed dogs. They were most useful and their sagacity was "uncommonly great."

There was also another breed generally of mixed blood—cur, mastiff, and greyhound—and used to drive cattle, etc.

Edwards, as we have seen elsewhere, practically repeats this description.

Taplin, in 1803, in "The Sportsman's Cabinet," gives us an excellent picture by Reinagle of a rough-coated shepherd's dog, very similar indeed to the bearded collie and old English sheep-dog. He describes it as the "most timid, obedient, placid, serene, and grateful in creation," and that it is propagated and carefully preserved pure in the northern areas as well as in the Highlands of Scotland.

From a letter in the "Stock-keeper" of July 15, 1881, Suwarrow mentions that round Langdale, Westmorland, was a breed of tailless cur-dogs, which owing to cross-breeding with other dogs was likely to become extinct. They had peculiar stunted little tails, which seemed to him to be more like valves than anything else. He also found that very few bitches were left, and these had a tail decidedly inferior to the male, "having, perhaps through modesty," he writes, "assumed a longer one."

He states that "the sight of those wagging stumps apparently only  $1\frac{1}{2}$  inches to



2 inches long; the energetic uplifting and sudden collapses, with the vigorous oscillatory deflections, were something to be remembered."

He states that the cur breed tails were 4 and 3 inches long (measurement taken from the root), some with hair tapering to a point, others with a brush of hair on the tip. The coat was hard, smooth, but not very short, and he describes the dogs as thick-set, relatively short-legged; and some to be rather taller and not so heavy behind, but very strong and straight-legged.

In his list the collie breed varied in tail-length from 4 inches to 9 inches.

In a previous communication Suwarrow writes that frequently a large knot at the very end of the short tail, which might occur at the middle, was present.

From his table and from the notes we see that the stumpy tail was considered by that authority to be typical of a variety of sheep-dog, a characteristic which was being eliminated by crossing the short-tails with dogs of longer tails. Probably at that time more bob-tailed puppies were born than now, for I have it on good authority that only about five per cent of bob-tailed sheep-dog puppies are born with short tails, although occasionally an entire litter may arrive in this condition.

A bob-tailed sheep bitch had seventeen puppies, all fully developed, but two were dead. Their father was a long-tailed lurcher. Only one puppy in the seventeen had a long tail. The other sixteen, which were bitches, had tails so short that one could hardly tell they had tails at all. When bob-tailed sheep dogs are born with long tails it is customary to dock them at five to eight days old.

Writing on the Highland or bearded collie, J. Thomas Gray, who of course had first-hand knowledge of the breed, informs us that he was then, as he is now, very like the old English sheep-dog, only the tail was entire. Mr. Gray describes the dog as "a big, rough, 'tousy-looking' tyke with a coat not unlike a doormat, the texture of the hair hard and fibry, and the ears hanging close to the head." It was known as the "hairy-moued collie." These bearded collies, the hardy dog of the drover, are still numerous up north. They are not registered, and no club protects their interests.

Richardson, under heading of "Shepherd's Dog of England," writes that it is larger and stronger than the collie ("colley"), and had much of the appearance of a cross with the great rough water-dog. He describes it as being coarser in the muzzle and in coat, and to be destitute of tail. He refers to the shepherd's dog of France, similar to the shepherd's dog of England, and, like that animal, usually to have little or no tail.

He gives a ridiculous story of one of these dogs, trained to go round the flocks until told to desist, continuing to do so, his master having forgotten to call him off, until he died of fatigue!

In 1878, Walsh, in his "Dogs of the British Islands," gives the variety a paragraph to itself, and states that as sheep-dogs without tails were exempt from taxation, it being supposed that no one who could afford to pay the tax would keep a tail-less dog, almost every sheep-dog had his tail cut off. In this way he accounts for the variety.

He then goes on to say that the breed is probably the result of a cross with the bulldog. He concludes that bob-tails are usually brindles, but that he has not been able to obtain a description of any definite type and so will not attempt to describe it. He adds that the bob-tail has the peculiar habit of running over the backs of



sheep when in a flock in order to head them off, and for that reason is greatly valued for fairs and markets.

It appears, however, that shepherds had an idea that a short-tailed dog could not turn so quickly as a long-tailed one, and thus was more fitted to be a sheep-dog, being less able to get into a flock and more likely, as was desired, to run round it.

Frequent reference is made in dog books to a picture of Henry, Duke of Buccleuch, with a dog, distinctly of the bearded collie type, engraved in 1771 by John Dixon.

This illustration has caused considerable argument, some suggesting that it was too small to be a sheep-dog, though this is really of little importance, for undoubtedly sheep-dogs, like all other breeds, varied in size. The picture merely shows that in 1771 the type of matted-haired old English sheep-dog, as we know it now, was existing.

At Birmingham in 1873 the first class for "English short-tailed sheep-dogs" occurs; but the judge, Mr. M. B. Wynn, considered the dogs so bad that he only awarded a second prize.

In 1891 "Drovers' Dog Shows" were inaugurated. In 1894 the show was held at the Metropolitan Cattle Market and showed a distinct improvement in the dogs kept by the drovers since the show was first instituted. In the seventy-eight rough-coated and smooth-coated animals, twenty were old English sheep-dogs, in addition to which several prize winners were lent as models for exhibition. The old English sheep-dog had become popular because of its practical work amongst cattle, and although not considered so nimble as the collie, was believed to be better fitted for the rougher work.

The competition was keen, but the "bob-tails" took the special prizes for the best dog and bitch in the show, the prizes falling to C. Harper's "Jack" and H. R. Webb's "Gipsy Nell." The two prizes awarded to the cleanest and best-kept dogs in the show were won by H. Cook's "Mac" and F. T. Knott's collie pup "Rose of Kent," the latter taking first prize in her class and a special cup for the best puppy in the show. C. Harper's "Jack" took four prizes in all, including a special cup given by Mr. Macbeth; H. Cook's "Mac" securing the first prize for rough-coated dogs, the collection of which was a strong one. The honours of the best working dogs amongst cattle and sheep principally fell—by the vote of the drovers themselves—to collies.

The Old English Sheep-dog Club was established in 1888 by Mr. Edwards Ker, Mr. W. G. Wynn, Miss Mayhew, Mr. Freeman Lloyd, Mr. I. Thomas, and Mr. Parry Thomas. The Club issues from time to time, but not regularly, a year-book containing rules of the Club, points of the breed, and stud advertisements.

The old English sheep-dog is a good watch-dog and none distinguishes more quickly between friends and enemies. Not that he does not make an excellent shepherd's dog, for he undoubtedly does so, and evidence of this can be found in farms all over the country, particularly in the West of England, where he is very frequently met though liable to pass unnoticed except by the trained observer, as owing to the exacting nature of his work it is necessary for him to be shorn of that handsome coat that is so much admired on the show-bench.

The modern tendency of the old English sheep-dog is to increase in size, and provided this tendency is not carried to extremes it is no doubt for the benefit of

the breed ; but in aiming at size, breeders must guard against sacrificing type. It is easy enough to breed dogs of good type and small in size or dogs of large size lacking in type, but the difficulty is to combine the two. The ideal is the dog that stands well off the ground, but has a somewhat stocky appearance, rather narrow in front and very broad in the beam, the tail end distinctly higher than the shoulder, and no semblance of cow-hocks.

Common faults in modern dogs are long backs, light eyes, heavy fronts, a leggy appearance and weak hind quarters with cow-hocks, the last two features being very noticeable in many present-day dogs. The neck should be fairly long and arched. Too short a neck is very ugly and quite incorrect.

It may not be without interest to trace the history of a sheep-dog puppy from birth until maturity. At birth they are marked black-and-white. Signs of the black portions of the coat changing to grey will make their appearance at any time from three months onwards. The black will gradually disappear and with it the silky texture of the puppy coat. The adult coat should be profuse, very hard in texture, not straight and not curly. It is difficult to describe the texture in words, but it should be almost wiry and with a slight irregular wave in it, so harsh that when brushed up it remains erect. A good texture of coat can dispense with all artificial aids, such as pipe-clay, chalk, etc. Such preparations rob the coat of its lustre and should be reserved for dry-cleaning feet or other white parts that have become accidentally dirty. Puppies and full-grown dogs will do well without frequent baths, if their coats are kept well groomed. If they are not well-groomed, lice will soon appear and are not easily got rid of without the aid of strong disinfectant washes.

The sheep-dog puppy or adult is not subject to skin diseases, and mange or eczema is almost unknown.

A very important point is the colour of the eyes. Sheep-dogs should be either wall-eyed or have very dark brown eyes. One of each is all right, but a light brown eye is most objectionable and, unfortunately, increasingly common.

The bob-tail does not reach full maturity until he is nearly two, and it is not by any means always that the well-proportioned young puppy turns into the best dog. Many very successful dogs were ugly puppies, and a really massive and well-grown dog will generally have been a leggy puppy. If they are to have really good bone, their legs will look absurdly unmanageable when they are pups, while conversely a neat and finished-looking puppy will more often than not grow into a mediocre and insignificant-looking dog.

Bone and strength being of the first importance, the feeding of bob-tails needs very careful attention. The staple diet of a puppy once he has been weaned should consist of raw meat and biscuits, the latter in the form of meal, preferably soaked in sheep's-head or similar broth. A popular method of feeding on sheeps' paunches and other offal has no other merit than cheapness. Horseflesh lightly cooked is an excellent substitute for beef if the source from which it is obtained is above suspicion. Unfortunately this is seldom the case. Milk should not be given raw as a rule. Fish and rabbit are excellent as a change.

They are very seldom savage, though ideal watch-dogs. In the house they are quiet and well behaved, and if their coats are given a few minutes' attention daily are no trouble to keep in order.

Once past puppyhood and teething troubles, they are very strong and healthy.

They are not naturally fighters, but if attacked can generally give a good account of themselves, while their own heavy coats make it very unlikely that they should suffer any very severe injury in a fight.

It is somewhat difficult to give a comprehensive list of famous dogs, as one must inevitably omit many fine specimens. The following readily occur to the mind, but the list is by no means exhaustive and there have been many other famous dogs:

- “ Sir Caradoc.”
- “ Sir Guy.”
- Ch. “ Beat the Band.”
- Ch. “ Sir Ethelwolf.”
- Ch. “ Sir Cavendish.”
- Ch. “ Handsome Boy.”
- Ch. “ Brentwood Country Girl.”
- Ch. “ Brentwood Hero.”
- “ Shepton Hero.”
- Ch. “ Ragged Man.”
- “ Wall-eyed Bob.”
- Ch. “ Home Farm Shepherdess.”
- Ch. “ Victor Cavendish.”
- Ch. “ Rough Rider.”
- Ch. “ Tip-top Weather.”
- Ch. “ Sunlight.”
- Ch. “ Whimsical Weather.”
- Ch. “ Knight Raider.”
- Ch. “ Faithful Tramp.”
- Ch. “ Darkest of All.”
- “ Penzance Wallflower.”
- Ch. “ Blue Blossom.”
- Ch. “ Bully the Tramp.”
- Ch. “ Elusive Tramp.”<sup>1</sup>
- Ch. “ Elkington Squire.”
- Ch. “ Lucky Prince.”
- Ch. “ Peggy Wall Flower.”

We have illustrations of the earlier types from Bewick, Shaw, and Reinagle. As modern types we have “ Nana ” (left) and Ch. “ Darkest of All ” (right), two owned by Mr. W. N. Tod, of Rose Hill, Gateacre, Liverpool, to whom I am also indebted for information on the modern type.<sup>2</sup> (See Plate 83.)

#### THE COLLIE

Perhaps because it was so often seen and used by the shepherds and thus considered “ ordinary,” the early history of the breed is a singularly disappointing one and little interest was taken in it by early writers. Bewick, in 1790, gives an excellent wood-cut of a very typical collie indeed in the foreground, whilst in the

<sup>1</sup> This list is given me by Mr. Tod.

<sup>2</sup> For show points of to-day see Appendix XXV.



near background a shepherd in a kilt and plaid is followed by a collie. In the far background a flock of sheep is being driven along the cliffs by a shepherd and his dog.

Bewick describes the collie as "the shepherd's dog," a useful animal, ever faithful to his charge, and of the utmost importance where large tracts of land are used solely for the feeding of sheep "and other cattle."

"In driving a number of sheep to any distant part," he writes, "a well-trained dog never fails to confine them to the road, watches every avenue that leads from it; where he takes his stand, threatening every delinquent. He pursues the stragglers, if any should escape; and forces them into order, without doing them the least injury. If the herdsman be obliged to leave them, he depends upon his dog to keep the flock together; and as soon as he hears the well-known signal, this faithful creature conducts them to his master, though at a considerable distance." After describing dew-claws as a "remarkable singularity" of the shepherd's dog, he concludes the note that this breed "at present appears to be preserved in the greatest purity in the northern parts of Scotland."

The shepherd's dog of the 1792 edition of Linnæus, *C. domesticus*, does not appear to be the collie; for the nine words devoted to the variety read: "Has erect ears, and the tail is woolly underneath." But the illustration in Bewick, and that in Edwards's work of 1800, leave no doubt whatsoever that a collie much the same as it is to-day was used by the shepherds. In fact so collie-like are these dogs that we can see that though in most dog varieties marked alterations in type have taken place in the last hundred and fifty years, little change has occurred in the collie, except that in those days it was much smaller than it is now.

The collie is of the wolf-dog type; the old illustrations of Newfoundlands are collie-like, and it is possible that the originally imported Newfoundlands may have been used in the development of the variety.

Edwards, in 1800, describes the shepherd's dog as about 14 inches high, the nose sharp, ears half-pricked, coat moderately long, somewhat waving, and thick about the neck and haunches, tail bushy, with an inclination about the point, seldom erected, colour all black, black with tanned muzzle and feet, or black with a white ring round the neck and white feet. His illustration shows two fair collies, but shorter and less fine in the muzzle than the dog of to-day.

He tells a story of a sheep-stealer visiting a flock with the presumed intention to purchase. His dog went with him, and on this inspection he secretly gave the dog the hint as to which of the sheep he wanted, to the number, we read, of ten or twelve, in a flock of some hundreds. That night, from a distance of as many as twelve miles, he would send back the dog, who picked out the individual sheep, separated them from the flock, and brought them to his master. I doubt if such a thing is possible; even if we allow that the dog could remember the sheep, to collect and separate the ones which he needed from a flock would be practically impossible.

The drover's dog or cur, according to Edwards, stood higher on the leg and was both larger and fiercer than the shepherd's dog; colour black, brindled or grizzled, with generally a white neck and some white on the face and legs. The nose was short, the ears half-pricked or pendulous, coat mostly long, rough, and matted, particularly about the haunches, giving him a ragged appearance. Many were born with a short tail. He considers this dog to be "a commixture of shepherd's dog, lurcher, mastiff,

or Dane; his restless manner, shuffling gait, incessant barking, vagabond appearance, and perpetual return and reference to his master, bespeak him incapable of any great design.

"If a drove is huddled together so as to retard their progress, he dashes amongst and separates them till they form a line and travel more commodiously; or if a sheep is refractory and runs wild, he soon overtakes and, seizing it by the fore leg or ear, pulls it back." This is probably the bearded collie.

Bell, in his "British Quadrupeds,"<sup>1</sup> shows a plain but collie-like dog with a comparatively short and rather ragged coat. He describes it as "the Colly," and to stand not more than 12 to 14 inches high; and *Stonehenge*,<sup>2</sup> also under the title of "Colley," gives a short and general character of the breed. The colour is "nearly always black-and-tan, with little or no white," and that when the dog was whole-coloured it was not considered so valuable.

In 1867 *Stonehenge* deals more fully with the breed and gives an illustration, a "Scotch colley, from a dog never exhibited." He alludes to it as the Highland sheep-dog, and states that two races are found in Scotland, the rough and the smooth, the latter generally of a sandy colour. The homing instinct is very extraordinary, he writes, and we certainly must agree, if we believe what he tells us of Scottish drovers at Smithfield market, who with a wave of the hand would send their dogs back to the Highlands.<sup>3</sup> Further details as to their work and habits follow. He allots points, and as was his method, gives some to temper. These are:

	Points.		Points.
Head . . . .	20	Colour . . . .	10
Temper . . . .	20	Back . . . .	10
Shoulders . . . .	10	Loin . . . .	10
Coat . . . .	10	Feet and legs . . . .	10

In 1872 *Idstone*, in his chapter on the Scotch collie, writes that the colour varied, occasionally a granite-grey or a foxhound tan, black-and-tan with white collar, legs and belly, "the head generally marked regularly with a white leaf in the foreground, and a blaze down the nose." Nothing, he tells us, is so esteemed as the pointed face, the sharpest being in the greatest demand.

Walsh, in his work of 1878, gives an illustration of a smooth and a rough collie, Mr. M. Skinner's "Vero" and Mr. H. Mapplebeck's "Fan." Both dogs are distinctly heavier than the collie of to-day, but have better coats and longer muzzles. He devotes seven pages to arguments on coat. He rearranges the points: gives the head the same, 20, but increases shoulders to 17½. The coat is increased from 10, by 5, to 15. He informs us that considerable discussion had recently taken place as to the collie's colour, and that the short-coated collie was gaining favour, as the coat did not mat, as constantly occurred in the rougher-haired variety. The collie was becoming fashionable as a pet, and his market price, so Mr. Walsh tells us, had risen from £3 to £30, or more for animals good enough to take prizes at shows. He states that a brilliant black coat was in the greater demand, and that Gordon setter had been used to obtain this coat. But the setter cross, it was found, produced not only the desired colours and more feather, but also bad ears, neither the prick ears of the

<sup>1</sup> 1837.<sup>2</sup> 1859.<sup>3</sup> A beautiful story.



(Above) POMERANIANS AND DINGO. From Edwards's "*Cynographia Britannica*" (1800).  
(Below) SHEEP-DOGS AND SHEPHERD'S CURDOG. From the above-named work.





SHEEP-DOG. By Reinagle. From Taplin's "*Sportsman's Cabinet*" (1803).



TWO FAMOUS OLD ENGLISH SHEEP-DOGS, *the property of Mr. W. N. Tod, of Gateacre, Liverpool.* (Left) "Nana." (Right) Champion "Darkest of all."



(Top) left. SHETLAND SHEEP-DOG CH. "ELTHAM PARK ESME." *The property of Miss Frederica Fry, bred by Mr. Pierce ;* right. BLUE MERLE COLLIE CH. "MOUNTSHANNON BLUE SPLENDOR." *The property of the Rev. T. Salter.* (Centre) WHITE COLLIE "SQUIRE." *Accepted by the Prince of Wales (later King Edward). From "The Queen's Dogs."* (Bottom) left. SMOOTH COLLIES CH. "BABETTE OF MORETON" AND CH. "IRTHLINGBOROUGH VILLAGE LASS." *The property of Lady Alexander of Ballochmyle ;* right. Mr. A. H. MEGSON'S THE NOTED CH. "ORMSKIRK EMERALD."



collie nor the close-falling ears of the setter. He disparages the cross, suggesting that the Gordon setter pure, if its type of coat was desired, would make just as good a pet, and points out that the real value of the collie was its more than average intelligence.

The sheep-dogs and Scotch collies (Class 25 in the first K. C. Stud Book) are nearly all bred in England, and, without a note to the contrary, were presumably of English stock, as far as the short pedigrees go. Occasionally a Scottish dog appears: "Mec," 2877, was by Mr. Heskett's dog from Scotland, out of Mr. Gerrard's bitch from Scotland.

"Myrtle," the property of Mr. W. P. Chalke, of London, was a Lowland collie of the Woburn Park breed, trained by T. Gilbert, shepherd to the late Duke of Manchester. The only long pedigree is that of "Shamrock," 2897, the property of Mr. S. E. Shirley, M.P., a black, tan, and white. In the Kennel Club Stud Book for 1875 two classes are given to the variety: Class XXVI, Sheep-dogs and Colleys, Rough-coated. Class XXVII, Sheep-dogs and Colleys, Smooth-coated. There is also a class for short-tailed English sheep-dogs with two entries, "Bob," 4541, and "Bob," 4542.

In vol. v, the 1878 book, a variation takes place—the classes are now for "Collies, (rough-coated) Collies (smooth-coated)," and the "short-tailed English sheep-dog class" appears as "Collies (short-tailed English)."

In 1879, vol. vi has "Sheep-dogs (rough-coated), Sheep-dogs (smooth-coated), and Sheep-dogs (short-tailed English)," the latter containing one entry, "Bob," 7563, who had appeared in a previous volume.

A further change takes place in vol. viii of 1881. Here we have a return to "Colleys (rough-coated), Colleys (smooth-coated), and Colleys (English short-tailed);" but vol. ix places them once again under "Sheep-dogs."

In the 1885 volume, No. 12, the first "Sheep-dogs (bob-tailed)" occurs, but is changed again to "Sheep-dogs (short-tailed)" in 1886. It is in 1894 that "Collie and Old English Sheep-dog" come to stay.

The "Stock-keeper" tells us how in 1887 a pawky shepherd from the hills walked into the Secretary's office<sup>1</sup> just as the busy functionary was overlooking a printer's proof of the prize list, and inquired, "Are ye the Secretary?" On receiving an answer in the affirmative, in Mr. Clarke's courteous manner, he ejaculated, "Wha's me coulie dug?" On it being suggested that he should buy a catalogue, he angrily replied, "I've paid eicht shullins for ma dug to get in here, and I demand of ye, as Secretary, to coom oot and show me all o'er tha show." After considerable argument, he was handed over to an obliging committee-man, who duly undertook the office of cicerone.

The dog is peculiarly Scottish and was introduced into England by the shepherds bringing flocks over the borders. But the great impetus to the breed's introduction was of course the dog-fanciers and the desire of people of wealth and position to have so interesting a guard and companion. The name "Collie" is by no means clear. In Chaucer we find "Coll our dog," and it has been suggested that *Coll* is the origin, meaning black, the *ie* being the diminutive; or it may have reference to the white band round the neck, suggesting the presence of a collar.

The name, however, is probably derived from Gael. *cuilean*, *cuilein*, a whelp,

<sup>1</sup> At a dog show.

puppy, or cub—Irish *cuileann*, a whelp or kitten. "Century Dict. and Cycl." (1914) gives *collie* or *colley*, a kind of shepherd's dog. "Coaly Coley, a cur-dog."

"Brockett's Glossary of N. English Words" (1824) gives "*Coley*, a cur-dog; North; Grose, Gloss. (1790). Shepherd dogs "in the North of England are called 'coally' dogs": "Recreations in Nat. Hist." (London, 1815).

"Supposed to be the same word as coaly, black like coal, from the coal-black hairs" (Skeat, "Eng. Dict.," 1910). Cf. proverb. England, *colley*—soot, and also to blacken. Cf. "Briefe as lightning in the *collied* night" (Shakespeare, "Mid. Night's Dream," I. i, 155). Colly (M. E. *colwen*, from A. S. *col*, a coal), to begrime with coal-dust.

In the "Dict. Eng. Etym.," by H. Wedgwood (1888), we find: "*Collie*, a shepherd's dog, from having its tail cropped. Sw. *kullug*, *kollig*, without horns or wanting some member that ought to be there. Sc. to 'coll,' to poll the hair, or snuff a candle. In Rietz Hesse a shepherd's dog is often called 'Mutz,' from *mutz*, a stump; *kollmutz*, *kullarsch*, a tailless hen."

"Imper. Eng. Dict.," Ogilvie and Annandale (1882), substantiates this: "Perhaps fit. a dog with a docked tail, from Sc. *cole* or *coll*, to cut or lop; cf. Icel. *kolla*, a deer or ewe without horns. Gael. *culean*, a grown whelp, has for its vocative 'culyie,' which is the term used when calling to a whelp. *Coo* or *cu* signifies a dog. It seems doubtful if this be allied to Irish *cuilean*, *coilen*, whelp; or Cambro, Britannic *colwyn*, Armorican *colen qui*, a little dog. Tyrwhitt observes that 'Coll' appears to have been a common name for a dog." Cf. Chaucer, "Ran Colle our dogge, and Talbot, and Gerlond" (Nonnes P. Tale, 15,389).

Dalziel, writing of the collie,<sup>1</sup> gives the Collie Club's standard as it was then (for to-day's standard see Appendix XXV):

"In accordance with my practice when a club specially formed to cultivate a breed exists, I give the standard of excellence and scale of points drawn up by the Collie Club, which is as follows:

"The *skull* of the collie should be quite flat and rather broad, with fine tapering muzzle of fair length, and mouth the least bit overshot; the *eyes* widely apart, almond-shaped, and obliquely set in the head; the skin of the head tightly drawn, with no folds at the corners of the mouth; the *ears* as small as possible, semi-erect when surprised or listening, at other times thrown back and buried in the 'ruff.'

"The *neck* should be long, arched, and muscular, the *shoulders* also long, sloping, and fine at the withers; the *chest* to be deep and narrow in front, but of fair breadth behind the shoulders.

"The *back* to be short and level, with the loin rather long, somewhat arched and powerful. *Brush* long, 'wi' upward swirl' at the end, and normally carried low.

"The *fore legs* should be perfectly straight, with a fair amount of flat bone; the pasterns rather long, springy, and slightly lighter of bone than the rest of the leg; the *foot* with toes well arched and compact, soles very thick.

"The *hind quarters*, drooping slightly, should be very long from the hip bones to the hocks, which should be neither turned inwards nor outwards, with stifles well bent. The hip bones should be wide and rather ragged.

"The *coat*, except on legs and head, should be as abundant as possible; the

<sup>1</sup> "The Collie, its History, Points, and Breeding," by Hugh Dalziel (1888).

outer coat straight, hard, and rather stiff; the under coat furry, and so dense that it would be difficult to find the skin. The 'ruff' and 'frill' especially should be very full. There should be but little 'feather' on the fore legs and none below the hocks on the hind legs.

"*Colour*.—Immaterial.

"*Symmetry*.—The dog should be a fair length on the leg, and his movements wiry and graceful. He should not be too small; height of dog from 22 to 24 inches, of bitches from 20 to 22 inches.

"The greyhound type is very objectionable, as there is no brain-room in the skull, and with this there are to be found fatuous expression and a long, powerful jaw.

"The setter type is to be avoided, with its pendulous ear, full, soft eye, heavily feathered legs, and straight short flag.

"The smooth collie only differs from the rough in its coat, which should be hard, dense, and quite smooth.

#### *Scale of Points*

Head and expression	.	.	.	.	15
Ears	.	.	.	.	10
Neck and shoulders	.	.	.	.	10
Legs and feet	.	.	.	.	15
Hind quarters	.	.	.	.	10
Back and loins	.	.	.	.	10
Brush	.	.	.	.	5
Coat with frill	.	.	.	.	20
Size	.	.	.	.	5
					<hr/>
					100

"*Note*.—Point judging is not advocated, and figures are only made use of to show the comparative value attached to the different properties. No marks are given for 'general symmetry,' which is, of course, in judging, a point of the utmost importance."

I give here the early history of the breed, culled from a correspondent, *Moonraker*, of the "Kennel Gazette," in an article on "Rough-coated Collies Past and Present," dividing the breed into four main families, and a fifth group of "Miscellaneous" and those with untraceable pedigrees. The four families are named after the leading or original dog, and from other writers:

- (1) Trefoil.
- (2) Marcus.
- (3) Cockie.
- (4) Carlyle.

#### (1) THE TREFOIL FAMILY

Of the "Trefoil" Family, "Charlemagne" was the noted dog, and he was unbeatable. "Maude" was the dam of "Charlemagne," also of "Trevor," and "Lorna Wolf."

"Charlemagne's" sire was Mr. Shirley's "Trefoil," whose ancestry went down to McCall's "Shep" and to a working dog, used by a shepherd on the estate. "Maude," "Charlemagne's" dam, was a daughter of "Cockie," sometimes called "Old Cockie," without pedigree.



"Charlemagne" was the sire of "Eclipse," who inherited his coat and ears. He was of great importance, for his progeny included "The Scot," "Pitchdark," "Flurry II," "Wild Daisy," "Tippett Craig," "Meg Murdockson." Of these "Pitchdark" had an amusing history, for Mr. Price gave him as a puppy to Captain Phipps, retaining for himself, so he believed, the best in "Petulance." When later he saw "Pitchdark," he was, so we read, ready to tear his hair out in disgust! For "Pitchdark," a dark sable, had grown into a collie of remarkable beauty, and was claimed at £100, catalogue price, at the show by Mr. Megson. "Pitchdark" had an excellent head and ears, and his coat, legs, and feet would have been hard to find fault with. "Eclipse's" daughter, "Flurry II," was a red sable very like her dam "Flurry." "Flurry II" excelled in movement.

In the "Trefoil" family there was also Mr. Pirie's "Peerless," remarkably good in coat, legs, and feet, but a little light in bone and failing in expression. Mr. Pirie's "Paramount," own brother to "Peerless," had a good coat, but occasionally carried one ear badly, and Mr. White's "Wild Daisy," a sable and white, had rather large ears, but otherwise was a very pretty creature. "The Squire," bred by Mr. Dockrell, was built on racy lines but failed in coat. There was also "Dublin Scot," a magnificent collie, very large, standing 24 inches high at the shoulder, a beautiful sable with plenty of character, and an excellent coat, legs, and feet. His only fault was his ears, which were on the large size. And last of the more important members of this family was the famous "Metchley Wonder."

"Metchley Wonder" stood 24 inches at the shoulder, weighed 56 lb., and was sold for £530. We see in the Stud List of the "Kennel Gazette" of January 1888 "Metchley Wonder" advertised, as a rich sable with perfect broad white collar and frill, at £10 10s.

"The Squire" stood at £7 7s., and is advertised as "rich sable, perfect with white markings" (by Ch. "Charlemagne," dam Ch. "Flurry").

The brother to "Trefoil," "Tricolour" was the sire of "Tricolour II," the sire of "Ruby III," who was mated with "Marcus" (Family 2).

## (2) THE MARCUS FAMILY

"Marcus" was a Scotch collie (a black noted for his wonderful coat and good ears). He was the sire of "Madge I."

"Madge I," bred with "Charlemagne," gave birth to "Sefton," "Sefton" with one of Mr. Megson's bitches, "Minnie," produced the wonderful "Metchley Wonder." "Metchley Wonder" bred "Christopher," the sire of "Ormskirk Amazement."

From "Wolf" and "Madge I" came "Rutland," claimed at the Gloucester Show by Mr. S. Boddington. "Rutland" stood at stud at a fee of £7 7s., and is described in the advertisement as "rich sable, perfect with white markings." "Rutland" altogether won some twenty champions, and was the sire of more winners than any other dog up to that time. This dog, crossed with "Blue Thistle," produced "Thistledown." "Rutland" was also the sire of "Vulcan," bred by Mr. Megson, one of the most important breeders of collies at that time.

"Rutland's" descendants had the fault of being too "cloddy." One of the

best of his blood was Dr. James's "White Heather," a beautiful dark sable. There was also "Oakham," who carried his ears badly, and "Sly Fox," the property of Mr. Ralph, a black-and-white, which, though good in legs and feet, and carriage, body, and ears, was yet a trifle wide in skull, and his coat was of a somewhat unusual texture. He was the sire of several noted dogs, "Fedora" and "Esca" and of "Steeple Jack."

"Staffa" was certainly the best of "Marcus's" sons, and had the most marvellous coat of any collie ever born, but failed in head and the carriage of his ears.

### (3) THE COCKIE FAMILY

Of these, "Cockie" himself failed in ears ("heavy in ears"), yet even under this fault was the most handsome collie that *Moonraker* had ever seen. In his family was Ch. "Wolf," the sire of "Rutland," a black-and-tan dog full of character, good coat, legs, feet, failing in size, for he was small. He won at the Collie Club Show the medal for best stud dog.

"Sefton Hero," one of the most famous dogs in collie history, was the son of "Gladdie," who went back on the sire side to "General Trefoil." "Sefton Hero" was out of "Lady Wonder," who was of "Metchley Wonder" and "Rutland" blood.

### (4) THE CARLYLE FAMILY

"Carlyle" had "heaps of collie character." He was the sire of Ch. "Donald," the property of Mr. Ashwin, and was the sire of "Blue Ruin," a famous bitch, the property of Mr. Arkwright.

About 1795 the Duke of Bedford introduced collies into Devonshire. These collies are the ancestors of the "Blue Merles," several good smooths but comparatively few good roughs. Mr. W. P. Arkwright took great interest in these. One of the earliest dogs of this strain was "Scott" (6495), a grey, tan, and white with china eyes. He was the sire of "Blue Sky" out of "Blue Rose."

### (5) OUTSIDERS

In the fifth group, of outsiders, *Moonraker* gives "Blue Sky" to be about the best of these, used by many breeders as an out-cross, not only with the object of getting fresh blood, but mainly perhaps to obtain the "blue merled" colour. "Blue Sky" was a big active dog with a good coat, legs, and feet, but failed in rib. Merled collies were at one time known as "Welsh heelers," though they were not peculiar to Wales.

"Motley," related to "Blue Sky" on his dam's side, on his sire's side traced back to Mr. Thomson's "Old Lynn" blood, a line at one time noted for ill-temper. "Motley" stood at stud at £3 3s. and is described as a blue-and-white with tan markings.

*Moonraker* completes his most interesting and instructive survey, of which I have given extracts, with the opinion that the "Trefoil" blood might be inbred without risk, whilst the other strains do best when crossed out.

The first class for collies or such-like dogs under the nomenclature of "sheep-

dogs" was at the Leeds Show of 1861. "Canty," the property of Mr. C. Walker, took first, and "Bob," the property of Mr. T. Ellis, second. At Birmingham the same year Mr. J. Siviter's "Jeho" (a Scotch dog) won first, and Mr. T. King's "Bob" second. The Agricultural Hall Show, 1862, had no sheep-dog classes. At the First Annual Grand National Exhibition held at Cremorne, Chelsea, 1863, a class was allotted to "Scotch collies"; and the same year at the First Grand International Dog Show at Islington two classes were allotted to Scotch sheep-dogs according to sex, and one class to English sheep-dogs.

Islington in 1864 eliminated two of the sheep-dog classes of the previous year, and had only one for sheep-dogs of any kind or sex.

There seems to have been no further attempt to have more than one class for sheep-dogs until the Crystal Palace Show in 1870, when two classes were given, one for the rough-coated and a second class for smooth-coated. But the second class was a failure; no prizes were given for want of merit.

At Nottingham in 1872 the experiment was tried again, this time with success.

Birmingham that same year followed with two classes, sex divided; but in the bitch class the first was withheld, the second going to Mr. Shaw's "Wolf."

At a meeting of the Collie Club at the Crystal Palace, 1884, Mr. Ashwin moved "that, the collie classes having become large, it was desirable at the principal shows that collies should be divided into two classes according to their colour, viz. black-and-tan, black-white-and-tan, black-and-white, and black into one class, and sables and any other colour into another class." This was supported by every member present, but the Kennel Club did not consider it practical.

We read that the collie dog of 1886 was of about the same height and weight as the present-day dog. Dalziel, in his work "The Collie," gives us the measurements of celebrated dogs of that time. The height at shoulders varied from 21 inches to 24 inches, the weight up to 65 lb.

In 1888 "Caractacus" was claimed at the Liverpool Show at the catalogue price of £100, and subsequently put up to auction made £350. He stood 25 inches at the shoulder and weighed 65 lb. Mr. Megson had purchased him.

Considerable alarm was felt in Collie circles because her Majesty Queen Victoria and his Royal Highness the Prince of Wales had graciously accepted a white collie from Messrs. I. & H. W. Charles, of Wellesbourne, for it was expected that a demand for white collies would thus be started, but the fear did not materialise. White collies were rare then and have been rare ever since. This white collie is given on Plate 84.

At the Scottish Kennel Club's Show in 1889, a strange incident occurred. On the third day some miscreant threw vitriol on to two collies. "Fortunately, we read, Mr. W. G. Saward, Show Manager to the Sanitas Co., was at hand," who at once applied the "Sanitas Oil." The dogs were afterwards handed over to the Veterinary Inspector, and the Club offered a reward of £25 for the discovery of the perpetrator of this outrage, but no clue was obtained.

The following year, Mr. T. H. Stretch sold to Mr. Mitchell Harrison, of Philadelphia, "Christopher," at a price equivalent to £1,000. He received "Dublin Scot" and "Charleroi II" as part payment—dogs which had done well in America, "Charleroi II" being sire of several puppies well up in the prize lists at the show at New York. But in 1895 a sensational collie sale took place. Mr. W. E. Mason



sold Ch. "Southport Perfection" for over £1,000 to Mr. A. H. Megson. So Ch. "Christopher" no longer held the record price.

"Rufford Ormonde" was sold for £700.

Stories of collies and their devotion and intelligence were at one time common. They varied from the type of intelligence we are accustomed to, bringing sheep long distances and preventing losses, to such absurd stories<sup>1</sup> as given by Youatt in his "Dog Book" of 1845. A shepherd on one of his excursions over the Grampian Hills took with him a child about four years old, who, on reaching a stiff ascent, was left at the bottom. A mist came up and the shepherd, returning, was unable to find the child. The next day a search proved fruitless. On his return home he found that his dog had been home and, on receiving his allowance of food, had departed. For four days the shepherd continued his search, and each day his dog returned, seized his food and hurriedly departed. Following the dog, carrying its food in its mouth, he was led to a cave, and the shepherd found his child eating the cake the dog had just brought him.<sup>2</sup> Youatt spells the word "colley."

Mr. James Hogg, the Ettrick Shepherd, gives several stories of "colleys." We must just pause to take a brief glimpse at some of his early adventures. How once he lost his plaid, bonnet, coat, and finally his hosen, until he was naked, and how the missing articles were recovered. Seated close to the red-cheeked shepherd girl, he would pretend to sleep, his head resting in her lap.<sup>3</sup> Later he was the author of the well-known song "Donald Macdonald," which the public sang and cheered, and politicians used in their speeches, "and yet," he writes, "no one knew or inquired who had written it."<sup>4</sup>

"A curious story that appeared lately of a dog belonging to a shepherd, named John Hoy," he writes, "has brought sundry similar ones to my recollection, which I am sure cannot fail to be interesting to those unacquainted with the qualities of that most docile and affectionate of the whole animal creation—the shepherd's dog.

"The story alluded to was shortly this: John was at a Sacrament of the Covenanters, and being loath to leave the afternoon sermon, and likewise obliged to have his ewes at the *boght* at a certain hour, gave his dog a quiet hint at the outskirts of the congregation, and instantly she went away, took the hills, and gathered the whole flock of ewes to the *boght* as carefully and quietly as if her master had been with her, to the astonishment of a thousand beholders, for the ewes lay scattered over two large and steep hills.

"This John Hoy was my uncle; that is, he was married to my mother's sister. He was all his life remarkable for breeding up his dogs to perform his commands with wonderful promptitude and exactness, especially at a distance from him, and he kept always by the same breed. It may be necessary to remark here, that there

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Brown gives a story of a sheep-dog, his flock intercepted by the "toll-wife," jumping on her back and crossing his fore legs over her arms, holding her until his flock had passed safely through.

<sup>2</sup> "Annals of Sporting," vol. viii, p. 83.

<sup>3</sup> "One day I heard her say to herself, 'Poor little laddie! he is just tired to death.' I was afraid she would feel the warm tears trickling on her knee."

<sup>4</sup> The old General commanding the Northern Division had the song sung in the officers' mess each week-day. General Donald Macdonald came to the conclusion that he had written it himself! "I once heard the above song sung in the theatre at Lancashire," writes Mr. Hogg, "when the singer substituted the following lines of his own for the last verse. It took exceedingly well, and was three times encored, and there was I sitting in the gallery applauding as much as anybody." (The added lines were topical.—E. C. A.)

is no species of animals so varied in their natures and propensities as the shepherd's dog, and these propensities are preserved inviolate in the same breed from generation to generation. One kind will manage sheep about hand, about a *boght*, shedding, or fold, almost naturally; and those that excel most in this kind of service are always the least tractable at a distance. Others will gather sheep from the hills, or turn them this way and that way, as they are commanded, as far as they can hear their master's voice, or note the signals made by his hand, and yet can never be taught to command sheep close around him. Some excel, again, in a kind of social intercourse. They understand all that is said to them in the family, and often a good deal that is said of sheep, and of other dogs, their comrades. One kind will bite the legs of cattle, and no species of correction or disapprobation will restrain them, or ever make them give it up; another kind bays at the heads of cattle, and neither precept nor example will ever induce them to attack a beast behind, or bite its legs.

"My uncle Hoy's kind were held in estimation over the whole country for their docility in what is termed *hirsle-rinning*—that is, gathering sheep at a distance; but they were never very good at commanding sheep about hand. Often have I stood with astonishment at seeing him standing on the top of one hill, and the 'Tub,' as he called an excellent snow-white bitch that he had, gathering all the sheep from another with great care and caution. I once saw her gathering the head of a hope or glen, quite out of her master's sight, while all that she heard of him was now and then the echo of his voice or whistle from another hill, yet, from the direction of that echo, she gathered the sheep with perfect acuteness and punctuality.

"I have often heard him tell an anecdote of another dog called 'Nimble.' One drift day in the *seventy-four*, after gathering the ewes of Chapelhope, he found that he wanted about a hundred of them. He again betook himself to the heights, and sought for them the whole day without being able to find them, and began to suspect that they were covered over with snow in some ravine. Towards the evening it cleared up a little, and as a last resource, he sent away 'Nimble.' She had found the scent of them on the hill while her master was looking for them; but not having received orders to bring them, she had not the means of communicating the knowledge she possessed. But as soon as John gave her the gathering word, she went away, he said, like an arrow out of a bow, and in less than five minutes he beheld her at about a mile's distance, bringing them round a hill, called the Middle, cocking her tail behind them, and apparently very happy at having got the opportunity of terminating her master's disquietude with so much ease.

"I once witnessed another very singular feat performed by a dog belonging to John Graham, late tenant in Ashesteel. A neighbour came to his house after it was dark, and told him that he had lost a sheep on his farm, and that if he (Graham) did not secure her in the morning early, she would be lost, as he had brought her far. John said he could not possibly get to the hill next morning, but if he would take him to the very spot where he lost the sheep, perhaps his dog 'Chieftain' would find her that night. On that they went away with all expedition, lest the traces of the feet should cool; and I, then a boy, being in the house, went with them. The night was pitch-dark, which had been the cause of the man losing his ewe; and at length he pointed out a place to John, by the side of the water, where he had lost her. 'Chieftain, fetch that,' said John; 'bring her back, sir.' The dog jumped around and around,



and reared himself up on end, but not being able to see anything, evidently misapprehended his master ; on which John fell a-cursing and swearing at the dog, calling him a great many blackguard names. He at last told the man that he must point out the *very track* that the sheep went, otherwise he had no chance of recovering it. The man led him to a grey stone, and said he was sure she took the brae within a yard of that. 'Chieftain, come hither to my foot, you great numb'd whelp,' said John. Chieftain came. John pointed with his finger to the ground. 'Fetch that, I say, sir, you stupid idiot—bring that back. Away!' The dog scented slowly about on the ground for some seconds, but soon began to mend his pace, and vanished in the darkness. 'Bring her back—away, you great calf!' vociferated John, with a voice of exultation, as the dog broke to the hill, and as all these good dogs perform their work in perfect silence, we neither saw nor heard any more for a long time. I think, if I remember right, we waited there about half an hour, during which time all the conversation was about the small chance that the dog had to find the ewe, for it was agreed on all hands that she must long ago have mixed with the rest of the sheep on the farm. How that was, no man will ever be able to decide. John, however, still persisted in waiting until his dog came back, either with the ewe or without her ; and at last the trusty animal brought the individual lost sheep to our very foot, which the man took on his back, and went on his way rejoicing. I remember the dog was very warm, and hanging out his tongue. John called him all the ill names he could invent, which the animal seemed to take in very good part. Such language seemed to be John's flattery to his dog. For my part, I went home, fancying I had seen a miracle, little weening that it was nothing to what I myself was to experience in the course of my pastoral life, from the sagacity of the shepherd's dog.

"My dog was always my companion. I conversed with him the whole day—I shared every meal with him, and my plaid in the time of a shower ; the consequence was, that I generally had the best dog in all the country. The first remarkable one that I had was named 'Sirrah.' He was beyond all comparison the best dog I ever saw. He was of a surly, unsocial temper—disdained all flattery, and refused to be caressed ; but his attention to his master's commands and interests never will again be equalled by any of the canine race. The first time that I saw him, a drover was leading him in a rope ; he was hungry and lean, and far from being a beautiful cur, for he was all over black, and had a grim face striped with dark brown. The man had bought him of a boy for three shillings, somewhere on the Border, and doubtless had used him very ill on his journey. I thought I discovered a sort of sullen intelligence in his face, notwithstanding his dejected and forlorn situation ; so I gave the drover a guinea for him, and appropriated the captive to myself. I believe there never was a guinea so well laid out ; at least I am satisfied that I never laid out one to so good a purpose. He was scarcely then a year old, and knew so little of herding that he had never turned sheep in his life ; but as soon as he discovered that it was his duty to do so, and that it obliged me, I can never forget with what anxiety and eagerness he learned his different evolutions. He would try every way deliberately till he found out what I wanted him to do ; and when once I made him to understand a direction, he never forgot or mistook it again. Well as I knew him, he very often astonished me, for when hard pressed in accomplishing



the task that he was put to, he had expedients of the moment that bespoke a great share of the reasoning faculty. Were I to relate all his exploits, it would require a volume: I shall only mention one or two, to prove what kind of an animal he was.

"I was a shepherd for ten years on the same farm, where I had always about 700 lambs put under my charge every year at weaning time. As they were of the short or black-faced breed, the breaking of them was a very ticklish and difficult task. I was obliged to watch them night and day for the first four days, during which time I had always a person to assist me. It happened one year that just about midnight the lambs broke, and came up the moor upon us, making a noise with their running louder than thunder. We got up and waved our plaids and shouted, in hopes to turn them, but we only made matters worse, for in a moment they were all round us, and by our exertions we cut them into three divisions; one of these ran north, another south, and those that came up between us straight up the moor to the westward. I called out 'Sirrah, my man, they're away'—the word, of all others, that set him most upon the alert; but owing to the darkness of the night and blackness of the moor, I never saw him at all. As the division of the lambs that ran southward were going straight towards the fold, where they had been that day taken from their dams, I was afraid they would go there, and again mix with them, so I threw off part of my clothes and pursued them, and by great personal exertion and the help of another old dog that I had besides 'Sirrah,' I turned them, but in a few minutes afterwards lost them altogether. I ran here and there, not knowing what to do, but always, at intervals, gave a loud whistle to 'Sirrah,' to let him know that I was depending on him. By that whistling, the lad was who assisting me found me out; but he likewise had lost all trace whatsoever of the lambs. I asked if he had never seen 'Sirrah'? He said, he had not; but that after I left him, a wing of the lambs had come around him with a swirl, and that he supposed 'Sirrah' had given them a turn, though he could not see him for the darkness. We both concluded that whatever way the lambs ran at first, they would finally land at the fold where they left their mothers, and without delay we bent our course towards that; but when we came there, there was nothing of them, nor any kind of bleating to be heard, and we discovered with vexation that we had come on the wrong track.

"My companion then bent his course towards the farm of Glen on the north, and I ran away westward for several miles, along the wild tract where the lambs had grazed while following their dams. We met after it was day, far up in a place called Black Clench, but neither of us had been able to discover our lambs, nor any traces of them. It was the most extraordinary circumstance that had ever occurred in the annals of the pastoral life! We had nothing for it but to return to our master and inform him that we had lost his whole flock of lambs, and knew not what was become of them.

"On our way home, we discovered a body of lambs at the bottom of a deep ravine, called the Flesh Clench, and the indefatigable 'Sirrah' standing in front of them, looking all around for some relief, but still standing true to his charge. The sun was then up; and when we first came in view of them, we concluded that it was one of the divisions of the lambs, which 'Sirrah' had been unable to manage until he came to that commanding situation, for it was about a mile and a half distant

from the place where they first broke and scattered. But what was our astonishment, when we discovered by degrees that not one lamb of the whole flock was wanting! How he had got all the divisions collected in the dark is beyond my comprehension. The charge was left entirely to himself from midnight until the rising of the sun; and if all the shepherds in the Forest had been there to assist him, they could not have effected it with greater propriety. All that I can say farther is, that I never felt so grateful to any creature below the sun as I did to 'Sirrah' that morning."

He tells the story of Hector. He writes: "It will appear strange to hear a dog's reasoning faculty mentioned, as it has been; but I have hardly ever seen a shepherd's dog do anything without perceiving his reasons for it. I have often amused myself in calculating what his motives were for such and such things, and I generally found them very cogent ones. But Hector had a droll stupidity about him, and took up forms and rules of his own, for which I could never perceive any motive that was not even farther out of the way than the action itself. He had one uniform practice, and a very bad one it was, during the time of family worship—that just three or four seconds before the conclusion of the prayer, he started to his feet and ran barking round the apartment like a crazed beast. My father was so much amused with this, that he would never suffer me to correct him of it, and I scarcely ever saw the old man rise from the prayer without his endeavouring to suppress a smile at the extravagance of Hector. None of us could ever find out how he knew that the prayer was done, for my father was not formal in his prayers; but *certainly* he did know, of that we had nightly evidence. There never was anything for which I was so puzzled to discover a reason as this; but, from accident I did discover it, and, however ludicrous it may appear, I am certain it was correct. It was much in character with many of Hector's feats, and rather, I think, the most *outré* of any principle he ever acted on. As I said, his chief daily occupation was pointing the cat. Now, when he saw us all kneel down in a circle, with our faces couched on our paws, in the same posture as himself, it struck his absurd head that we were all engaged in pointing the cat. He lay on tenters all the time, but the acuteness of his ear enabling him, through time, to ascertain the very moment when we would all spring to our feet, he thought to himself, 'I shall be first after her for you all!'

"He inherited his dad's unfortunate ear for music, not perhaps in so extravagant a degree, but he ever took care to exhibit it on the most untimely and ill-judged occasions. Owing to some misunderstanding between the minister of the parish and the session clerk, the precenting in church devolved on my father, who was the senior elder. Now, my father could have sung several of the old church tunes middling well, in his own family circle; but it so happened, that, when mounted in the desk, he could never command the starting notes of any but one (St. Paul's) which were always in undue readiness at the root of his tongue, to the exclusion of every other semibreve in the whole range of sacred melody. The minister gave out psalms four times in the course of every day's service, and consequently the congregation were treated with St. Paul's, in the morning, at great length, twice in the course of the service, and then once again at the close—nothing but St. Paul's. And, it being of itself a monotonous tune, nothing could exceed the monotony that prevailed in the primitive church of Ettrick. Out of pure sympathy for my father



alone, I was compelled to take the precentorship in hand; and, having plenty of tunes, for a good while I came on as well as could be expected, as men say of their wives. But, unfortunately for me, Hector found out that I attended church every Sunday, and although I had him always closed up carefully at home, he rarely failed to make his appearance in church at some time of the day. Whenever I saw him, a tremour came over my spirits, for I well knew what the issue would be. The moment he heard my voice strike up the Psalm 'with might and majesty,' then did he fall in with such overpowering vehemence, that he and I seldom got any to join in the music but our two selves. The shepherds hid their heads, and laid them down on the backs of the seats wrapped in their plaids, and the lasses looked down to the ground and laughed till their faces grew red. I disdained to stick the tune, and therefore was obliged to carry on in spite of the obstreperous accompaniment; but I was, time after time, so completely put out of all countenance by the brute, that I was obliged to give up my office in disgust, and leave the parish once more to their old friend St. Paul."

The value of a sheep-dog is very great to the shepherds, especially in hilly country.

"A single shepherd and his dog will accomplish more in gathering a stock of sheep from a Highland farm, than twenty shepherds could without dogs; and it is a fact that without this docile animal the pastoral life would be a mere blank. Without the shepherd's dog, the whole of the open mountainous land in Scotland would not be worth a sixpence. It would require more hands to manage a stock of sheep, gather them from the hills, force them into houses and folds, and drive them to market, than the profits of the whole stock would be capable of maintaining. Well may the shepherd feel an interest in his dog; he it is indeed that earns the family's bread, of which he is himself content with the smallest morsel; always grateful, and always ready to exert his utmost abilities in his master's interest. Neither hunger, fatigue, nor the worst of treatment, will drive him from his side; he will follow him through fire and water, as the saying is, and through every hardship, without murmur or repining, till he literally fall down dead at his foot. If one of them is obliged to change masters, it is sometimes long before he will acknowledge the new one, or condescend to work for him with the same willingness as he did for his former lord; but if he once acknowledges him, he continues attached to him till death; and though naturally proud and high-spirited, in as far as relates to his master, these qualities (or rather failings) are kept so much in subordination."

We read elsewhere that on the Urban and Suburban Railways in 1883, a black collie dog named "Help" collected for the Society of Railway Servants Fund for the benefit of destitute orphans. On his collar was the inscription: "I am Help, the Railway Dog of England, and Travelling Agent for the Orphans of the Railway Men that are Killed on Duty," and he did his work most conscientiously. The collie is ubiquitous.

We read that they were used in 1879, by Mr. J. B. Evans, of Reif Fontein, Cape Colony, a well-known breeder of Angora goats and ostriches, to drive ostriches with surprising success. He writes that "the sagacious animals took to the hitherto unexampled occupation with great readiness. They prove to be equally as useful with ostriches as with sheep or goats, and are perfect masters of their novel duties. They work with a good will, and are of immense service in driving ostriches from



'camp' to 'kraal' for plucking feathers, as occasion may require—usually once a fortnight or three weeks—and back again from the kraal to the camp on to the open ground. Two men on horseback and one dog will drive a troop of 100 to 150 full-grown birds with as much ease as six or eight men on horseback. Savage birds, when breeding, will attack any animal that interferes with them. Birds, however, known to charge a man when they are not breeding—and it is dangerous for him to approach their camp except on horseback, or on foot carrying a long forked or bush-headed stick for his protection—are tame and cowed in the presence of the collie. They succumb at once, and with drooping wings, cluster in a flock like sheep, and when travelling do not attempt to fight, and so get scattered about, as when driven by men alone. I may add that these collies exhibit singular cleverness in separating goat ewes from their kids when the former have to be driven out in the morning to the feeding-ground, leaving the kids behind. In a kraal containing from 800 to 1,000 goat ewes, with their kids, one man and a dog will perform the necessary work. A man standing at the gate prevents any kids going out, while the collie sees that not a single goat ewe escapes backward or remains behind, and they distinguish between a full-grown kid or a small goat ewe with unfailing accuracy—sometimes a difficult matter for a man to do momentarily at first glance."

On Plate 84 we show Ch. "Mountshannon Blue Splendour," the property of the Rev. T. Salter, of Mountshannon-over-Stowe, Som., one of the best of the blue merles of recent times, the winner of, amongst numerous other prizes, the 25-guinea Warwick Vase.

What wonderful days the collie breed has seen! "Ormskirk Emerald," by "Heather Rolf," sold to Mr. Megson for £1,300 and dogs valued £200. Ch. "Squire of Tytton" sold for £1,250 and his daughter "Princess of Tytton," who, like Ch. "Wishaw Leader," went to America. Ch. "Charlemagne," only defeated twice, died in 1891. In the meanwhile Mr. G. R. Krehl had claimed his son, Ch. "Eclipse," at Birmingham Show, "a puppy passed unnoticed," bred by Mr. Bissell. The local papers wrote: "The price a fool from London had paid," or words to that effect. Ch. "Eclipse" died in 1895. Famous dogs came and left their mark—the "Southports," the property of Mr. W. E. Mason, and many others. In the history of the breed are the names of Mr. Bissell, Mr. W. T. Boddington, Mr. W. W. Thomson, the Messrs. Charles, Rev. Hans F. Hamilton, Mr. A. H. Megson, Mr. W. P. Arkwright, Mr. Tom Stretch, Mr. W. E. Mason, Mr. Higson, Mr. W. Stephens, Mr. H. Ainscough, Mr. W. T. Horry, Mr. John Powers, Mr. Robert Tait, Mr. Hugh Miller, Mr. R. H. Lord, Mr. J. R. H. Jacques, Mr. H. E. Packwood, Mr. F. Barlow, Mr. J. C. Dalglish, Mr. W. Baskerville, Mrs. J. Sharrer, Mr. A. P. Dalzell, Mr. W. D. Gilchrist, and a few more. But the great days of collies waned. In 1906, 1,368 had been registered; but in 1913 they had fallen to 795. The tide turned, and in 1926 we find over 1,000. Of post-war kennels, that of Mr. W. W. Stansfield is the most successful. Also Mr. R. Tait, Mr. F. Robson, Mrs. Kinnersly Taylor, Rev. T. Salter, Mr. J. Roxburgh, Mr. F. W. Ball, Mr. R. Rudman, Miss D. Miller, Miss Irene Jones, and Mr. T. H. van Hattun. To-day's dog has improved in neck, shoulders, legs, and feet. The head is longer and more narrow. The excessive length of jaw encourages a pig-jaw formation. It would probably be agreed that the quantity and texture of coat has deteriorated. In smooth collies, Mr. A. Hastie, of Hardwick fame, started the breed on its show career.

Among the best were Ch. "Eastwood Eminent," Ch. "Irthlingborough Village Lass," Ch. "Babette of Moreton," "Ashford Bluebell." For show points see Appendix XXV.

#### THE SHETLAND SHEEP-DOG

"The original specimens could, by no stretch of imagination, have any claim to type. They were small mongrels kept by the crofters to drive away from their 'toon' any sheep, cattle, or ponies that might stray thereon when grass on the common pasture-land became scarce.

"With the influx of tourists, the crofters found a ready market for their little dogs, with the result that diminutive specimens of all shapes were freely bred and sold.

"No doubt settlers from the mainland brought over with them the 'Scotch collie,' which left its mark on the breed, particularly in the island of Fetlar, and these collie-like specimens became the most saleable."<sup>1</sup>

Fortunately, men like Messrs. C. F. Thompson, Clark, Loggie, and Hoggan took up the breed and set about its improvement, their aim being to get a really miniature collie, a small, graceful, workmanlike little dog, but no "toy."

The pioneers of the breed had never any doubt as to what they wanted. The Shetland sheep-dog was to be a typical collie in miniature, as set out in the standard of the Collie Club.

In 1908 the Shetland Sheep-dog Club was formed at Lerwick, to be followed by the Scottish Shetland Sheep-dog Club the following year; and in 1909 the Kennel Club agreed to recognise the breed, having as its standard that of the collie in miniature; the height at shoulder 12 inches, afterwards altered to 13½ inches as the ideal.

An attempt was made to register the breed as "Shetland collies," but unfortunately this was prevented by opposition from the Collie Club; justified because there was really a considerable difference in type in the breed then. It was finally decided to accept the name of "Shetland sheep-dog."

The breed became in favour in England, and Mrs. Ashton Cross and Mrs. Hunloke and one or two others began exhibiting. In 1909 Cruft's Show put on classes for the breed, and the influence of Mrs. Warren, Mrs. Ogilvie, Mrs. Huband, Miss Tyssen, and Miss Shave began to be felt.

In 1914 the English Club was formed, with Miss Shave as Secretary, ably backed by Mrs. Warren, Mrs. Ogilvie, Mrs. Huband, Miss Tyssen, Miss Thynne, Mr. Hully, and Mr. Bacon. By 1915 the first challenge certificate was offered in the breed, and was won by Mrs. Huband's little home-bred bitch "Frea," sired by "Lerwick Jarl." It is noteworthy that the first certificate was won by a bitch, and throughout the history of the breed the quality of the bitches has always stood in advance of that of the dogs.

The Great War hampered progress, and many of the original pioneers of the breed dropped out, and little real progress was made until Miss Humphries, working against much opposition with the collie cross, produced—though she did not actually breed, according to the letter of the law—"Specks of Mountfort," to

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Pierce.



which dog's influence much progress has been made in fixing type. Early in 1923 Mr. Pierce, a keen collie enthusiast, to whom I owe much information, took up the breed, and set up a model in the sensational Champion "Eltham Park Petite," who was generally accepted as a true collie in miniature; since which time, by careful selection and his special knowledge of the standard, he has produced the greatest winners of the day, and set the demand for miniature collies on a sound basis.

Shetland sheep-dogs are easily bred, and litters generally number three or four. Being active little dogs, it is advisable to remove the dew-claws from the front as well as any that may appear on the hind legs.

Latterly a new Club has sprung into being, designated the "British Shetland Sheep-dog Breeders' Association," which is very active and doing much to stimulate progress, having as its standard that of the *ideal* collie in miniature of about 13½ inches, the dogs being usually an inch taller than the bitches. The photograph portrayed is that of the nearest to the ideal yet attained, and a bitch that has never been defeated. She was bred by Mr. Pierce, of 55 Parkside, Eltham, S.E.9, and is the property of Miss Fredericka Fry. (See Plate 84.)

#### GERMAN SHEEP-DOGS—ALSATIANS

In the "Kennel Gazette" of some time ago we read that "very few sheep-dogs have been exhibited at the dog shows in Germany, and the specimens shown have been, as a rule, far removed from what we should consider first-class form in this country." He gives an illustration, by Mr. L. Beckmann, of the long-haired variety, "a portrait of considerable character," and "shows that there are at any rate some fair collies in some parts of Germany." Mr. Beckmann, in *Der Hund*, described three types of sheep-dogs.

"The rough-coated race with a hard coat practically free from 'gloss,' dry to the touch, somewhat after the character of the German setters. The head, ears, and feet are covered with a short smooth hair, which gets longer at the neck, and develops into a frill. The lower side of the tail becomes a stiff brush; the belly and the hinder part of the leg are feathered. The colour is mostly a deep black or iron-grey—either uniform or with whitish grey, or at times pale yellow marking. The colours alluded to above occur in the rough-coated dog also, though, as far as we know, but seldom. In Leipzig, Saxony, on the Lower Rhine, and about Westphalia these dogs were given the preference, and met with the numerous drovers which are being weekly exported into France and Belgium and commonly take their night's rest at Neuss. It was generally believed that these rough-coated dogs originally came from the Hanoverian country.

"The Long-haired Race. In consequence of their long, peculiar coat" these dogs presented a totally different appearance from the rough and smooth-haired kind, but in formation they differed but little from the former. The long and soft hair hung shaggily, and almost with a regular parting on both sides of the back, neck, and tail. At the muzzle the hair formed a slight moustache, and "prolongs towards the forehead to large overhanging skeins, slightly arched, and juts out high, especially in front of the ears, thus giving the head a most peculiar expression." The tail frequently had a bushy and often "very handsome flag." The legs were covered



with short fine hair to the knees and to the spring joint. "A very handsome animal of the long-haired kind has been awarded a premium at the Hanoverian Exhibition in 1882 (exhibitor, head huntsman Von Kniegge). The colour of this dog was a bright bluish grey, with yellowish white, and a few black stripes; legs, belly, and tail bright yellowish." This arrangement of the colouring seemed to predominate, more especially in dogs bred about Braunschweig.

"The short or smooth-haired race were of the same shape as the rough-coated dogs. The tail was mostly short, and either born so or cut short. The coat, close and thick, was composed of short, straight, and mostly very shiny, hair. It was, as a rule, longer in the neck, but did not form a collar. These dogs were either black or brownish red."

Megnin, in his work of 1883, shows two dogs (see Plate 85) which appear to me to be related to the Alsatian. Angelo Vecchio in his "*Il Cane*," an Italian work published in 1897, shows a dog named *Cane da pastore tedesco* of decided Alsatian character. (A translation of his text is on p. 294.) I also draw attention on Plate 85 to the Australian sheep-dogs believed to have *dingo blood* in their veins. There seems to me to be little doubt that the Alsatian type was obtained or developed at some distant time by wolf and/or dingo crosses. (See Appendix XXIV.)

Considering that this breed has not had a separate individuality for much more than a quarter of a century, its success is unparalleled. At most of the important shows the German dogs enjoy undisputed supremacy in numbers, and they are over-flowing into the homes of the people as companions and guards.

Central Europe is plentifully endowed with varieties of sheep-dogs, some smooth-coated, others rough, several of the former having erect ears. In their original condition they were but common-looking animals, lacking beauty of form or colour; but, like the rest of the herding dogs, they were noted for their intelligence and the quick way in which they learnt. It was in 1891 that a few people in Germany formed the inevitable club, the object being to cultivate the sheep-dogs of the Fatherland. The duration of that club's life was limited to a short three years, and it was not until 1899 that the Society for the Promotion of the Breeding of German Shepherd-dogs (*Verein für deutsche Schäferhunde*) appeared. The thirty pioneers then started upon a missionary enterprise, and from their original work has developed the most powerful dog society known. At the outbreak of war in 1914 the membership had reached close on 6,000 and by 1923 it had become more than 50,000. We can appreciate the development of the breed when we consider that the Stud Book issued in 1923 contained 48,000 names, bringing the total registered from the beginning to some 180,000. To meet the demand from Great Britain and America, the Germans went in for mass breeding, a profitable occupation when any and every dog would sell, but by 1926 a check was encountered, the numbers falling off considerably.

The ramifications of the German Shepherd-dog Club are remarkable. Regulations have been framed dealing with the qualifications for judges; the country has been parcelled out into districts under the supervision of experienced men known as breeding guardians; and in many other ways supervision is exercised that could only be possible in a nation already thoroughly drilled into habits of discipline. The enormous membership of the "*Verein*" gives the command of considerable funds, enabling it to be extremely helpful. Literature is extensive and valuable, especially



1. "CHIEN DE BRIE." From *Megnin*, 1883. 2. THE COLLIE "WOODMANSTERNE CONRAD." The property of the Rev. Hans F. Hamilton, 1895. 3. BELIEVED JACKAL-AND-DOG CROSS, BUT A WOLF-DOG CROSS. From "*The Kennel Gazette*" of June 1897. 4. LE CHIEN DES DOUARS. From *Megnin*, 1883. 5. GERMAN LONG- AND SHORT-HAIRED SHEEP-DOGS. From "*The Kennel Gazette*" (1884). 6. BELIEVED TO BE A DOG-FOX CROSS. The property of the late Mr. Shirley, President of the Kennel Club. From "*The Kennel Gazette*," April 1897. 7. AUSTRALIAN SHEEP-DOGS. BARBS AND KELPIES; SHOWING ALSATIAN CHARACTER. From "*The Field*," January 26, 1901.





ALSATIAN WOLF-DOGS. (Above) CH. "BILBO OF SCRIVENTON." (Below) left, "HARRAS OF SCRIVENTON," AT SEVEN MONTHS (Nephew of "Bilbo"); right, HEAD OF CH. "BILBO OF SCRIVENTON." *The property of Mrs. Taylor Marsh.*

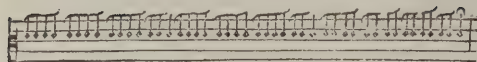




THE ROUGH WATER-DOG. By Reinagle. From "*The Sportsman's Cabinet*," Taplin (1803).

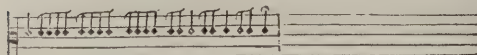
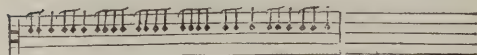
### The measures of blowing.

The pipe of an Hart Royall. With three winds.  
This to be blown thrice with three severall winds.

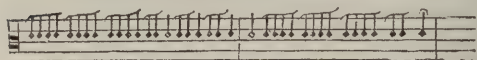


And the Reche upon it.

A stroke of myne, to draw home the company. With two winds.

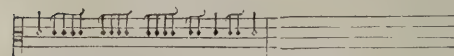


To blowe for the Tappers at an earth. With four winds.



The measures of blowing, set downe in the notes for the more  
eafe and ready helpe of such as are desirous to learne the same: and  
they are set downe according to the order which is observed at these  
dayes in this Realme of Great Brittain, as followeth.

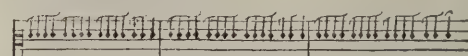
The Call for the Companie in the morning.  
All to be blown with one wind.



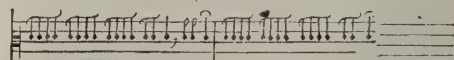
The stroke to the field. To be blown with two winds.



The uncoupling of the Couert side. To be blown with three winds.



The Sake. With two winds.



R

W



**H**ow necessary a thing a Spaniell is to Falconrie, & for  
those that vse that pastime, keeping halows for their plea-

(Above) MEASURES OF BLOWING, "set downe according to the order which  
is observed at these dayes in this Realme of Great Britain, 1611." (Below)  
SPANIELS, from the same work. [288d]



the Stud Book, which comprises many volumes, and must be regarded as indispensable. Complicated problems are involved in breeding to a fixed type, the existence of so many different strains and families within the breed making it extremely difficult.

The breed (until the War aroused racial antagonisms) was generally known on the Continent and elsewhere as the German shepherd-dog. The Americans, more logical perhaps than we are in this respect, retain that name. Somewhere about 1916, actuated possibly by the natural antipathy to anything Teutonic, British and French authorities considered that there was sufficient evidence to identify the original dog with Alsace, and one French writer made the momentous discovery that the credit after all belonged to Scotland! He suggested that about A.D. 1140 Scottish monks, who founded a monastery in the Valley of Munster, took with them sheep-dogs, which they later crossed with the native races of a lupine type. Whether this was so or not, the matter was not very important, for the Scottish blood would soon become entirely submerged by the constant use of local blood.

But this and other claims cannot be substantiated, and there is little doubt that the Alsatian, as we call him, sprang from the union of several varieties of German sheep-dogs, principally a combination of the north and south. The smooth-coated were mainly used for herding, and the rough, of a stronger frame, for guarding the flocks. When, towards the close of the last century, the Germans, stimulated by the ubiquity of the collie, desired to establish what may be called a national breed, they thought more of making a show dog than improving the workers, and it struck them that the wolfish type, with erect ears and wolf-grey colour, would be likely to meet with the most favour. The Thuringian sheep-dog seemed to be the most promising for this object. In Würtemberg was another breed, stronger and better in body, but often without the prick ears, and the union of the two offered possibilities that could not be overlooked. At that time Hanau and Frankfort had already two kennels devoted to the raising of sheep-dogs, one owned by Herr Wachsmuth in the former place, and the other the property of Herr Sparwasser, who got his first pair from the Hanau strain. The Hanau stock coming into great demand, it was necessary for Herr Wachsmuth to draw extensively upon Thuringia, and to a lesser extent upon Würtemberg.

Altogether, it is believed that two or three families, interbred, contributed to the making of the modern shepherd-dog, among which, probably, the most potent influence came from a dog "Hektor Linksrhein," bred in 1895 by Herr Sparwasser, and bought by Herr Eiselen. This dog appears in the Stud Book as "Horand von Graf-rath I," and, with his litter-brother, "Luchs (Sparwasser) 155," figures in many of the leading pedigrees. For instance, "Horand" sired "Hektor von Schwaben 13," champion 1900-1, and thus became grandsire of "Heinz von Starkenburg," and great-grandsire of "Roland von Starkenburg," champion 1906-7. "Horand" was a dog of unusual vitality and masculinity, and from him most of the successful winners and good performers at field-trials are descended. The most important channel for the transmission of this blood is through "Beowulf 10," son of "Hektor von Schwaben" and "Thekla I von der Krone," half-sister of "Hektor." As if this inbreeding was not close enough, "Beowulf" was mated another time to "Nelli-Eislingen II," a daughter of "Horand," from which alliance came "Vefi von der



Burghalde 339," champion in 1905, and "Hella von Memmingen 329," champion in 1902-3, whilst another celebrity for which the great "Beowulf" was responsible was the famous bitch "Gretel Uckermarck 849," champion in 1906. This bitch, mated to "Roland von Starkenburg," threw what is considered to be the best litter ever sired by that famous black champion, whose influence upon the breed has been immense. Two of the litter were "Hettel Uckermarck" and "Hudan Uckermarck," from the former of which came some of the Reidekenburg dogs that figure so much in pedigrees. For several years after the War the principal winners in Germany contained a mixture of von Starkenburg and Uckermarck blood.

In order to illustrate the enormous amount of inbreeding practised to fix type, especially through "Horand von Grafrath," the pedigrees must be set out in detail. It has already been shown that "Beowulf's" father was closely related to his mother, but that is nothing to what follows in the genealogy of "Roland von Starkenburg." His sire was "Heinz von Starkenburg," by "Hektor von Schwaben" (sire of "Beowulf") ex "Lucie von Starkenburg." His dam was "Bella von Starkenburg," by "Beowulf" ex "Lucie von Starkenburg."

Another dog that contributed materially to the fortunes of the breed was "Dewet Barbarossa," who brought in von der Krone blood, but even he was not entirely free from "Horand von Grafrath," whose brother "Luchs" also crops up in the same pedigree. The "Kriminalpolizei" family, known to all modern breeders, is much indebted to the "Starkenburg" and "Dewet Barbarossa" blood. Such constant inbreeding is fraught with serious dangers. Two facts have probably preserved the breed from disaster—the resort to genuine working stock frequently, and the almost universal distribution of the dogs. The view that the dangers of consanguinity are reduced if the animals related are reared in localities far removed is held to be correct.

Another remarkable dog was "Horst von Boll," a dog too big to meet with success at shows, but so full of vigour that with the inbred "Kriminalpolizei" family he produced "Nores v. d. Kriminalpolizei," who went to America. We read that of the twenty championships offered in Germany between 1900 and 1909, fourteen were divided between "Hector von Schwaben," "Beowulf," "Roland von Starkenburg," or their progeny, after which the "von Bolls" and the "Kriminalpolizei" made the running.

As we have already suggested, the Alsations of five-and-twenty years ago were an uneven lot of sheep-dogs, often stockily built and without any particular air of that quality which comes from careful selection.

In the British Islands the earliest trace of the breed that I have discovered is the Kennel Club Show of 1909, which contained the first class for German sheep-dogs, in which four entries were made. Lady Bateman entered one, and Mrs. Edward Clayton (Walwick, Humshaugh, Northumberland), who apparently had imported a pair, "Gim von der Tiefenau" and "Lotti," exhibited a son of theirs. I cannot find that either of these ladies continued to breed Alsations, and the next milestone that stands out bears the date of 1913, when, at the Kennel Club Show, Mrs. McMillan entered three, which, it was stated, came from France, a matter then of considerable interest, as it was believed that the French dogs were superior to those of Germany.

Mr. H. Robbins and Mr. Percy Whitaker had then come into the breed, and their advent is important, because these two gentlemen, later noted for the Mattesdon and

Southwold, made the first serious attempt to establish kennels. Mr. Robbins's beginning was somewhat strange. In the auction class at Cruft's Show, a dog owned by Mr. Goujon was offered. Mr. Robbins made a bid of £1, and, doubtless to his surprise, there was no further bidding and the dog was knocked down to him! Soon afterwards he bought "Wolf of Badenoch" from the Duchess of Teck. Business in Alsations was showing a certain activity; in Ireland Lady Helen Conyngham, (now Lady Helen McCalmont) and Lady Lambart started a joint kennel, and later Mrs. Leslie Thornton, who exhibited a dog at Cruft's in 1916 that she had bought from Mr. Robbins, took up breeding definitely. This was in 1919.

Looking back, we see quite clearly that the War gave the impulse that the breed required. At the first occasional dogs were seen engaged in military or Red Cross duties and caused considerable interest. Officers and men also had the desire to bring back with them dogs from the land in which they were fighting, and many of them made purchases in France. In kennel circles it became natural to talk about the Alsations, and it is therefore not surprising that within a few months of the declaration of peace, importations set in steadily, until so many Alsations had collected in this country that entries far exceeded those of any other breeds at the leading shows.

Amongst others Colonel J. T. C. Moore-Brabazon, M.C., M.P., threw himself into the task of bringing the variety to the head of canine affairs with unbounded zest. It was this gentleman who did much to bring the Alsatian Wolf-dog Club into being, of which he was the first Hon. Secretary. In August of 1919 the Club was recognised by the Kennel Club, and the name "Alsatian wolf-dog" was accepted officially, and dogs that had been previously registered as foreign sheep-dogs were transferred accordingly. Matters began to move rapidly. The Club held its first show in connection with that of the Kennel Club at the Crystal Palace in 1920, and the following year it was able to run one of its own at the Royal Horticultural Hall, Westminster.

In 1924 certain prominent breeders, considering that there was scope for another organisation based on decentralisation, established the Alsatian League, with nine districts, each of which had its branch committee and hon. secretary, working under the directions of the General Council in London. A limited liability company was formed, the capital for which was subscribed by the original founders—Mr. F. N. Pickett, Major J. A. Cecil Wright, Major Forsyth-Major, Mr. Rex Walker, Mr. H. Robbins, and Mr. R. Barnes. Arrangements were made for the districts to hold members' shows at least once a year, and for two principal shows to be organised by the League, one in summer in the provinces, and the other in London in the winter. The membership of this first reached a total of 400 in a few weeks, and continued to grow, so that by the spring of 1925 informal negotiations were opened which ended in the amalgamation of the two bodies under the style of the Alsatian League and Club, with a total membership of over 1,000.

The Alsatian has a general physical character unlike any other dog: the erect ears, the general look of alertness, the lithe, strong body, the easy loping gait or trot. But probably their popularity is greatly due to their remarkable sagacity and the capacity to learn. There was room in the mansion and cottage for a really reliable guard, free from that "hail-fellow-well-met" tendency of most if not all



British breeds. Here was a dog that really would attack and mean it when it did, to protect its owner, and yet, with this ferocity, loyal and good-natured to his own master or mistress and the family and friends. A canine protector which no man would face happily, and yet not too large and thus expensive to keep.

So much importance is attached to retaining such characteristics, that nervous animals are destroyed by conscientious owners rather than allow such faults to be transmitted. To eliminate timidity is the set purpose of both judges and the best breeders; and the timid dog is finding it more and more difficult to win a prize, no matter how perfect in other respects. Judging in Alsations means being subjected to an ordeal such as no other breeds experience. They are tested for movement and stamina in a manner that is meticulous.

In the show ring, the first British-bred champion was, I believe, Ch. "Allahson of If," bred by Major O. E. Forsyth-Major, and sold by him to Mr. W. Proctor Smith. This dog was mated to Major J. Y. Baldwin's "Cilla of Picardy," a bitch of exceptional value, the results being Ch. "Cillahson of Picardy" and various other noted prize winners. The outstanding dog of his time, however, was undoubtedly Mr. F. N. Pickett's Ch. "Caro of Welham," sired by "Curt of Welham," and bred in 1920 by M. Tobias Ott. We are told that an offer of 2,000 gns. for him was refused.

The Alsatian has been recognised as suitable for both army and police work. Trials are held both on the Continent and here. The first working trial was held at the Crystal Palace on January 30, 1924, the promoting body being the Alsatian Sheep, Police, and Army Dog Society. Mr. Pickett's "Hexe von Romerpark of Welham" put up the most finished performance, but much of the work was amateurish, as might be expected in a first trial of this kind.

At the Alsatian Wolf-dog Club trials at Sandown Park on February 6, 1924, considerable improvement was evident, the winner in the principal class being Mrs. Rex Walker's "Alheid von Tollensetal." "Hexe" was unfortunately an absentee, and therefore his work and that of the winner could not be compared. From this date onwards, trials became a set part of the year's programme, and, alike in the management and the work of the competitors, distinct advances have to be recorded.

The trials are divided into three sections, the easiest one consisting of tests in general obedience. A competitor has to sit down, lie down, walk to heel on loose lead and without lead, stay in one place for a certain time, return smartly on being called, and dropping on the way when directed. The competitor must also retrieve to hand a 2 lb. dumb-bell, and over a 4-foot jump retrieve an 8-10 oz. dumb-bell.

The second section comprises similar tests, of increased severity. A competitor has now to remain in one place for fifteen minutes while the handler is out of sight, and must not move or rise until ordered to do so. The jump is raised to 6 feet for dogs, and 5 feet for bitches. Fresh tests of a more advanced character are now introduced. The handler walking with the dog allows an object to drop unnoticed; the competitor is later sent to retrieve it over a distance of about 100 yards. An object dropped in sight of the dog has to be picked up by the competitor without command. A long-jump is part of the programme. There is a scent-discrimination test, in which, among a number of articles placed on the ground, one belonging to the handler is placed, and this article has to be picked out and returned to the handler.



A further test for scent-discrimination is that the competitor, having been given something to smell, the property of a stranger, must identify the owner.

The guarding test is sometimes not only interesting but exciting. The competitor is chained, and an article is placed in his charge, and it is his duty to prevent the judges interfering with that article. Afterwards he is expected to refuse food offered by strangers. To illustrate tracking abilities, the competitors are told to follow the lines both of strangers and of their own handlers, over varying distances. In the easiest test, the dogs are put on immediately the runner has finished the distance, but in the more difficult test an interval of half an hour is allowed to elapse before the dog is freed. So far, this has been the weakest feature of these trials, and few of the dogs would be able to find a criminal by the use of their noses, and show no indication of approaching the trained bloodhounds in this particular work.

The third section, for police dogs, which may well be described as the Honours course, needs a far higher degree of attainments. For this competition perfection can only be expected after a long course of careful training, and even then the dog must have an aptitude beyond the common to succeed in it. He has to find the criminal, and must be bold enough to stand up against gunfire or a stick, and he must know that he is not permitted to bite unless the man attempts to make his escape or attempts to assault the policeman who has him under arrest. Perhaps it is needless to state that for the purpose of these exercises the supposed criminal is allowed to wear a thick padded suit. He is discovered in hiding, the dog apprising his handler by barking. The criminal, while under arrest, then endeavours to get free, the unfortunate policeman is likely to be injured, and the dog, if it knows the work, will at once go to the help of the constable. The criminal is then allowed to escape, and after he has placed some distance between himself and the law, the dog is sent in pursuit. Before the dog reaches the criminal, he is checked by his handler, and should, if under perfect control, not in any way savage the fugitive. On the Continent the curriculum frequently includes retrieving from a fire, rescuing from drowning, climbing ladders to enter an upstairs room.

The Alsatian and its education open a vista of considerable interest and magnitude. How far this education, so carefully chosen and so well acquired, can be transmitted to the progeny, only time can show. Judging from the training of sporting dogs, the setter, pointer, retriever, education can and does become inherent. Gradually as the knowledge of police work and rescue work increases, so will the education become more and more developed, and it is quite possible that in the future of the Alsatian and its work we may perhaps gradually bridge the gulf between ourselves and the lower animal, and make the partnership and friendship more real than even it is now.

Our illustrations are of Mrs. Taylor Marsh's dogs, Champion "Bilbo of Scriventon" and "Harras of Scriventon," nephew of "Bilbo." (See Plate 86.)

The points of the breed, according to the latest rulings, are :

Head proportionate to size of body, long, clean-cut, lean, broad at back, tapering to nose ; no stop ; top of nose parallel to forehead ; skull slightly domed. Head viewed from top, long V-shaped. Lips tight-fitting, clean. Nose black. Teeth level. Eye almond-shaped, dark, placed to look straight forward. Ears placed high, moderate size, broad at base, tips pointed, carried erect (puppies' ears hang

until six months old or longer). Neck fair length, strong, joining head without sharp angles, no dewlap or throatiness. Shoulders sloping well back, muscular but not coarse. Fore legs straight (viewed any way). Hind quarters and loins broad and strong, rump long, sloping; stifles well turned; hocks strong, well let down. Body broad, straight, rather long, well developed. Belly tucked up (fairly), a distinct waist. Chest not too broad, good depth. Sides flat, but not too flat-sided (length from point where chest joins neck, to buttocks, in straight line, slightly greater than height).<sup>1</sup> Tail bushy with thick hair, never carried above back or straight up. Feet round, short. Toes strong, slightly arched, held close together. Pads hard, nails short, strong, colour dark. Coat smooth, double; under woolly; outer straight, tight, flat. Coat under body to behind the leg longer, forming near thigh a mild form of breeching. On head, inside ears, on front of legs, hair short; longer and thicker (in winter approaching a ruff) along neck.

Height, dog 22 to 26 inches, bitch 21 to 25 inches. Ideal dogs 24 inches, bitches 22 inches.

#### THE GERMAN SHEEP-DOG (1897) from Angelo Vecchio's "Il Cane."<sup>2</sup>

The German sheep-dog, or more correctly the sheep-dog of Germany, can be easily recognised, writes Professor Reul, by its large and elegant build, sharp upright ears, prominent muzzle, tail always drooping. He is a dog of deep affections and always attentive to everything that is going on around him.

There are varieties with short, stiff hair and others with long hair. In northern Germany, for instance, one always finds the long-haired type, while in the south they usually breed those with short hair. Colour black, iron grey, a uniform red, etc.

These dogs vary in height between 50 and 60 centimetres at the shoulders. The head is of medium size, rather light in weight and gradually ending in a sharp pronounced point. The forehead rises obliquely, getting broader at the top; the eye-sockets are not prominent.

The ears are of medium size, upright, always broad at the base; they terminate in a point and have hair inside.

The eyes are of medium size—rather small and oblique, clear in colour, rather prominent, and very vivacious.

The neck is rather short and thick and richly covered with hair; the shapely head and neck remind one of a large fox.

The body is fairly large, elegant and well-proportioned, the chest deep, etc.

<sup>1</sup> 10 to 8½ (about).

<sup>2</sup> Translated from the Italian by Constance Ash.

## SECTION VI

### THE WATER-DOG AND SPANIEL GROUPS

#### CHAPTER I

#### POODLES

##### THE PRESENT-DAY VARIETIES

**T**HE *Miniature*: To stand less than 15 inches at the shoulder and to weigh 4 or 5 lb., otherwise the same as below.

The Club description when condensed reads: The dog to appear active, intelligent, well-built, and proud. The head at back to show a slight peak; the skull to be long, straight, and fine, fuller-looking in the corded, and appearing to be more peaked than in the curly variety. Muzzle long (not snipy) and strong, and the cheek flat. Gums and lips black. Eyes almond-shaped, dark and bright. Nose sharp, and the lips and toe-nails dark liver. Ears long, wide, set low, and hanging close to the face. Neck well proportioned and strong. Head carried high. Shoulders strong, muscular, sloping well to back. Chest deep and moderately wide. Back short, but strong, and slightly hollowed. Loins broad and muscular: ribs well sprung and braced up. Feet rather small, oval-shaped, with arched toes. Pads thick and hard. The legs: fore legs straight from shoulder, with plenty of bone and muscle; hind legs muscular, well bent, with hocks well let down. Coat profuse and hard in texture; and if corded, hanging in tight, even cords. If curly, the coat to be thick and strong, without knots or cords. Colours black, white, brown, and blue. Weight up to 70 lb.; height up to 15 inches.

Fate or man plays strange pranks, and few stranger have been played than with this dog, the poodle. From early times we are able to follow the history of the variety without much difficulty. For many years it was an important sporting member of the canine tribe. Dr. Caius described it as the "water-spaniel or finder." Gesner, Aldrovandus, Cirino, Topsell, give illustrations of the dog, with the hind quarters clipped, and a tuft of hair on the very end of its tail. Later we have sporting prints, showing sportsmen shooting partridges, pheasants, hares, and ducks, with a clipped poodle "all anxious" to retrieve the slain.

Described in nearly every work dealing with dogs, it was noted for its retrieving capabilities, its swimming powers, and remarkable nose. At first the colours were varied and were much mixed, but gradually prejudice and fashion eliminated some and developed others, so that some disappeared completely and others became fixed and bred true.

In "The Arte of Fowling by Water and Land" (1621), "printed by A. Math for Anne Helme and Thomas Langley to be sold at their shops in Saint Dunstons Church Yard and over against the Sarazens head without Newgate," a chapter (No. IX) deals with "The use of the Water Dogge, and the manner of trayning them," in which Gervase Markham tells us that:

"The water Dogge is a creature of such generall use, and so frequent in use amongst us heere in England, that it is needelesse to make any large description of him: the rather since not any amongst us is so simple that he cannot say when hee



seeth him. This is a Water-Dogge, or a Dogge bred for the Water : yet because in this (as in other creatures) there are other characters and Formes which pretend more excellencie, and figure a greater height of vertue than others doe : I will here describe as neere as I can the best proportion of a perfect Water Dogge.

“ First, for the colour of the best Water Dogge, all be it some which are curious in all things will ascribe more excellency to one colour than to another as the Blacks to be the best and hardest ; the lyverhued swiftest in swimming, and the Pyed or Spotted Dogge, quickest of sent ; yet in truth it is nothing so, for all colours are alike, and so a Dogge of any of the former colours, may be excellent good Dogges, and of any may bee most notable cures, according to their first ordering and trayning ; for Instruction is the liquor where-with they are seasoned, and if they bee well handled at the first, they will ever smell of that discretion, and if they bee ill handled they will ever stink of that folly : for nature is a true mistresse and bestowes her gifts freely, and it is onely nature which abuseth them.

“ To proceede then, your Dogge may be of any colour and yet excellent, and his hairs in generall would be long and curled, not loose and shagged ; for the first shewes hardnesse and ability to endure the water, the other much tendernesse, making his sport grievous ; his head would be round and curled, his ears broad and hanging, his Eye full, lively and quicke, his nose very short ; his lippe, Hound-like, side and rough bearded, his Chappes with a full set of strong Teeth, and the general features of his whole countenance being united together would be as Lyon-like as might be, for that shewes fiercenesse and goodness : His Necke would bee thicke and short, his Brest like the brest of a Shippe, sharpe and compact, his Shoulders broad, his fore Legs straight, his Chine square, his Buttokes rounde, his ribbes compassed, his belly gaunt, his Thyres brawny, his Cambrels crooked, his Pasterns strong and dewe clawde, and his foure feete spacious, full and round, and closed together to the cley, like a water Ducke, for they being his oares to rowe him in the water, having that shape, will carry his body away faster. And thus you have the true description of a perfect Water Dogge, as you may see following.”

“ Now,” writes this gentleman, “ for the cutting or shaving him from the Navill downward, or backward, it is two wayes well to be allowed of that is, for summer hunting or for the water ; because these Water Dogges naturally are ever most laden with haire on the hinder parts, nature as it were labouring to defend that part most, which is continually to bee employed in the most extremity, and because the hinder parts are ever deeper in the water than the fore parts, therefore nature hath given them the greatest armour of haire to defend the wette and coldnesse ; yet this defence in the Sommer time by the violence of the heate of the Sunne, and the greatnesse of the Dogges labour is very noysome and troublesome, and not onely maketh him sooner to faint and give over his sport, but also makes him by his overheating, more subject to take the Maungie.

“ And so likewise in matter of water, it is a very heavy burthen to the Dogge and makes him to swimme lesse nimbly and slower, besides the former offences before receited ; But for the cutting or shaving of a Dogge all quite over, even from the Foote to the Nostrill that I utterly dislike, for it not only takes from him the generall benefits which Nature hath lent him, but also brings such a tendernesse and

chilnesse over all his body, that the water in the end will grow yrksome unto him; for howsoever men may argue that keeping any creature cold, will make it the better indure colde, yet we finde by true experience both in these and divers other such like things, that when Nature is thus continually kept at her uttermost ability of indurance, when any little drope more is added to that extreimity, presently she faints and grows distempered, whereas keepe Nature in her full strength and she will very hardly be conquered, and hence it doth come that you shall see an ordinary land Spaniell being lustily and well kept, will tyre 20 of these over shaven Curses in the could water."

I add here a portion of Markham's most interesting notes on training :

"Traine him to fecth whatsoever you shall throw from you, as Staves or Cudgels, Bagges, Nettes, Instruments of all kindes, and indeed anything whatsoever that is portable : then you shall use him to fetch round cogell stones, and flints, which are troublesome in a Dogges mouth, and lastly Iron, Steele, Money, and all kinds of metall, which being colde in his teeth, slippery and ill to take up, a Dogge will bee loth to fetch, but you must not desist or let him taste food till he will as familiarly bring and carry them as anything else whatsoever."

He gives us an illustration of such a dog retrieving, carrying a water-fowl, with the head of the bird in his mouth, and describes the dog to be "the Perfect Water Dogge," a somewhat amusing description in view of modern ideas as to retrieving. In 1780 Riedel gives a picture of a "Pudel" (Plate 50).

The Rev. William Hamilton, on his visit to Antrim, in a letter dated August 3, 1784, describes a water-dog he saw assisting the fishermen :

"In riding from Portrush to the Giant's Causeway with some company, we had occasion to ford the river Bush, near the sea ; and as the fishermen were going to haul their net, we stopped to see their success : As soon as the dog perceived the men to move, he instantly ran down the river of his own accord, and took post in the middle of it, on some shallows where he could occasionally run or swim, and in this position he placed himself, with all the eagerness and attention so strongly observable in a pointer dog, who *sets* his game :—We were for some time at a loss to apprehend his scheme, but the event satisfied us, and amply justified the prudence of the animal ; for the fish, when they feel the net, always endeavour to make directly out to sea. Accordingly one of the salmon, escaping from the net, rushed down the stream with great velocity, toward the ford, where the dog stood to receive him at an advantage. A very diverting chase now commenced, in which, from the shallowness of the water, we could discern the whole track of the fish, with all its rapid turnings and windings. After a smart pursuit the dog found himself left considerably behind, in consequence of the water deepening, by which he had been reduced to the necessity of swimming. But instead of following this desperate game any longer, he really gave it over, and ran with all his speed directly down the river, till he was sure of being again sea-ward of the salmon, where he took post as before in his pointer's attitude. Here the fish a second time met him, and a fresh pursuit ensued, in which, after various attempts the salmon at last made its way out to the sea, notwithstanding all the ingenious and vigorous exertions of its pursuer.

"Though the dog did not succeed at this time, yet I was informed that it was no unusual thing for him to run down his game ; and the fishermen assured me that



he was of very great advantage to them, by turning the salmon toward the net; in which point of view his efforts in some measure corresponded with the cannonade of stones which I mentioned at Carrick-a-rede.

"During the whole of the chase this sagacious animal seemed plainly to have two objects in view; one to seize his game, if possible, and the other, to drive it towards the net when the former failed; each of which he managed with a degree of address and ingenuity extremely interesting and amazing.

"It is somewhat unaccountable that mankind should look with so much horror and disgust on any remote similitude, which some of the brute creation bear to the human person and features, and yet dwell with pleasure on much nearer approaches toward their prerogative faculty of reason. At least thus much I am certain of, that we saw the exertions of this creature with infinite delight, and our regard for him seemed to increase in proportion as our idea of his excellence increased. Perhaps it may be, that a consciousness of decided superiority in the latter case, makes us observe the ingenuity of lower animals, without the allay of any uneasiness from an apprehension of rivalry."

Bewick gives an illustration of the rough water-dog, and states that it has "great attachment to the water," so that it can be placed "at the head of those that frequent that element." According to this authority,<sup>1</sup> it was web-footed, swam with great ease, and was used for hunting ducks and other aquatic birds. "It is frequently kept on board of vessels for the purpose of taking up birds that are shot and drop into the sea, and from its aptness to fetch and carry it is useful in recovering anything that has fallen overboard. There is a variety of this kind much smaller. They are both remarkable for their long and shaggy coat, which frequently incommodes them by growing over their eyes." With this note is an illustration of a rather nondescript shaggy and semi-curly coated dog. Taplin (1803), however, in his work shows a very much smarter creature, closely related in appearance at least to the bearded collie, old English sheep-dog, and the otter-hound.

He writes that this illustration is "an exact representation" from life. He understands that the variety was more or less a local one, and was more often to be found near the coast. He considers that it is derived from "the Greenland-dog, blended with some particular race of our own," but he does not mention what race. He tells us that though opinion varied, the black was believed to be the best and hardiest and thus least susceptible to fatigue, hunger, and danger; the spotted or pied best on scent, and for intelligence; the liver-coloured the most alert and the best swimmers; but he believed that "good dogs of this breed are to be obtained in every colour," provided that the blood had not been contaminated "by an accidental cross with those of an opposite description."

He tells us that the "jet-black with white feet" stand high in estimation. He describes the rough water-dog to have a head "rather round," the nose short, the ears long, broad, and pendulous, the neck thick and short, the shoulders broad. Coat, "natural elastic short curls,"<sup>2</sup> rather loose, which might be either long or shaggy, the long coats being considered to indicate strength of constitution, the shaggy coats bodily weakness!

He describes the training and states that he has been repeatedly present "where

<sup>1</sup> See Plate 87.

<sup>2</sup> Compare description of poodle, p. 295.



a dog of this description has frequently brought different kinds of coin (previously spit upon by the master) from dark rooms and staircases!

In this same chapter is a description of the shooting of fowl, in which the rough water-dog played an important part with the 5- and 6-foot barrel guns then in vogue, a proceeding so different from that of to-day that I give a few extracts. "Huts are so curiously constructed," he writes, "with sods intermixed with loam . . . to form when finished a seeming part of the rock itself. To each hut is a door, a shelf within for the convenience of depositing provisions, and ammunition as well as three circular openings of 4 inches diameter (to the right, the left, and in the centre) for the discovery of the fowl on this approach, and the subsequent discharge of the gun when they fortunately happen to veer within shot."

Forty years later Colonel H. Smith<sup>1</sup> mentions the water-dog as having rather a large head with long ears and rather short legs, standing 18 to 20 inches at the shoulder, and is of the opinion that the dogs is a poodle,<sup>2</sup> originally brought from Germany. "The coarser crisped-haired water-dog," he writes, "was indeed long known to the middle classes of England and to fisherman on the north-eastern coast and professional wildfowlers." These dogs, Colonel Smith writes, were occasionally brought to London in order to engage in the sport of hunting and worrying to death domestic ducks placed in the ponds for that purpose.

Bingley writes that the water-dog is believed to have been brought to this country from Spain. "The hair of one of these dogs was so soft and fine in its texture that the owner cut it off, twice in the year, and each fleece was found sufficient to the manufacture into two hats, generally considered to be worth about 12s. each."

Thomas Bell deals with the rough water-dog more fully. From his pages we learn that it was a variety remarkable for its power of scenting with an "exquisite sense of smell," and that it was still greatly used by gunners earning their livelihood by shooting wildfowl. He states that this breed must not be confused with the water-spaniel, for the former is more robust, and the muzzle is shorter, standing out "abruptly from the face." He alludes to the water-dog's power of finding coins (probably taken from Taplin's work), and he gives a story of one of these dogs, the property of a friend of his, travelling on the Continent, who on losing a louis d'or, searched for it diligently, but to no purpose. Returning home late that evening, "his servant let him in with a face of much sorrow": the dog was ill, it had eaten nothing all day, but would not allow the servant to remove her food. No sooner had her master entered than the mysterious malady was cured. The louis d'or was in her mouth, where she had held it all day, and now, having delivered it to her master, devoured her food at a great speed.<sup>3</sup>

That is all that Thomas Bell tells us, but it substantiates previous opinions. The illustration appearing in his pages of a dog of this kind is very similar to Taplin's picture and is probably based on it.

What we have read suggests the reason for the coat development. Possibly the consequence of generations of facing cold water further stimulated abundant coats. Owing to the fact that so heavy a coat impeded the progress of the animal when swimming, and caused considerable difficulty after leaving the water, it was partly

<sup>1</sup> 1843.

<sup>2</sup> The first use of the word "poodle."

<sup>3</sup> The same story is given by Martin to be that of a spaniel.

shorn away. This is the possible explanation of the custom of shaving and clipping. It is interesting that in Bewick and Taplin's time the coat is present, as Nature ordained, allowing us to surmise that the coat, though abundant and frequently cut, had not then reached the limit, which better feeding caused later, producing the lengthy coat seen on the show-bench. Shearing the dog (the coat often matted) proved an unpleasant and often risky proceeding. It probably brought to an end the use of the dog for sporting purposes.

*Stonehenge*, in 1859, does not mention the rough water-dog except at the end of the chapter on spaniels, where he writes that "the poodle was probably originally a water-spaniel, but he is now used solely as a toy dog, in this country at all events." He gives Youatt's picture of a poodle, and in the paragraph on the poodle tells us that for many years it had been known in France and Germany, particularly in the former country, and was occasionally used for sporting purposes there; he remarks on its exceeding intelligence, power of learning tricks, and good nose. In 1859 the poodle coat had probably not yet reached the abnormal development usual in the twentieth century, for *Stonehenge* makes no comment on the extreme length of coat, merely remarking that the dog was usually partly shaved, and drawing attention to Youatt's illustration as that of a dog "with the whole of his coat on." We read indeed later that the coat was of excellent use, making the dog proof against frost and wet.

In 1861 Meyrick<sup>1</sup> continues in the same vein, writing that in France the poodle accompanies the "bourgeois sportsman," pottering about the hedges in front of his master; and that it is the commonest dog there, except for "the cur." He had purchased a poodle from a poor student in a café in the Boulevards, one of remarkable intelligence, but the dog came to an untimely end, after swallowing a large pin-cushion, the bran, and probably several pins. He describes the poodle at that time as standing 15 to 18 inches high, the hair very thick, and falling in long, sharply twisted curls or ringlets, while the colour is either pure white or pure black, but that usually they were a mixture of the two colours.

Later *Idstone* in his book states that the poodle had the weeping eye of the King Charles spaniel, and that the eyes were small. He gives us no further information except that circus dogs or street performers were more often than not poodles, taught to leap through hoops, turn wheels, throw somersaults, walk round, and jump over obstacles on their hind legs, also that poodles<sup>2</sup> pure or crossed were used in Hampshire and Wiltshire as truffle-hunters during the winter months. For this purpose white dogs were preferred, as much of the truffle-digging<sup>3</sup> was done at night; but the colour of the dog was not of so much import, as dark dogs were clothed at night in white coats. The dog, after digging up the truffle, carried it to its master, and was suitably rewarded. But *Idstone* tells us that poodles were usually white, and that black were rare, and in consequence in great demand.

We obtain further information on the truffle-dog in *Stonehenge's* book in 1867.

<sup>1</sup> Meyrick's advice on washing a dog is as follows: "A dog who is well brushed regularly seldom requires washing, and is never infected with vermin; but if the dog is to be washed, let it be done with yolks of eggs and not with soap."

<sup>2</sup> Said to have been introduced by a Spaniard about the year 1600.

<sup>3</sup> The truffle is the resting stage of a fungus.



He describes the truffle-dog as nearly pure poodle, weighing 15 lb., but the illustration of this truffle-dog is that of a small collie-like dog. In this chapter he gives an insight into rural England at that time, when he tells us that with a dog properly trained the truffle-hunter is set up in business, and that he knew of one dog, a grizzle, that supported a family of ten children. (Truffles at that time made 10d. to 2s. 6d. a pound.) He gives details of the training, which commenced when the puppy was three months old.

In Walsh's (*Stonehenge*) work of 1878, the Appendix contains an article on the poodle by *Wildflower*; whilst *Idstone* writes on the truffle-dog. The former quotes Dr. Fitzinger in "Der Hund und seine Racen," who gives six varieties of poodles: the large<sup>1</sup>; the medium; the small; the small Pintsch (griffon); the Schmür Pudel (corded-haired); the Schaf-Pudel (woolly-coated). Dr. Fitzinger suggests that the large "Pudel" originated in the North-west of Africa, and that the middle is a variety of the above, and the small, a cross-bred, and that little Pintsch or griffon was believed at that time to be a poodle-Pomeranian cross. But this division on the face of it is unreliable, for the Schmür and Schaf poodles are well known to be one and the same thing, varying only in coat, the coat cording as it develops, or if kept short and brushed remaining woolly. Again, the middle poodle and the small are merely variations in size, and we are thus able to eliminate four of the six species considered at that time by *Wildflower* to be "very distinct varieties." The griffon, in to-day's ruling, is not a poodle by any means, but a breed produced from Yorkshire terrier and Irish terrier, dealt with in the chapter dealing with toy dogs. It is significant that according to *Wildflower* the French named the little griffon "chiens anglais" or "barbets griffons," so that its British origin was even then established. The corded coats developed to as much as 2 feet long, whilst *Stonehenge* tells us that the portion on the ears and tail was somewhat shorter, not often more than 1½ feet.

In Dalziel we find the poodle in Division III—House and Toy Dogs. He gives the height as 14 to 20 inches, "and in weight half-way between the light whippet and the heavy bulldog"; whilst Mr. Shaw, in his "Book of the Dog," gives the following weight and measurement of "Posen," aged 3½ years: weight, 31 lb.; height at shoulders, 20½ inches—the property of Mr. T. H. Joyce.

This dog was half-way between the small and the medium, for the Poodle Club about 1889 give the weights of the poodle to be as follows: the large, 60 lb.; the medium, 40 lb.; the small, 20 lb. and under. "Posen," therefore, according to Dr. Fitzinger's system of classification, would have constituted yet another variety.

It was the custom then to shave curly-coated poodles "at all events in the summer months." The muzzle was shaven, with the exception of a good-sized tuft of hair left on either side of the nose, corresponding to the moustache of a human being. The rest of the head, neck, chest, fore quarters and fore legs were left, but



THE TRUFFLE-DOG.

<sup>1</sup> These were considered as Russian poodles, weighing up to 80 lb.



the shaving began again 2 or 3 inches behind the fore legs, so that the side of the chest was naked, and the rest of the body except on the outside of each thigh. The front legs were free from hair, though often a bracelet of hair was left on the pasterns. The hind legs were shaven to an inch or so above the hocks, and the feet, and also the tail, except the end, which bore a tuft of hair.

The clipping of the coat, as already stated, was a matter of considerable antiquity, for the earliest illustrations of poodles show the animal with the hinder portion of the coat removed. But in several sixteenth-century manuscripts are roughly executed designs of dogs shaven on a similar plan to the description given above. In the well-known picture "Tobit and his Dog," painted in the sixteenth century by Martin de Vos, Tobit's dog is a trimmed poodle, and in "Patient Griselda," by Pinturicchio, in the National Gallery, a poodle, prettily trimmed, is seen among the spectators. Between 1636 and 1678 J. Stein painted "The Dancing Dog," a white poodle, clipped, performing. We read that in Louis XVI's reign toy poodles were very popular in France, and were shaven and shorn.

It is believed that the poodle is a German breed,<sup>1</sup> but the time of their introduction into France and England is unknown. Some authorities consider that they were first brought to England during the continental wars at the beginning of the nineteenth century, but this is certainly incorrect, though it is probable that a fresh introduction then took place. It is also very likely that the original "line" of the poodle breed used in England by the sportsmen on the coast for wildfowling had been cross-bred until finally extinct, except for such an occasional specimen here and there. The breed, however, shows itself again in the curly hair and general build of the small water-spaniel of Bewick and Taplin, and in the English water-spaniel of later times. In France, it is stated, the breed had been kept pure, and were so often used when shooting duck as to be known as the "caniche" or "chien canne," or as a "barbet,"<sup>2</sup> the diminutive of *barboteur*, a dog paddling in mud, and it is therefore probable that the dogs imported in the early part of the nineteenth century were some of these pure-bred dogs. The coat, which we have mentioned earlier, commencing in a woolly condition, gradually grows, twisting itself up into cords, the newer hair clinging and twisting round the cords, and constantly increasing in length, gradually forming ropes; and to prevent the cords from becoming soiled and entangled, as when neglected the coat becomes somewhat offensive,<sup>3</sup> the cords are often cut back and thus kept in control; or if long cords are desired, they can be gathered up (when the dog is not being exhibited) and tied in a bundle on its back, to allow the dog freedom of movement. The cords may become several inches longer than the height of the animal, so as to make its life unhappy.

We can take as an example "Fairy Queen," to which Mr. Lee refers in his well-known work, that when at rest "a very close examination had to be made to discern which was the head and which the stern of this curious creature." Mr. Kemp's "Lyris," a large dog standing 21½ inches high, weighing 64 lb., had cords 23 inches long; whilst a son of his, "Achilles," standing 23 inches high at the shoulder, had

<sup>1</sup> Riedel shows Pudels with comparatively short coats.

<sup>2</sup> Youatt describes the barbet as "always fidgety, incapable of much affection, full of self-love, occasionally ill-tempered, eaten up with red mange, frequently a nuisance to its owner and a torment to everyone else."

<sup>3</sup> Poodles should be bedded on sacks filled with straw, as loose straw is not suitable.

a 30-inch coat! The long cords when tightly twisted give the dog a remarkable, and in my opinion a very attractive, and certainly unique appearance. But when corded, the poodle is less convenient to keep as a house-dog than when the coat is kept in a fluffy condition. Cords need to be oiled<sup>1</sup> to keep the hair from getting too brittle. The cords cannot be cleaned by brushing, and need to be washed occasionally,<sup>2</sup> and only those who have experienced what it means to wash and dry such quantities of hair can realise fully the difficulty involved. The drying has to be thorough, for the cords retain the moisture against the best of towels thoroughly applied. These facts and the ruling of the Kennel Club making it necessary to remove all traces of oil from the coat previous to exhibition have caused the corded-coated dogs to become less and less popular, so that to-day few are kept in this condition. There is, however, no reason why a corded coat should not be held in check by the use of scissors. The curly coat is kept in good condition by occasional grooming; it is better of course to groom regularly, and to do so once a day. The grooming consists of combing, brushing, and, when necessary, washing.

It is a mistake to imagine that the poodle requires too much personal attention to allow it to be generally kept. Show dogs need considerably more time spent on their toilet. But the poodle once trimmed and in good condition, looked after with certain sense, needs very little attention.

A poodle's coat when four or five months of age should be clipped in order to keep the hair in control. Several clippings will be done previous to the final finishing process, the shaving. The clipping hardens the skin and makes the operation of the shaving free from pain. The proceedings are necessary every two months, so that the hair is not too long for the razor. Certain people specialise in training and shaving poodles, the charge varying from a moderate sum to a large one, depending on the standing of the artist.

Shaving and clipping are a matter of opinion, but certain clippings are fashionable.<sup>3</sup> In France usually the greater part of the body and hind quarters were clipped; the English Poodle Club recommended that the coat should be left on the body as far as the last rib and to leave the hind quarters more or less covered. Rings of hair are left above and below the hocks; the tail is shaved except for a bunch of hair at the end, often trimmed to represent a "puff-ball." The feet and the muzzle are kept free from hair.

Various stories are told of poodles and their intelligence. Early in 1700 a troop of performing poodles known as "The Ball of Little Dogs," danced to music. They had various grandiose names, a "Marquis of Gaillerdain" and a "Madame de Poncette" being perhaps the best of the troop. By royal command they performed before Queen Anne, much, as we read, to that royal lady's delight. Later, at Sadler's Wells, a performing troop of poodles caused considerable interest. They went through a performance of a dinner party with attendant servants.<sup>4</sup> They also carried out a mimic battle, firing guns, etc. Similar exhibitions of performing poodles

<sup>1</sup>  $\frac{1}{4}$  lb. of vaseline and  $\frac{1}{2}$  pint of paraffin, warmed until blended. Used when cold.

<sup>2</sup> Washed once every three months.

<sup>3</sup> Crests, monograms and even pictures are found on the dog's back. Bylandt shows a bird on the back of a black poodle.

<sup>4</sup> R. Lee.



were touring the large towns in the provinces and appearing at various music-halls. In 1818 a card-playing poodle was exhibited on the Continent; others engaged in theatrical performances; and one dog, the property of a boot-black of the Port Neuf in Paris, had the habit of rubbing up against the boots of passing pedestrians, choosing, so we are told, those already clean, so that after this attention they required cleaning afresh!

Monsieur A. Barbou, in his book, shows a poodle with the troops in Africa, under the title "Dogs of War." We read that during the Peninsular War at the battle of Castella a poodle, the property of a French officer, remained by him when he fell. On the breast of his master was the cross of the Legion of Honour, which attracted the enemy and would have been looted but for the dog, which protected his master until bayoneted by the foe.

Probably, however, a more interesting story to the reader is the following, culled from "The Times" of April 1839, given here as printed: "Some time since a lady of Biggleswade, happening to be in London, saw a very handsome and apparently thoroughbred poodle, which she purchased and took home. She petted the dog, which began to grow fat, but one day the skin became loose. Upon examination the animal turned out to be a mongrel cur sewn up in a poodle's skin, and sold at a high price."<sup>1</sup>

In the history of the breed we find that the first entry of poodles occurs in the second Stud Book<sup>2</sup> of the Kennel Club, the following appearing therein. Mr. Jepson's "Billy," Mr. J. Orton's "Don," Mr. J. Matless's "Elmer," Mr. W. Packer's "Flo," Mr. T. Cook's "Frank," Mr. P. Wright's "Lion."

At that time there was no Poodle Club, and little interest in the variety. But in 1876 the Poodle Club was formed. The history of the breed has been a somewhat chequered one. In the year 1876 only two dogs were entered in the Kennel Club Stud Book, and during the next eight years the largest entry in one year was in 1881, when the number then entered was ten.<sup>3</sup> In 1891 matters were brighter, for the entries rose to twenty-two; in 1896 to thirty-three; and the improvement continued, the numbers increasing gradually until 1907, when 131 was reached. In 1908 the highest record of the breed was made by 153 entries. But the development was then arrested, and though the following year the number fell to 143, yet after this commenced a rapid falling-off, until in 1925 only nineteen dogs and bitches were registered. There appears to be the need of some fresh impetus to cause greater activity in the poodle ranks, for it would indeed be a loss if a variety of such considerable interest, antiquity, and intelligence died out completely.

Of the leading breeders and exhibitors in the past was Mrs. Graves, the owner of the strongest kennel of that time, whose famous team of "Acrobat," the long-coated "Achilles," the "Ghost," "Druidess," etc., was well known and considered practically invincible. It was Mr. Chance, the owner of "Begum," who bred by the long-coated "Lyris" the champion "Achilles." Mr. H. A. Dagois, who imported "The

<sup>1</sup> Quoted from the "Bristol Gazette."

<sup>2</sup> 1875.

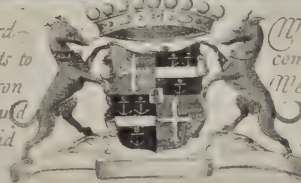
<sup>3</sup> "A lady well known in London society recently offered £200 for a diminutive white poodle, weighing 6 lb., which is performing in London, going through various feats on a man's hand, one of the numerous tricks being standing on its fore-feet on two of its trainer's fingers, which it does perfectly erect. After all, this was not an out-of-the-way offer, when £400 and £500 are refused for terriers which are of no use unless to ornament a show bench."—"Stock-keeper," June 5, 1885.





To the Honorable S<sup>r</sup> Richard Bar.  
Created by Letters Patents to  
Phillip now L<sup>d</sup> Vis<sup>s</sup> Wenman Baron  
of Dublin in y<sup>e</sup> Kingdome of Ireland  
in y<sup>e</sup> County of Galway in the said

This Plate is humbly dedicated by  
Barlow delin.



Wenman of Camell in Oxfordshire  
comence, after the death of R. Hon.  
Wenman of Rymainham in y<sup>e</sup> County  
as also Vis<sup>s</sup> Wenman of Tuam.  
Kingdome.

Richard Blome. A. S. by f. & c.

SPANIELS TAUGHT TO CROUCH. From Blome's "Gentleman's Recreation" (1686).



To Mr. R. Worshipfull  
of Mienelgrove in  
Sussex Baronet  
by Richard Blome

From an engraving by Blome in his "Gentleman's Recreation" (1686).





SPANIELS. From a coloured plate by Edwards from his "*Cynographia Britannica*" (1800).





(Above) THE ENGLISH WATER-SPANIEL. (Below) THE COCKER SPANIEL. By Reinagle. From Taplin's "*The Sportsman's Cabinet*" (1803). [304d]

Model," did more for the breed than was probably then realised. Mr. and Mrs. Long at that time specialised in new colours, and evolved among other attractive new shades the "blues," silver-greys, and ambers. Mr. G. Strong, with his "Pongo" and "Cigarette," and Mrs. L. W. Crouch,<sup>1</sup> with her Champion "Orchard Admiral," considered the best poodle of the times, were seen at all leading shows. There was also Mrs. L. W. Crouch's "Orchard Minstrel," sold to the United States of America, where he became champion. The sire of those two remarkable Orchard dogs bred by Mrs. Crouch was "The Joker," descended from Mr. H. A. Dagois' champion dog "The Model," considered the best poodle ever seen. Another of the famous dogs bred by this lady was a white, "Orchard White Boy."

We can conclude the section with the words of Sir Walter Scott: "The garçon perruquier and his bare-bottomed red-eyed poodle, though they are both amusing animals, and play ten thousand monkey tricks, which are diverting enough; yet there is more of human and dog-like sympathy in the wag of old trusty's tail than if his rival Touton had stood on his head for a twelvemonth."

As illustrations of the poodle of to-day we have a photo of four generations: Champion "Harcourt Jock," Ch. "Chieveley Confleur," "Chieveley Clarence," "Chieveley Chub"; also "Chieveley Dinah" and her three puppies, and Ch. "Chieveley Chintz." These photographs are kindly lent us by Miss Moorhouse, of The White Cottage, North Heath, Newbury. (Plate 136.)

<sup>1</sup> Now a breeder of gazelle-hounds.



## CHAPTER II

### SPANIELS

THE spaniel is undoubtedly of considerable antiquity, but whether the type of past ages is living now or from what type or types the present varieties have descended is not quite clear. By a perusal of early manuscripts, and by an examination of books, paintings, and sketches, we are able to obtain information of considerable interest and value.

It appears from the earlier writers that the word "Espagnol" covered a group of dogs of two kinds, used for pointing out game, helping with the nets, retrieving birds dead or wounded, and bringing back to the sportsman missels which had been shot into water. The one was a spaniel proper not unlike those of to-day, the other a curly-coated poodle. In "The Master of Game," based on Gaston Phœbus's "Livre de Chasse" (1387), and written between 1406 and 1413, Edward, second Duke of York, states that "hounds for the hawk, and spaniels, for their kind cometh from Spain, notwithstanding that there are many in other countries." His description of the spaniel is brief: "a good spaniel" should "not be too rough," but "his tail should be rough," and that they "commonly go before their master, running and wagging their tail, and raise or start fowl and wild beasts. But their right craft is of the partridge, and of the quail," and "when they be taught to be couchers<sup>1</sup> they be good to take partridges and quail with a net," and when "they be good," and "taught to swim and to be good for the river," they are used "for fowls when they have dived," but he adds that "on the other hand, they have many bad qualities, like the country that they come from." He complains of that very characteristic spaniel trait, to "bark and goad" other dogs "if he sees geese or kine or horses, or hens, or oxen or other beasts." The description ends with the statement that unless the writer had a goshawk, falcon, or hawks for the river, or sparrowhawk, or the net, he would prefer to do without them.

Spaniels appear in many pictures, but no dog is shown which can in any way be claimed to represent any particular variety of spaniel. In the famous Gaston Phœbus MS. in the Bibliothèque, Paris, are pictures of hunting-scenes in colour of great beauty. Five breeds of dogs are dealt with, and though four of these are depicted in various scenes, the spaniel only occurs two or three times. There is a spaniel in the picture representing the author of Gaston Phœbus surrounded by his huntsmen and their hounds, to whom he is issuing instructions. This dog stands behind a huntsman in the foreground, who is holding a greyhound. The spaniel is short in the muzzle, and has long ears, and is covered with long hair; the legs and hind quarters are clipped. One picture is entirely devoted to spaniels, which all appear to be of the same kind.

It is noteworthy that as a rule the earlier illustrations show unmistakably spaniel-like dogs, similar in type to those of to-day. Dr. Caius in his Gesner letter describes the work of spaniels and mentions three varieties, the spaniel, setter, and water-spaniel or finder. He gives, if Gesner's illustrations are those the Doctor sent him, an illustration of the first and last. He remarks upon their name and origin. He states that spaniels were mostly all over white, and that there was also a red variety and a black variety, but they were scarce. Aldrovandus (1637) shows the

<sup>1</sup> To set.



present-day type of springer spaniel and describes it as a Spanish dog with floppy ears, the chest, belly, and feet white picked out with black spots, the rest of the body black. This description of the ticking so often found in the spaniel family is of interest and Cirino (1653) gives two spaniels, one of which is of the springer type. Turberville, in his work devotes considerable space to the training and care of spaniels and their troubles, and the woodcut of spaniels suggests that the dogs he knew were unlike any we possess to-day.

Markham, in his "Art of Fowling" (1621), gives a chapter to the setting dogs, their type, colours, and training. At the end of the chapter preceding it are some introductory remarks to that which follows. He writes that there is nothing strange about it, "for it is the nature of every spaniell naturally to hunt all manner of byrdes, or anything that hath wing (though some with more earnestness and greedinesse)." He explains that "these are Byrdes and have wing, so that they are naturall for the Spaniel to hunt, and there then remaineth nothing but the accustoming the Dogge thereunto, and acquainting him with your minde and determination."

He knows, he writes, "that in divers places of this kingdome these Setting-Dogges are to be taught (so that most men of ability may have them at their pleasures) yet likewise I know they are sould at such great rates and prizes that no industrious man whatsoever (which either loves the sport or would be partaker of the benefit) but will be glad to learne how to make such a dogge himselve, and so both save his purse and make his pleasure and profit both more sure and more delicate."

So he tells us that "the first thing therefore that you must learne in this art, is to make a true election of your dogge, which you intend to apply to this purpose of setting, and in this election you shall observe, that although any dogge which is of perfit and good sent, and naturally addicted to the hunting of feathers, as whether it be a Land-Spaniell, Water-Spaniell or else the Mungrell between either or both those kindes, or the Mungrels of either of these kindes, either with the shallow flewed hound, the tumbler, lurcher, or indeede, the small bastard Mastiffe may be brought to this perfection of Setting. (As I have seen by daily experience, both in this and in other nations) yet is their none so excellent indeede as the true bred Land Spaniell, being of a nimbler and good size, rather small than grosse, and of a couragious and fierie mettall, evermore loving and desiring toyle."

He states that "to search" is "the perfectest charracter of the most perfectest spaniel." Whilst he had seen in the Low Countries cross-bred dogs doing good work, yet he had never seen any equal to the British land-spaniel, for finding, setting, going through hedges. He advises his readers to obtain the "Best bredde Land-Spanniell" procurable, and that whilst some believe in certain colours meaning good work, he considers that the "Motley, the Liver-hude, or the White and Blacke spotted" are all equally good.

So much Markham tells us. In the previous chapter he had described the training of the water-dog,<sup>1</sup> which I give in the chapter on poodles. But Spaniels trained to set were already of considerable antiquity, for there is in existence a document dated October 7, 1685,<sup>2</sup> to the effect that one John Harris of Willdon, Worcester, yeoman, in consideration of 2s. "of lawful English money" received from Henry Herbert, Esq., of Ribberford, and of a further 30s. to be paid him, would keep a "Spanill

<sup>1</sup> The poodle.

<sup>2</sup> P. 331.

bitch 'Quaud' " and train it to "sitt game" as the best "sitting" dogs "usually sitt the same."

We have no further information until Bewick in 1790 writes more fully. The illustrations are excellent. He describes the large water-spaniel, the small water-spaniel, the springer or cocker, and the English setter. It is the first time that the names "springer" or "cocker" occur. The large water-spaniel—"a beautiful animal," remarkable for its docility and obedient disposition and its attachment to its master, "elegant" in shape, the hair "beautifully curled or crisped," its ears long, and "its aspect mild and sagacious,"—was used, chiefly, in finding the haunts of wild duck and shot and disabled birds. He considers it to be the "finder" described by Dr. Caius. This dog, from the illustration, resembles a collie, whilst on the same page the vignette shows a long-legged but spaniel type of dog, unhappily facing a storm. The small water-spaniel is a similar dog to the large water-spaniel, but standing on short legs. It has, however, exaggerated long feet. He devotes a short paragraph to the "springer or cocker" and another to the English setter. He writes that "the springer or cocker, is lively, active, and pleasant, . . . and very expert in raising woodcock," and that "of the same kind is that beautiful little dog King Charles' Dog." The illustration of the "springer or cocker" is similar to the setter, but on a smaller scale. It was during the following ten years that the smaller springer was divided from the larger, the smaller being known as the "cocker."

In 1800 Edwards writes that "the discovery of the gun superseding the use of the falcon, the powers of the dogs were directed to the new acquisition, but his fleetness, wildness and courage, in quest of game, rendering him difficult to manage, a more useful kind was established, with shorter limbs and less speed,<sup>1</sup> yet some of the true springers still remain about London, but are rarely found in any other part of the country." He adds that "they are little different from the larger spaniel or setter, except in size, generally of a red, or red and white colour, thinly formed, ears rather short, long linked, the coat waving and silky, the tail somewhat bushy, and seldom cut.<sup>2</sup> The coat more inclined to curl than the springer's and longer, particularly on the tail." He mentions another variety to be a cocker, much smaller, kept by his Grace the Duke of Marlborough, "red and white with very round heads, blunt noses, a variety highly valued by sportsmen."<sup>3</sup>

Taplin considers the water-spaniel a cross between the large water-dog (the poodle) and the springer, and the curly coat suggests that this was so. Colour, he writes, "may be thought a mere matter of individual taste or fancy," and states that the body was not to be too large or too heavy, the head was to be round, ears long, broad, soft, and pendulous, neck short and thick. As to the coat, long and naturally curled hair indicated hardiness and "strength to bear the water," whilst a loose and shaggy coat indicated bodily tenderness. After describing the training and noting that the exclamations necessary in breaking the water-spaniel are very concise and expressive—"down!" "hie on!" "back!" and "hie lost!"—he informs us that the dog was used in the decoys for attracting the fowl up the pipes, and to rouse them from their condition of "sleeping and dozing."

<sup>1</sup> The cocker.

<sup>2</sup> Two of these dogs are seen in the background.

<sup>3</sup> Spaniels in foreground of the picture.



He also divides the spaniels into two kinds, one considerably larger than the other and known by the appellation of the "springing spaniel." The smaller is called the "cocker," or "cocking spaniel," as being more adapted to covert and woodcock shooting, to which they are more particularly appropriated and by nature seem designed.

"The true English-bred springing<sup>1</sup> spaniel," he writes, "differs but little in figure from the setter, except in size, varying only in a smaller degree, if any, from a red, yellow or liver-coloured and white. They are nearly two-fifths less in height and strength than the setter, delicately formed, ears long, soft, and pliable, coat waving and silky, eyes and nose red or black, the tail somewhat bushy and pendulous, always in motion when actively employed."

"From this description," he continues, "the cocker differs, having a shorter, more compact form, a rounder head, shorter nose, ears long (and the longer the more admired), the limbs short and strong, the coat more inclined to curl than the springer's."<sup>2</sup> The colour he gives as liver-and-white, red, red-and-white, black-and-white, all liver-colour, and not infrequently black, with tanned legs and muzzle. It is here that we find the first mention of the Sussex spaniel, for Taplin continues that "some of the largest and strongest of this description<sup>3</sup> are very common in most parts of Sussex, and are called Sussex spaniels."

Spaniels in Taplin's time were used as "finders" with greyhounds, but, he writes, "pheasant and cock-shooting" were the sports to which the breed was more "particularly appropriate." Though in his "Sporting Dictionary" of a year or two previously he had not written in favour of the variety, he now not only praises the cockers as shooting-dogs, but devotes considerable space to their value as house-dogs. He describes their attention as "unwearied," "their supplicating as to dutie incessant," their zeal as a protector of property at night "above suspicion." He uses the words "remarkable sagacity," "fidelity," "gratitude."

The rest of the chapter is devoted to anecdotes. How a gentleman fell under water thrice, and his spaniel hurriedly went in search of assistance and "almost forcibly dragged a farmer to the scene."

In 1789, when St. Paul's Cathedral was under preparation for the reception of his Majesty, a spaniel followed her master up the dark stairs into the dome, and disappeared.

Glaziers nine weeks later, at work in the cathedral, hearing faint sounds amongst the "timbers" which supported the dome, tied a rope round a boy, and let him down near to the place "from where the noise came." At the bottom the boy discovered the skeleton of a dog, the spaniel lying on her side, also an old shoe, half eaten. "The humanity of the boy," writes Taplin, "led him to rescue the animal."

The spaniel was placed by the workmen on the church floor, "left there to live or die as the luck of fate might have predicted." Later she was seen attempting to cross the street at the top of Ludgate Hill, but owing to weakness was unable to accomplish it. A boy carried her over. Eventually, leaning up against the houses,

<sup>1</sup> He describes "the English springing spaniel to be of the most ancient notoriety."

<sup>2</sup> The reader's attention is drawn to Edwards's illustration: the very long ears, the curls on the back, the round head of the spaniels in the foreground.

<sup>3</sup> He refers to the cocker.



she reached "Fleet Market" and Holborn Bridge, and at 8 o'clock in the evening arrived at her master's house in Red Lion Street, Holborn, and lay down on the steps of the door. She weighed 3 lb. 14 oz. We read that she was expecting puppies when lost, and doubtlessly had used her family as food. She recovered, only later to be killed by the wheels of a coach.

Whilst Taplin only mentions two varieties, the springer and the cocker and the Sussex cocker, Thomas Bell in his short notes on dogs in his work of 1837 writes that there are several varieties or distinct breeds of spaniels, the common or most useful sort being the "English spaniel."<sup>1</sup>

He considers that the large and small water-spaniels are descended from the common spaniel, and that they unite the fine hunting qualities of the latter with the aquatic propensities of the Newfoundland dog. He uses the word "English" spaniel, an elegant dog of a moderately strong make, the muzzle rather broad, the ears remarkably long and full; the hair plentiful, and beautifully waved, particularly that of the ears, tail, the hinder parts of the thighs, and legs, and the belly. He gives the colours as liver-and-white, red-and-white, though sometimes black, with a tan spot over each eye, on the face and breast. But there is evidently some confusion, for he describes the springer as small, with a small head and long ears (essential points in dogs of this race), and informs us that the true Marlborough breed is sometimes called the springer!—"a shorter dog with a less taper muzzle." He remarks that spaniels are sold for "an enormous price," and that a dog owner informed a magistrate that he had refused £70 for a spaniel which had been stolen.

Six years later Colonel H. Smith, writing on dogs, states that water-spaniels were well known to the Romans, and appear on their monuments, and that they are identical with *Canis tuscus*, but I have not been able to verify this. He also describes the springer to be small in form, and he shows a diminutive coffee-coloured spaniel with prominent eyes, marked "springer," busily chasing a bullfinch.

The only other spaniel illustrated is "the cocker," a smart white-and-brown spaniel, small when compared with to-day's type. He writes that they are "usually black and shorter in the back," and that this appears to be the "Gnedin" of Buffon. He considers that the Blenheim, or Marlborough, is the "Pyrame" of Buffon, a dog very similar to the "cocker," but the black colour relieved by fire-coloured spots above the eyes, and similar markings on the breast and feet. The muzzle is fuller and the back rather short. It is probable that Colonel H. Smith had used Bell's work and had been misled.

In 1859 *Stonehenge* gives Youatt's illustration of a large collie-like dog. Youatt probably used Bewick's dog as a model. He writes that these dogs, "the old English water-spaniels," have the ordinary web feet of all dogs, but that in this variety the feet are larger, and so appear to be more webbed. He gives the points of the breed: a head long and narrow, eyes small, ears of medium length, covered with thick curly hair, body stout but elegantly formed, the loins strong, and a round barrel-like chest with good breadth on the shoulders. The legs rather long but strong; the tail slightly curved upwards, but not above the level of the back.

To other varieties of spaniels eight pages are devoted. We find the name "Clumber" and the designation "field spaniel" for the first time, the latter a

<sup>1</sup> Possibly a repetition of Markham.

stronger dog able to stand hard work, but not used for water. He divides the varieties into the two groups: the "springer," which includes the Sussex, Clumber, and Norfolk spaniels, and the other, the "cocker," and adds that although the King Charles and Blenheim originally belonged to the second division, "they are now kept for toys only." He is of the opinion that a spaniel under 12 or 14 lb. is unable to stand hard work. The springers, he states, are heavy and slow when compared with the cockers.

We have here the first description of the Sussex.<sup>1</sup> The head is lighter than that of the Clumber, the under-jaw recedes more than the Clumber. The colour is "decidedly liver-coloured, with a golden shade, but not of such a deep colour as the Welsh or Devonshire cockers, or the Irish water-spaniel."

As to the Clumber, he tells us that it had been long confined to the Newcastle family, and had then lately become fashionable. He describes it as "a remarkably long, low dog, weighing 30 to 40 lb., standing 18 to 20 inches; the head heavy, wide, and full, the muzzle broad and square, generally of a flesh colour." The nostrils open, and chops full and somewhat pendent, ears long, and clothed with wavy hair, not too thick. The chest very round and barrel-like; the back ribs very deep, at the same time being so widely separated from each other as to make the interval between them and the hips small in proportion to the great length; tail bushy, but not woolly, the hair being waved only, but not curled. "It is generally cropped." Shoulders rather heavy and wide apart, arms short but strong, elbows not very well let down, fore arms strong, with plenty of bone, good knees, and strong useful round feet, but not very well up in the knuckles.

The legs to be well feathered and the feet hairy, the hind legs to be rather straight, and short, "so that the dog has altogether a weasely appearance," except that the body is much stouter in proportion. The coat was thick, silky, and wavy, but not curled except in the featherings, which were long; lemon-and-white the most popular colour, but yellow-and-white was also correct. He adds that the variety "almost invariably" was mute. The Welsh springer or Welsh cocker is shown on the right of the illustration, similar to the Sussex but on longer legs.

*Stonehenge*, after stating that the variety is one of the best of all the spaniels, with excellent noses, writes that the coat is very slightly curled on the body, the ears and legs being feathered, and the tail nearly bare of hair, and that they were used mainly for woodcock shooting.

We get the first description of the Norfolk spaniel, to resemble a thick-made English setter in shape and general proportions, but of smaller size, seldom exceeding 17 to 18 inches in height. The colour is black-and-white or liver-and-white, accompanied by ticks of either. It appears from what follows that it was frequently crossed with the Clumber and Sussex and with other breeds found in other counties. *Stonehenge* states that as far as cockers were concerned, there were so many varieties

<sup>1</sup> "The Sussex and Norfolk throw their tongue" (*Stonehenge*).

In reference to spaniels a strange advertisement is reproduced from an Italian journal: "*Wanted a Nurse*.—The Signora Marchesa Siffanti di San Bartolomeo is in want of a young healthy wet nurse; and in order to avoid any future loss of milk she must be unmarried. Her services will be required for a small litter of five English spaniels thorough-bred, the maternal parent having died, whilst giving them birth; nurse to reside in the house, wages 100 francs per month; chocolate in the morning; breakfast with the Marchesa; dine with the servants; and sleep with the dogs."—Thacker's "*Courser's Annual*" (1850).



that to describe them was an impossibility. But as a general rule, the cocker was a light active spaniel of about 14 lb., sometimes reaching 20 lb. The head round, with raised forehead, muzzle more pointed than the springer, and ear less heavy. Body resembling that of a small setter. He gives three lines to "the Devonshire cocker," which he tells us resembles the Welsh dog, of a deep liver-colour, and as no differences are given, we can presume that the Devonshire cocker was not a distinct breed.

Meyrick in 1861 divided land-spaniels into cockers and springers. The cocker averages 15 lb. in weight. He copies *Stonehenge*. The Clumber, which he also classifies under the "springer," he gives to weigh 30 lb. (sometimes).

In his 1867 book, the weight of the Sussex is stated to be about 35 lb., the head heavy, and the lips somewhat pendulous. To the head, *Stonehenge* would give 30 points, 10 points for coat and colour, and 10 points for temperament! At that time a Mr. Fuller, of Brightling, Sussex, and a Mr. F. Burdett, of Atherstone, were noted for their Sussex spaniels. Mr. Fuller also had a noted breed of black cockers which he had collected in the neighbourhood of Lutterworth, where they had been bred by an old family named Footman.<sup>1</sup> These spaniels, on the death of Mr. Burdett, passed into the hands of a Mr. Jones, of Oscott, and a Mr. Phineas Bullock, of Bilston, who crossed them with the Sussex and with the water-spaniel. *Stonehenge* gives an illustration of one of Mr. Fuller's dogs, "George," a dog weak behind the shoulders, plain in head, and from the illustration very loose in coat.

Writing on the Clumber spaniel, *Stonehenge* tells us that the name arises from the Duke of Newcastle's family seat, and that the Newcastle family were the sole possessors of the variety until about 1770. In 1862 a remarkable team, according to this authority, were exhibited by a Mr. Holford of Weston Birt, winning all the prizes in the class, whilst the Duke of Newcastle's team in 1863 were good spaniels but small. At that time the Marquis of Westminster, Lord Berners, Sir St. George Gore, Mr. Boaler, of Marlborough, and a Mr. Yeatman were the more noted breeders. *Stonehenge* gives the weight of the Clumber to be then 40 to 45 lb.<sup>2</sup> Pale yellow was the favourite colour, and any approach to orange was objectionable. He was to stand 18 to 20 inches. He was to be so low on the leg as to show no daylight under him; the nose to be dark, flesh- or liver-coloured, some of the best being cherry-nosed. The ears, though long, were not to be shaped as in the Sussex, nor so heavy as those of that species. In referring to the breed he writes: "They are not soon worn out by age, and usually most trustworthy at six, seven, or even eight years of age."

The following measurements are given: Mr. Holford's "Jock," by the famous "Trimbrush": Nose to root of stern, 2 feet 10 inches; stern, 11 inches; eye to nose, 3½ inches; round head, 1 foot 5 inches; arm, 7½ inches; girth behind shoulders, 2 feet 1 inch; length of head, 10½ inches; height, 17 inches. But the other varieties obtain little notice. He deals with them in two pages under the title of "The Norfolk Spaniel and Mixed Breeds." He writes that pure-bred dogs are hard to find with a pedigree of many generations, but that a breed of these spaniels existed near Oxford, the property of the owner of Waterperry. The description is the same as that in his work of 1859. He adds, however, that they are fond of water, and that they sometimes pointed their game, to which he objects, as they are supposed, he

<sup>1</sup> See Field-spaniels, p. 328.

<sup>2</sup> An increase of 10-15 lb. in weight since 1861.



writes, to be springers of game. As to the variety known then as cockers, *Stonehenge* is still nonplussed. We have not attempted, he writes, "to give an illustration of the Norfolk spaniel, or of any of the various cockers, as the varieties or strains are so numerous as to defy us." The interest in spaniels continued unabated. The Clumber, Sussex, and cocker were the breeds to which most attention was fixed.

In 1862 the Sussex were allotted a separate class at the Crystal Palace Show, but two years later, in 1874-5, a considerable correspondence appeared in the "Field" as to what actually constituted a Sussex spaniel. It was decided that it was a *sine qua non* that the spaniel must be not only of the correct colour, but bred from parents of the correct colour. The result of this was that at the Birmingham Show of 1874 Mr. Phineas Bullock's "George," a dog resembling to a marked extent the noted "George" of Mr. Fuller (and later of Mr. Soame), was subject to a protest because he was sired by a black dog.

Eleven years after his previous work Walsh (*Stonehenge*), in his "The Dogs of the British Islands," gives part of a chapter headed "The Modern Cocker," and an illustration of modern cockers. He writes that the title includes every kind of field-spaniel *except* the Sussex and Clumber. The Welsh and Devon cocker, he informs us, were scarcely to be met with "in a state of purity." We find an increase of from 5 to 10 lb., so that the cocker was weighing 30 lb., that they were more like the springer than the cocker. He deals with the cockers as "field-spaniels," and gives a list of points. He writes that in order to get the "marvellous combination of powers and varied qualifications, our modern breeders have crossed the old-fashioned cocker with the Sussex." There is a repetition of previously published details as to Sussex and Clumbers, and a paragraph devoted to the English water-spaniel. He writes that the exhibits in classes allotted to this variety are of "a most miscellaneous character" and that he does not pretend to be able to settle the points of the breed with anything like accuracy or minuteness. He gives the following note about them: "Head was long and narrow; eyes small; ears long and clothed with thick curls; body moderately stout and barrel-like, but not so large as the field-spaniel; legs rather long, straight, strong." It was curly-coated, and in colour liver-and-white.

In Dalziel's "British Dogs" (1880) we find articles on (1) The Black Spaniel, (2) The Cocker, (3) The Clumber, (4) The Sussex, (5) The Norfolk, thus adding the black spaniel to the varieties already alluded to, but no mention of the water-spaniel as a variety. He shows a remarkably fine specimen of Clumber, "Lapis," a dog of to-day's type.

In this, Dalziel's first work, a single volume, he tells us that the black spaniels were "the rage." He considers the name "field-spaniel" "not over-happily chosen," preferring the older name of land-spaniel to differentiate from the water-spaniel, and what is wanted is a shorter and stronger muscled dog and not the long-backed and setter-headed ones. He fears that the shows and show points will spoil the breed, and draws attention to the picture of "Flirt," a black spaniel of Mr. Holmes, "a good representative of the most fashionable and winning strains." This dog is very loose and ragged in the coat. The true black spaniel Dalziel describes as a long, low-set dog, legginess being considered a serious fault. He gives the height and weight of several dogs. The weight varies considerably, one bitch, Bona,

2½ years old, weighing 32 lb., whilst another, Beverlac, 3½ years, weighs 54 lb. Black spaniels were then bred by Mr. Phineas Bullock and Dr. Boulton, of Beverley.

In this work Dalziel gives the weight of the cocker to be less than 24 lb., of all colours, as good as they are handsome, seldom seen at dog shows, "as they have been neglected for the larger springers."

Hugh Dalziel does not consider the story as to the design of the Clumber to be more under control when he was aged and less actively inclined; or the whole story of the Duke of Noailles,<sup>1</sup> who, it is said, presented some of these dogs to the Duke of Newcastle. He suggested that French bassets were introduced to the Clumber Kennels. He gives the weight and measurements of "Lapis," the property of Mr. W. Arkwright, to weigh 62 lb. and stand 18 inches at the shoulder; from tip of nose to stern, 42 inches; from occiput to between eyes, 6 inches; and thence to tip of nose, 4¾ inches, giving a length of head from occiput to tip of nose of 10¾ inches, girth of head 10½ inches, girth behind shoulder 29 inches, girth of fore arm 8 inches, and of loin 25 inches.

Among the leading breeders of Clumbers, as well as the Duke of Newcastle, we find the names of Duke of Portland, Duke of Norfolk and Earl Spencer, Mr. W. Arkwright, Mr. Foljambe, Mr. Holford, and Mr. James Farrow. In 1885 "Psycho" was considered one of the best Clumber spaniels seen, and another, "Boss III," a noted prize winner, weak in head points, having the head of an ordinary field-spaniel. He and "Psycho" were for a time the cause of considerable opinion, for "Boss III," probably a better-built dog than "Psycho," failed so much in head character that his winning against "Psycho" was considered by leading opinion to be wrong.

There is an interesting note on this "head question" in Dalziel's book of 1887. He writes that the Rev. A. L. Willet and Major Willet, both of whom had placed "Boss III" above "Psycho" at Warwick in 1886, had recently stated that "they would no longer recognise the long field-spaniel character of Clumber head." Examining the illustrations of Clumbers in *Idstone's* work of 1872 with the above statement, we see clearly that the Clumber was hardly a fixed type and was therefore frequently showing ancestral forms. However, in 1886, the desired Clumber head was becoming sufficiently common to allow the judges the power to discriminate more drastically. At that time two of the best spaniels exhibited were "Tower" and "Trust," the former the property of Mr. Holmes, the latter of Mr. J. H. Parlett. "Trust," we read, failed seriously in colour, being marked with liver-colour, instead of lemon. Wrong colouring was frequent at that time, usually on the dark side. The Club in their standard given in Dalziel's book describe the colour to be "lemon markings—orange permissible but not so desirable." But from the very first the heavy, somewhat bloodhound type of head had been desired.

The Spaniel Club allotted 25 points to head and jaw, this not including the eyes or ears, these being allotted 5 points each. The head, therefore, counted 35 points out of the total of 100, and as the head would again be considered in the 10 points allowed for "appearances," it actually had a greater value than the 35.

The Sussex spaniel chapter is by *Castra*, a successful breeder and exhibitor—"a gentleman who has taken an enthusiastic interest in and done much to save the true Sussex." He gives Youatt's astonishing assertion that the spaniel<sup>2</sup> is the parent

<sup>1</sup> Daniel.

<sup>2</sup> It is not clear whether he means the spaniel generally or the Sussex in particular.



of the Newfoundland dog, and setter, and that the poodle, Esquimaux dog, shepherd and drover's dog "and every variety distinguished for intelligence has spaniel blood in them." After a page of extracts from various authorities, he gives the weight and measurements "of some good Sussex spaniels" which vary considerably from one another. Whilst "Mouse" at three years old weighed  $26\frac{1}{2}$  lb. and stood  $12\frac{1}{2}$  inches, "Noble" at  $2\frac{1}{2}$  years weighed 45 lb. and stood 16 inches and was  $6\frac{1}{2}$  inches longer than "Mouse" from nose to set-on of tail (40 inches). "Noble's" girth of head is 20 inches, that of "Mouse" 14 inches. Another champion, "Bachelor," at  $3\frac{1}{2}$  years weighs 46 lb., and stands at the shoulder 15 inches, and is 32 inches long—that is to say, a heavy, short-bodied dog when compared with "Mouse" and "Noble." "Countess," a bitch, at 10 months old weighed 40 lb. and was 13 inches at the shoulder and 31 inches long.

In *Corsincon's* short chapter on the Norfolk spaniel he writes that they were said to have been produced by a cross with a black-and-tan terrier by the then late Duke of Norfolk; that except for longer legs and long and lobular-shaped ears, the description of the modern spaniel would apply to them. It is clear that general appearance was to be developed at any cost if the dog was to win on the bench. It was likely to cause a development of head at the expense of body, such as has been witnessed in the St. Bernard of recent years, but fortunately this has not occurred.

The Club described the head as "large, square, and massive, flat on top, ending in a peak at occiput, round above eyes, with a deep slot; muzzle heavy and freckled; lips of upper jaw slightly overhung; skin under eyes dropping, and showing haw." In some parts the Club's description was confusing. Hind quarters were to be very powerful, "with thighs placed well at back of body," and the stern was to be set very low (whilst retaining the more important point of a straight back), "well feathered, and carried about level with the backbone," and the nose was to be "square and flesh-coloured." Apart from this confusion of expression the standard was a very excellent one, and, with the necessary alterations, has remained more or less the same until to-day.

In the second edition Dalziel writes: "I am disposed to ask, has the Sussex spaniel become extinct?" for in the Kennel Club Stud Books for 1886 and 1887, vols. xiii and xiv, the title "Sussex Spaniel" does not occur, but the Sussex is registered under the heading "Other liver-coloured ones." Yet in the previous volume. No. xii of 1885, twenty-one Sussex are entered under the heading "Sussex Spaniel." It appears from Dalziel's wording that the Kennel Club no longer considered that the Sussex was a variety, but merely a matter of colour. In the following volume, however, the Sussex once again appears. In the Sussex the head was not of such import, for the Spaniel Club allots 15 points to head, compared with the 25 allotted to the head of the Clumber. We have an interesting list of negative points to give some idea as to the troubles that the earlier breeders were facing whilst fixing the desired type, at a time when control of breeding and pedigrees were yet in their infancy. Among the negative points are light eyes, narrow heads, weak muzzle, curled ears or ears set high on; curly coats, top-knots, ginger or snuff-coloured, too dark colour, legginess, and so on. There is also a loss of 10 points for white on chest, the white so difficult to eradicate and which occurs so frequently in whole-coloured dogs of any breed. In the detailed description we have, in the



clause devoted to colour, a somewhat unique statement to the effect that "the colour will vary and go darker when the dog is kept out of Sussex, especially in those parts where the climate and soil differ materially from those of Sussex." This might be true of red sandstone lands, but otherwise hardly conceivable.

As to the Norfolk spaniel, Dalziel tells us very little more. He gives the description as drawn up by the Spaniel Club, and it is interesting that whilst head, jaw, and eyes count in all 20 points, the ears count a full 10. On the subject of the black field-spaniel he adds nothing that we do not already know, except that a Dr. W. W. Boulton,<sup>1</sup> of Beverley, had a Beverley strain of this variety subsequently carried on by a Mr. A. H. Easton, of Hull, and then by a Mr. W. R. Brydon, of Buxton, and that this and other strains furnished both *springers of large size*, and also *small black cockers*. In black field-spaniels the negative points were: light eyes, 10; light nose (fatal), 25; curled ears, 10; curled coat, 10; carriage of stern, 10<sup>2</sup>; top-knot (fatal), 25; white on chest, 10.

It is somewhat difficult to comprehend what the Club intended by the word "fatal." If it signifies, as can be presumed, disqualification, then a deduction of 25 points has no meaning. The description of the breed is in a very exaggerated form.<sup>3</sup> Under the sub-title of "head" we read that it "should be quite characteristic of this grand sporting dog, . . . conveying conviction of high breeding, character, and nobility," and that the eyes were to be "grave in expression," and "bespeaking unusual docility and instinct"; in the clause headed "General Appearance" we learn that he was to be "a grand combination of utility and beauty," "a sporting dog, capable of learning and doing anything possible for his inches and conformation."

Mr. James Farrow, in writing on the black field-spaniel, or, as he terms it, the "black spaniel," agrees that it is the most popular, judging from the entries in dog shows, but considers that it is of no greater use as a working variety than some of the others, and that some sportsmen object to the colour.<sup>4</sup> He considered that the breed had lost in head points, when compared with the dogs of twelve years previous, and had heads showing Sussex. He accounts for this because Sussex champions had been used on the black variety, and he also complains as to the way the tails were being carried at that time, "stuck up like a fox-terrier's." It appears that a Mr. T. Jacobs was mainly responsible for the infusion of Sussex blood into the black spaniel breed. He states that his object had been to obtain more bone, longer bodies, and shorter legs in the black variety.

In the meanwhile the cocker was coming into his own. Dalziel devotes six pages to him, and describes the dog to be "one of the most beautiful, intelligent dogs, most useful, bustling, and merry in covert or hedgerows." The breeders were carefully eliminating unwanted characters; light eyes and curly ears were no longer so frequent. The ears described were to be, in the wording of the Club, a "truly sporting ear." Light noses and a top-knot, if they occurred, were fatal, and a curly, woolly, or wiry coat was unwanted.

The eyes were not to be prominent,<sup>5</sup> staring, or weak. The weight was not to

<sup>1</sup> The joint author of "Breeding for Colour."

<sup>2</sup> Probably if held above the back.

<sup>3</sup> Doubtlessly due to unbridled enthusiasm.

<sup>4</sup> There is no real disadvantage.

<sup>5</sup> See Colonel H. Smith's picture of a springer.

exceed 25 lb., and the body was to be compact and firmly knit together. Once again enthusiasm plays riot, for, to the Club's wording as to stern, Dalziel states that "the most characteristic stamp of blue blood" was a correct tail! At the end of Dalziel's chapter is the weight and measurement of the champion "Obo." I give it here for comparison with the modern show dogs: The weight to be 22 lb.; height, 10 inches; length of nose to eye,  $2\frac{1}{4}$  inches; length of nose to occiput,  $7\frac{1}{2}$  inches; length of nose to set-on of tail, 29 inches.

The first meeting of the Sporting Spaniel Club's Working Trials, the first spaniel trials in history, took place on January 3 and 4, 1899, on the estate of the President, Mr. W. Arkwright. The judges were Mr. Arkwright and Mr. Elias Bishop. There were two stakes: an All-age Stake, the first prize £10, the second £5, and the third £3.

Ten entries were made, Mr. J. Sharpe's liver-and-white cocker "Stylish Pride" being the winner.

In the Puppy Stakes, the prizes being £5 first, £3 second, and £1 third, four entries were forthcoming, Mr. Sharpe's "Stylish Pride" winning. He also won the prize of £3 for the puppy who showed most obedience, combined with keenness and perseverance in questing game alive or dead.

On December 12, 1899, the Sporting Spaniel Club held its field trials, on Mr. V. J. Warwick's shootings near Little Green, Havant. Mr. S. Small and Mr. A. W. Legard were the judges. There was a large entry. Amongst other famous men, in the story of the Spaniel, appearing at this trial we find Mr. Harding Cox, Mr. J. Sharpe, Mr. Warwick, Mr. Winton Smith, Mr. Alexander. Mr. Harding Cox had "Beechgrove Bailie," a Clumber. Mr. Sharpe's cocker bitch, "Stylish Meg," a liver-and-white, was the winner of the prize for the best liver spaniel. Mr. Winton Smith's Clumber, "Beechgrove Bee,"<sup>1</sup> was first in the all-age class, the handler Alexander winning the prize for best handling. "Bee" also won the prize for being the best spaniel "up to a good day's" work, besides being perfect at trials. She also won the prize for being the most obedient, combined with keenness and perseverance in questing game. She won the Puppy Stakes.

The following is an extract from the "Field":

"The meeting of which we write was the first of its kind ever held. . . . Mr. W. Arkwright, of Sutton, Scarsdale, Derbyshire, is the president of the club, and his . . . estates . . . were willingly placed at the service of the management. . . . A capital entry, all things being taken into consideration and this being an initial meeting, of ten in the All-aged Stakes and four in the Puppy Stakes, though with the exception of Mr. Norrish's 'Busy Bee,' all the puppies appeared in the All-aged Stakes."

"*Tuesday*.—Weather most satisfactory, but little or no scent. Best performer 'Stylish Pride,' a liver-and-white cocker with a nice flat coat about 25 lb., but her retrieving not quite so good. In the Puppy Stakes 'Stylish Pride' again did well and retrieved better than before, showing fine intelligence in finding game with a bad scent.

"*Wednesday*.—'Carry One,' 'Stylish Pride,' and 'Hoar Cross Shotty' showed to best advantage.

<sup>1</sup> Her sire was "Beechgrove Squire" and dam "Beechgrove Maggie." "Squire" was out of a Beechgrove bitch and "Maggie" was sired by a Beechgrove dog.

*" All-aged Stake :*

1. Mr. Sharpe's ' Stylish Pride ' (cocker).
2. Mr. Watts's ' Hoar Cross Shotty ' (Clumber).
3. Mr. Cockburn's ' Carry One ' (Clumber).

*" Puppy Stake :*

1. Mr. Sharpe's ' Stylish Pride ' (cocker).
2. Mr. Smith's ' Beechgrove Toy ' (Clumber).
3. Mr. Warwick's ' Compton Roger.'

" Special prize for best working spaniel belonging to a member of the Club went to ' Stylish Pride,' and that for the puppy in the Puppy Stakes which showed the most obedience combined with keenness and perseverance, and also that for the best all-round spaniel. The two specials for the best-looking spaniel to ' Carry One.'

" Mr. Arkwright said the trials had been very satisfactory. Room for improvement in the plan adopted for deciding merit: better if the dogs had been worked in couples instead of singly. All the spaniels rather unsteady to wing and shot. All ran mute except one of the puppies, which once gave tongue."

Reporting again on the second field trial of December 1899:

" Second trial meeting held over Mr. B. J. Warwick's shootings near Little Green, Havant. Bad weather, with snow and very wet ground, on the Tuesday, no scent and the proceedings of little use. Most of the dogs worked carefully, and many of them were overtrained. On Wednesday a dry day but very cold. Work done not very satisfactory; no dog had an opportunity to show more nose and intelligence than any ordinary shooting spaniel would be expected to have; but all well broken and mainly quite steady and uniformly good all round. Winner in both All-aged and Puppy stakes was the Clumber: ' Beechgrove Bee,' dog with a narrow face but good body, and well ahead of anything shown in the competition. Way he worked coverts and hedgerows was a treat, and he retrieved capitally: sensible, but did not show great excellence of nose. Second in each stake was ' Stylish Girl,' a medium-sized black (Northumberland bitch), long in body, crooked rather in front, and of the long, low show type. Did fair work all round, but nothing particularly excellent; busy and merry. Third in each stake was ' Hoar Cross Dash ' by dark-coloured liver-and-roan, about 30 lb.; began badly by pottering about, but improved considerably later. All three winners quiet, mute, and highly, perhaps too highly, trained.

*" Braces Stake :*

1. Mr. Watts's ' Hoar Cross Dash ' and ' Hoar Cross Busy.'
2. Mr. Winton Smith's ' Beechgrove Bee ' and ' Beechgrove Ninette.'
3. Mr. J. Sharpe's ' Stylish Meg ' and ' Stylish Girl.' "

" Beechgrove Bee " also won the prizes given for the best dog which, in the opinion of the judges, was " up to a good day's work and perfect in field trials " and for " puppy showing most obedience with keenness and perseverance in questing game alive or dead."

There was also a fourth stake for Retrievers of any breed.



1. Mr. B. J. Warwick's "Painter" (black retriever by "Duke III"—"Briar V," born January 23, 1894: breeder, Mr. G. R. Davies).
2. Mr. J. Alexander's "Beechgrove Viscountess" (black retriever by "Joe"—"Twinkle," born June 21, 1894: breeder, Mr. J. Palmer).
3. Mr. J. H. Abbott's "Rust" (liver retriever by "Fat"—"Bell," born June 16, 1894: breeder unknown).

The trials, we read, in spite of the bad weather, were a great success.

#### THE ENGLISH WATER-SPANIEL

As we have seen, the English water-spaniel, first depicted by Bewick, a collie-like dog, was probably a cross between the rough water-dog, or poodle, and the springer spaniel, or setter.

Between Bewick's time and that of Taplin, to judge from the illustration in Taplin's work, the water-spaniel had been so constantly crossed with the springer as to result in a dog of spaniel type, yet retaining the curly coat of the water-dog to some extent.

On the formation of the Kennel Club's Register of Breeds no place was allotted to this old breed, and from this and other evidence it can be considered that it had come to an end some years previous to the formation of the Stud Book.

The good character given to this variety by the writers of a century ago makes it somewhat strange that it should have fallen into disfavour. Doubtlessly the later varieties of spaniels obtained so much support that this older breed, lacking the backing it needed and left long in abeyance, gradually became forgotten. Attempts, however, were made on several occasions to re-establish the variety, but the bias for other spaniel breeds proved too strong, and the efforts resulted in a short-lived revival.

It was the object of breeders to produce dogs of the type as represented in the engraving by Reinagle (see Plate 92), a dog closely resembling the springer but higher on the leg, with a coat of crisp, tight curls, the face covered with short hair.

Among those who were interested in this effort was Mr. Phineas Bullock, to whom we have already referred, who exhibited a dog "Rover," with a remarkable show career. "Rover" won first at Birmingham 1866, 1868, 1870, 1873, and at the Crystal Palace in 1871 and 1872, and at Manchester in 1865. He also obtained the gold medal at Paris that year. But the value of these successes were not great, because of the unevenness in type among the exhibits and the small entries. His daughter "Flo" (Kennel Club Stud Book 2256), bred by Mr. Bullock and sold to Captain Arbuthnot, won first at the Crystal Palace in 1870 and at Birmingham in 1869, 1870, 1871, 1872, also at Nottingham in 1873. But "fate" was against the variety, and though brave attempts were made to bring it to public notice and sporting esteem, exhibitors soon found the task too much and lost interest, and entries became fewer, until at last the classes for the English water-spaniel were a thing of the past.

It was in 1887 when another attempt was made; and again in 1903, when Mr. J. H. Stansfield, Mr. Harry Jones, and Mr. Winton Smith attempted to produce a revival.

Up to 1912 the best exhibits were Mr. Winton Smith's "Beechgrove Mallard," Mr. H. Jones's "Chorister" and "Diving Bell," and Mr. Stansfield's "Lucky Shot."

## SUSSEX SPANIEL

After fifty years of breeding Sussex spaniels, Mr. Fuller, of Brightling, near Hastings, died in 1847. His Rosehill kennel was dispersed by auction, and except a dog "George" and a bitch "Romp," which were given at the time to Relf, the head keeper on the estate, no trace of his stock sold that day can be found. Mr. Relf for forty years kept the breed pure, the heirloom of the famous Rosehill kennel. During Mr. Fuller's life, at an early period of his Sussex spaniel-breeding activities, the golden tinge, for which the Rosehill breed was famed, arrived from a bitch mated with a dog of Dr. Watts, of Battle. From this breeding every now and again came a "sandy" pup which recurred in the litters of descendants.

A Mr. Saxby and a Mr. Marchant had the same strain as that at Rosehill, and one of the most famous sires in most Sussex pedigrees is "Buckingham," by Marchant's "Rover" out of Saxby's "Fan."

In the early days the most successful owners and breeders were Mr. T. B. Bowers (who probably did more for the Sussex than anyone else), Mr. T. Burgess, Mr. A. W. Langdale, Mr. J. Fletcher, Dr. J. H. Spurgin, and Dr. J. H. Salter.

Mr. Phineas Bullock, noted for other breeds of spaniels, was also successful with these. "Bebb" is a name occurring in many pedigrees, both of Sussex and black field-spaniels. He is entered in the Stud Book as Sussex; his sire was Lord Derby's "Old Bob," half a water-spaniel. One of the most famous Sussex sires is "Buckingham," who claims to be of pure Rosehill blood, who with "Bebb's" daughter "Peggie" brought the famous dog "Bachelor."

In 1872 a class for Sussex spaniels was provided at the Crystal Palace Show, won by Captain Arbuthnot's "Dash," reported to be an ordinary field-spaniel, and by no means a Sussex.<sup>1</sup> Mr. J. Salter's "Chance," a Sussex, stood second, and Mr. Bullock's "George" stood third.

About 1879 Mr. T. Jacobs, of Newton Abbot, took up the Sussex.<sup>2</sup> His "Russett," "Dolly," "Brunette," and "Bachelor III" became famous. In 1891 the kennel was dispersed; the best of the Sussex went to Mr. Woolland, who subsequently became more or less invincible on the show-bench. But the famous line of "Bebbs," great winners on the show-bench, were not Sussex spaniels at all. "Old Bebb," the property of Mr. Burgess, bred by Lord Derby, was able and frequently did produce spaniels capable of exhibition in other classes. His sons and daughters arrived as blacks, black-and-whites, and liver-coloured.

"Giddie," "Dallion," "Maubert," "Battle," "Victor," Mr. Bower's "Maud," "Naomi," "Brida II," "Minnie," "Dolly," "Leopold," "Queenie," "Pierrette," "Bredaboy," "Mocky," and "Daisy." "Giddie" (Kennel Club Stud Book 26,957) and "Bridford Dolly" were probably the best that had appeared up to then. They are reported to have been remarkably true to type and of excellent shape and make.

Mr. Campbell Newington purchased "Laurie" and "D'Arcy" from Dr. Williams, of Hayward's Heath. "Laurie" was one of the best, if not the best, the Doctor had possessed. Mr. Newington also purchased "Lady Rosehill," a blue-blooded bitch, directly descended from Relf's strain. Later Mr. Newington purchased two pure Rosehill bitches, "Cyprus" and "Bustle." Amongst others

<sup>1</sup> Rawdon Lee.

<sup>2</sup> See also Field-spaniels, p. 328.





(Above) SPRINGERS OR COCK-FLUSHERS, WITH WILLIAM MANSELL, KEEPER TO THE DUKE OF NEWCASTLE (1807). Engraved by Wm. Nicholls. From "*Sporting Magazine*." (Below) "THE ONE ON THE LEFT IS OF THE SUSSEX BREED, THE OTHERS THE COMMON COCKERS" (1807). Engraved by Scott from a painting of Marshall. From "*Sporting Magazine*," 320a]





(Top) DOG AND DUCK. From an engraving by Howitt, in his "Groups of Animals" (1811).  
 (Centre) THE SPRINGER. Colonel Hamilton Smith in "Jardine's Naturalists' Library" (1843).  
 (Bottom) ALPINE OR GREAT ST. BERNARD DOG, AND KING CHARLES SPANIEL. From  
 the same work. [320b]

he bred "Rosehill Ruler II," a Sussex of the type of "Bridford Giddie," also "Romulus," "Reine," "Rita," "Rush," "Rock," "Rag," and "Ranji." There was also Mr. Robert Chapman's "Heather Glen," "Heather Ann," and "Heather May."

The Sussex gives tongue when on a scent; and it is possible to judge by the difference of the note what these dogs are hunting. Sometimes this throwing of their tongue becomes too much of a good thing, if used out of place. The writer had to dispense with an excellent Sussex which had developed the habit of giving tongue as soon as he put his gun to his shoulder. The deep note of a Sussex is a most pleasant sound, and has its value. A Sussex is a very handsome spaniel. They are all of a golden liver, a totally different colour than the liver of the Irish water-spaniel. Perhaps it is best expressed by golden chestnut. The colour, however, varies, liable to be affected by sun and weather, and may change to a light yellow brown.

The show points of the Sussex of to-day are:

*Head.*—The skull moderately long and wide, with an indentation in the middle, and decided stop; brows fairly heavy, occiput full, not pointed. An appearance of heaviness without dullness. *Eyes.*—Hazel, fairly large, soft and languishing, not showing overmuch haw. *Nose.*—The muzzle fairly long and square, and lips somewhat pendulous. The nostrils well developed and liver colour. *Ears.*—Thick, fairly large and lobe-shaped, set moderately low, but not relatively so low as in the Field Spaniel; carried close to the head and furnished with soft, wavy hair. *Neck.*—Long, strong and slightly arched, but not carrying the head much above the level of the back. There should not be much throatiness, but well-marked frill in the coat. *Shoulders and Chest.*—Former sloping and free, latter deep and well developed, but not too round and wide. *Back and Back Ribs.*—The back and loin are long, and should be very muscular both in width and depth. For this development the back ribs must be deep. The whole body is characterised as low, long, level, and strong. *Legs and Feet.*—The arms and thighs must be bony, as well as muscular; knees and hocks large and strong, pasterns very short and bony, feet large and round. The legs rather short and strong, with great bone and moderately well feathered. The hind legs should not be apparently shorter than the fore legs, or be too much bent at the hocks, so as to give a setter appearance, which is so objectionable. The hind legs should be well feathered above the hocks, but should not have much hair below this point. *Tail.*—Should be docked from 5 to 7 inches, set low and not carried above the level of the back; thickly clothed with moderately long feather. *Coat.*—Body coat abundant, flat, with no tendency to curl; moderately well feathered on legs and stern. *Colour.*—Rich golden liver.<sup>1</sup> *General Appearance.*—Rather massive and muscular, but with free movements. Weight from 40 to 50 lb.

### THE CLUMBER SPANIEL

I once heard a colonial visitor remark as he came to the Clumber benches, "Well! They're magnificent," for the Clumber as a show dog, with the massive frame and powerful limbs, the pure white coat, here and there marked with pale lemon and freckles on the face, the solemn and certainly majestic aspect of the heavy head,

<sup>1</sup> The Club adds the note that "golden liver" is a certain sign of purity, whilst dark liver or puce denotes a recent cross with some other spaniel variety.



makes this variety one not easily passed and always greatly admired. As workers, so excellent is their reputation that frequent wins at field trials are expected.

At the Show in 1859<sup>1</sup> a class for Clumbers was provided for the first time, organised by Mr. R. Brailsford, the trainer of the Earl of Derby's dogs. Lord Spencer won with a dog and bitch, reported by the "Field" to be probably the finest brace ever seen. Mr. Joseph Brailsford was highly commended, but there was no second; but at the following show at Birmingham on December 3 and 4, Mr. R. Boaler, who had been with the Duke of Portland, won "first" in both dog and bitch classes, whilst Earl Spencer was second in dogs, and Mr. R. S. Comberbach second in bitches.

It is an interesting fact that most of the famous show winners of early days were descended from Mr. Foljambe's dogs. Of these "Beau" became one of the most important "pillars" of the breed. He sired, amongst other famous dogs, "Nabob," the property of Mr. Rawdon Lee, one of the best of that time. "Nabob" passed through the hands of many of the leading spaniel men, Messrs. Phineas Bullock, Mr. Fletcher, Mr. Rawdon Lee, and Mr. G. Oliver. Mr. Foljambe's dogs failed in bone and in heads, but at the same time proved to be one of the most valuable strains for crossing to improve type.

There was "John o' Gaunt" (Kennel Club Stud Book 11,610), a dog bred by Mr. Foljambe, a model of perfection. Mr. H. H. Holmes was the owner of the famous "Tower," "Hotpot," "John o' Gaunt," and "Hermit," the last shown in Mr. McKenna's name in 1895. His kennels were noted for their short heads, which were remarkably good. They were excellent both in bone and colour. The Duke of Portland purchased the entire kennel in 1905. There also arrived on the scenes "Moston Beau," "Moston Duke," "Pomfret Mac," and "Wycombe Rattle," the latter a remarkable bitch, all well known on the bench; whilst "Friar Bob" and "Nora Friar" won considerable numbers of prizes. The prefix "Friar" was that of Mr. Thorpe Hincks, a celebrated breeder and owner, of Leicester, whose kindly thought for a worn-out Clumber, the ten-year-old "Brush II," is recorded by Mr. Lee. He was offered among the Holford kennels and Mr. Hincks purchased him, so that he might be certain that the old dog had a good home for his remaining days.

From this and other stock and more recent champions, "Baillie Friar," "Beechgrove Donally," "Goring of Auchtentorlie," "Hempsted Toby," and "Preston Shot,"<sup>2</sup> came many a noted dog.

It was in 1906 that Mr. Phillips showed at the Crystal Palace a young dog, "Rivington Rolfe," 1138L, a son of "Welbeck Plater," who caused considerable comment. He is described as a remarkable dog, massive-headed, full of Clumber type, with sound, straight limbs. He won his championship in 1907, and in all five certificates.

<sup>1</sup> The Show was attended by nearly 8,000 visitors; £500 was taken at the doors.

<sup>2</sup> Mr. Lee in his "Modern Dogs," Sporting Division, vol. ii, gives, as his opinion, the best three Clumbers of early days in the show ring, Mr. H. P. Charles's "Duke," Mr. Holford's "Trimbush" and "Nabob." More modern dogs: Mr. Holmes's "John o' Gaunt," Mr. Hincks's "Nora Friar," Messrs. Hoylock & Barnard's "Chelmsford Clytie," the Duke of Portland's "Fairy III," "Dawber," "Welbeck Bess," and "Fop," the Duchess of Newcastle's "Rally of Hardwicke," Mr. F. W. Williams's "Cadzou Dick," Mr. R. Chapman's "Wycombe Rattle," Mr. J. Farrow's "Fribble," Mr. Fellowes's "Alvaley Bruce," Mr. D. C. Davies's "Ferndale Punch," Mr. Parlett's "Trust and Truth," Mr. Pratt's "Colwyn Clown," Mr. Saunders's "Hempsted Toby" and "Trevallyn Bobs," Mr. Harvey's "Bengar," Mr. Kilbert's "Wirswall Judge," Mr. Francis's "Ranee," Messrs. Tilley's "Beechgrove Bertha."



In field trial the work of "Beechgrove Bee" was practically faultless. She won the first Field Trial Championship among spaniels. At the Spaniel Club's field trial in 1900, Champion "Beechgrove Bee"<sup>1</sup> won first in the Open Stakes, first in Stake for Retrieving Spaniels, first in the Brace Stake with "Beechgrove Minette." At the field trials of the Sports Spaniel Society in November of the same year this wonderful bitch won the All-age Stake, and the Soalby Challenge Cup for the best bitch. At the Spaniel Club's trials in December of that year, she won first prize in the Stakes for Retrieving Spaniels, first in the Open Stakes, and first with "Beechgrove Minette" in the Brace Stakes.

Amongst other famous Clumbers are the names of "Beechgrove Minette," "Beechgrove Maud," "Welbeck Sambo," "Rivington Honey," "Rivington Pearl," and "Rivington Reel," Ch. "Hempsted Toby," Ch. "Tramp of St. Mary's," "Pearl," "Beechgrove Bertha," and "Maud," all of which have won both field trials and on the bench. Good work and show points go well together in Clumberland.

In 1905 an animated controversy arose in the columns of the "Field" as to the desirability of Clumbers showing "haw." Many members of the Clumber Spaniel Club wished the wording to be deleted, considering that an exposed haw in a working dog rendered the eye liable to injury. Others considered it unsightly, unnecessary, and unwanted. A joint committee of the two Clubs, held at the field trial meeting of 1904, after considerable discussion, passed the amendment that the wording as to haw should be deleted; but at the meeting of the Spaniel Club the following year the omission of this characteristic from the description was more than ever strongly opposed by so many members and some of such leading positions that it appeared as if the haw was to remain. In the opinion of these gentlemen this was an important point, giving, as they stated, the true Clumber expression. But after considerable argument for and against, the suggested alteration was put to the vote and those in favour of its retention lost, so that the words no longer exist in the description of the Clumber.

In recent times the main changes in type seem to be in the length of body: to-day, in many show specimens, the body is shorter than that of earlier years.

But as a whole the breed is markedly improved. The terrier or the setter type of head has been eliminated. The head is now always of Clumber type, large, heavy, square, yet sufficiently long to allow easy retrieving; whilst broad on the top, the occipital area protrudes. The brows are heavy and the stop is deep.

The crooked fore legs, of basset type, have been eliminated, nor are long legs often to be met with. The body is deep and the ribs round, and the hind quarters whilst in proportion are heavy. At one time, too, many dogs which were good in head were out of proportion in their quarters, the hind quarters being weak more often than not.

A dog from the kennels of Miss Bible, of Taw Vale, Crediton, Devon, who specialises in working Clumbers, is shown on Plate 100.

The points of the breed are:

Head large, square, massive, medium length, broad on top, a decided occiput; heavy brows with deep stop. Muzzle heavy, well-developed. Eyes dark amber, sunk slightly, showing haw. Ears vine-leaf shaped, well covered with straight hair hanging slightly forward, feather not to extend below leather. Nose

<sup>1</sup> See also result of the second field trial of December 1899.

square, flesh-coloured. Neck thick, powerful, well feathered underneath. Body long, heavy, near ground. Chest wide, deep. Back straight, broad, long; loin powerful, well let down in flank. Hind quarters powerful, well developed. Stern set low, well feathered, carried level with back. Legs short, thick, strong; hocks low; feet large, round, well covered with hair. Coat abundant, short, straight. Colour white with lemon markings (orange permissible, not desirable), slight head markings with white body preferred. Dogs' weight, 60–75 lb.; bitches', 50 to 60 lb.

#### ENGLISH SPRINGER SPANIEL

The English springer is registered for the first time as a separate variety in the Kennel Club Stud Book of 1902. It was, however, by no means a new variety, but actually one of the oldest types. It is longer on the leg than the other spaniels, and a larger dog. Known as the Norfolk spaniel, it was found all over the country, merely bred and kept for work. For its history we refer you to the pages on the spaniels. When the variety came into favour, Mr. W. Arkwright, Sir Hugo Fitzherbert, Mr. C. C. Bethune Eversfield, of Denne Park, Horsham, Sussex, Mr. H. Jones, of Ipswich, and Mr. Winton Smith were some of the more important breeders. To-day, amongst others, Major H. Doyne-Ditmas, of Wootton House, near Bedford (whose famous and well-known dog Ch. "Boghurst Carlo" is shown on Plate 101), and Lady Portal, of Whitchurch, Hants, are noted for their excellent working and show strains.

Some of the best of the earlier dogs were "Beechgrove Will," "Ark," "Tessington Fan," "Bounce," "Fansome," and those of Mr. Eversfield named after explosives—"Velox Powder," "Nitro Powder," etc.

It is worthy of record that an English springer, "Tring," the property of Mr. Gardner, beat the noted field-trial winning Clumber "Beechgrove Bee" at the 1901 field trials. "Hoar Cross Duchy" was the property of Mr. C. Watts.

The standard is as follows:

Skull long, slightly arched on top, fairly broad, with a stop, well-developed temples. Jaws long, broad, not snipy. Eyes medium size, not too full, bright, intelligent, of a rich brown. Ears fair length, low set, lobular in shape. Neck long, strong, slightly arched. Shoulders long, sloping. Fore legs a moderate length, straight, with flat strong bone. Body strong, with well-sprung ribs, good girth, chest deep, fairly broad. Loin long, strong, slightly arched. Hind quarters very muscular; hocks well let down; stifles moderately bent, not twisted. Feet strong, compact. Stern low carried, not above level of back. Coat thick, smooth, very slightly wavy. Feathering moderate on ears and scanty on legs, but continued down to heels. Colour, liver-and-white, black-and-white (with or without tan), fawn-and-white, also roans. Height at shoulder 21 inches, weight about 40 lb.

#### THE WELSH SPRINGER SPANIEL

Their story is of considerable interest. A controversy at one time arose as to their antiquity. Welsh spaniels were mentioned by *Stonehenge* in his work of 1859, and it



is very probable that these were the ancestors of the present-day variety. Like all the spaniel family, they are a branch of the at-one-time various coloured and shaped spaniels, which by careful segregation and choice inbreeding became a fixed type.

In 1902 the Kennel Club gave the breed a separate classification. In reference to the controversy, the late Mr. A. T. Williams, in a letter to the "Field," writes:

"This spaniel does exist as an absolutely distinct variety, and differs from all other spaniels in type, colour, and other respects, but it is evident he is practically not known or understood outside of Wales. It is true he has not been shown on the bench in England until recently, because it was useless doing so, and indeed, unless certain sportsmen had realised three or four years ago that the working spaniel deserved attention, I doubt whether even now the Welsh spaniel would be exhibited in England. The orange (or red) and white spaniels of the type now shown as Welsh spaniels were bred, and worked in a team of ten or a dozen, by my late grandfather a hundred years ago, principally upon woodcock, over an immense tract of rough country. Subsequently my late father (for upwards of fifty years) bred and worked them until he died, when I took them over. Thus for a period of a hundred years (continuously) these spaniels have been bred and worked by my own family and myself.

"The same spaniels have also been bred and worked for a very long period of years by Sir John T. D. Llewelyn, Bart., of Penllergare, and his ancestors, and at the present time Sir John works a team of them that cannot, I believe, be beaten in the field. They have also existed for similar periods at Llanharran (frequently referred to as 'the old Llanharran strain'), at Greenmeadow, at Pontneath Vaughan, and other places. The dog I have so successfully shown named 'Corrin' was bred and given to me by Colonel Blandy-Jenkins, of Llanharran.

"The ear of the Welsh spaniel, amongst other things, differs essentially from that of all others, and offers a minimum of opportunity for thorns, gorse, and other rough material in and through which he has to do his work. He is exceedingly active and strong, and as an illustration of his powers of endurance and courage I may mention that I worked the team which was placed first at the last trials of the Sporting Spaniel Society six days in succession over some of the roughest country we have, and at the end of the week they were fresh and full of energy.

"I feel sure that if the untold value of the Welsh spaniel for work were more widely known, the show authorities would not grudge him a class, and it is in the interests of sport that he should be brought before the public. Of course, he is not the type we have seen on the English show-bench in the past; but, notwithstanding everything, he has preserved his identity and individuality, and also his working properties, and is unrivalled in rough country where game is not plentiful and where a good deal of ground has to be covered. Otherwise he would not have survived (as he has done) the influence which the show-bench has exercised.

"I have closely studied and shot over spaniels of all breeds during the last thirty years, and (speaking, I hope, without any prejudice) I am bound to say that I am most strongly of opinion the Welsh spaniel is the best spaniel living for work."

Lieut.-Colonel Downes-Powell, the Hon. Secretary of the Welsh Springer Spaniel Club, writing from Artillery House, Penarth, to me, substantiates the above. "Bred for work, they have not been seen on the show-bench," he writes, "until



Mrs. Greene, the late Mr. A. T. Williams, Mr. J. Jones, and others brought them out a few years before the War.

"One of the oldest breeders, undoubtedly, was the family of Lewis, of Greenmeadow, near Cardiff. The late Colonel Lewis informed me that he and his father and his grandfather had bred them for well over a hundred years. The late Mr. Blandy-Jenkins, of Llanharan, was also a very early breeder, and his father before him. The late Mr. Adams-Williams was a very well known breeder in Monmouthshire, and the late Mr. A. T. Williams always stated that his family had bred the Welsh springer for well over a hundred years. Of more recent years Mrs. Greene and Mr. F. Morris are among the most successful breeders.

"Several dogs have lately gone to America, where there is a growing demand for them. India and France are also making inquiries for them. Prior to the War several were sent to India, as it was found they stood the climate well. There is only *one colour, red-and-white.*"

It is interesting that whilst red in most if not all parti-coloured dogs is debarred, in the Welsh springer it should be the colouring desired. Compared to spaniels generally, the Welsh springer is a small dog. It is less heavily built than the cocker, though about the same size. The head is finer, the ears shaped like those of a Clumber, comparatively small, and gradually narrowing towards the tip. The ideal weight is considered to be 28 lb., but up to 45 lb. is allowed.

A club was formed in 1907, and a new club in 1922. The dogs which have done the most for the breed are pre-war dogs: "Coryn of Gerwn," "Cimla Dash," "Long-Mynd Ruth," "Long-Mynd Megan"; and since the War, Ch. "Barglam Bang." The only winner at trials and on the show-bench since the War was "Marged O'Matherne." Before the War the late Mr. A. T. Williams's dogs "Don," "Rose," "Dash," and "Coryn" (all "of Gerwn") were winners both at field trials and on the show-bench.

Plate 101 shows "Cimla Dash" and the very typical Welsh springer show champion "Felcourt Flapper," the property of Lieut.-Colonel J. Downes-Powell.

The show points of the breed are: Head not heavy, medium light, with moderate stop. Skull fairly long, fairly broad, slightly rounded, with stop at eyes. Jaws medium length, straight, fairly square; the nostrils well developed, flesh-coloured or dark. A short, chubby head objectionable. Eyes hazel or dark, medium size, not prominent, not sunken, nor showing haw. Ears set moderately low and hanging close to the cheeks, comparatively small, gradually narrowing towards tip, covered with feather not longer than the ear. Neck strong, muscular, clean in throat. Shoulders long, sloping. Fore legs medium length, straight, good bone, moderately feathered. Body strong, fairly deep, not long; well-sprung ribs. Length proportionate to length of leg. Loin muscular, strong, slightly arched, well coupled up and knit. Hind quarters strong; hocks well let down; stifles moderately bent (not twisted); no feather below hock on leg. Feet round, pads thick. Stern low, never carried above back, feathered. Coat thick, straight or flat. Colour red or orange and white. Weight about 28 lb. or upwards, but not exceeding 45 lb.

#### COCKER SPANIELS

The cocking spaniel of Taplin (see Plate 92) is to-day a short, compact dog, with good neck and shoulders, of about the same height as "length of back." In colour

he varies from a solid black to blue-roads and tri-colours. The coat is flat, silky. The eye is neither too prominent nor sunken. The weight is between 25 and 28 lb.<sup>1</sup>

The cocker is considered one of the best all-round utility gun-dogs. "Falconer's Cowslip," illustrated on Plate 100, the property of Mrs. Jamieson Higgins, West Parley House, Wimborne, is of the famous Ware strain of Mr. H. S. Lloyd by Ch. "Invader of Ware," dam Ch. "Exquisite of Ware."

On the cocker Mr. Rawdon Lee<sup>2</sup> informs us that the Manchester Show of 1892 had the best class he had seen, that there were fourteen of different types exhibited, some of the old type, some of the new.<sup>3</sup> Of the old type there was Mr. H. J. Price's "Ditton Brevity" and "Gaiety," and Mr. Carew-Gibson's "Grove Rose" and "Merry Belle." Mr. Lee had a preference for the small type, and so did not agree that the minimum weight of 20 lb. was desirable, stating that there had been "charming little old-time cockers of about 15 lb. . . . able to crawl through high coverts where a 25-lb. dog" would find difficulty. Since he penned these words the weight has increased, and 25-lb. dogs are considered a fair weight, 28 lb. being, according to the standard, the suggested limit.

From personal experience I have found the 25 to 28-lb. cocker for work out of all comparison to the 10 or 15-lb. dogs, the latter being, I suggest, too small for serious hard work, with insufficient strength to force their way through entangled herbage.

In 1880 Mr. Farrow's "Obo" was exhibited. This dog is considered one of the most, if not *the* most, important of the earlier dogs. He was of a different stamp from the cockers in favour—long-bodied, low-legged types. He was the first of the modern cockers. This "Obo" blood contains "Miss Obo," "Lily Obo," "Tim" and "Minnie," Frank, Ted, and Betty Obo—a family then greatly prized in America, so that many of the best were exported.

The Rivington family was also very important in coloured cockers. Of these was "Rivington Signal" the sire of "Rivington Bloom," the dam of "Redcoat." "Redcoat" was sold to France, and later brought back to this country by Mr. Lloyd. He sired remarkable stock, including "Rivington Bluegown," sold to Canada.

There was also the famed Braeside stock, of which "Bob" went to the United States; and "Braeside Judy," one of the best workers of that time. It is to the Braeside blood that the noted Bowdler family, the property of Mr. R. de C. Peele, of Ludlow, owed its origin. These perfectly delightful dogs were "Ben," "Bob," "Bowdler," "Eva," "Susan," "Rufus," "Mary," etc.; also "Ben" and "Bob" remarkable as sires. The family in colour was a mixed one, some black, others liver-roads and tan, others blue-roads, etc.

The standard is as follows:

Muzzle and jaw square; stop distinct but not too decided. Skull and forehead well developed. Eyes full, not prominent, hazel or brown. Ears lobular, set low, leather fine, not extending beyond nose, well covered with hair, but free from curls or ringlets. Neck long, strong. Body not so low and long as in other spaniels, but more compact. Chest deep, not too wide; shoulders sloping. Back and loins very strong in proportion, slight droop towards tail. Hind quarters wide, rounded, muscular. Stern set low, carried in line with back. Feet cat-like, firm, round. Legs well boned; feather straight. Nose wide and well developed. Colours various. In self-colours, white shirt-front allowed, but not white feet.

<sup>1</sup> Mr. H. S. Lloyd.

<sup>2</sup> "Modern Dogs."

<sup>3</sup> This would suggest an uneven class.



## FIELD SPANIELS

Writing on the "Black Field Spaniel," Rawdon B. Lee describes it as "sleek, silken coat, glossy and bright, even as the sheen on the raven's wing, a most attractive creature," but he considers the breed more of show-dogs than workers, and writes—"they are brushed and groomed methodically and with as much regularity as a maiden will attend to her own toilet." He points out the desire for exaggerated characteristics, such as abnormal length; too short legs, and also that many were lacking in head points. He describes a "charming little bitch 'Nellie,'" one of Mr. Phineas Bullock's, "perfect in her line, sweet in expression, lovely in size and hang of ears, straight in coat;" and that she would have made an excellent dog for work. Her weight was 35 lb. He tells us that Mr. Footman of Lutterworth's strain passed into Mr. Burdett's hands, and then to Mr. Jones, to Mr. Phineas Bullock, and to Mr. Oscott. Later into the ranks of Field spaniels came Mr. H. B. Spurgin, Dr. Boulton, Mr. W. Gillett and Mr. Schofield. The most famous dogs were "Flirt," and "Old Bob," the last "never been excelled, perhaps never equalled. According to Mr. Lee, these dogs scaled somewhere close to 30 lb., and it was only later that the heavier type were developed. The Field spaniel to-day is a worker and a show-dog combined. There was no reason why they should not be.

The origin of the variety as we have seen was the Sussex cross with the spaniel of Devon and of Wales, known as the Devonshire and Welsh Cocker.

It was in this breed that Mr. Phineas Bullock had such remarkable success. Indeed for twelve years not only did his dogs carry all before them, but the winners in other hands were of his breeding, or his strain. Mr. T. Jacobs, of Newton Abbot, was very successful on a lesser scale, and his stock made high prices. It was his "Perfection" that was sold to Mr. M. Woolland for £380; but unfortunately would not breed. "The last dozen dogs Mr. Jacobs sold realised £1,500."<sup>1</sup> His strain, and he made no secret of its origin, were bred by Sussex crosses, to get more weight in body and shorter legs. Mr. Jacobs dispersed his kennel in 1891.

After this Mr. Woolland became the leading exhibitor with a strain mainly that of Mr. Jacobs. At Mr. Woolland's dispersal sale excellent prices were made, 120 guineas being the top price paid for "Bridford Duke," whilst "Florrie" went to America at 100 guineas. Twenty dogs and bitches realised 656 guineas.<sup>1</sup>

It can be understood that during the last 50 years or so, little intermingling of blood between "black" and the "any other colour" has taken place. Breeders of both varieties were far too anxious to keep their colours true. Whilst the blacks have always been the favourite, "Field Spaniels other than black" have had considerable support. In the latter the colours are various; black and tan markings are frequent, whilst flecking is often present, but orange is rarely seen. Mr. Lee refers to "Sam" and "Flora," liver and white, the property of Mr. Burgess of Brighouse, in Yorkshire. These two spaniels were at one time said to be Sussex. Both had excellent ears, but were higher on the leg than the dogs of to-day. They belonged to a strain greatly valued by Mr. Hopcroft, of Nottingham.

At Caistor Hall, near Norwich, a strain of black, tan, and white-and-roan were kept of Sir Richard Wallace's stock. Of these Mr. Lee states that he has not seen any

<sup>1</sup> Rawdon Lee.



dogs that took his fancy more than they did. They weighed over 40 lb., were both good workers and winners on the show-bench. The Club describes the variety as similar to the blacks except in such details as given below. Black-and-Tans, Black Tan, and White Roans were to have hazel or brown eyes; Liver-and-Tans, lighter eyes than the latter; Livers, light hazel eyes. The nose was to vary according to colour. Black-and-Tans, Black Tan, and White Roans were to have black noses; the others liver-coloured noses.

*Head*.—Skull well developed, with distinctly elevated occipital tuberosity; not too wide across muzzle, long and lean, never snipy nor squarely cut, and in profile curving gradually from nose to throat; lean beneath eyes, a thickness here gives coarseness to the whole head. *Eyes*.—Not too full, but not small, receding or overhung; colour dark hazel or dark brown, or nearly black; grave in expression. *Ears*.—Set low down, moderately long and wide, clad with Setter-like feather. *Neck*.—Long, strong, muscular. *Body* (including Size and Symmetry).—Well ribbed up to good strong loin, straight or slightly arched, never slack; weight from about 35 pounds to 50 pounds. Height about 18 inches. *Nose*.—Well developed, with good open nostrils. *Shoulders and Chest*.—Former sloping and free, latter deep and well developed, but not too round and wide. *Back and Loin*.—Very strong and muscular; level and long in proportion to the height of the dog. *Hind quarters*.—Very powerful and muscular, wide, and fully developed. *Stern*.—Well set on, and carried low, if possible below the level of the back, in a perfectly straight line or with a slight downward inclination, never elevated above the back, and in action always kept low, nicely fringed, with wavy feather of silky texture. *Feet and Legs*.—Feet not too small; well protected between the toes with soft feather; good strong pads. Legs straight and well boned, strong and short, and nicely feathered with straight or waved Setter-like feather, overmuch feathering below the hocks objectionable. *Coat*.—Flat or slightly waved, and never curled. Sufficiently dense to resist weather, and not too short. Silky in texture. On chest under belly, and behind the legs, abundant feather (Setter-like). The tail and hind quarters should be similarly adorned. *Colour*.<sup>1</sup>—In black, jet black throughout, glossy and true. A little white on chest, though a drawback, not a disqualification.

Mr. Mortimer Smith writes me: "I consider the field spaniel has, in the last five years, made rapid strides. One rarely sees the crooked fore legs and cow hocks of ten years ago; instead, we have a handsome, sound dog, that can do a hard day's work. Several high-class show specimens are now being run successfully at field trials." Mr. Theo. Marples described (August 3, 1923) the modern type as "a rationally-built Field Spaniel," continuing: "that is to say, a dog of medium height on leg, a little lower on the leg than a Springer and a little longer in the body, with his long and beautifully-chiselled head, square foreface, and intelligent expression—a well-balanced dog throughout, active and alert"—"substance, coat and contour, all spell 'UTILITY.'"

<sup>1</sup> The following note appears in the Field Spaniel Society official standard of points: "The field spaniel should be a self-coloured dog, viz.: a black or a sport from black, i.e. liver, golden liver, mahogany red, roans; or any one of these colours with tan over the eyes, on the cheeks, feet and pasterns. Other colours, such as black and white, liver and white, red or orange and white, etc., while not disqualifying a dog (provided the architecture is correct), will not be considered so desirable since it is the aim of the Society to make a clear distinction between the field and the springer spaniel."

## CHAPTER III

### SETTERS

"A Setter was quite to my taste  
In alley or streets, broad or narrow,  
Till one day I met  
A very dead set  
At a very dead horse in a barrow."

THOMAS HOOD (1798-1845), "Dog-grel verses by a Poor Blind."

THE setter is closely related to the spaniel. To "set" or "crouch" is, of course, the natural result of timidity. A dog whilst crouching is under better control, and less likely to spring the game. Lying close to the ground the dog was not in the way of the net as it was drawn over. Later, this habit was found useful to sportsmen in walking up to birds, but setting had disadvantages in the shooting-field, and it was not long before sportsmen preferred dogs to stand and point, for setting dogs in heather or long herbage were lost to view.<sup>1</sup>

The varieties at an early date in the history of the breed were divided into (1) the English setter, (2) the Irish setter, (3) the black-and-tan (or Gordon) setter, varying from each other in minor differences and to some extent in temperament.

That the spaniel was crossed with the pointer to make the setter is the opinion of olden-day writers, and I think we can take it to be correct without any doubt whatsoever.

In Edward III.'s reign, according to Joseph Strutt, a fourteenth century MS. states that "Hys crafte is for the perdrich, or partridge, and the quaile; and when taught to crouch, he is very serviceable to those who take these birds with nets."<sup>2</sup>

Dr. Caius describes a Spaniel as a *Canis index* which creeps forward, low down, and indicates the right spot by his paw, of use with nets (see p. 77). He probably referred to the fact that dogs when pointing will frequently stand with one paw held up.

Birch, in "Boyle's Travels," writes (1627-91): "It is wont to be somewhat surprizing to men of letters, when they first go a hawking with good Spaniels, to observe, with how great sagacity those dogs will take notice of, and distinguish by the scent, the places where partridges, quails, etc., have lately been. But I have much more wondered at the quick scent of an excellent Setting-dog, who, by his way of ranging the fields, and his other motions, especially of his head, would not only intimate to us the kinds of game, whose scent he chanced to light on, but would discover to us where partridges have been, though perhaps without staying in that place, several hours before, and assist us to guess how long they had been gone before we came." And a document of 1685,<sup>3</sup> signed by one John Harris, referring to setting of a spaniel in Daniel's "Rural Sports" of 1803. It reads:

<sup>1</sup> When spaniels were first taught to "set" or "sit" is unknown. In Anthony & Wood's "Attenæ Oxon" of 1721 appears the following passage, in reference to Robert Dudley, son of Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester, born in 1574: "He was a handsome personable Man tall of Stature, red hair'd, and of admirable comport, and above all, noted for riding the great Horse, for tilting, and for his being the first of all that taught a Dog to sit in order to catch Partridges."

<sup>2</sup> I have not been able to verify this statement further than Rawdon Lee.

<sup>3</sup> Rawdon Lee gives 1485, but this is clearly a mistake.

" RIBBESFORD, Oct. 7th, 1685.

" I, John Harris, of Willdon, in the parish of Hastlebury, in the county of Worcester, Yeoman, for and in consideration of ten shillings of lawful English money this day received of Henry Herbert, of Ribbesford, in the said county, Esq., and of thirty shillings more of like money by him promised to be hereafter pay'd me, doe hereby covenant and promise to and with the said Henry Herbert, his exōrs and admōrs, that I will, from day of the date hereof, untill the first day of March next, well and sufficiently mayntayne and keepe a Spanill Bitch named *QUAUD* this day delivered into my custody by the said Henry Herbert, and will before the said first day of March next fully and effectually traine up and teach the said Bitch to Sitt Partridges, Pheasants and other game, as well and exactly as the best sitting Dogges usually Sett the same. And the said Bitch, so trayned and taught, shall and will delivere to the said Henry Herbert, or whom he shall appoint to receive her, att his house in Ribbesford aforesaid, on the first day of March next. And if at any time after the said Bitch shall, for want of use or practise or oṛwise, forgett to sett game as aforesaid, I will at my costes and charges maynetayne her for a month, or longer, as often as need shall require, to trayne up and teach her to sett game as aforesaid, and shall and will fully and effectually teach her to sett game as well and exactly as is above mentyon'd.

" Witsesse my hand and seal this day and year

first above written,

" John Harris his × Mark.

" Sealed and delivered in presence of H. Payne his × Mark."

Early illustrations show the setter or setting spaniel at work. One of the most interesting of these is that of Blome in the "*Gentleman's Recreation*" of 1686. We see the net being drawn over the spaniel and the partridges.

The searching out by scent is described vividly by Greek and Roman authorities (see Appendix)—descriptions which might be allotted to either the spaniel, setter, or pointer. A remarkable example is that given by Xenophon in 445-335 B.C.<sup>1</sup>

In 1732 a small work on dogs was published which gives some interesting notes on the setter. "*The Setting Dog*, which is most familiar with us, is spotted with liver-colour and white, the use of him is to range the Fields, and Sett Partridges; he is of the Spaniel kind, and of a middling size, has a very tender nose, and will quarter a Field in a little time; if he is of a right strain, take him at nine months old, with a Halter about his neck, with Hob Nails in it, and teach him to crouch down at a Bit of Bread, or a dead Partridge, if you can get one, and Especially learn him to let a Net be drawn over him without stirring, which can only be done by giving the Discipline of the hob-nail'd collar, and making the experiment of drawing a Net over him at the same time."

The author then gives information as to the treatment a Setter requires, which I think well merits a place here :

<sup>1</sup> " Some again go a long way round in the first instance and anticipating the trail in their circuit before they have reached it, pass the hare by, and whenever they light on his tracks, follow uncertain indications, and when they do sight the hare in advance, tremble, and do not proceed until they see him make a move."



" This sort of dog should be kept from much Flesh Meat, and in a Stable, or some other warm place, for his Nose is very tender, and should by no means smell Variety of Victuals, his smell should be as innocent as possible, that when he searches for his game, his whole sense should be diverted to that alone. Some of these dogs have taken twenty or thirty Brace of Birds in a Season."

Bewick's<sup>1</sup> account of the setter is a very short one, He refers to its " sagacity in discovering the various kinds of game," and its caution " in approaching them " as " truly astonishing " ; but as the uses of this valuable dog are so well known, he does not consider it necessary to add more, merely giving a quotation from Somerville (1675-1742) :

" When autumn smiles, all-beauteous in decay,  
And paints each chequer'd grove with various hues,  
My setter ranges in the new-shorn fields,  
His nose in air erect ; from ridge to ridge  
Panting he bounds, his quarter'd ground divides.  
In equal intervals, nor careless leaves  
One inch untry'd. At length the tainted gales  
His nostrils wide inhale ; quick joy elates  
His beating heart, which, aw'd by discipline  
Severe, he dares not own, but cautious creeps,  
Low-cow'ring step by step ; at last attains  
His proper distance ; there he stops at once,  
And points with his instructive nose upon  
The trembling prey."

Osboldiston, in his " Sporting Dictionary " (1792), describes the setting-dog " as a dog trained up to the setting of partridges, etc.," and writes that this dog may be either " a land-spaniel, water-spaniel, or a mongrel between both, or indeed the shallow flewed hound, tumbler, lurcher, or small bastard mastiff, but none is better than the land-spaniel. He should be of a good nimble size, rather small than thick, and of a courageous mettle, which though not to be discerned, being very young, yet it may be very well known in a right breed, strong, lusty, and nimble rangers, of active feet, wanton tails, and busy nostrils." <sup>2</sup>

Under the title of " English Setter," Taplin informs us that the dog passing under this denomination is a " species of pointer, originally produced by a commixture between the Spanish pointer and the larger breed of the English spaniel ; which, by careful cultivation, has attained a considerable degree of estimation and celebrity, as well for its figure as its qualifications."

He mentions the " elegant uniformity of figure, shape, make, and speed ; a pleasing variegation in colour (as yellow or brown pied) ; an inexpressible diffidence and solicitation of notice, accompanied by an aspect of affability, humility, and an anticipation of gratitude far beyond the power of the pen to depict or the pencil to delineate." Reinagle's picture is of a white setter close up to a cock pheasant hiding in amongst the kale. The sportsman is advancing with gun in hand (notice the loops holding the ramrod under the single barrel).

Taplin informs us that " although the setting dog is in general use merely for

<sup>1</sup> 1790.

<sup>2</sup> He copied it without acknowledgment from " The Compleat Sportsman," by Giles Jacob, 1718.

the purpose of taking partridges with the draw-net, yet they are sometimes brought into occasional use with the gun, and are equally applicable to that appropriation; except in turnips, French wheat, standing clover, ling, furze, or other covert, where their sudden drop and point may not be easily observed."

After some notes on breeding a setter, and on the ancient purity of the "English springing spaniel" when compared with the pointer, he writes that in Ireland spaniels are very rare, and that Woodcocks are found by setters "in the moors" during the early part of the season. Also that the sporting gentlemen of Ireland are more partial to setters than pointers; whilst Bingley, in his "British Quadrupeds" (1808), under "Setter," subtitles the heading with "*Index*," "*English Spaniel*," "*Old English Setter*," and writes that it is closely allied to the spaniel, "and is to this day" frequently termed English spaniel, and that they needed plenty of water as "they could not endure thirst." He gives a story from Daniel's "Rural Sports," showing the "stoutness" of the setter, how a Mr. Elwes was followed by his setter to London, which hunted all the fields adjoining the road, though a distance of sixty miles.<sup>1</sup>

In 1814 was published the first work entirely devoted, except for the notes on shooting, to the making and breaking of setters and pointers. The title-page reads:

"THE KUNOPÆDIA

*A practical essay on  
Breaking or Training the  
English Spaniel or Pointer  
with  
instructions for attaining  
the  
Art of shooting Flying*

BY THE LATE WILLIAM DOBSON, ESQ.,  
of Eden Hall, Cumberland.

(PRINTED BY C. WHITTINGHAM  
Goswell street  
For the Editor)  
1814.  
A posthumous work."

Setters are considered under the heading "English Spaniel." It contains numerous hints on breeding dogs and some amusing instructions as to the handling of a gun. If we were to take Bell's (1837) illustration of a setter to represent the type, the breed had certainly deteriorated since Taplin, for the animal is a coarsely bred setter with a short nose, failing badly in coat. He writes that in figure it partakes of the characters of the pointer and spaniel, from which it is most probably descended; but setters were probably better than Bell's artist drew them, and he was unlucky in his choice of a model, for Colonel H. Smith, in 1843, shows a chocolate-

<sup>1</sup> "Rural Sports," ii.

coloured setter, with a broad white mark on chest, also of inferior type to what we might expect. But on another plate is a large and beautiful dog, white with brown-red markings. He writes that the "least adulterated breed" was to be found in Ireland, where high prices were paid for the best, and we may hazard the opinion that the brown setter with the white mark on chest was supposed to represent the Irish one. He adds that it is doubtful if they are any better than the latter, and suggests that they have the fault of being headstrong and unruly.

Richardson takes us further. He tells us that of the several varieties of setters, the ordinary old English setter, with rather a square head and heavy chops, looking as if he had a dash of Spanish pointer in him, was coloured "usually liver and white." The Irish setter, narrower in the head, finer in the muzzle, was usually of a dun or yellow colour, and that this dog was in very high esteem and had no trace of the pointer to be seen in him. He is of the opinion that these were the genuine, unmixed descendants of the original land-spaniel; and "so highly valued are they that a hundred guineas is by no means an unusual price for a single dog." A "very superior breed of these dogs, belonging to Sir John Blunden, Bart., of Castle Blunden, in the County Kilkenny," was described and figured in a work published some time ago, by Jennings, London. There was also a celebrated breed of these dogs,—now, he believed, extinct—kept by an ancient and noble Irish family, the O'Connors of Offaly: those belonging to the late Maurice O'Connor were also highly renowned, and these are said by his grandson to be yet remaining. He writes that "the Scotch" setter stood higher on his legs; was usually black-and-tan in colour; and had "the apex of the skull very prominent, the hair long and silky, the tail well fringed and fan-like, and is altogether a very beautiful dog. He is somewhat quarrelsome, however, and of a forgetful disposition; whence he is not only hard to break, but, in general, requires a repetition of the lesson at the commencement of each season." He gives us a note on the black setter, "a scarce dog; very beautiful and very staunch. I saw lately a superb brace in Dublin, the property of Mr. Maziere."

Edwards, as we have seen, in 1800 gives three types, which we can presume were the English, Irish, and Gordon.

*Stonehenge*, in his first book, shows a picture of a collie-like setter, "Sailor," which he describes to be "a perfect specimen." He tells us that the old crouching style of setting was already lost, and that the setter then was desired to stand to game. He considers the Irish setter more able than the English setter to stand cold and wet, but suggests that the Irish setter is less steady and more wilful, and also incapable of bearing the heat without constant water. "Indeed," he writes, "some rough-coated setters, both Irish and English, cannot work at all when their skins are dry, and unless they can run into a pool every half-hour at least, they blow like porpoises; and are utterly useless."

The points of the English and Irish dogs were alike, but the Irish were "more leggy." The colour of the Irish generally a rich dark red, with still darker muzzle, occasionally "actually black," but more often a rich mahogany, the same dark shade running down the back of the stern, "which has the short hair as dark as the muzzle." Many had "more or less white about their limbs, but the mouth should always be black and the less white they have, the more thorough-bred they are considered." The English setter, however, had "almost always" a foundation of white, with



ticking of black, liver, yellow, red, and "heads of such colours," but some were pure black, or pure white, others black-and-tan.

In 1867 *Stonehenge*, in his "Dogs of the British Islands," deals fully with the three types of setters. Thirty pages are devoted to them. He gives a reason for the modern types and the variations to be found amongst them in a somewhat amusing way. He writes that whilst the net used in different countries required the same character of dog, shooting required several different kinds, "the moors, the Grampians, the Norfolk turnips (before they were sown in drills), the Irish potato field; the low Scottish wolds, or the fens of Lincoln, all required dogs of different types." So he continues, "if we collected together twenty of the best setters in England, we would observe a marked difference in their structure and coat and texture. All might be true setters, but totally different in certain respects."

He adds a warning to breeders that prize winning at shows was not enough; working powers were the main thing. He says that in appearances the English setter has greatly improved, and shows Mr. Whitfield's "Byron," what we would to-day consider to be a large and badly bred spaniel. The article is the work of "a breeder of great Experience," so the wording reads. This "Byron" had won, he tells us, the "Grand Gold Medal" at the Paris Show! He describes the winner of this "grand medal" as a lemon-and-white, and one of the most perfect specimens ever exhibited. "His head, feet, legs, back, loin, stern, and carriage are all remarkably good."

He gives the following description with the points he allots to them:

"1. *The Head*.—This should not be so heavy as the pointers, nor so wide across the ears. There should be at least 4 inches from the inner corner of the eye to the point of the nose. In many first-class dogs there is half an inch more. The nasal bone should be rather depressed in the centre, and slightly raised at the nostrils. The nose and nostrils large; the nose dark liver-coloured or black, and moist and shining. The jaws should be level and the teeth exactly level in front. Though nothing detracts more from appearances than the snipe-nose, there should not be that fullness of lip allowable in the pointer, but at the angles of the mouth the lips should be rather pendulous. The ears should be set low in the head, larger where they are attached than at the tips, which should be round—not vine-leaved or pointed. They should never be pricked or carried forward, even on the point. The eye should be sparkling, large, not protruding like the King Charles, but well set and full of intelligence. The neck long, thin, slightly arched at the crest, and clean-cut where it joins the head—this last a most important point. We should give head 10, nose 10, neck 5, ears 5—as in the pointer's scale.

"2. *Frame and Outline*.—The shoulders should be well back, the blades long, the muscles well developed throughout. Ribs, not so round as the pointers', the back ribs deep—a *great point*. The chest *deep*, but not wide. The loin broad and arched slightly, and the hips wide at the risk of being ragged. The hind quarter square, strongly made, and the stifles well bent. We give loins 6, shoulders 6, hind quarters 6, chest 4, outline 3.

"3. *Feet and Legs*.—We come next to the feet and legs, which have to stand a large proportion of the wear and tear. We prefer round, cat-like feet to the spoor or hare foot, though many good judges differ from us. An experience of more than twenty years leads us to prefer the round foot, with toes well arched, as distributing

the power of the toes more equally, and as best suited for every description of shooting ground—in fact the foxhound foot and his leg with it. The feet should be straight, neither turned in nor out. The toes should be well furnished with hair, which, in the best breeds, forms a tuft between the toes, and protects the sole, being replenished as fast as it wears away. The pasterns should be nearly upright and large; the knees large; the fore legs upright; and in a standing position the leg should be like good fore legs in a horse, the feet slightly in the advance of straight; the hocks strong, set a little in, if there is any deviation at all from a straight line. We allot feet 8, leg 7, hocks 5.

“4. *General Quality or Character and Stern.*—By character we mean that indefinite refinement which gives a general notion of excellence, conveying an impression in the judge's mind which he would find it hard to define. The stern should be set well up the back, and carried with a gentle undulating sweep upwards. The feather should be flat, silky, and deepest in the centre, going off to nothing at the tip itself, which should be fine and pointed, by no means blunt or clubbed. We give tail and character 10.

“5. *The Coat.*—The coat should be of the finest silky texture, devoid of all curl, and the less waved the better. Though copious enough to fringe the profile of the whole body (except the head and spring of the neck), it should not be heavy. There should be an inclination in the coat to part down the back. We allot 15 points to texture and feather. We place the colours in order of merit: (1) orange-and-white, with freckled nose and legs; (2) orange-and-white; (3) lemon-and-white; (4) black-and-white ticked with slight tanned spots on feet, leg, commonly called ‘Belton greys; (5) pure white; (6) black; (7) fallow or yellow; (8) liver or liver-and-white. We have heard of a breed of slate-colour, with tanned feet and masks, but we have never seen them. We may observe that, wherever the dog is partly *white*, there should be a blaze of white down the forehead and a spot in the centre. *The absence of this blaze* gives a heavy expression to the countenance.”

The article in “Byron” appeared in the “Field,” and the following week *Breechloader* wrote, after giving details of what a setter ought to be, that the “ill-shaped mongrels, which had had prizes awarded to them, ought to be substituted by good game stud dogs.” He does not suggest that “Byron” is one of those ill-shaped mongrels, but the inference is that “Byron” is alluded to. This roused the owner of “Byron,” who wrote to say that “Byron” *was the possessor of a pedigree*. Also that his sire's brother “Don” had won the Grand Gold Medal in Paris, whilst the pedigree of the dam “Belle” could be obtained at any length. The owner had had the breed for fifteen years, and had known it for another fifteen years. “He would have thought,” he writes, “a pedigree hardly necessary in so fine a setter such as ‘Byron,’ showing so much breeding as he does in every point” (!).

In *Stonehenge's* work of 1867 unfortunately the illustration for the chapter on the black-and-tan or Gordon setter was that of a dog named “Kent,” the most appalling-looking mongrel, with perhaps enough setter about him to let us know what he is supposed to be. The dog has a great, heavy head, held on a comparatively short body on long legs. The article is written by *A Breeder of Great Experience*, who had carefully selected, so he informs us, “the champion setter ‘Kent’” to illustrate “this celebrated and fashionable breed.” “Kent” had made his first appearance at the





THE SETTER. By Reinagle, 1803.





(Above) left. "WAG." A portrait of a dog of the King Charles breed, sent as a present to the Duchess of York by the Duke of Norfolk (1809); right. "TAMM." Bred "from a beautiful old English Springer." Edwards wished to add him to his work (1807). (Below) left. "VIXEN." A "pied terrier" of 1818; right. SETTERS (1803). Frontispiece to the "Sporting Magazine" of 1803.

Cremorne Show, "where he won his first prize, 'Argyle the second' being a close second to him." "Kent" was immediately purchased of Sir Edward Hoare by his present owner,<sup>1</sup> who "at once put him to the stud." He had subsequently won three first prizes, and finished by winning the "Paris Gold Medal." The whole transaction appears somewhat hurried, to suggest the astonishing value.

"The proportions" of this dog "from actual measurements" were: Nose to end of stern, 4 feet 6 inches; Length of tail, 1 foot 6 inches; Girth behind shoulders, 2 feet 8½ inches; Round top of fore leg, 9¾ inches; Round cranium, 1 foot 6 inches; Length of head, 10½ inches; Lower corner of eye to end of nose, 4½ inches; Height, 2 feet 1½ inches.

He tells us that "Kent" was "a well-coloured Gordon, raven black, with brilliant tan, and is remarkable for his grand head and fore hand. His feet and legs are excellent, but he is rather deficient in his loin and back ribs, and a trifle too much in at his hocks."

"We may observe," he writes, "that the great features of true Gordon blood are: they can go much longer without water than the generality of setters, and that they show more vanity in their attitude on 'the point.' The length of their shoulder, their large bone, and their development of muscle enable them to race, and to keep up.

"The colour of the Gordon is a great point. The black should be *raven* black, with a blue or *plum bloom* on the bright lights. The *tan* a *rich* red, or *burnt sienna* colour. It should by no means be *yellow* or *tabby*, or mixed with black or fawn, but *rich, deep*—a sort of bright *new mahogany* colour. The cheeks, lips, throat, feet, back of the fore leg to the elbow, front of the hind legs up to the hips, belly, inside of thighs, bent, underside of flag, inside of ears, should all be brilliant *red*; and there should be a large brilliant spot of tan over each eye. There is no *objection* to a '*white shirt frill*,' although the absence of all white is a good thing. White toes behind are less objectionable than white toes in front, and several of the very best Gordons have even a white foot or feet. The origin of the breed is not well known. The late Duke of Gordon, at any rate, brought it up to its present excellence. There is a suspicion it came originally from Ireland, and the fact that all the best Gordon bitches have in every litter one or more deep red or orange whelps leads us to believe there has been an Irish cross. We give little credit to the story of the Colley cross, except that we have seen several Gordons like Colleys, and Colleys like Gordons.

"The Gordon's stern is shorter than that of the English setter, but 'sting-like.' Failing this, breeders find they have that greatest trouble to the Gordon breeder, the 'teapot' tail or a long stern with a curl at the end, badly carried in action.

"He is a long, low setter, his gallops noiseless, and he is remarkably quick in his turn, from the power of his shoulders and loin, and length of his neck, and general muscular development.

"We do not believe the true Gordon is to be found of any other colour than black-tan, or occasionally black-white-and-tan. The very best blood occasionally shows this colour, but we think the careful breeder would discard it as a throw-back to some old strain from which the Gordon was produced originally.

<sup>1</sup> The "hurrying" purchaser was *Idstone* (the Rev. Mr. Pearce), who gave 30 gns. for him, causing "a strong furore in black-and-tan setter circles." It is quite possible that he was the writer of the article, "a breeder of great experience."



A trifle heavier in his head, a trifle shorter in his stern, rather deeper in his 'brisket,' more bony and muscular than the English setter, with a remarkably gay carriage and temperament, 'always busy'—he is quite the '*beau ideal*' of a sportsman's favourite; but he has his failings. He is more frequently gun-shy, more often the victim of distemper than the English thoroughbred, and occasionally is so headstrong as to be totally irreclaimable. These may be the faults of education, and generally are so; but undeniably they are more often the results of inbreeding and injudicious crossing." And this completed Mr. Walsh's remarks.

The following week *Experientia* wrote to the "Field":

"SIR,

"Upon your commencing a series of articles on the varieties of the dog, you stated that you shall be happy to receive any opinions on the subject either for or against. I, therefore, as a user and breeder of setters for upwards of twenty years (although not for home or foreign market), venture to offer some remarks as to the dog 'Kent,' which you have brought before the public as a 'model' setter.

"Upon first seeing 'Kent' in Islington in 1863, I formed an opinion which, up to the present time, I have seen no reason to alter, and although it may be admitted that he is a well-coloured dog, he does not possess the true type of a setter. His head is much too large, and instead of the nasal bone being rather depressed in the centre and slightly raised at the nostrils, he is too much filled up under the eyes, which is not only objectionable, but gives the appearance of a mixture of Labrador; his shoulders and fore quarters are much too heavy, with the worst back ribs and loin possible; short hind quarters, with straight hind legs, resembling those of a wooden clothes-horse, with as much leverage, and I may say that he is one of the most uneven and worst-proportioned dog ever exhibited. Those who have had much experience in breeding and shooting over setters, will know that dogs with such back ribs, loin, and hind quarters as 'Kent' possesses, are neither fit for a long day in the field nor desirable to breed from.

"I will not ask, but leave it to the public to decide, whether the dog 'Kent' can be considered a 'model' Setter, and desirable for stud purposes, when it is admitted he has no pedigree, with the fact that he has been at the service of the public upwards of three years, has earned for his fortunate master several hundred pounds. Bitches have been sent in 'sealed boxes,' and out of all his stock, including those from the prize bitches 'Regent,' 'Ruby,' 'Redwing,' and others, not a decent specimen has been produced, not even fit for exhibition, except one, the progeny of an Irish setter bitch, which took second prize in the English Setter class at Birmingham, in 1864."

Below the letter is a short editorial note:

"We insert the above on the principle of *audi alteram partem*, but at the same time we cannot avoid expressing a contrary opinion as to the shape of 'Kent' in most of the points alluded to. In our report of the Cremorne Show in 1863 we expressed the following opinion, which has been confirmed by those of the several judges who have awarded prizes to him: 'Sir E. Hoare's "Kent" is a grand dog, his only defect being a slight apparent weakness in the hocks.'—ED."

It is not perhaps surprising, considering the remarkable type of setter shown by



Bewick, Edwards, Taplin, and succeeding authors,—that “Byron” and “Kent” should cause a storm of protest. The blows fell thick and heavy. *Old Calabar* compares “Kent” and his winnings and his stock with those of “Brougham,” also a black-and-tan, much to the former’s disadvantage, and Mr. Walsh adjoins to this letter a footnote, which reads :

“(Although Kent has not got a prize winner, there were dogs by him at the last Islington Show which deserved a prize, being almost perfect in shape ; but they were entered as ‘not for competition,’ owing to the breeder of them officiating as one of the judges.—ED.)”

Perhaps inspired by this footnote, Mr. D. H. W. Horlock, of Seafield, in a letter dated October 18 (1865), writes to the “Field” that :

“To all good judges of setters who have seen ‘Kent,’ the letter of *Experientia* in the ‘Field’ of October 14 will appear in its true light, viz. that of either a man who knows nothing at all of the breed of dogs of which he so confidently writes, or of one of that numerous class—a disappointed exhibitor, who has found to his disgust that none of his pug-nosed setters (differing in that respect from ‘Kent,’ who is, as he says, ‘too much filled up under the eyes, and has not the nasal bone depressed in the centre, and slightly raised at the nostrils’) can beat him. It may be, however, some persons who have never seen ‘Kent’ will be deterred from sending their bitches to him in consequence of this anonymous letter of the man who presumes to style himself *Experientia*. To such I say, ‘go and see Kent for yourselves, and if you have any judgment of your own, use it.’ *Experientia* kindly leaves it to the public to decide whether ‘Kent’ can be considered a model setter. I presume they have already decided, if one can judge at all, by the numerous prizes awarded to the dog ; or by the great run he has had for breeding purposes. *Experientia* is, I believe, correct in his statement that ‘Kent’ has never been the sire of any prize dog.

“It is difficult to assign a reason for this, because none of his progeny, I believe, have ever thrown back to any mongrel breed, not even to ‘a Labrador.’ I can only account for it by saying that no bitch good enough has ever pupped to him. Truly ‘Regent’ and others are beautiful bitches, but can they be compared at all to ‘Kent’ himself ? Let us see the litter of pups that ‘Moll’ will bring him some day, and then Mr. *Experientia*, bring something to beat them ! One thing I can say from actual experience, the offspring of ‘Kent’ are unrivalled for nose and endurance in the field—though, as we are told, the sire does resemble ‘a wooden clothes-horse.’

“O ! Mr. *Experientia*, you cannot have bought your experience very dear to exhibit yourself in public print as the detractor of a dog who has never been beaten by any other in the world at any show, but on one occasion ; and then, although so wasted and bad in general condition as to be at once ‘put out of court,’ the very shadow of his presence sufficed to prevent any other dog receiving a first prize, and to confine the awards to second and third. Let us charitably hope, O *Experientia*, that you may live long enough to acknowledge your error.

“To show that I have simply penned the above as a warm admirer of ‘Kent’ and not from interested motives, I subscribe myself,

“D. H. W. HORLOCK.

“SEAFIELD, OXON.  
October 18, 1865.”

After considerable correspondence from both sides, the Editor of the "Field," in the issue of March 17 (1866), seeks safety in this most astonishing account of "Kent's" "great" work :

"In justice to this celebrated dog ('Kent') we give the result of an experiment instituted with the intention of testing his value as a stud dog, which has been so strongly denied by our correspondent *Breechloader*, and others.

"At the last Islington Exhibition the owner of 'Kent' was so kind as to place at our disposal any one of the Gordon setter whelps sent there by himself for sale, on the condition that we fairly tested his value and reported thereon. A puppy, then only eight or ten weeks old, was at once chosen by us from the lot, and taken away, since which time he has been reared on our own premises, without access to any other dog, and therefore without the possibility of contracting any habits from imitation. With the exception of three short runs over arable land, quite clear of all game, at Christmas last, he has never been exercised anywhere but in Hyde Park, and has had no lessons except in coming to the whistle, dropping to hand, and keeping at heel. Whatever peculiarities, therefore, pertaining to the setter he may display, are of necessity solely to be attributed to his parents, 'Kent' and 'Regent'—both well-known prize Gordon setters at our recent shows.

"On Wednesday, March 14, we took this puppy to Bushey Grove, in Hertfordshire, and at once began to hunt him 'single-handed' in the presence of Culling, the keeper, who had never previously seen him, and to whom we may refer any sceptical reader for a confirmation of our statements. He at once began to range in beautiful style, going fast and galloping very lightly, his flag waving in that fine setter-like manner which delights the eye of the shooter. After beating about 300 acres, and flushing several brace of birds (the scent all the time being very bad, from the presence of a hot sun on a slight frost, and the absence of wind), he began to draw up to his game in grand form, but still flushed it. At last he came suddenly upon a covey, still unbroken, and stood as stiffly as possible, fully a hundred yards from us, until we walked the birds up; and from that time he behaved as well as most old dogs, barring the want of experience in assuring himself of the presence of game before him. After beating more than 400 acres, he of course tired, not having been previously exercised more than just to keep him in health, and we stopped the day's work, with the full conviction that the puppy will prove to be perfect in every respect, requiring now only practice to make him so."

So the "Byron" and "Kent" controversy ended.

It is the more remarkable that *Stonehenge* should have stated that "Byron" and "Kent" were excellent types, when in the same volume he shows Captain Hutchinson's Irish setter "Bob," a dog very much more of a setter than either of the other two, though to-day he would probably be considered to be a wavy-coated retriever. In the chapter devoted to Irish setters we read that :

"When dog shows were first held, the judges made several blunders in the Irish setter prize lists. 'Carlo,' the second-prize dog at Birmingham, was for a considerable time the type of excellence. Mr. Birtwhistle's 'Tim,' however (a remarkably clever-looking setter), and Mr. Watt's 'Ranger' (a very handsome dog, indeed) were the specimens which first upset all their preconceived notions of Irish breeding. Carlo had the wide brow, the 'chubby' face, the large languid eye, *black-tipped plumage*



of the old school. 'Tim' and 'Ranger,' both of them (whether Irish or not), possessed *purity of colour*, length and depth of frame, and the flashy, *fast* look of the genuine article. In 1864 (we believe) Captain Hutchinson first exhibited his blood-red Irish setter 'Bob,' by 'Dash' out of 'Quail,' and distanced all his competitors, as may be imagined from the faithful portrait of him, which illustrates this article. An enchanting dog he is, and well descended from the best blood in Ireland on both sides. He is a *red chestnut*, flat-coated, with a very grand, sensible, expressive head, a powerful loin, and good straight limbs, all bone and muscle. At the first glance he may appear rather cumbrous in his build; but upon examination we discover the secret of his grace and endurance in his strong loin, his long, well-shaped shoulders, and capital feet and legs. Having said so much of 'Bob,' we go on to describe what the Irish setter ought to be.

"He averages in height  $24\frac{1}{2}$ , and sometimes reaches 26 inches. We suggested, when describing the Gordon setter, that the black-tan came from Ireland. That opinion has been corroborated; but the *blood-red*, or rich chestnut or mahogany colour, the *deep rich red*, not golden, nor fallow, nor yellow, nor fawn, but *deep, pure, blood-red* is the colour of an Irish setter of high mark. This colour must be *unmixed with black*; and tested in a strong light, there must not be black shadows or waves, much less black fringe to the ear, or to the profile of the frame.

"There are good Irish setters nearly white, red-and-white, or *intimately crossed* with *black-tan*, and in the last case showing the distinctive marks of the cross in the black tipping of the coat, which Irish judges consider a *very great* fault in colour.

"The head should be long, the cranium large, the brow well developed, and *projecting*; and the sparkling, hazel eye, full of fire and animation, will carry off the appearance of sullenness or bad temper.

"The ears should be long, set low, moderately wide, tapering towards the base, and the edges should be *very moderately* fringed.

"The Irish setter is rather more 'on the leg' than the English dog. His ribs are a little more hooped. His brisket is very deep. In his back ribs he is a little deficient, and he might be improved in that respect.

"His loin is very strong, though his quarters are rather drooping; but his thighs and hocks, which are powerful, make up for this defect.

"His feet are round, hard, and well protected by the sole and feather. His stern is rather straighter than that of the Gordon or English breeds, and the feather *longer*, but yet *comb-like* and flat, and of good quality.

"His whole aspect denotes gameness, courage, speed, endurance, intelligence, and talent. The breeds best known in Ireland (where they are much valued) are as follows: La Touche's, The O'Connor's, Mr. Coats's, the late Lord De Freyne's (of French Park), Sidwell's, Eyers's (of Mount Hedges), the late Lord Waterford's, and Captain Hutchinson's—the last named being as good a sort as any known."

It is the first really good description of an Irish setter in dog literature.

In a letter to the "Field," Mr. T. J. Hungerford tells us that "a judicious crossing of the well-bred red Irish setter with the Gordon setter," he had found productive of the most satisfactory results, not only with his own dogs, but those of other sportsmen who had tried it. "A pure red Irish bitch and a pure black-and-tan Gordon dog produce very handsome puppies of different colours: black-and-tan; black-and-



white with tan eyebrows; red-and-white; and deep red, with black tips to the ears and stern, and sometimes with a few black hairs along the back; but this last-mentioned variety I consider to indicate some previous crossing that has occurred generations back. A similar result has happened with a red-and-white Irish setter and a Gordon setter." There was also another cross well worth mentioning—that between "a red or a red-and-white Irish setter and the breed of English setters called the York setter, which is sometimes pure white and sometimes brown-and-white." This cross he had known several times to produce dogs not only very beautiful to look at, but most excellent in the field, and requiring very little trouble to make them perfect in steadiness and obedience."

He alludes to "another mixture of bloods likewise deserving of some remarks"—that between the setter and the pointer, well known both in England and Ireland as producing handsome and very excellent dogs. "Indeed, as far as my experience enables me to judge, I may say that I never found a dog of this kind, which, if well trained, was not a very good one. When rendered unable to breed, they live longer than any other sporting dogs, and are very hardy and lasting, and easily kept in condition; but, on the other hand, when a bitch was put to breed, I never found any of the produce that would encourage a repetition of the experiment. Others, however, may have been more fortunate.

"As to the supposition that the Gordon setter is of Irish origin, the question is one which is rather difficult to settle; but I perfectly well recollect seeing, more than forty years since, the first black-and-tan dog in that country. He was very good, and a powerful, active fellow, but his appearance led some of the best judges to think he was a cross with a Labrador dog and red setter bitch. He was, however, bred from a red-and-white setter bitch; and the produce might well puzzle the most experienced judge to decide of what blood they had come.

"The finest Gordon setter I ever saw was one brought from the North of Ireland by the late Collector Mansfield. He was large, well-formed, and powerful; but his coat had a slight curl and his breast was white. His head was particularly handsome and his countenance most intelligent. He was the sire of a large progeny, from red-and-white setter bitches, and all were of the finest and most active form, and easily broken in; in colour they differed widely."

Towards the end of his letter he tells us that as to "the different breeds best known in Ireland," good ones were to be had in every county, whether the pure red or the red-and-white; but the mixture of blood had so long been practised, that it was difficult to make out a very pure pedigree of any, and still more difficult to tell by an Irish setter's colour what blood he had come from. "Of those strains named in the 'Field' as peculiar to certain owners," there were very many cases wherein breeding "in-and-in" had produced a degenerate race, and had to be relinquished. The breed of one gentleman (the late Mr. Hedges Eyre, of Mount Hedges and Macroom Castle) was not of the pure red, but of the old Irish red-and-white, occasionally crossed with other blood, some being red, and some red-and-white; and better could not be found. This strain of Irish setters was given about sixty years ago to him (the late Mr. Hedges Eyre) "by his connection and friend the late Captain Hungerford, of The Island, in whose family the breed had been for very many years; and by crossing with others it was extended to various parts of the counties of Cork and Kerry."

Mr. John Walker brings to notice further opinions as to colour in a letter of January 4, 1866. He states that he had received a letter from an old friend: "a setter breeder, with keen perception, and of forty or fifty years' experience, who says that: 'I am entirely opposed, from thirty-five years' observation, to the sole blood-red theory. I am of a decided opinion the purest and oldest strain of Irish have a slight tinge on tips of ears, and occasionally about the muzzle, and never emanated from the black infusion of the Gordon blood.' My friend adds that the coat should be tinged with black, and he also informs me that Colonel Whyte in a great measure confirms him in his judgment."

Colonel White, the setter breeder referred to in Mr. John Walker's letter above, then writes to the "Field" that:

"The French Park breed was, in former times, celebrated for its excellence and purity. After the death of the first Lord De Freyne, I attended a sale there, and of course did not neglect the kennel, but was much disappointed. Finding them a worn-out and apparently a degenerated lot, I asked particularly to be shown one that could be warranted of the pure old race; and they pointed out a bitch that, if I recollect rightly, was not to be sold. She was a low but strong animal, with very little feather, extremely dark red, almost mahogany colour; dark mark down her back; dark tips to her ears, and dark muzzle; no white about her anywhere. Whether the colouring was peculiar to the bitch, or an attribute of the breed, I cannot say; but I have often seen a black mark on the backs of puppies that subsequently turned out pure red.

"In contradistinction to this, I remember some twenty-five years ago two kennels then much celebrated for their breed—Lord Forbes's and Mr. Owen Wynne's, of Hazlewood. These animals in no way resemble the French Park bitch; they were higher on the leg and rather lighter in the rib, but powerful, wiry, active dogs; by no means very dark in colour, and showing a good deal of white about the face, chest, and fore legs. I never saw Lord Forbes's lot but once and that was in kennel. Mr. Wynne's I shot over several times—they were tremendous goers, but unsteady and 'headstrong.'"

Mr. Hutchinson wrote to a member of the La Touche family of Harristown, considered to have the original Irish stock, and received the following reply:

"I have known the points of an Irish setter all my life. The original red Irish setters were a breed of dogs belonging to Mrs. La Touche's grandfather, Maurice O'Connor, Esq., of Mount Pleasant, King's County, and which family took great pride in them. Such a thing as black hair would be scouted among them, nor were black tips to the ears or to the feathering ever thought of; it plainly shows a cross of another breed. The O'Connor setter is of a blood-red colour—certainly of a deeper and purer red than is seen on the coat or fur of any other animal; a little white is not objected to, and of later years there were more red-and-white dogs bred. It was considered convenient, as they were more easily seen out shooting; but Mr. O'Connor always preferred a pure red dog. He gave some of his dogs to Mr. Robert La Touche, of Harristown, County Kildare, and thus it was we became possessed of the breed. I remember the dogs and the traditions and rules about them from my earliest childhood, and I can certify that a black hair or a black tipped hair was never seen among them; but I do remember that about twenty years ago a female of the O'Connor



setter breed was given away, and afterwards crossed with a black-and-tan setter. I recollect that of the puppies, some were pure red, others pure black-and-tan, but the red with black tips may have afterwards resulted from this cross. I never saw a red setter with a dark stripe down the back, or any darker colour about him than a rich blood-red, and my recollection extends over thirty-five years."

Colonel White, in a further letter, writes that he had made inquiries in quarters where he was certain of getting authentic information, and information of a date antecedent to what can be usually attained:

"It appears to be pretty generally conceded," he writes, "that the earliest recorded and most celebrated kennel of these dogs was that of Lord Dillon, great-grandfather, I believe, to the present lord. There were, however, several others of great repute, but supposed, whether true or not, to have descended from Lord Dillon's. Of these, perhaps, Lord Clancarty's ranked highest; but Lord Lismore's and the French Park breed were much thought of. The purity of the Maurice O'Connor dogs is a moot point, some looking back to them with much respect, others, and good authorities too, denying that they even were the real thing.

"The dogs of the Dillon breed are said to have been powerful, wiry, active dogs—some red, some red-and-white; but that the latter colour showed only on face or chest, not much of it. The coat with a slight wave, but no curl whatever. They were headstrong in temper, without much innate point, and rather deficient in nose, as they are to this day, and never to be broken in the first season, and very often not till the third; but that then their temper, taming down, and their sagacity improving by experience, they often became most admirable dogs. Their constitutions were so vigorous that they lived to a great age, and were serviceable even up to their thirteenth or fourteenth years. None of the authorities that I have consulted will admit of a pure descendant of the old race *having a black stain*; they consider it as undeniable proof of a cross.

"There were also two other well-established breeds in Ireland, a black one—smaller and lighter in all ways than the red; they had better noses and were more tractable, and it is supposed that it is from a cross with them that the black-and-tan arises. I have seen some of these dogs myself; they were good but not handsome animals. The last I saw was with Lord Howth, and he was very fond of them.

"There was—and is, however—another breed claiming equal antiquity with the red (the white-and-red), and many consider them to have been as good as the red in all respects, and superior in point of nose. I have seen these dogs magnificent in appearance and excellent in the field, but have not met them lately, though no doubt they are to be found; and I know that they were highly thought of eighty or ninety years ago, because a certain General Whyte—a grand-uncle of mine, who died about 1802, and was, perhaps, one of the first Englishmen who ever took a moor in Scotland—used to bring his setters from Ireland; and I have heard my father say that the General's favourite breed was white-and-red; in fact, I distinctly recollect seeing one of the descendants. These dogs were, and are still, more or less curly.

"Neither my own experience, nor the information I have collected, allows me to believe that the true red setter should have a coarse coat. Nor do I like the buff-coloured hair feathering the hams, or the coarse and curly hair in the tail, which Mr. H. B. Knox considers to be the characteristic of the true breed. Such an appearance



denotes a cross, however remote, with the Irish spaniel. His coat should certainly not be so silky as that of the English dog. It should be close, strong, luxuriant, but not coarse; and the featherings, whether on tail or hams, lighter in colour, showing a golden tinge, but not buff, and withal by no means too plentiful."

By 1878 the setter had made considerable headway and had greatly improved in appearances, and Mr. Walsh gives neither "Byron" nor "Kent" in his illustrations, but instead shows "Countess," a setter all over, a Laverack setter, one of the most famous from that kennel, owned by a friend of Mr. Laverack's, Mr. Llewellyn. The Laverack setters, with which we deal more fully later, had carried all before them, both on the show-bench and in field trials. Mr. Laverack had fixed the setter-type, and recovered, if it was ever really lost, the grand type of English setter shown by Reinagle. He had inbred his own stock, and had done so with remarkable success.

The story of this noted breeder, Mr. Laverack, and his kennel commenced with the purchase of "Ponto" and "Old Moll"<sup>1</sup> in 1825 from the Rev. A. Harrison, who lived near Carlisle. The Rev. A. Harrison was reported to have kept the breed pure for thirty-five years, and so he had English setters when Bewick's "British Quadrupeds" appeared in print.

From these two, "Ponto" and "Old Moll," which he had purchased, Mr. Laverack had built up his strain. We are told that he had on one or two occasions tried "alien blood," but finding it did not answer, had resorted to his original stock again. The breed was supposed to be of pure Laverack blood all the way through, and I give the pedigree of "Countess" on page 346, purchased by Mr. Llewellyn, to exemplify what it meant.

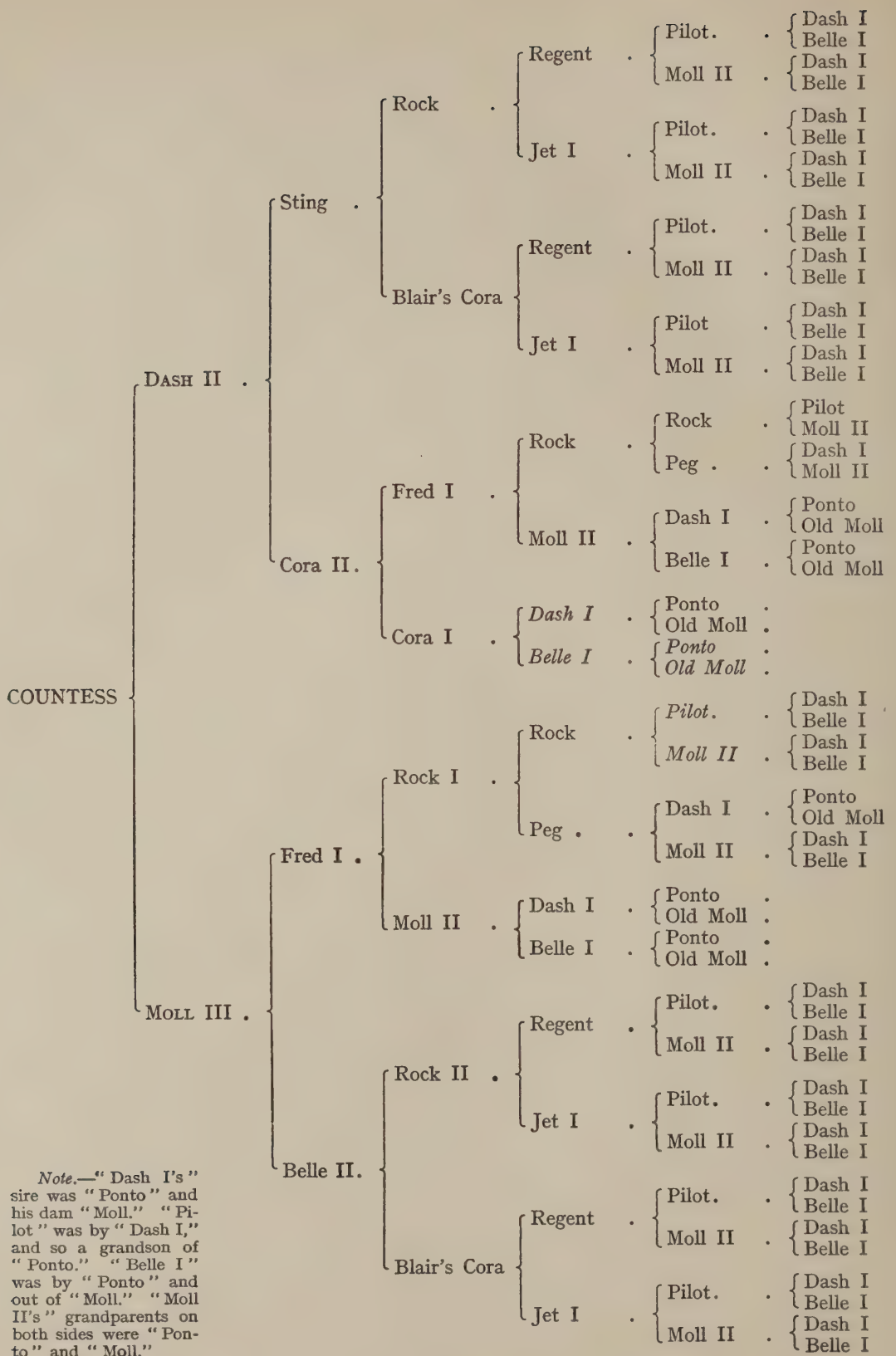
A few years before his decease, this veteran setter breeder and sportsman wrote his small classic on setters,<sup>2</sup> which he dedicated to Mr. Llewellyn, "who has endeavoured and is still endeavouring, by sparing neither expense nor trouble, to bring to perfection the 'setter.'" The work has two coloured plates; the first, a frontispiece, is of "Dash," a somewhat heavy setter, of the build of a large spaniel and retriever, and the other is of "Fred IV," more of a modern setter, but still rather of retriever type.

Mr. Laverack was seventy-three years old when he wrote his work—as he describes it, "in the sere and yellow leaf." He agrees that the setter is but "an improved spaniel."

The Featherstone Castle breed, the property of Lord Wallace, of Featherstone Castle, had been looked after by three generations of Prouds. Similar dogs had been kept by the Earl of Carlisle and Major Cowan, both of Northumberland. These dogs were peculiar in being nearly always of liver-and-white colour, very powerful in chest, deep and broad, and rather on the heavy side. They had, we read, the most excellent coats and a tuft of long silky hair on the crest of the head. At Edmund Castle, near Carlisle, another somewhat similar type existed, but without the long silky tuft, and were more lightly built. Another noted breed were those owned by Lord Lovat, of Beaufort Castle, Benby, black-white-and-tan in colour. The Earl of Southesk

<sup>1</sup> The Laverack setters' colours were black, or blue-and-white ticked, with good coats. He had also a lemon-and-white Belton, spotted with lemon instead of blue. "Old Moll" and "Ponto" were both blue Beltons. The name "Blue Belton" originated with Mr. Laverack, the name of a hamlet in Northumberland.

<sup>2</sup> "The Setter" (1872, published by Longmans, Green & Co.).



*Note.*—"Dash I's" sire was "Ponto" and his dam "Moll." "Pilot" was by "Dash I," and so a grandson of "Ponto." "Belle I" was by "Ponto" and out of "Moll." "Moll II's" grandparents on both sides were "Ponto" and "Moll."

had setters of similar colour, whilst the Earl of Seafield, of Urquhart Castle, Inverness, had a heavy-coated type, black-white-and-tan. A strain of jet black setters were kept by the Earl of Tankerville, Lord Hume, and Harry Rothwell.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Lort, of King's Norton, near Birmingham, kept black-and-whites and yellow-and-whites, with long silky coats. There was also a Welsh breed of pure whites, "a milk-white," then, when Mr. Edward Laverack wrote his work, dying out; they had harder coats than usually found among setters. There was a Welsh black variety with similarly hard coat also at the time becoming rare. These Welsh setters were known as the "Llanidloes breed," and believed to be particularly suited to facing the rough conditions of the countryside. He had also met with the *Russian setter*, first mentioned by Edwards in 1800 as the Russian pointer, and shown by him to be somewhat similar to the bearded collie or old English sheep-dog of to-day. *Stonehenge* also illustrated this dog, probably using Edwards's dog as his model.

Mr. Laverack tells us that these Russian setters were white, lemon-and-white, liver-and-white, and black-and-white in colour and were little known here. Those of the then late Joseph Lang's he had repeatedly seen. "Two of them were brought down by Mr. Arnold, of London, to my shooting-quarters, Dunmaglass. He had given thirty guineas apiece for them as puppies, and had them very carefully broken by an English keeper.

"They were not at all good specimens of the class, and as working dogs, comparatively useless. So disgusted was he with them before he left, that he shot one, and gave the other away.

"I have never seen but *one pure* specimen, which was in the possession of the late Lord Grantley, at Rannoch Barracks, head of Loch Rannoch, Perthshire.

"This dog was a magnificent type of the Russian setter, buried in coat of a very long floss silky texture; indeed, he had by far the greatest profusion of coat of any dog I ever saw. *Old Calabar*, who knows well what a setter is, told me that, as a young man, and living at his father's place near Virginia Water, the late Mr. Turner, head-keeper to her Majesty there, had a beautiful breed of Russian setters, which the late Prince Consort was very fond of. They were good but most determined, wilful, and obstinate dogs, requiring an immense deal of breaking, and only kept in order and subjection by a large quantity of work and whip; not particularly amiable in temper, but very high-couraged and handsome, an enormous quantity of long silky white hair, and a little weak-lemon colour about the head, ears, and body; and their eyes completely concealed by hair.

"*Old Calabar* got a brace of these puppies, had them well broken, and took them to France; but after shooting to them two seasons, and being disgusted with their wilfulness and savage dispositions (they would take no whip), sold them to a French nobleman for a thousand francs (£40) and considered he had got well out of them."

The Russian setter or pointer appears to have disappeared entirely from the horizon of British field sports.

#### BLACK-AND-TANS

In writing of this variety, Mr. Laverack tells us that he has found that they lacked the endurance of other breeds. They were coarser and heavier in their make, and not so speedy.

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Rawdon Lee was of the opinion that Mr. Laverack meant "Rauthwell."



## DOGS: THEIR HISTORY AND DEVELOPMENT

### IRISH SETTER

Mr. Laverack visited Ireland with the object of obtaining Irish setters suitable to cross with his blue Beltons, and had been disappointed to find that through negligence the Irish breed had suffered severely from crosses, and that there was scarcely any breed then that he could rely on for purity. As far as he could discover, the then late John La Touche had possessed the breed in its greatest purity. In England Mr. Laverack had seen a "magnificent" specimen at Cockermouth Castle, Cumberland, of blood-red colour with dark shadings on the tips of their coats. This dog was given to General Wyndham by an Irish nobleman.

He was "very long in the head, particularly low, very oblique in his shoulders, wheeled or roach-backed, very deep and *broad* in the chest, remarkably wide behind the shoulders, and very short in the back and legs," more so than any Irish setter he had ever seen. He had "an immense profusion of coat, with a tinge of black on the tip of his ears." He writes: "I should have bred from this dog but for the following reason, and I think I was right: no one was able to break him, and his stock were frequently black."

Black setters from Irish setters at that time do not seem to have been rare; for Mr. Laverack tells us that a Mr. Rowland Hunt's dog also got black puppies occasionally and that "Stella," a sister to "Ranger," the winner of first at Birmingham and Dublin, also had black puppies. He had, however, found that the strains of Irish setters with black in their coats were as good, if not better, than those without it, and "Ben,"<sup>1</sup> a blood-red dog and a great prize-winner, had a similar fault.

"It was the opinion," he writes, "of well-known breeders that the colour ought to be blood-red, the nose a mahogany," but "there was also another variety of Irish setter, blood-red-and-white, believed by some to have been of greater antiquity than the reds. These red-and-white setters breed both colours—pure reds, and red-and-whites." The best he had ever seen were "Stella" and her two sons "Old York" and "Young York." They were the property of the Misses Ledwidge, who lived near Dublin. "Stella" was the dam of "Dan," the property of Mr. Dycer, the sire of "Bob," the property of Captain Hutchinson, which is described on p. 340 in *Stonehenge's* book of 1867.

There were also the Irish setters of the Hon. David Plunket, and Lord De Freyne, of County Sligo, and Mr. Barton, of County Wicklow. At the end of his chapter on Irish setters Mr. Laverack writes: "The three most perfect specimens of setters I have ever seen were Lord Lovat's 'Regent,' black-white-and-tan, the late General Wyndham's blood-red Irish setter before alluded to, and the Rev. A. Harrison's blue Belton 'Old Moll'; these three animals were particularly strong, powerful, and compact in their build."

And so time passed away. To-day the setter is not desired to be strong, powerful, and compact in build, but, on the contrary, to be fine and graceful. This great man of setter and shooting fame, Mr. Edward Laverack, died in 1877. Due to his skilful breeding and care, the English setter of to-day is what it is. Most winners in field trials, or on show-bench, or the less-known but equally good workers in the field and on the moors, are descended from the Laverack strain of Beltons.

<sup>1</sup> The property of Mr. Shorthose (see p. 7).

After the death of the founder, though attempts were made to keep the line pure, little by little other strains crept in, until as a strain "Laverack" existed no longer. We read how in 1881, at a class for Laverack setters, Mr. T. B. Bower won with "Comet." A protest was lodged by Mr. Llewellyn, on the ground that "Pride of the Border," the grandsire of "Comet" was not a pure "Laverack." This protest was not allowed; the Committee appear to have decided that the word "Laverack" by that time implied both here and in America a certain type of setter.

At one time a Mr. James Cockerton, of Ravensbarrow Lodge, North Lancashire, obtained a setter from Mr. Laverack. This strain was also more or less inbred, as crosses were found unsuitable and not continued long enough to show their value. The Cockerton strain spread in that and neighbouring counties and constituted one of the leading show strains. Of these was the noted "Barton Tory," the property of the late Mr. Rawdon Lee, sold at Aldridge's to Mr. Shirley for some £80 and later passing into the hands of Mr. G. Raper for £100, before he went to America.

Sir Humphrey de Trafford, of Trafford Park, produced both the best in working dogs, and also the very best on the show-bench. These two characters were kept distinct, and only occasionally was a working dog exhibited with success. One of these exceptions was his "Grouse of Kippen." He had at one time a show team more or less invincible; these were "Mallwyd Bess," "Flo," and "Barton Tory."

Mr. Lee, in his "Modern Dogs," referring to the Laverack strain, suggests that the story of "Old Moll" and "Ponto," as being entirely responsible for all the Laverack setters, is somewhat doubtful. He had known Mr. Laverack personally, and in conversation with him and by his remarks on the changes of colour which had only appeared in later generations, the liver-and-whites, black, tan-and-whites, had given Mr. Lee the impression that the inbreeding had not been so constant as is stated. Mr. Lee adds that on Rothwell, one of Mr. Laverack's friends, who used one of the best Laveracks for breeding purposes, writing that one of the puppies had come liver-and-white, Mr. Laverack had replied that this colour "came back" from a strain of Edmond Castle breed, which he had introduced some thirty years previously. Mr. Lee was of the opinion that Mr. Laverack had probably used Cumberland and Northumberland dogs (most of which were liver-and-white) quite frequently with his Laverack stock.

Writing of Mr. Laverack's dogs, Mr. Lee informs us that "Dash II," or "Blue Dash," as he was better known, from 1869 to 1872 was probably the best setter shown, though he failed in too upright shoulders and needed to be cleaner under the throat. All the same, he was the best-looking Laverack he had seen Mr. Laverack hold.

In the field one of the best was "Monk of Furness," who won his championship on the bench and was later sold to go to Canada for £230.

Noted dogs also were bred by Baron Doveridge. Of these, "Fred IV" was one of the best field dogs of his time. He was the sire of—amongst others—"Prince Frederick" and "Fancy Free."

At Mr. Laverack's death only five setters were in his hands, for during the last few years of his life he had not been so fortunate in the rearing of puppies. These five were "Blue Prince," "Blue Rock," "Blue Belle," "Blue Cora," and "Cora,"



a lemon-and-white. We read that "Blue Prince" and "Blue Belle" and another were sold for about £100 by Mr. Laverack's house-keeper to Mr. T. B. Bowers, and that a Mr. J. R. Robinson, of Sunderland, had claimed the lot. There appears from Mr. Lee's wording something curiously sad about this finish, something difficult for us to understand, for no explanation is given.<sup>1</sup>

In 1884 the Birmingham Show offered special prizes for field-trial winners. Mr. Llewellyn entered twelve, among them "Count Wind 'Em," who had also won a championship on the show-bench, a dog for whom Mr. Llewellyn refused £750 and £1,200.

#### BLACK-AND-TAN (OR GORDON) SETTER

Their name, "Gordon setter," arose because they were first introduced to the public from Gordon Castle, Banffshire, the Highland seat of the Dukes of Richmond and Gordon. The variety never made headway. Even at Gordon Castle the stock was crossed at an early period of their history with English setters, particularly with Laverack blood.

In *Idstone's* <sup>2</sup> opinion, the Dukes of Richmond and Gordon commenced this setter strain about 1882, but this does not seem correct, for in "The Moor and the Loch" <sup>3</sup> of 1851, no hint of their existence occurs.

But that the black-and-tan were a variety at a very early period in setter history is certain, for Edwards, in 1800, depicts them in the three types of setters he shows on his plate. It is quite possible, however, that black-and-tan setters were unknown in Scotland, but were bred by sporting men in one or other part of this country. It is also possible that the picture by Edwards suggested to breeders the colouring, and that a new lot of black-and-tans were afterwards produced. The making of some of the fresh black-and-tans is said to have been by a bloodhound cross, accounting for the "lippiness" of "Kent," shown by *Stonehenge* in 1867. Black-and-tans were known to have the habit of hunting the ground by nose. It is said that collie had been used, probably to lighten the then over-heavy type, the result of the bloodhound cross.

In his "Dogs of Scotland" Mr. D. J. Gray (*Whinstone*) writes on the black-and-tan setter, describing it as the "Scottish setter, the only field dog we claim as a Scottish breed." He does not consider the story that the Duke of Gordon had created the variety correct and refers in support of this to a work entitled "A Treatise on Field Diversions" of 1776, in which the author, *A Gentleman of Suffolk*, stated that in 1726 there were two distinct tribes—"black-tanned" and "orange or lemon and white."<sup>4</sup> He also draws attention to the fact that Mr. H. H. Dixon visited Gordon Castle in 1862 and had had a long talk with Jubb, the head-keeper there, whilst thirty-seven black-and-tans were resting in the kennel meadow. He writes:

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Lee writes: "Mr. Laverack's house-keeper sold 'Prince,' 'Belle,' and another to Mr. T. B. Bowers for about £100. . . The late Mr. J. R. Robinson, of Sunderland, who held a kind of partnership with the late Mr. Laverack, had laid claim to the whole of the Kennel; but the three dogs Mr. Bowers bought were sold even before poor Laverack was laid in his grave, near the quiet little church at Ash, not far from Whitchurch."

<sup>2</sup> 1872.

<sup>3</sup> The author describes the dogs of that area and was a sporting man, not likely therefore to have passed them by.

<sup>4</sup> I have not been able to find this work.—E. C. A.



"Originally the Gordon setters were all black-and-tan, and Lord F. G. Halliburton's 'Sweep,' Admiral Wemyss's 'Pilot,' Major Douglas's 'Racket,' Lord Breadalbane's 'Tom,' and other great craftsmen of the breed were of that colour. Now, all the setters in the Castle kennel are entirely black-and-white, with a little tan on the toes, muzzle, root of the tail, and round the eyes. The late Duke of Gordon liked it, as it was both gayer and not so difficult to back on the hillside as the dark-coloured. They are light in frame, and merry workers; and, as Jubb says, 'better put up half a dozen birds than make a false point.' The composite colour was produced by using black-and-tan dogs to black-and-white bitches, and at the sale in July 1836 eleven setters averaged 36 guineas. The five-year-old 'Duke,' a black-and-tan, fetched two guineas below that sum. He was bought from Captain Barclay, begot another 'Duke' still more famous than himself from 'Helen.' She was also the dam of 'Young Regent,' a black-white-and-tan, which joined the Bretty Kennel at 72 guineas, and his lordship did not grudge 60 guineas for 'Crop,' although one of her ears had been gnawed in puppyhood by a ferret. Lord Lovat's, Sir A. G. Gordon's, and Captain Gordon's (of Cluny) dogs have been the only crosses used for some time at Gordon Castle. 'Sailor's' beautiful skull caught us at once, and Jubb might well say that 'he knows everything.' 'Dash' lay dignified and apart during the revels, and there was no passing by 'Young Dash,' and the neat 'Princess,' by 'Rock' from 'Belle.' A dozen pups by a dog of Lord Lovat's, also of the Gordon Castle breed, were out at quarters drawing nurture from terriers and collies."

But whether the strain originated there or not, the Gordon Castle blood had always been looked upon as "blue," and dogs from that kennel were highly valued because of their believed purity of strain.

According to Mr. Gray, "Dandy," the winner at the first dog show (Newcastle, 1859), was one of these pure black-and-tans, with the Duke of Gordon's "Grouse" as a grandsire. He considered the collie cross hardly likely, and tells us that the story was that the Duke having heard of a shepherd's bitch which had the habit of finding grouse often when the setters were at fault, resulting in the shepherd and the bitch being attached to the shooting parties when game was required, was persuaded to cross her with one of his setters, and it was in this manner that the black-and-tans originated. Though he did not believe the story, there was, however, one curious coincidence which had impressed him, that "a tea-pot" tail would occasionally be seen in a puppy of the Duke's setters. Also that some of the Gordons might occasionally be easily mistaken for a Gaelic sheep-dog.

One he (Mr. Gray) had possessed, in her habits was distinctly "collie like." She would run round game in the same way as a collie runs round sheep, and "from first to last always determined to put the birds between herself and the gun." "Though," he writes, "her tail and coat were of the true Gordon type, her head and her mind alone showing, as I thought, and still think, that she was crossed as above mentioned."

In the first litter from this bitch, two of the puppies suggested that the collie cross was, after all, a matter of fact.<sup>1</sup> One of these puppies was the noted "Argyle," so close to "Kent" that we read in *Stonehenge's* work of 1867 that the judges had hard

<sup>1</sup> "I had two of the litter with the curled or, as I think, the collie tail."—GRAY.

work to decide between them. The other was a bitch, "Ruth," which Mr. Gray sent to Lord Bolingbroke.

Mr. Gray, towards the end of his chapter, gives a note on the Duke of Gordon's dispersal sale in July 7, 1836, at Tattersall's, when five and a half brace of setters (black-and-tan) made 417 guineas, the highest price being given for "Young Regent"—72 gns.; the lowest for a puppy—15 guineas.

The prices were as follows:

	Guineas.	Purchaser.
Duke . . . . .	34	Lord Abercorn.
Young Regent . . . . .	72	Lord Chesterfield.
Juno . . . . .	34	Duke of Richmond.
Saturn . . . . .	56	Lord Douglas.
Crop . . . . .	60	Lord Chesterfield.
Duchess . . . . .	37	Mr. Martyn.
Randan . . . . .	35	Mr. Martyn.
Princess . . . . .	25	Mr. Walker.
Bell . . . . .	34	Mr. Martyn.
A puppy . . . . .	15	Lord Douglas.
Ditto . . . . .	15	Mr. Robertson.
417		

Mr. Herbert B. Gibb (a well-known breeder of Gordons) was of the opinion that the Gordon came from the old black-white-and-tan setters, which were, so he tells us, known at one time as the Duke of Gordon's setters. He felt certain that the collie-cross story was not correct. Mr. Gibb added that he held the "diploma of appointment as purveyor of sporting dogs to his Imperial Highness the Grand Duke Nicholas, jun."

Mr. F. A. Manning, the Secretary of the Gordon Setter Club, with the idea of developing fresh interest, arranged a field trial on the Hatfield estate in 1893. This took place in April, but so bad was the performance that many were surprised that the judges distributed the prizes.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Rawdon Lee tells of a Gordon setter an excellent short story, but one that can hardly be taken as representative of the variety:

"Not very long since I was given a Gordon setter, said to be of the best blood, and it had cost thirty guineas in Scotland as a broken dog. Never look a gift-dog in the mouth; but its breaking was a myth and its value in shillings! The first day I had him out the parish was not big enough to hold him. He chased everything, and got into a plantation where, with nose down and a whimper every now and then, he chevied the hares and rabbits to his content—to my disgust. I was sorely tempted to shoot the brute. When tired, he came to my whistle and was 'rated' in proper fashion; a five-mile walk home along a hard road in pouring rain tamed him a bit, and as he had a sensible look about him I gave him another outing next day, over the roughest land I could find. Here, after a long trudge of some eight hours or so, he became amenable to discipline—hunted and found birds by their ground scent, and worked more like a hound than a pointer or setter. Had he done like *Idstone's* Gordons crossed with his collie, and gone round his birds as his ancestors would have

<sup>1</sup> Rawdon Lee.

done round a flock of sheep, I should have noticed it. He did not do so. His head was always down. A third day he worked well within range, answered to the whistle, and his old training had come back to him. He was, however, no use to me, so I gave him away. Now, this Gordon setter was good-looking, and from a strain that bore a reputation of being 'pure even amongst the pure,' but his manners and appearance were too hound-like to please me." So the black-and-tan setter came, and passed by. The "Field" to-day is held by the English and Irish. The English, judging from illustrations, is not very different from the setter of Taplin in 1803. The Irish setter has improved in quality. He is no longer of the heavy and retriever type as shown in *Stonehenge* and Walsh, nor of the spaniel type as shown in Jardine's *Naturalist's Library*. It is an interesting story which takes us back to the spaniel and the pointer, resulting in a more beautiful dog, perhaps, than either. (See Appendix XXV.)

The points of the English setter are :

Head long, lean ; stop well defined. Skull oval from ear to ear, occipital protuberance marked. Muzzle moderately deep and square, long from stop to point of nose ; nostrils wide ; jaws of nearly equal length ; flews not too pendulous. Colour of nose according to colour of coat, black or liver. Eyes dark hazel. Ears set low, moderate length, hanging in neat folds close to cheek, tips velvety, upper part clothed with fine silky hair. Neck rather long, muscular and lean, slightly arched at crest, clean cut where it joins head. Body of moderate length ; shoulders well set back ; back short, level ; loins wide, slightly arched. Chest deep in brisket, ribs round, widely sprung, deep in back ribs. Stifles well bent and ragged. Thighs long from hip to hock. Fore arm big and muscular ; elbows well let down. Posterns short, muscular, straight. Feet very close and compact, with hair between toes. Tail set on, almost in line with back ; length medium, slightly scimitar, feather hanging in long flakes, starting just below root, increasing in length to middle, then tapering off. Coat, from back of head in line with ears, slightly wavy, long, silky. Colour black-and-white, lemon-and-white, liver-and-white, or tricolour. Flecked all over preferred.

For differences in type, between this setter and the Irish and Gordon, the reader is referred to the foregoing pages. The illustrations of modern-type Irish setters are the property of Miss S. Fincham, of Larpent Avenue, Putney, London ; and of the English setter the noted bitch "Edenbridge Beauty,"<sup>1</sup> the property of Miss Hazel H. Knight, Orchard House, Edenbridge. (See Plate 102.)

<sup>1</sup> A daughter of the noted Champion "Crossfell."



## CHAPTER IV

### POINTERS, RETRIEVERS, AND IRISH WATER SPANIELS

**L**ONG before the multiplication of breeds and varieties led to the introduction of innumerable foreigners, much attention was given to pointers, setters, and spaniels, and to the several races of hounds and terriers. The gun-dogs were, so it is believed, mainly of Continental extraction, Spain usually being credited with both pointer and spaniel, from the latter of which came the setter and later the retriever. The name "Pointer," we have been told, comes from the Spanish *punta*, but in the edition of "Don Quixote" with notes by Mr. James Fitzmaurice-Kelly, we are given "perdiguero," with *perdigon* for partridge. I mention this as a matter of interest, for one feels bound to accept Mr. W. Arkwright's statement that "pointer" is "*de punta*," i.e. the dog that points.

Mr. Arkwright's splendid monograph is a worthy monument to a fine breed. From it we learn that the first known reference to the dog occurred about the thirteenth century, but for practical purposes we have to await the opening of the eighteenth century, when it is assumed that the real introduction to England occurred. The Duke of Kingston was painted with a pointer in 1725, and he is believed to have been one of the earliest breeders.

The first description of a dog which possibly is that of a pointer occurs in Xenophon (p. 637). After describing how various dogs find their prey, he tells us that "some again go a long way too in their circuit before they have reached it, pass the hare by, and whenever they light on his tracks, follow uncertain indications; and when they do sight the hare in advance, tremble, and do not proceed until they see him make a move."

Bewick (1790) shows a woodcut of the Spanish pointer used as a model in subsequent works. He remarks that whereas the Spanish pointer is self-taught, the English dog needs great care and attention to bring it into shape.

Edwards (1800) shows three pointers: one, a chocolate-brown; one, a white flecked with yellow-brown, and with yellow-brown ears and cheeks; and the third, a hairy dog, with double nostrils, of marked resemblance in coat and shape of both body and head to an old English sheep-dog and the noted shepherd's dog of Taplin.

Edwards tells us that the Spanish pointer was introduced into this country by a "Portuguese merchant, at a very modern period, and was first used by an old reduced Baron, of the name of Bichell, who lived in Norfolk, and could shoot flying"—a gentleman, according to Edwards, who lived by his gun, sending his game to the London market. He mentions the crossing of the breed with the foxhound to increase speed. He alludes to the Russian pointer with a "coat not unlike a drover's dog," of "colour like the Spanish, but often grizzle-and-white." He suggests that this variety was probably a cross between the Spanish pointer and rough water-dog, and substantiates this opinion by writing that it is not "incommoded by the most cold, and wet weather," and "will frequently prefer laying in a hole formed in the snow to the shelter of his kennel."

He also alludes to "the ladies pointer," a variety too diminutive for use. "There is a circumstance worthy of notice in pointers," he continues, "that some of them have a deep fissure in the centre of the nose which completely divides the nostrils; such are termed double-nosed, and supposed to possess the power of scenting better than others."

Taplin informs us that "It is no more than thirty or forty years since the breed of

pointers were nearly white, or mostly variegated with liver-coloured spots ; except the celebrated stock of the then Duke of Kingston, whose breed of blacks were considered superior to all in the kingdom and sold for immense sums after his death." He gives several pages on the art of breaking pointers, and ends his chapter with the following anecdote.

"The three brace of birds previously killed having nearly filled the net, it was unavoidably necessary to dislodge a part to make room for the full-grown cock-pheasant just brought to hand ; in the act of kneeling to make room for one, by the removal of part of the other (and this in a most awful, still, and sequestered wood), a gentle tap or two upon the shoulder of the writer was not productive of the most pleasing sensation ; little doubt can be entertained but the shock, acting with a degree of electric vibration, occasioned

'Each particular hair to stand on end  
Like quills upon the fretful porcupine' ;

particularly when accompanied with the very emphatic exclamation of 'Who are you ?'—a question at that moment not to be so readily answered. Upon a sort of half-recovery from the palpitation, the writer hastily (and not without a considerable portion of alarm) enquired from the lad, as it proved to be, 'Why he asked ?' from whom he received the following answer : 'that the writer had got into the heart of Mr. B——e's game preserve, where even his uncle never shot off a gun.'—'Indeed ! Why, who is your uncle ?'—'The gamekeeper.'—'The devil he is ! And where is he ?'—'In bed with a fever here in the cottage just the other side of the copse-fence ; and hearing a gun fired, he sent me to see who it was, and to enquire your name.'—'Oh, he did ! Aye, that's very right—my name—oh, aye—very true—(there, there's a shilling for you)—you may tell him my name is Johnson—Captain Johnson' ; with which information the lad withdrew and the newly ycleped Captain made a most expeditious exit."

Leaving our friend Taplin's poaching adventures, of which he relates several somewhat similar experiences, we find that in 1845 Youatt gives four varieties of pointer as well as the English one. These are the Spanish, Portuguese, French, and Russian. The Portuguese was smaller than the Spanish and quarrelsome, and he had a fringed tail, somewhat like a spaniel ; whilst the French had double nostrils, which, according to Youatt, interfered with its scenting powers. The Russian was a "rough, ill-tempered animal" with a tendency to be absurd and was "often annoyed with vermin." He was awkward in his movements, preferred ground-scent to any other, invariably sprang his game, and suffered from the cloven nose of the French variety.

Richardson (1847) states that the Spanish pointer when pure ought to have the cleft nose. He adds to the list the Italian pointer, a dwarf variety, a perfect miniature of the English dog, but seldom over 1 foot high. One of these he had seen as the property of a Mr. Stewart Menteith, of Closeburn, Dumfriesshire, whilst yet another was the property of Mr. Mather, an artist of Edinburgh. These miniatures had remarkable noses and would point as staunchly as any.

"The English pointer is remarkable for his extraordinary staunchness. 'Pluto' and 'Juno,' property of the celebrated Colonel Thornton, stood for an hour and a quarter in the act of pointing, without moving during the whole of that time, while they were being drawn and painted by the late eminent artist, Mr. Gilpin.



"A well-trained pointer is very valuable and will fetch a high price," he continues. "'Dash,' a fine pointer, also belonging to Colonel Thornton, was sold for £160 worth of champagne and burgundy, one hogshead of claret, an elegant gun, and another pointer, with the proviso that if any accident should at any time disable the dog, he was to be returned to the Colonel, at the price of £50!"<sup>1</sup>

He tells us, to prove the "perfection of training to which pointers may be brought by proper discipline," that a friend of Mr. Jesse's went out shooting "with a gentleman celebrated for the goodness of his breed; they took the field with eight of these dogs. If one pointed, all the rest immediately backed steadily. If a partridge was shot, they all dropped to charge, and whichever dog was called to bring the bird, the rest never stirred until they were told to do so."<sup>2</sup>

"A pointer hates a bad shot," he writes. "My old friend Captain Brown related the following capital anecdote. A gentleman having requested the loan of a pointer dog from a friend, was informed by him that the dog would behave very well so long as he could kill his birds; but if he frequently missed them, the dog would run home and leave him. The pointer was accordingly sent and the following day was fixed for trial; but unfortunately, his new master happened to be a remarkably bad shot. Bird after bird rose and was fired at, but still pursued its flight untouched, till at last the dog became careless and often missed his game. As if seemingly willing, however, to give one chance more, he made a dead stop at a fern-bush, with his nose pointed downward, and forefoot bent, and the tail straight and steady. In this position he remained firm till the sportsman was close to him, with both barrels cocked; then moving steadily forward for a few paces, he at last stood still near a bunch of heather, the tail expressing the anxiety of the mind by moving regularly backwards and forwards. At last, out sprang a fine old blackcock. Bang, bang, went both barrels—but the bird escaped unhurt. The patience of the dog was now quite exhausted, and instead of dropping to charge, he turned boldly round, placed his tail between his legs, gave one howl long and loud, and set off as fast as he could to his own home." He adds that "pointers have been known to go out by themselves in search of game, and if they *found* to return for their master, and by gestures induce him to take his gun and follow them to the spot."

*Stonehenge*, in 1859, writing on the Spanish pointer, considers that a large brain was needed as well as a well-developed nose, and that pendent flews which accompanied a "high sense of smell" should be present. In his time the original Spanish pointer had ceased to exist; the British pointer had replaced it, the latter being a cross between the foxhound and the Spanish dog. Quite possibly, as *Stonehenge* points out, here and there other crosses may have been used, in particular the greyhound. Mr. Edge had the reputation of having the very best in pointers, so that all pedigrees tracing back to his line were considered of more than usual value.<sup>3</sup>

In 1867 he informs us that "the modern English pointer" was then not so often

<sup>1</sup> "Sportsman's Repository."

<sup>2</sup> "Anecdotes of Dogs."

<sup>3</sup> This Mr. Edge's strain are described as blotched dark liver and white with slightly bronzed cheeks. They were large well-built dogs. He obtained good prices for his stock, "Bloom" making 80 guineas by public auction. Lord Derby bred from the same strain, whilst Lord Sefton, Lord Stamford, and Lord Lichfield had similar stock. Mr. Edge's strain in time passed through the hands of Mr. Statham, of Derby, and Mr. Lang, the gunmaker of Cockspur Street.



used in England, the retriever having taken its place. It also appeared to have been generally believed that the setter was more suitable for work than the pointer, its feet being considered more able to stand work, and its constitution more able to stand fatigue, cold, and wet. *Stonehenge* shows a dog, "Major" ("that very beautifully shaped dog") who had taken first prize at Birmingham. It seems to have been an unfortunate choice, for "Major" resembles a foxhound so much to be mistaken for one. This dog was, we read, by Mr. Bird's celebrated "Bob" (sire of "Venus," "Hamlet," and other prize dogs), out of a bitch whose pedigree was never ascertained, but was "evidently of good blood."

*Idstone*, explaining the reason for crossing the Spanish pointer with the foxhound, writes :

"Gradually the notion prevailed that the old Spaniard was too slow. He trotted instead of galloping ; he quartered his ground ; he carried a high head, and this brilliant style gave him the command of wide parallels, whilst his exquisite power of scent served him instead of speed to such an extent that only give him the wind, and he would crawl up to his game in a direct line and there stand for four and (like some of the descendants of his family, for which I must quote the "*Sporting Magazine*," vol. xxiv, p. 243) for as many as *twelve hours* ! But in long days he *fagged*, stood still, rolled in the sun, or, wagging his short tail, followed panting at his master's heels.

"To counteract this it was found absolutely necessary to cross him with some lighter frame, even at the peril of injuring his staunchness, for all confessed, in the days of old Colonel Thornton—a capital sportsman, who lived in the beginning of this century—that they would put up with the tedious old sort no longer.

"Colonel Thornton tried the foxhound cross with success, in one instance, at any rate, in 1795, his pointer 'Dash,' liver-and-white, a long-necked, wiry animal of good form, and with undeniable shoulders, back and hind quarters, attaining such celebrity that he was purchased by Sir R. Hill for 120 guineas and a cask of Madeira wine, subject to the stipulation that the dog should be returned for fifty guineas when rendered unfit for work.<sup>1</sup> The first season 'Dash' broke his leg, and was returned according to agreement.

"The Spanish pointer was, I believe, a liver-and-white dog, with a great preponderance of liver-colour. He was very seldom ticked or flecked on his white, and bore a close resemblance to the well-known picture of the breed by Reinagle, in which he is represented with a very heavy head and jowl, deep flews, sunken, large eyes and tremendous bone and muscle. This picture hands him down to us as rough in the coat, though the profile of his body is not obscured by it, with 'hackles' on his white collar, a blaze, and cheeks white, as are also the inner margins of his legs and arms, and the end of his tail, which has been shortened by about a third of its length."

Later he writes : "Daniel Lambert," the fat prodigy of Leicester, was "justly celebrated for his breed of black pointers, their tails left as nature made them, being in this respect in advance of his day." He continues : "I am by no means sure that the foxhound was the only cross used to give pace and fire to the well-known English breed, but I am sure that the pointer's staunchness has not been injured. Fresh colours have been produced, all having their adherents and admirers, and these various

<sup>1</sup> A slightly varied account of the story given by Jesse.

colours have been the outward marks of what the sportsmen established as their own breeds. These were gradually introduced, and now we have the self-coloured dog—white, black, liver-coloured, red, sandy, or lemon, and the black-and-tan. Besides these we have the pied or blotched dogs, which are any of the above colours mixed more or less with white. Sometimes the white is flecked with the same colour as the patches and occasionally the dark blotches are shot or powdered with white specks. This is more frequently the case with liver or black dogs than any others; and in my opinion it has a very nice appearance.

“How long ago it was discovered that a dog would ‘back’ the point of his kennel companion it would be hard to say, but at the present time no dog is considered thoroughly broken unless he will acknowledge the point of his fellow-worker and become cataleptic directly the other dog draws up to game. I recollect seeing, at an exhibition of celebrated pictures in town, a large oil-painting, by a celebrated artist, of eight or nine pointers pointing and backing, and this work of art must have been from eighty to a hundred years old!

“When this talent has been thoroughly drilled into a dog, it enables him to help in the day’s sport without coming into collision with his companion; and when dogs are good backers, their master can take out as many as he likes together, *provided* they cross each other in hunting, and do not run in couples. In other words, provided each dog not only backs, but has an ‘independent range.’ All modern breakers *profess* to teach this, but many are too idle or ignorant to do it, and the result is mischief and disappointment.

“One of them, ‘Old Jesse,’ a chance dog” which he had purchased of Mr. Meir for snipe-shooting, and “which was purchased of a deserter from Yorkshire, was a fine example indeed. As he was of an unascertained pedigree, Mr. Meir would not breed from him, but he was a fine specimen of the Yorkshire dog; he was liver-and-white, and large. If I missed him on driving off to my snipe-ground, he would track my little white French pony and gig like a sleuth-hound; and many a time I have found him close at my wheels when I have looked back for him in vain for several miles.

“One bright winter morning I sat on a gate waiting for my companion (a Captain Hall), and looking up a long stretch of road, when I observed ‘Old Jesse’ coming along with a young dog of mine, which he had evidently invited to join the fun; and as I let the young dog work for snipe-game he never was on before, it was a sight to see how ‘Old Jesse’ tried to teach him the trade.

“I had two pieces of snipe-bog two miles apart, and one bad-scenting day he missed my track and went to the wrong piece, so that it was past one o’clock when I reached the piece to which he had gone. On getting to my second piece, which I generally shot first, I saw ‘Old Jesse’ standing stiffly on a snipe, and how long he had been pointing I cannot say. Frequently as I walked up to his point I have flushed snipes, and shot them before I reached him, but this made no difference to him, nor did it interfere with his steadiness. Once on this occasion he snarled at the youngster for flushing a jack, and when he repeated the fault he went up and severely worried him.

“As two of us shot together, he got into the habit of coming up to my room in the morning to see if I were dressed for shooting, and if I were not he would go to my



companion's chambers, and accompany him, or track him through the streets if he had gone on, and I do not remember that he ever failed to find him.

" 'Julie,' a liver-and-white pointer bitch, was another of my pointers which showed great sagacity and firmness. We have frequently lost her for a considerable time in high cover on a celebrated piece of ground called Keyworth, in Dorsetshire, belonging to my friend Mr. Drax, and at last we have seen the sting of her fine stern above the rushes, for she always held it higher than her head. She was one of the most intelligent dogs I ever possessed and would retrieve any game alive. Though only in her second season, she was the animal always sent out with young hands, and if they ran to pick up their game, she would bark at them reproachfully. I never had a pointer before that seemed so keenly to enter into the sport, or to appreciate as she did the real and proper style of beating for game.

" 'Belle,' out of the famous 'Queen,' already described, was another of my pointers, a dark liver-and-white, with a streak down her forehead and a spot in the centre of her skull. She nearly broke herself, and the least hint of what was required was sufficient for her. Unfortunately I never got but one litter from her, and I lost the breed, or no doubt I should have kept as many pointers as setters. In her old age she was a martyr to rheumatism, and became a house pet, often assisting in the killing of as much game as most pointers of her age, and leading my teams of young setters for six or seven seasons. Her death was the occasion of deep gloom in my family for a long time, and even my then cook, whom she tormented out of her life, said, as old Weller did of his wife, that 'on the whole she was sorry she was gone.' "

*Idstone* informs us that "as soon as dog shows became general, several eminent dogs came to the front, the first celebrity being Mr. Newton's 'Ranger,' a grand liver-and-white dog of the Edge kennel stamp and colour. When the first trial of dogs in the field took place, 'Ranger' had lost his pace, and the chief distinctions were gained by Mr. Brockton's 'Bounce,' liver-and-white, for large dogs, and by Mr. Garth's 'Jill' and Mr. Whitehouse's orange-and-white 'Hamlet' for dogs of less size. Amongst other dogs which acquitted themselves well were Mr. Swain's 'Peter,' a white dog of exquisite form, with liver head and liver-and-white ears, and Mr. Peter Jones's 'Brag.'

" 'Hamlet' subsequently gained great and deserved popularity by winning the Bala Sweepstakes of twenty-five guineas each, against any dog that could be brought against him, though from a mistake of the judge in counting his marks unpleasantness ensued; the real winner being the Marquis of Huntley's 'Young Kent,' according to the rules laid down.

" This celebrated dog, 'Hamlet,' has been one of the most successful dogs of the day. Numbers of his offspring combined first-class form with excellent stamina and nose. Mr. Whitehouse's 'Rap,' a dog of the same colour, excels the old dog in general outline, though in style of working 'Hamlet' never will be surpassed.

" These orange-and-whites are closely connected with Mr. Lang's breed, 'Bob,' the father of 'Hamlet,' having been the property of a Mr. Gilbert, who had the mother from Mr. Lang.

" It is usual to divide modern pointers, according to weight, into large, medium, and small. The large pointer dog must weigh 70 lb. or more, the bitch not less than



60 lb. or more ; the medium dog 50 lb., the bitch 45 lb., not exceeding 60 lb. ; small pointer dogs not over 50 lb., bitches not to exceed 45 lb.

"First-class stud dogs can be obtained of these proportions, or whelps of undoubted purity can be purchased by searching the catalogues and fixing upon successful exhibitors of reputation ; but occasionally there are sales of pointers where valuable and mature animals can be obtained at competitive prices.

"Provided that moderate size and good quality are sufficient, there is no dog more to be depended upon than 'Rap,' and if his colour is an objection, or a larger-framed pointer is desired, I should suggest 'Sancho,' a liver-and-white pointer belonging to Mr. Francis, jun., of Exeter, a grand dog by 'Bounce,' already described ; and it is enough to say of 'Sancho' that he has gained the first prize wherever he has been exhibited, and, in December 1870 and November 1871, that he easily disposed of all his rivals and won the Champion Class first prize at Birmingham, in the company of some of the crack dogs of the day, besides being first at Plymouth on two occasions."

Walsh, in 1878, shows two remarkably useful pointers at work, Mr. R. J. Lloyd Price's "Drake" and "Belle," and, strangely enough, re-publishes Mr. Smith's pointer "Major," of pure foxhound type. We read that this "Drake" was of his day the fastest and most reliable animal that ever quartered a field, and that he had been purchased at a high figure, £150, from Sir R. Garth. This dog at Shrewsbury field trials in 1868, the ground then being dry, worked so fast and stopped so suddenly that on one occasion he was surrounded in a cloud of dust.

Dalziel's work contains little new on the Pointer. A chapter written by G. Thorpe-Bartram is illustrated by one of this gentleman's bitches "Stella," a pointer of remarkable stamp, and very much of to-day's type. There is also a picture of a dog, "Special," large and heavily built. "Stella" was a "Sancho"<sup>1</sup> bitch, and had "Special" won sixteen prizes at seventeen shows.

Dalziel also gives as an illustration a dog, "Don," of a poor type.

Mr. William Arkwright, in his monograph upon the breed, published in 1902, by Arthur L. Humphreys, carries the history of the pointer back to about the year 1260, to the work of Brunetto Latinini, the Italian, and to Albertus Magnus (1193-1280), who in his "De Animalibus" writes :

"The dogs, however, that are used for birds seem to have these [powers] more from training than from sense of smell, though they derive them from both. They are taught in this manner : they are first led round some caught partridges pretty often, and at length, by threats, learn to go round and round them ; but they get to find the partridge by scent, and thus at the beginning they set (*ponunt*) pretty often at the indications of the captive birds."<sup>2</sup>

As to the pointer's introduction into England, Mr. Arkwright states : "The entire silence of all authors up to the close of the seventeenth century alone would be enough to justify the hypothesis that the pointer was unknown in England before the eighteenth century, but when the silence is corroborated by the opinion of eighteenth-century sporting writers in general, by Mr. Symonds's direct statement in particular,

<sup>1</sup> Champion "Wagg," "Don II," "Pearl," "Blanche," "Macgregor," "Cedric," "Lunar," "Stella" were all of "Sancho" blood (Dalziel).

<sup>2</sup> Arkwright.



From Daniel's "Rural Sports," 1801.





POINTERS TRAINING. From Daniel's "Rural Sports," 1801.





(Above) THE SPANISH POINTER. By Reinagle. (Below) THE ENGLISH POINTER. By Reinagle, 1803.



(Above) left, CLUMBER SPANIEL "LORD BEVIS," The property of Miss Bible; right, SUSSEX SPANIEL "BROSSE," The property of Miss J. R. Scholefield. (Below) left, FIELD SPANIEL CH. "WRIBBENHALL WATTER," The property of Mr. G. Mortimer Smith; right, COCKER SPANIEL "FALCONER'S COWSLIP," The property of Mrs. Jamieson Higgens.



and by the remarkable testimony of the 'Sporting Dictionary' that even in 1735 this dog was not widely known, supposition hardens into certainty. The assertion therefore seems justified that 1700 is the earliest possible date for the introduction into England of the pointing dog; while 1725, the date of the Duke of Kingston's picture of French pointing dogs, of course, determines the latest: there is also etymological proof that the pointers were not imported first from France, so that epoch clearly lies between 1725 and 1700. A lucky clue is *Quartogenarian's* 'certain' declaration that pointer dogs were heard of first in England about the time of Lord Peterborough's campaigns in Spain. The English commenced the War of the Spanish Succession in 1704, but Lord Peterborough was recalled in 1706. It is not likely that he himself took any dogs with him, because he was not a sportsman, because he went home by way of Italy, Austria, and Germany, taking a year over the journey, and because he left in disgrace. But by the Peace of Utrecht the war was terminated in 1713 and the British Army returned to England. Now, nothing could be more natural than for the British officers to carry away with them specimens of the wonderful pointing dogs from the country in which they had spent nearly nine years."

We will conclude this short chapter on Pointers with the following two stories, which are obviously true!

"In October 1811, as Mr. W., a gentleman in the neighbourhood of *Lewes*, Sussex, was shooting Partridges with a double-barrelled gun, and attended by a brace of excellent *Pointers*, his Dogs stood, the Covey rose, and he discharged both barrels, bringing down his Bird to the right and left; finding his Dogs still *stationary* in the high stuff, from which the Birds had risen, he re-loaded, but found that by his *first Fire*, he had not only shot the *Partridges* quite dead, but his two *Pointers* also! This *sporting* Casualty was occasioned by the Dogs standing on a small Eminence, and the Birds going off nearly close to the *lower* ground, immediately in a *Line* with them."<sup>1</sup>

#### A DOG AS A BAROMETER

"In the Account of ANIMAL BAROMETERS this Anecdote is remarkable. A gentleman, some few years since, brought a Pointer-dog from South Carolina, who was a prognosticator of bad weather. 'Whenever I observed him' (says his Master) 'prick up his Ears in a listening Posture, scratching the Deck, and rearing himself up to look over to the *Windward*, there he would eagerly snuff up the Wind; though it was the *finest* Weather imaginable, I was sure of a *succeeding* Tempest; and this Animal was grown so useful to us, that whenever we perceived the Fit upon him, we immediately *reefed our Sails*, and took in our spare Canvas to prepare for the worst.'"<sup>2</sup>

#### THE RETRIEVER

The vertagi or retrievers, description by Martial, appear to have been a form of retrieving dog of what type or colour no mention is made. Martial, according to Aldrovandus, writes: "The keen vertagus hunts for his master's account, not for yours; the hound that will bring back in his teeth a hare unspoiled."

<sup>1</sup> Supplement to Daniel's "Rural Sports," 1813.



The story of the retriever proper started when, as Youatt explains, some of the Newfoundland dogs had been brought to Europe, and have been used as retrievers " and found of value in penetrating the thickest cover. " They are comparatively small, but muscular, strong, and generally black." These were doubtlessly a variety of Labrador dogs (see chapter on Newfoundlands) described by Richardson in 1847 as the " Labrador spaniel or lesser Labrador dog." In 1859 *Craven*, in his " Recreations in Shooting," gives a chapter on the Retriever, and suggests that the best retrievers are crosses between a low-sized setter bitch and a pure Newfoundland dog, whilst he preferred a Newfoundland-pointer cross. He mentions a gentleman of the name of Callender, of Edinburgh, who " had not long since a retrieving pointer, which, when bringing to him in its mouth a bird he had just shot, upon the scent of another, a wonderful instance of nose, . . . coolly laid the bird on the ground, and putting his foot upon it, to prevent its escape, as it was only wounded, pointed to that it had found."

*Craven's* retriever, " as perfect at its business as perhaps one of its kind ever was," was bred between a bulldog and smooth terrier. She once retrieved a woodcock, winning Mr. Craven half a sweepstake of £35. He gives a picture of this " retriever," a bull-terrier. It seems strange to-day, but then the word " retriever " did not refer to any particular variety, but to a dog used for retrieving purposes.

*Stonehenge* (1859) places the retriever in amongst the cross-breeds, yet shows on his frontispiece a very useful and typical retriever, which, except for coat, would be considered good to-day. In his chapter, however, he writes :

" In speaking of the retriever, it is generally understood that the dog for recovering game *on land* is meant the distinct kind known as the water-spaniel, being already alluded to at page 1120. With regard to the propriety of using a separate dog for retrieving in open or covert shooting, there is a great difference of opinion, but this subject will be better considered under the next division of this book, and I shall now confine myself to a description of the crosses used solely as retrievers, including the ordinary cross between the Newfoundland and setter, and that between the terrier and the water-spaniel, which is recommended by Mr. Colquhoun and which I have found specially serviceable.

" The *qualities* which are required in the regular retriever are : great delicacy of nose, and power of stooping (which latter is often not possessed by the pointer) ; cleverness to follow out the windings of the wounded bird, which are frequently most intricate, and puzzle the intelligence as well as the nose to unravel them ; love of approbation, to induce the dog to attend to the instructions of the master ; and an amount of obedience which will be required to prevent his venturing to break out, when game is before him. All these are doubtless found in the retriever, but they are coupled with a large, heavy frame, requiring a considerable amount of food to keep it, and space in the dog-cart when he is to be conveyed from place to place. Hence, if a smaller dog can be found to do the work equally well, he should be preferred ; and as I think he can, I shall describe both.

" The *large black retriever* is known by his resemblance to the small Newfoundland and setter, between which two he is bred, and the forms of which he partakes of in nearly equal proportions. His head is that of a heavy setter, but with shorter ears, less clothed with hair. The body is altogether larger and heavier, the limbs stronger,

and the feet less compact, while the loin is much more loose, and the gait more or less resembling in its peculiarities that of the Newfoundland. The colour is almost always black, with very little white ; indeed, most people would reject a retriever of this kind, if accidentally of any other colour. The coat is slightly curly, but not very long, and the legs are not much feathered. The height is usually about 23 or 24 inches, sometimes slightly more or less. This dog can readily be made to set and back, and he will also hunt as well as a setter, but slowly, and lasting for a short time only.

“ The *terrier cross* is either with the beagle or the pointer, the former being that which I have chiefly used with advantage, and the latter being recommended by Mr. Colquhoun in his ‘Lochs and Moors.’ He gives a portrait of one used by himself, which he says was excellent in all respects ; and from so good a sportsman, the recommendation is deserving of all credit. This dog was about 22 inches high, with a little of the rough coat of the Scotch terrier, combined with the head and general shape of the pointer. The sort I have used is, I believe, descended from the smooth white English terrier and the true old beagle ; the nose and style of hunting proclaiming the hound descent, and the voice and appearance showing the preponderance of the terrier cross. These dogs are small, scarcely ever exceeding 10 lb. in weight, and with difficulty lifting a hare, so that they are not qualified to retrieve ‘fur’ any great distance. They must therefore be followed when either a hare or pheasant is sought to be recovered. They are mute in ‘questing,’ and very quiet in their movements, readily keeping at heel, and backing the pointers steadily while they are ‘down charge’ for as long a time as may be required ; and when they go to their game, they make no noise, as is too often done by the regular retriever. They do not carry so well as the larger dog, but in all other respects they are his equal, or perhaps superior, and from their small size they are admissible to the house, and being constant companions are more easily kept under command ; besides which they live on the scraps of the house, while the large retriever must be kept tied up at the keeper’s, and costs a considerable sum to pay for his food.”

In 1867 *Stonehenge*, writing under the heading “The Retriever Proper,” says :

“ No distinct recognised breed of retrievers exists, unless we make an exception in favour of the liver-coloured Irish water-spaniel, the rough Russian, and the deer-hound. The Earl of Cardigan, Sir George Wombwell, Sir John Lister Kaye, and many well-known sportsmen possess their own breed of dogs, used for retrieving from land or water, but there is no established breed. Good retrievers are to be found of all breeds. Thirty years ago William Evans, now, we believe, head keeper to Lord Fitzwilliam, had a famous retriever, by a bloodhound of the late Lord Ducie’s out of a mastiff.

“ An English retriever, whether smooth or curly-coated, should be black or black-and-tan, with tabby or brindled legs, the brindled legs being indicative of the Labrador origin. We give the preference from experience to the flat-coated or short-coated small St. John’s or Labrador breeds. These breeds we believe to be identical. The small St. John’s has marvellous intelligence, a great aptitude for learning to carry, a soft mouth, great strength, and he is a good swimmer. If there is any cross at all in this breed, it should be the setter cross.



"He should have a long head, large eye, a capacious mouth, the ears small, close to his head, set low, and with *short* hair on them ; his nose large, his neck long that he may stoop in his quest. We should give the points as follows : head, 10 ; nose, 10 ; ears, 2 ; neck, 8-30 ; shoulders oblique and deep chest, broad and powerful, shoulders, 6 ; chest, 4-10. His loins and back and hind quarters all of great importance ; for although a hare will be the maximum of weight he will have to carry, he may be compelled to carry it a long distance, to get over a stone wall with it, or to make his way through strong covert. Loins and back, 10 ; hind quarters, 10-20. His legs should be strong, straight, and muscular ; his feet round and moderately large, but compact, and the toes should be well arched. Feet, 6 ; legs, 6 ; hocks (large), 6 ; stifles, 2-20. If he is required for punt shooting, his coat should be short and close ; but for general purposes the texture should be flat, shining, and abundant. If black he should be all black, if black-and-tabby, the tabby should not go far up the legs, and should be *free from white*. Colour and gloss of coat, 15. The stern should be well feathered, moderately short, and gaily carried. The feather should be decidedly heavy, but tapering to the point. Tail, 5.

"We have given no points for temperament. No dog deserves the least consideration from a judge unless his temperament is evidently good at the first glance. Temperament is the foundation of a good retriever. He should be about 24 inches at the shoulder, moderately long in his body, moderately short on his legs. He should be as clean-cut as a setter under the angle of his jaw. The setter cross is perhaps the best, but it certainly diminishes the liking for water, and in some instances the produce has a marked disinclination to quest in thick or tangled woodland.

"The remarks we have made as to the frame and temperament of the wavy-coated retriever apply to the curly-coated dog. The distinction between the two is simply one of texture.

"The origin of the curly dog is not well known, but it is supposed to be the result of a cross between the Irish water-spaniel and the Newfoundland. The face of a curly retriever should be clean ; his hind legs from the hock downwards free from feather ; the remainder of his body covered with short crisp curls.

"‘Windham,’ the property of Mr. Gorse, is a good example of the wavy-coated dog ; and ‘Jet,’ in the possession of the same gentleman, is perhaps the best specimen of a curly-coated one ever exhibited to the public.

"The flat-coated dog gained the first prize in Birmingham three years in succession besides numerous first prizes at other shows. He has frequently been passed over for ‘Jet,’ or ‘Jet’ has been put aside for him, but he held his own at Newcastle, Alexandra Park, Nottingham, and Leeds. His powers of scent are excellent, and we understand him to be broken well, but he is rather hard-mouthed, and this fault we hold to be hereditary.

"‘Jet,’ on the other hand, carries alive, and having carried a live pigeon for any length of time, will let it fly from his mouth at a given signal."

"It is useless to shoot game unless you can find it," writes *Idstone* in his chapter entitled "The Smooth or Hairy-coated Black Retriever." He shows a picture of "Sailor," which he had bred and broken, then the property of Major Allinson, of Roker, Sunderland. "It must be understood," he continues, "it is not usual to take



a retriever off your own manor, unless the animal is famous and receives a special invitation ; nor can you always handle or use him efficiently if you do take him ; for the interest in a friend's dog is not much, and before he can make a couple of casts or hit off a runner, Dives and his friends are impatient to get at the birds marked down, and do not check the beaters from following the scent, or perhaps running after your dog to tear the game from his mouth and give him a rap on the nose with his stick."

He runs away from his subject telling us that :

"Deer-stalkers and deer-stealers have used a retriever for *their* game for centuries. No one ever thought of losing a crippled stag ; and the monks of St. Bernard always keep their fine Alpine mastiffs for the recovery of crippled human beings. But the handsome, intelligent, capable, highly-disciplined black retriever is a comparatively modern institution. I recollect a black, flat-coated one a friend of mine purchased at a long price ; but he was well worth the money, and a good deal cheaper than a shorthorn calf sold at a guinea an ounce because his mother was numbered the 12,489th, and his father belonged to Mr. Somebody's herd. He was as black as a raven—a blue-black—not a very large dog, but wide over the back and loins, with limbs like a lion, and thick, glossy, long, silky coat, which parted down the back, a long, sagacious head, full of character, and clean as a setter's in the matter of coat. His ears were small, and so close to his head that they were hidden in his feathered neck. His eye was neither more nor less than a human one. I never saw a bad expression in it. He was not over 25 inches in height, but he carried a hare with ease ; and if he could not top a gate with one—which about one dog in two hundred does twice a year—he could get through the second or third spar, or push it through a gap before him in his mouth and never lose his hold. And then for water. He would trot into the launching-punt and coil himself up by the luncheon-basket to wait for his master as soon as he saw the usual preparations for a cruise. For this work he had too much coat, and brought a quantity of water into the boat ; but for retrieving wild-fowl he was excellent ; and in the narrow water-courses and amongst the reeds and osiers his chase of a winged mallard was a thing to see. They seemed both to belong to one element ; and he would dive like an otter for yards, sometimes coming up for breath, only to go down again for pleasure.

"But on a winged grouse, to see him swing and feather with his fine bushy stern like a foxhound, and try the bits of ling and the grass and bog-myrtle, against which he suspected the bird had brushed, like an Indian on a trail, was most interesting ; now and then hesitating at some suspicious clump, his tail more agitated and his eye kindling as he makes a dead point, and crashes through the brake. There is a flutter and out he comes, his head covered with sand and splinters of the dead branches, with the poor cripple in his mouth. I saw this performance one sultry day when there was no scent. Subsequently, in the middle of an exceptionally dry September, when the turnip-leaves were yellow and orange-coloured and brown, and rattled like parchement, 'Snow' picked up the birds with no trouble, distinguishing where they ran by a sort of instinct, in spite of the strong rank smell of the roots and decayed foliage, dabbling for and retrieving them with marvellous precision.

"But the smooth-coated dog has a lighter eye—a pale hazel with an intensely black pupil, occasionally very like what is known as a 'china' or 'wall-eye.' Be

that how it may, they are the best of all breeds for boating; they can stand all weathers, and though men unused to them call them butchers' dogs, I think them handsome and know that they are sensible, and that the punt and shore men, living by adroit use of the long stauncheon gun and 'flat,' look upon them as part of their household, and in some cases—to quote the words of one old sporting farmer, to a duke who wanted to buy his horse—'No one has money enough to buy them.' ”

*Idstone* gives two further chapters to Retrievers; chap. xv is on the curly-coated retriever.

“Almost every preserver of game had his own favourite breed of retrievers, and dog shows have brought out specimens of more than average beauty; still, only five dogs and two bitches were exhibited in the Birmingham Show of 1860.

“Mr. Henry Brailsford won the first prize, of the magnificent value of £3, with a large black setter-headed dog, but decidedly a good one; and the same sum was given to a bad, liver-coloured, leggy bitch belonging to Lord A. Paget, which would not be noticed now, especially if compared with her companion in the class, a good, long, low, curly black, one of Mr. Druce's. The Birmingham Show Committee was quite right to begin with low prizes, but the judges were at sea in their awards. Everyone was young at these exhibitions, and even the disappointed exhibitor was unborn.

“In 1864 Birmingham divided the retriever classes into the curly- and the smooth- or wavy-coated breeds. They had already a cup and other prizes for Irish water-spaniels, and in 1866 a class was opened for retrievers 'other than black,' all which are continued to the present time. A champion class had been established in 1863, when Mr. Hill's 'Windham,' a smooth dog, was placed first, and a Mr. Carver's 'Belle' second, to the exclusion of five much better dogs: Mr. Hill's 'Jet,' subsequently purchased by Mr. Gorse, and one of the most perfect retrievers ever seen; Mr. Riley's 'Royal' and his bitch 'Bess'; Sir St. George Gore's 'Dinah'; and Mr. Hill's 'Mab.'

“The curly retriever follows, or ought to follow the Labrador type in ear and head. He should have a clean face, an unfeathered stern, or at most very slightly feathered; a large intelligent eye, and leg clean from hocks and knees to the feet, which should be close, firm, and rather large *to act as paddles*, and with respect to feathered stern, Mr. Gorse's first-prize dog 'Nelson,' by 'Jet II,' fails, but in other respects he is a worthy descendant of *old* 'Jet,' the celebrated winner; better he could not be.

“Amongst the immense variety of dogs which I have seen, judged, and taken notice of, or even bred and broken, many pass from my recollection, but I don't think that I shall ever forget the original 'Jet.' A photograph from an oil-painting, kindly forwarded to me by Mr. Gorse, conveys a poor impression of him. His carriage was more sprightly, his head longer, and cleaner cut under his jaw, and his stern was better placed and carried than the photograph represents. He was a mass of black, crisp, short curls, except his face and forehead, which were as smooth as the setter's, which he generally stood next to in the rank, with his champion card above him, barking a husky and, as I think, high-bred welcome to all who passed by.”

*Idstone* in the last of the retriever chapters deals with retrievers other than black.



In this, he writes, "there are numbers of dogs which may be called retrievers"—a strong hint that the name "retriever" was obtaining the meaning that it has to-day—"and there are a few people in the world who prefer liver-coloured or even parti-coloured dogs, to black ones, for the purpose." Later he adds: that "liver-coloured and sandy retrievers have a few partisans. They are the sort which 'always were kept,' people tell you, 'in one family,' and possibly one or more of the breed, or the head of one with the squire's hand on it in a full court-dress, is hung in the picture-gallery, so much being introduced because the painter had not room for more of the animal in his kit-cat portrait. I know of no family priding itself on this coloured species just now, but I have heard that they are not uncommon in Norfolk, and I myself had one from that county some years ago. Like all of his congeners, he had a strong dash of Irish water-spaniel blood in him, and possibly of the ordinary field-spaniel too, and he had the failing common to red- or liver-coated dogs with long coats—he looked, when moulting, just the colour of a rusty nail.

"It is true that liver dogs are not so conspicuous amongst autumn leaves as black dogs, but in cover you want them to be conspicuous. They act as 'a stop' for game if you are placed at the end of a cover, and they can't well be shot without great carelessness when in it."

By 1878 the retriever had become a variety, and the name, although still hanging to deerhounds, etc., according to Mr. Walsh's work of 1878, was becoming used for one breed only, which Mr. Walsh knew, according to the letterpress, now divided into two or three varieties. Walsh, in his work, gives a picture of two wavy-coated, rather loose in coat retrievers, "Paris" and "Melody," whilst in curly-coated ones Mr. Thorpe Bartram's "Nell" and Mr. Morris's "True" are heavily built, somewhat short-faced.

"No retriever proper had so good a nose as the pointer or setter," he writes, "though there are some dogs of these latter breeds who seem incapable of trying for anything but a body scent—and they, of course, are useless as retrievers. Some years ago," he continues, "I endeavoured to devise a plan of trying retrievers in public, and in my experiments I used an old worn-out pointer, which happened to be the only retrieving dog at hand. Constructing a trap on a tripod, which, on pulling a string, would drop a bird with its wing feathers cut in a field of turnips or other covert, I found the old dog invariably bring it to hand, although on one occasion the bird had reached the next field, fully three hundred yards from the trap; and as the result of these private experiments, I produced the machine at Vaignol in 1871, in full confidence that it would serve the purpose of the retriever trials. But there the retrievers proper could do nothing with a winged partridge dropped on turnips exactly as I had done in private, and if the bird happened to get away more than fifty yards, the scent was very seldom taken up, and if found at all, the success was owing to perseverance in seeking at random, and to accident, rather than nose. Mr. R. J. Lloyd Price's 'Devil,' a curly, liver-coloured dog, apparently a cross between the Irish water-spaniel and the poodle, bred by Sir P. Nugent, is the only dog I have ever seen perform in public to my satisfaction, showing great perseverance in hunting, with a good nose, but not coming up to the level of the old pointer above alluded to. With this exception, the best private retrieving I have ever seen has been with crosses



of the terrier and beagle ; for with one of these little dogs I never yet lost either fur or feather, though of course he could not carry a hare across a brook or over a gate. Still, we must take the world as we find it, *and the world of 1877 demands a retriever proper, black by preference, and either wavy-coated or curly.*" (The italics are mine.—E. C. A.)

"The wavy-coated breed," he writes, "is generally supposed to be a cross between the Labrador dog, or the small St. John's Newfoundland, and the setter ; but in the present day the most successful on the show-bench, as above remarked, have been apparently, and often admittedly, pure. In the belief that the nose of the pure Labrador is inferior to that of the setter, I certainly should advise the cross-bred dog for use ; but to be successful on the show-bench, under such judges as Dr. Bond Moore, Mr. Handley, and Mr. Lort, the competitor should display as little as possible of the setter. In all other respects Major Allison's 'Victor' was perfect, his symmetry being of the most beautiful order ; but Dr. Bond Moore could not forgive his setter-like ears, and his fiat was against him."

Referring to the "black curly-coated" :

"Little or nothing seems to be known of the history of this dog, now so extensively bred throughout the United Kingdom. At all events, there is no getting at the exact source of the breed, and on that account I am led to think that some non-sporting dog, such as the poodle, has been used. Possibly successful breeders do not like to give information which may lead to a repetition of their success in other hands ; but my experience does not lead me to place much reliance on this interpretation of their secrecy. It is admitted that the curly-coated dog is remarkably sagacious, and more 'tricky' than the smooth, and this confirms the above suspicion ; but I confess that I have no proof whatever to allege in its support, and my theory must be taken for what it is worth as such. The general belief is that the water-spaniel and the small Newfoundland have been used in establishing the breed, and there is little doubt of the truth of this theory.

"This variety of dog has certainly not increased in numbers of late years, or improved in symmetry, and has notably gone off in the shape of the head, which is now too narrow by far. The falling off numerically is probably due to the fact that the public have pronounced in favour of the Labrador, which has been largely imported by *Idstone* and others, as well as extensively bred by Dr. Bond Moore and Mr. Shirley, who have, with Mr. Lort and Mr. Handley, composed the goodly company of judges in this department. From whatever cause, however, the curly-coated dogs of the present day are not exhibited in such large and good classes as they were about ten years ago, and they are notably deficient in those indications of good temper which should always be looked for in the retriever."

But the use of the word "retriever" to one breed has not yet become quite fixed in the public mind, for Dalziel, in his work of 1880, writes :

"There is perhaps no name that is applied to dogs of so many different characters by the general public as 'retriever,' and if it can be correctly used to describe the amazing varieties of mongrelism so termed, it must indeed be a most elastic and accommodating term. In fact, every big black or brown or black-and-white dog with a roughish curly or a wavy coat is dubbed a retriever. If we go to the Dogs'

Home, where so many of the canine street-sweepings are always waiting to be claimed, we are sure to find twenty to thirty animals of the most opposite and incongruous types, all classed under the generic name of retriever. Open a daily newspaper, and we are sure to find a greater or less number of big black or brown dogs lost, described as retrievers, although probably not one of them bears more than a remote resemblance to the retriever proper, as seen in such perfection at our dog shows and field trials.

“By a retriever is now understood a dog used with the gun, and which recovers and brings in to the gun lost, wounded, or dead game, and in that sense it is not applicable to the deerhound, who, although he has been termed a retriever, is only so to the extent of recovering and tracing the lost trail of the wounded deer, but manifestly cannot retrieve it in the sense that the retriever proper does smaller game.”

On some of the black wavy-coated tan markings were to be seen, the result, probably, of a Gordon setter cross, but these markings were easily bred out.<sup>1</sup>

“Perhaps the sires that have exercised most influence in stamping the character of the present generation of retrievers under discussion are the two ‘Wyndhams,’ the one the property of that well-known and successful breeder, Mr. J. D. Gorse, the younger dog owned by Mr. T. Meyrick, M.P., the latter dog much used by that other most successful of retriever breeders, the late John D. Hull; ‘Paris,’ owned by Mr. S. E. Shirley, M.P., and bred from imported Labrador parents; Major Allison’s ‘Victor,’ and Mr. Chattock’s ‘Cato,’ both without known pedigree. Dr. Bond Moore paid considerable attention to the breed some years ago; his kennels were principally of Hull’s strain, and he had some remarkably fine specimens. I remember seeing a litter of ‘Midnight’s,’ if I mistake not, in Dr. Bond Moore’s kennels, in which were two fine pups of a pale liver colour, although both parents and grandparents were jet black.

“The strains of the various breeders are now getting pretty well commingled, and Mr. Shirley, who I consider is now the foremost of retriever breeders, has in his the blood of nearly all the old notabilities in conjunction with his own special ‘Paris’ and ‘Lady Evelyn’ strain.”

The picture is of “Thorn,” the property of Mr. S. E. Shirley, a good worker as well as a winner on the show bench.

In the next chapter, dealing with the curly-coated, Dalziel states that there are “few handsomer dogs than a good specimen of this breed. Compact forms, neat clean legs, and coats of jetty black, perfectly regular crisp little nigger curls, level, thick, and clustering over every part from ears to end of tail, as though clothed with the heads of so many prize piccaninnies,” but depicts a remarkably ugly dog “Toby.”

A further breed, the “Norfolk retriever,” is given a chapter written by *Saxon*, a variety which, according to this authority, appeared to specialise in biting what he retrieved, much to the delight of *Saxon*, who further writes its praises on this account. Dalziel deals with the liver-coloured retrievers, both smooth and wavy- and curly-coated, though he had not seen a good specimen exhibited for some time, and those few he had seen on the bench were apparently cross-bred spaniels.

He gives a note on the Russian retriever, which I have inserted in the notes on the

<sup>1</sup> Dalziel, p. 160.



golden retriever. I am of the opinion that the Russian retriever of Dalziel and other earlier authors has no relationship except in name to the golden retriever of to-day and that this so-called Russian retriever of the earlier writers was the Russian pointer described by Edwards in 1800.

#### THE LABRADOR RETRIEVER

The Labrador is a conspicuous example of the manner in which a breed that has solid merits may be advanced by exhibiting. Until the Hon. A. Holland Hibbert began to send some of the Munden dogs to shows about 1909, Labradors were practically unknown to a wider public, although sporting men and writers were aware that they had been used for retrieving by a few noble families ever since the first specimens were brought over soon after 1830. As things go, Mr. Holland Hibbert's strain was an old one before he started showing, the beginning of it dating back to 1884. The Duke of Buccleuch and the Earl of Malmesbury are also names to remember when history has to be written. The way was paved for the show dogs, however, by the remarkable field-trial performances of Mr. N. Portal's "Flapper," a dog that deserves to be immortalised. Whelped in October of 1902, he died in 1914, full of honours as a sire and as a winner at trials. It is scarcely too much to say that he marks an epoch, since no one realised, until he appeared, that in the Labrador there was a serious competitor to the previously all-conquering flat-coated retriever. Before many years had slipped away Labradors outnumbered the others alike at field trials and shows.

The two things went hand-in-hand, exhibitors in the main working their dogs, and no other breed can show as many holding championships for work and looks. Following "Flapper," the mantle fell upon Captain A. E. Butter's "Peter of Faskally," a dog that enjoyed the highest repute, and must have been worth no end of money to his owner. Ch. "Patron of Faskally," another noted dog, was bought from Captain Butter by the late Mr. T. W. Twyford, who had one of the most prominent kennels. Mr. Twyford afterwards sold "Patron" for £500, which was a high price then. It is said that nothing could be done with "Patron" until Captain Butter, taking him in hand himself, broke him so cleverly that he won the retriever championship with him one year. Amongst other celebrated dogs and bitches were "Brayton Swift," Ch. "Withington Dorando," Ch. "Type of Whitmore," Ch. "Manor House Belle," and Ch. "Ilderton Ben," all of which helped to frame the modern type.

With the advent of Mrs. Quintin Dick somewhere about 1914 things began to move with renewed vigour. Besides being largely responsible for the Labrador Retriever Club, this energetic lady set about the task of building up a kennel that at the present time is in the ascendant, both at trials and in the show-ring. Of the many good dogs that she has owned, Double Champion "Banchory Bolo" was probably the most notable, and in any case he has the most romantic story. In 1914 Mrs. Quintin Dick bought "Scandal of Glynn," who sired a litter of thirteen in the following year, of which "Bolo" was the sole representative of his sex. His breeder, after sending him to two trainers, who were unable to lick his unruly nature into shape, gave him away as past praying for. On the death of "Scandal" two years later, his mistress made inquiries about his son, and was offered him as a gift, he being wild and unmanageable. He was indeed a sorry-looking, surly dog that came to her, and his



introduction to work was most unpromising, but, after various misadventures, he settled down into a most knowledgeable dog, and when at last he was able to compete at field trials in 1920, he became a champion in three weeks. The bench honour followed, and he proceeded to repay his mistress for the trouble bestowed upon him by becoming the father of many winners and the grandsire of others. The fact of the King becoming a successful exhibitor also served as an impetus.

On the introduction of Labradors to the show public it cannot be said that they impressed people, being too rotund, too heavy in shoulder, and too short in neck. Mr. Allen Shuter, who sought a short cut to eliminating these defects, used a "flat-coat," and bred "Horton Max," who was sold to Mr. Scott McComb for £500. A handsome dog, undoubtedly, but neither one thing nor the other, and the majority of the Labrador people refused to encourage the experiment. In the course of time the necessary improvements came without the sacrifice of essentials. The Labrador should have a wide skull, and the standard requires a long and powerful neck, and long and sloping shoulders. The tail, thick towards the base, tapers gradually, and has no feather, but is covered with thick hair, which gives it that rounded appearance that makes it resemble the stern of an otter. The coat is also distinctive, being short, dense, without wave, and fairly hard. Two colours are recognised—black and yellow.

Until the early part of 1926 it was always supposed that the Labrador sprang from the lesser Newfoundland, and there is a current assumption that a black pointer has been used. On March 1, 1926, however, a letter from the Earl of Lonsdale appeared in the "Daily Mail," in which it was stated that the Labrador retriever had nothing whatsoever to do with the Labrador dog, but had been bred from the Chesapeake. The Chesapeake dog is in my opinion also a Labrador (see Appendix XXIV, also Show Points, Labrador Retriever, Appendix XXV).

#### THE FLAT-COATED RETRIEVER

The late Mr. S. E. Shirley, founder of the Kennel Club, and Mr. Thorpe Bartram deserve credit for the pioneer work, which was brought to greater perfection by the late Colonel H. Cornwall Legh, Mr. L. Allen Shuter, Major Harding Cox, Mr. Percy Heaton, Mr. H. Reginald Cooke, and a number of others. For many years the flat-coated retriever was one of the conspicuous favourites of the show-ring, until he was supplanted by the Labrador. Fortunately, he was principally kept by sportsmen, who never lost sight of utility points, so that, when trials were instituted, we saw many dogs from the leading show strains running well.

Of course, as time progressed, the dog did not escape criticism, some contending that he was too big, and too high on the leg. If this was correct, the evil was redressed, and a dog produced that would suit the utility man as well as the show-bench. We have now a well-proportioned animal, symmetrical in all features, racily built, yet having fine staying powers. The head, long and narrow, looks sensible and kindly. As a concession to exhibitors, importance is attached to the coat, which is flat, dense, and weather-resisting. Fore legs should be perfectly straight, and behind the stifles are nicely bent, and the hocks well let down. Dark eye, with a mild expression. Mr. H. Reginald Cooke has epitomised the appearance as that of a "bright, active dog showing power without lumber, and raciness without weediness."

Mr. Shuter's Ch. "Darenth" enjoyed much fame in his day, earning a small fortune

at stud, and another that was in considerable favour was "High Legh Blarney," for which Mr. Cooke paid 200 gns. at the sale of Colonel Cornwall Legh's dogs in 1905. He is said to have repaid his cost in less than two years. Major Harding Cox's "Black Drake," Mr. C. A. Phillips's Ch. "Taut," Mr. Gladdish Hulkes's Ch. "Pettings Mallard," and Colonel Cornwall Legh's Ch. "Breeze" and Ch. "Blizzard" all did much towards shaping the destinies of the breed, to say nothing of the numerous champions that have borne Mr. Cooke's hall-mark, "Riverside."

Field trials for retrievers were held at Vaynol Park, the North Wales home of Mr. Assheton Smith, in 1871 and 1872, and then they seem to have been dropped until the International Gun-dog League took up the running in the beginning of this century. Now they are common everywhere. The standard of work is very high.

An interesting letter from Mr. S. E. Shirley appeared in the "Kennel Gazette" of April, 1880:

"There have been classes for retrievers at dog shows from the commencement, but it was not until the show at the Ashburnham Hall, Chelsea, in April 1864, that separate classes were provided for the wavy and curly varieties; and, curiously enough, a dog whose pedigree is closely linked with most of our best dogs of the present day was successful on that occasion. I refer to Mr. Meyrick's 'Wyndham,' who not only won there, but repeated his victory at the Agricultural Hall and at Birmingham in the same year. Judged by our present ideas of a good retriever's coat, 'Wyndham's' was no doubt defective; it was not flat enough, and this fault he transmitted to some of his stock. 'Wyndham,' although a dog of curious temperament, and, like many a good man, just a little fond of his own way, was a well-broken, useful dog. He died three years ago, but his memory will long remain fresh in the pedigrees of many a worthy descendant.

"Mr. Meyrick's 'Wyndham' must not be confused with an older dog of the same name belonging to Mr. Brailsford, and afterwards to Mr. Gorse, of curly-retriever fame. Many people have made this mistake, as both 'Wyndhams' were in different years first-prize Birmingham winners.

"Nowadays the wavy retriever classes (I use the familiar term wavy, although flat-coated would be the better name) are certainly superior to the curly; it was not so, however, by any means, ten years ago, and many are the types I have seen selected on different occasions. In 1868 'Old Bounce' was shown. She belonged to the late John Hull, at that time keeper to Mr. Whitehouse, of Ipsley, and a really good judge of a retriever. 'Old Bounce' was by 'Black Sailor' out of 'Boss,' a little black bitch of Hull's. As far as I am aware, Old Bounce was not a success as a brood bitch at first; and it was not until, by the advice of Mr. Lont, she was sent to 'Cato,' the property of Mr. Chattock, of Solihull, that she made amends for lost time; the result of this union was 'Young Bounce,' certainly the most successful brood bitch we have yet seen, for her puppies were not only numerous but good, and among them are included 'Banker,' 'Copson,' 'Monarch,' 'Midnight,' 'Lady Bounce,' 'Thorn,' 'Perdix,' 'Young Victor,' and 'Beaver'; the four latter were all one litter, and they were first, second, and third in the dog class, and first in the bitch class, at Birmingham in 1874—truly a great performance.

"Among other winning dogs of various strains, I may mention 'Hector,' a big dog just a little bit too much of the Newfoundland type, although his sire, 'Rover,'





(Above) left, ENGLISH SPRINGER SPANIEL CH. "BOCHURST CARLO," The property of Major Dymedias; right, WELSH SPRINGER SHOW CHAMPION "FELCOURT FLAPPER," The property of Lt.-Col. Davies-Powell; (Below) left, WELSH SPRINGER SPANIEL THE LATE "CINLA DASH," The property of Mr. H. C. Green; right, GOLDEN SPRINGER SPANIEL "NORANBY NELL," The property of Mrs. W. M. Charlesworth.





(Above) left, ENGLISH SETTER "EDENBRIDGE BEAUTY," *The property of Miss Hazel Knight*; right, IRISH SETTERS "WIZBANG CHUMMIEBELLE" (left) AND "WIZBANG BUNTIEBELLE." (Below) A GROUP OF IRISH SETTERS; left to right, "W. Bonniebelle," "W. Buntiebelle," "W. Buccaneer," "W. Chummiebelle," "W. Brigand." *All the property of Miss S. Fincham.*



(Above) LABRADOR RETRIEVER CH. "BENINGBROUGH TANGLE." *The property of Mrs. Quintin Dick.* (Centre) FLAT-COATED RETRIEVER "JOAN OF RIVERSIDE," WITH PUPPIES BY CH. "TOBY OF RIVERSIDE." (Below) DUAL CH. "TOBY OF RIVERSIDE." *Both bred by, and the property of, Mr. H. Reginald Cooke, of Riverside.*  
372c]





(Above) left. PYRENEAN SHEEP-DOG, "CABBAS." The property of Her Majesty the late Queen Victoria; right. ST. BERNARD "THE KING'S SON." The property of Mr. Ben Walmesley, C.B.E. (Below) GOLDEN RETRIEVERS "NORANBY BRUIN," "NORANBY SANDY," AND "NORANBY BALFOUR." The property of Mrs. W. M. Charlesworth. [372d

was got by an Irish setter, and inherited the beautiful flat silky coat of this breed.

“ ‘Rover’s’ dam, ‘Belle,’ was very smooth-coated, too much so in fact. ‘Hector’ was much the same stamp as Chattock’s ‘Cato,’ the sire of ‘Young Bounce.’ Both were big dogs, too big for our present taste, with fair heads, brown eyes, good coats, and plenty of bone and substance. ‘Cato’ had an excellent nose, and was a very clever retriever. He was afterwards called ‘Morley’ by Dr. Bond Moore, who bought him after he had passed through several hands; the circumstance of the dog being delivered to his new owner at Morley’s Hotel, in Trafalgar Square, suggested his new name.

“ Mr. Gorse’s ‘Sailor,’ another well-known wavy-coated dog, came from a strain noted for working qualities; his sire, ‘Moses,’ or ‘Mose,’ as he was generally called, was a medium-sized dog, but not so good as his father ‘Nep’; the latter was as good a dog as I have ever seen and perfectly broken. He came from Lord Ashburnham’s kennels, and belonged to Way, at that time keeper to Captain Peach, of Idlecote. Way afterwards sold him to Mr. West, of Alscot Park, and there he died.

“ The Rev. T. Pearce had a few years ago an excellent working strain of retrievers of the Labrador type. For looks I fancied some of them were rather too heavy, both in coat and general appearance, but Mr. Rocke’s ‘Mentor,’ a prize winner at the Crystal Palace, and bred by Mr. Pearce, was certainly an exception to this criticism.

“ Mr. Farquharson, a neighbour of Mr. Pearce’s in Dorsetshire, has also some of the strain and has been very successful with them on the show-bench; his ‘Ben,’ descended from the ‘Old Fag’ blood, being an unusually nice dog of rare stamp, and just the size I like.

“ ‘Paris,’ a dog whose name is to be found in the pedigrees of many prize winners in recent years, was a pure Labrador. His head was a bit too chubby and thick, but his coat, legs, feet, stern, and general appearance were as near perfection as one could wish to see. He was a capital retriever, thoroughly steady, but with any amount of perseverance and dash when at work. There is a good likeness of the old dog in the last edition of ‘Dogs of the British Islands.’

“ The pedigree of Colonel Allison’s ‘Victor’ is, I believe, not known; his appearance indicates a considerable setter cross. He won first at the Crystal Palace, and at the stud has been most successful, as he can claim to be the sire of ‘Thorn,’ ‘Perdix,’ ‘Merlin,’ and ‘Beaver.’

“ The various strains of wavy-coated retrievers may be briefly summarised as the Labrador type, represented by Mr. Meyrick’s ‘Wyndham’; and to some extent by Mr. Gorse’s dog of the same name, Chattock’s ‘Cato,’ ‘Paris Morley,’ Mr. Price’s ‘Luna,’ and Mr. Coast’s ‘Sport.’ The setter type, as shown by Colonel Allison’s ‘Victor,’ Mr. Gorse’s ‘Sailor,’ his brother, the Rev. J. Sykes’s ‘Sambo’ (first at Birmingham in 1869, a puppy of singular promise who died, I regret to say, very shortly after the show), and Mr. Price’s ‘Molière.’ The latter dog was first shown as ‘Duke.’ I have never been able to ascertain his full pedigree, but I have no hesitation in asserting, from the appearance of his stock, that, like ‘Victor,’ he had a considerable share of setter blood in him.

“ The collie type, as shown by some of Mr. Bevan’s strain; and the Russian type,



represented by Mr. Price's 'Devil,' and his son, 'Country Rector.' To these must be, of course, added the various combinations of the above strains, and lately I have noticed several recommendations in the newspapers in favour of trying a cross with the poodle. There is no doubt many poodles retrieve admirably, and although I have never actually bred the cross myself, I have both seen and shot over useful specimens. I have, however, never yet seen any decided superiority in them to our modern retriever proper, and I think in some points they are inferior, namely in size and looks, and their coats are not very suitable for some kinds of work."

We also find in the same journal of May of the same year a note on curly-coated retrievers, which I give here as it contains considerable information on dogs of that and earlier times.

"Curly retrievers have, no doubt, fallen off as a class, not only in quantity, but in quality, at shows of late years. This may be easily accounted for by the proportionate rise in public estimation of their wavy-coated cousins. The latter are generally supposed to be better workers, less headstrong, and therefore easier broken, and also far less inclined to be hard in the mouth; and I may also add that I have undoubtedly found wavy retrievers the better-tempered of the two. It is by no means easy to get at the exact source of the breed of curly retrievers. Mr. Walsh says, in 'The Dogs of the British Islands': 'The general belief is that the water-spaniel and small Newfoundland have been used in establishing this breed, and there is little doubt of the truth of the theory.' The poodle is also supposed to have been used, and also the Irish water-spaniel, although a well-known authority on this breed has recorded his opinion that a cross between the Irish water-spaniel and other breeds would result in the complete loss of the coat, ears, tail, and symmetry of the former. I cannot, however, agree with this theory. I have crossed both Irish and Russian water-spaniels with other breeds, and have found, as a rule, no loss of coat, and in fact the ears and general symmetry have been reproduced in an undesirable degree, as the long ears and the leggy, unsymmetrical characteristics of the Irish water-spaniel are points we should, of course, gladly dispense with in a retriever. In crossing with the Irish water-spaniel I have always observed that a top-knot or a tendency to it is almost invariably reproduced; and this tendency is shown through many subsequent generations; and I would, therefore, venture to assume that if Irish water-spaniel blood existed in any great degree in the curly retrievers of the present day, we should see more traces of it in this particular than we do. Amongst some of the principal winning curly-retriever dogs, may be mentioned Mr. Gorse's 'Jet,' and his son 'Jet II,' both winners of many first prizes (indeed, between them, they carried off the first prize at Birmingham each year from 1864 to 1868 inclusive); Mr. Henshall's 'Sam,' Mr. Arkwright's 'Sweep,' Mr. Skidmore's 'Ben,' Mr. Howe's 'Toby,' Mr. Large's 'Sam,' Mr. Salter's 'King Koffee,' and last, but not least, Dr. Morris's 'True.' 'True' came into Dr. Morris's possession in the autumn of 1870, he being at that time about 12 months old. He was bred, I have always understood, by a noted poacher, and during his puppyhood was inured in the craft, and soon became an expert and the terror of the keepers, who tried to shoot him on several occasions, and at the time Dr. Morris bought him he had many shots embedded in his skin. He was got by 'Sam,' a very sensible dog, belonging to a carrier, and his dam was a well-bred, medium-sized black curly bitch. 'True' is, I believe, very tender-mouthed, and one of the

most sensible dogs possible. As a show dog he has had a remarkably successful career, and is sire of many of the best dogs of the day.

"Mr. Salter's 'King Koffee' is a relation of 'True's,' as his 'Duke' was by 'Sam.' He has also proved himself to be a capital sire, as he can claim among his produce 'Chicory,' 'Cocoanut,' and that good dog 'Garnet,' who although red himself is from black parents, and is therefore more than likely to get black stock: in fact, I saw a litter of the most promising puppies by him not long since, and there was not one among them that followed their sire in colour, all being jet black. There are few better bred dogs in England than 'Garnet,' as he combines the blood of 'True' and 'King Koffee,' and is also descended from Gorse's 'Jet' through his great-grandmother on the dam's side.

"Among the principal winning curly-coated retriever bitches should be mentioned Dr. Morris's 'XL,' Mr. Bartram's 'Nell,' Mr. Arkwright's 'Duchess,' Mr. Granville's 'Cocoanut,' Mr. Swinburne's 'Chicory,' Dr. Morris's 'Moretta,' and Mr. Croft's 'Lucy.' But little difference seems to exist now as to what should be the right stamp to be selected both in wavy and curly retrievers by breeders and exhibitors. The points as published by *Stonehenge* may be taken as representing the general opinion on the subject, although in some few particulars I do not acquiesce in his remarks, especially as regards the tail of wavy-coated retrievers, which, he states, 'in the Bond Moore' (or Labrador) 'type, should be bushy, and not feathered, which is a sign of the setter cross.' I quite agree that the tail of setter character is most undesirable in a retriever, but that is no reason why a wavy retriever's tail should not be feathered. A bushy or 'helmet' tail should, in my opinion, always be considered a defect. I may here mention that in speaking of the wavy-coated dog 'Morley,' late 'Hector,' in my notes on this subject last month, I unintentionally spoke of 'Belle' as the dam of 'Rover,' whereas 'Belle' was 'Hector's dam.'"

It was in May that year that Mr. E. J. Farquharson sold his kennel of wavy-coated retrievers at Aldridge's (on March 19). "Ben," a winner at Birmingham and the Alexandra Palace, made the top price, £45, whilst "Sam" and a young dog "Boston" sold for 31 and 21 gns. respectively. This "Sam" went back to the "Paris" strain through his dam "Peerless," while "Boston" was a son of "Ben." "Brevet," by a noted sire "Victor," made 19 gns. "Bena," the dam of "Ben," went for 2½ gns.

Mr. Reginald Cooke, of Riverside, writes to me: "The late Mr. Shirley, of Ettington Park, Warwickshire, was the founder of the breed of flat-coated retrievers. There had been retrievers in the Ettington Kennels for many years, but Mr. Shirley was the first man to breed to a type.

"He probably crossed with the setter and Labrador, and many of the dogs in his kennel owed their parentage to a dog called 'Sailor,' belonging to Mr. J. D. Gorse. He was the son of a dog called 'Moses,' also well known.

"Mr. Shirley worked very hard in the interests of the breed by purchasing and using the best dogs available, but he seems to have had a difficulty in obtaining an out-cross. He bought a dog called 'Ploughchain,' which he believed was an entire out-cross, but later he found, to his disappointment, that this dog was closely related to the dogs in his own kennel.

"The flat-coated retriever of to-day differs very little in type and conformation from the dogs in Mr. Shirley's time, except that by careful selection in breeding,



individual points, such as sterns, legs, coats, feet, and head, have been improved, and the dogs of to-day as a whole show more refinement than those of old days. There is also a tendency, to suit modern requirements, to breed these dogs smaller than formerly."

The illustration is of "Joan of Riverside" with a litter of eight puppies by Ch. "Toby of Riverside," the property of Mr. Reginald Cooke, of Riverside, Nantwich, Cheshire, the noted breeder and exhibitor of flat-coated retrievers. The paintings by Maud Earl of Mr. Reginald Cooke's dogs at work are well known and are unique in their art (Plate 103). For show points see Appendix XXV.

The Labrador is Ch. "Beningbrough Tangle," the property of Mrs. Quintin Dick, of Slain's Lodge, Collieston, Aberdeen.

#### A POLITICAL RETRIEVER

"Dog stories are just now plentiful in the papers," wrote a correspondent of the "Gentlewoman." "My father-in-law once owned a dog that was something of a politician. She was a fine retriever, with a handsome pedigree behind her. The stable-boy had to go every morning to the station for the newspaper, and so this intelligent boy trained the dog to go instead of him every morning, in order that he might indulge in half an hour's longer sleep. 'Mat' never failed to bring the paper back to time, but one day she appeared without it, and the stable-boy, hurrying to inquire the reason, the station-master told him that he was short of 'Times' newspaper, and had presented a 'Telegraph' to the dog instead, who would have nothing to do with it, but laid it down on the floor and came home without. The boy told his master, who naturally was disinclined to believe this story. The station-master, however, assured him it was true, and, to prove it, a week later my father-in-law rose betimes and hid himself in the station. Sure enough the dog arrived, and on being presented with a 'Telegraph' laid it down on the floor and protested by barking. Then the station-master gave him a 'Times,' and the dog trotted off with his parcel. He supposed that the reason was that the paper was of a different weight, and that the ink or paper tasted wrong to the sagacious animal. 'Mat' continued to fetch our daily paper for some years, and she even tried to teach one of her sons, with some success, but I regret to say that after her death her son could not be depended on."

#### GOLDEN RETRIEVER

The history of this now famous breed of retrievers is a somewhat confusing one, and the golden retriever of to-day has nothing whatever to do with the Russian retriever of Dalziel and previous authorities.

Reference to a previous portion of this chapter shows that in the early stages of retriever breeding, golden and liver-coloured dogs were found in the litters, and it is quite possible and more than likely that these "golds" were here and there used to make the present variety.

The history of the golden retriever started when, shortly after the Crimean War, the Hon. Dudley Marjoribanks became interested in a troupe of handsome cream-coloured dogs performing in a circus at Brighton. The marked intelligence and the good appearance of these dogs impressed him, and he purchased them.

From performing in a circus, from the monotony and misery of such a life, the

troupe found themselves cared for on the Guisachan Deer-forest in Inverness-shire. There, with more than usual intelligence, they took to the work of tracking deer and retrieving game as if they had been accustomed to such work all their lives. They proved to have soft mouths, they were good workers, and easy to control.

The Hon. Dudley Marjoribanks, then Lord Tweedmouth, was not anxious to part with any one of them or any of the litters they produced. Lord Tweedmouth and his nephew, Lord Ilchester, kept the variety pure, no outcrosses were made. The result was that in 1880 it was found that the constant inbreeding was showing deleterious effects, the dogs were clearly losing vitality, and it became necessary to take fresh steps. Lord Tweedmouth sent an agent to Russia; he returned empty-handed. Nor was he able to obtain information as to the breed, except that it was believed that dogs of similar type existed in distant parts of Asiatic Russia, where they acted as sheep-dogs, companions, guards, and sportsmen.

When first introduced here, they were known as yellow "Russian retrievers"; the type was then heavier and more like the Newfoundland as this dog was during the earlier part of the eighteenth century. He was therefore broad-backed, squarely built, with somewhat of a heavy head. Some had bad coats, of various shades of cream. The usual coat was long, wavy, and very dense, with a heavy under coat. The long coat prejudiced the breed in the eyes of sportsmen who desired a dog to face thorns and hedges and the undergrowth in woods. But with that care for which breeders in England are noted, by careful choice and elimination, the variety was bred away from the overheavy type with bad coats, and is to-day one of the most popular breeds of shooting-dogs in England.

There appears to have been some confusion between the golden retriever and the so-called Russian retriever sheep-dog depicted by *Stonehenge*.

It is stated that the necessity for an outcross, due to constant inbreeding and the failure to obtain fresh blood from Russia, was met by using bloodhounds, which has given the variety more than average scenting powers, and also the golden colour which is now characteristic of the breed. Distinct traces of this cross can be seen in many goldens to-day.

The leading breeders for show trials were the Lady Harris, the Hon. Mrs. R. F. Grigg, Mrs. Charlesworth, Lieut.-Colonel the Hon. D. Carnegie, Captain Hardy. The last named was the first to gain honours in trials with his bitch "Pixie II" in the Gamekeepers' Association Field Trials at Wetherby. Mrs. Charlesworth came next with "Noranby Sandy," who won several certificates of merit, and "Noranby Tweedledum." Then later the Hon. Mrs. Grigg won second in the Eastern Counties with Champion "Bess of Kentford." In 1924, Mrs. Charlesworth divided first prize in Hants U.G.L. Trials with "Noranby Curfew" and Captain Burrell's "Labrador Lassie of Ackendar." This was the first occasion when a golden retriever had won first in open trials. In 1925 Mr. Scott won the Kennel Club Trials with "Eredene Rufus," who is now the property of the Hon. Mrs. Grigg.

The illustrations of golden retrievers are Mrs. Charlesworth's of Eaton Mews, N., Eaton Square, S.W., noted in field trials and on the show-bench. Plate 104 shows Mrs. Charlesworth's "Noranby Bruin," "Noranby Sandy," and "Noranby Balfour" in 1910, and has been chosen to show that the dogs of that date are very much the same as they are to-day. (For show points see Appendix XXV.)



## IRISH WATER-SPANIEL

The water-spaniel of Youatt (1845) I have dealt with in the chapter on the poodle. The illustration is more that of a collie with curly hair, and probably did not represent the breed.

He gives the story of "Bagsman." "Perhaps he (the author) may be permitted to relate one story more of the water-spaniel," he writes; and pledges himself for "its perfect truth."

"I was once on the sea-coast, when a small, badly formed, and leaky fishing-boat was cast on shore, on a fearful reef of rocks. Three men and a boy of ten years old constituted the crew. The men swam on shore, but they were so bruised against the rocks that they could not render any assistance to the poor boy, and no person could be found to venture out in any way. I heard the noise and went to the spot with my dog. I spoke to him, and in he went, more like a seal than a dog, and after several fruitless attempts to mount the wreck he succeeded and laid hold of the boy, who clung to the ropes screaming in the most fearful way at being thus dragged into the water. The waves dashed frightfully on the rocks. In the anxiety and responsibility of the moment I thought that the dog had missed him, and I stripped off my clothes, resolved to render what assistance I could. I was just in the act of springing from the shore, having selected the moment when the receding waves gave me the best chance of rendering any assistance, when I saw old 'Bagsman,' for that was the name of the dog, with the struggling boy in his mouth, and the head uppermost. I rushed to the place where he must land, and the waves bore the boy and the dog into my arms.

"Some time after that I was shooting wild-fowl. I and my dog had been working hard, and I left him behind me while I went to a neighbouring town to purchase gunpowder. A man, on a drunken frolic, had pushed off in a boat with a girl in it; the tide, going out, carried the boat quickly away, and the man, becoming frightened and unable to swim, jumped overboard. 'Bagsman,' who was on the spot, hearing the splash, jumped in, swam out to the man, caught hold of him, and brought him twenty or thirty yards towards the shore, when the drunken fellow clasped the dog tight round the body, and they both went down together. The girl was saved by a boat going to her assistance. The body of the man was recovered about an hour afterwards, with that of the dog clasped tight in his arms, thus dragging him to the bottom. Poor 'Bagsman'! thy worth deserved to be thus chronicled."

Richardson (1847), on the water-spaniel, gives with the text an illustration which has an unmistakable likeness to an Irish water-spaniel of to-day. (See Plate 144.)

"The genuine water-spaniel is strongly and compactly formed; the nose fine; the forehead high, apex of the head very prominent, and furnished with a tuft or top-knot of hair; ears very long and deeply fringed; colour brown, coat curled all over the body, in close, crisp curls; the *tail not fringed*, but covered with close curls to the point. The smallest speck of white may be regarded as indicative of foul breeding.

"There is also a *black* water-spaniel. I saw several in Edinburgh, but I do not find them common anywhere else. Some (and Mr. Youatt amongst others) describe two varieties of water-spaniel—a large and a small; but the fact is, that we might

describe *two dozen* varieties—the variations depending on size and colour only, the results of whims or fancies on the part of the breeders, who, resorting to crosses, have produced so many aberrations from the pure and original breed, which is that I have just described.

“The water-spaniel, however, is much improved in beauty by intermixture with the *land* variety. A female of this kind named ‘Duck,’ which we have figured, is in possession of Mr. Macneil, the well-known and justly esteemed musical-instrument maker, Capel Street, in this city, and is one of the most beautiful and affectionate creatures I have ever seen. Macneil reflects credit on ‘Irish manufacture’; but I presume that he and his establishment are too well known to require further eulogy. Many prefer a medium or even small-sized water-spaniel, and I confess I am of this number, as I conceive them better suited to work, and more active as retrievers. Some, on the other hand, conceive that small size is incompatible with strength; these accordingly take pains to breed large dogs, and some have even resorted to a cross with the Newfoundland to effect this object; a cross is, however, unnecessary, all that is requisite being care in the selection of such whelps as are to be reared, and judicious pairings. In proof of this assertion, I may mention the dogs of Justin M’Carthy, Esq., of this city, of the highest possible blood, and at the same time little inferior to mastiffs in size and strength.” In the above Richardson alludes to Dublin.

Later in the same chapter he tells us that “some years ago this dog was in great repute in Dublin. In those days, duck-hunting was a favourite amusement; it used to be practised in the ‘brackish canal,’ near the North Wall, and the brown water-spaniel was found superior to all other dogs at this sport; further, he was *soft-mouthed*, and did not injure the duck when he succeeded in capturing her, consequently, the same unfortunate bird answered for a second hunt. Among many other improvements that have characterised the present generation, I may observe that this inhuman sport is no longer permitted.”

*Stonehenge*, in his work of 1859, in the chapter on the water-spaniel, after describing the old English water-spaniel, continues:

“The *Irish water-spaniel* consists of two distinct varieties, peculiar to the North and South of Ireland. The *northern* dog has short ears, with little feather either on them or on the legs, but with a considerable curl in his coat. In colour he is generally liver, but with more or less white, which sometimes predominates, so as to make him decidedly white-and-liver. The *south-country* Irish water-spaniel is, on the contrary, invariably of a pure liver-colour. Ears long and well feathered, being two feet from point to point, and the whole coat consisting of short, crisp curls. Body long, low and strong, tail round and carried slightly down; but straight, without any approach to feather.

“The celebrated breed known as ‘M’Carthy’s’ was described in ‘The Field’ newspaper by Mr. J. M. M’Carthy:

“The present improved and fancy breed, called M’Carthy’s breed, should run thus: Dog from 21 to 22½ inches high (seldom higher when pure bred), head rather capacious, forehead prominent, face from eyes down perfectly smooth, ears from 24 to 26 inches from point to point. The head should be crowned with a well-defined top-knot, not straggling across like the common rough water-dog but coming down



in a peak on the forehead. The body should be covered with small crisp curls, which often become dagged in the moulting season; the tail should be round without feather underneath, of the two rather short, and as stiff as a ramrod; the colour of a pure puce-liver without any white. Though these dogs are generally of very high mettle, I have never found them untractable or difficult to be trained; they readily keep to heel and down-charge, and will find a dead or wounded bird anywhere, either in the open or in covert, but they are not partial to stiff thorny brakes, as the briers catch the curl and trail after them. It is advisable to give them a little training at night, so that in seeking objects they must rely upon the nose alone. For the gun, they should be taught to go into the water like a duck; but when kept for fancy, a good dog of this breed will take a flying jump of from 25 to 35 feet, or more, perpendicular height, into the water. My old dog 'Boatswain' lived to be about eighteen years old, when, although in good health and spirits, I was obliged to destroy him. When going abroad in 1849 for some years, I gave my breed to Mr. Jolliffe Tuffnell, of Mount Street, Merrion Square, Dublin, son of the late Colonel Tuffnell, of Bath. His dog 'Jack,' a son of my dog 'Boatswain,' is known particularly as a sire to everyone in Ireland, and to very many in England. A good, well-trained dog of this breed will not be obtained under from £10 to £15 or £20, and I have known as much as £40 and £50 to be paid for one. They will not stand a cross with any other breed; the spaniel, setter, Newfoundland dog, and Labrador dog, etc., perfectly destroy coat, ears, tail, and symmetry; added to which, the cross-bred dog is very difficult to dry. If any cross would answer, I should say the bloodhound, which would give at least head, ears, and nose. I have bred with the greatest care, giving the highest prices for good dogs to cross my own. I still have a first-rate bitch of the breed. It is essential for gentlemen purchasing puppies to see both sire and dam, as in this breed it is very easy to be imposed upon in a young one. The true breed has become very scarce; and although very hardy when grown up, they are very delicate as puppies."

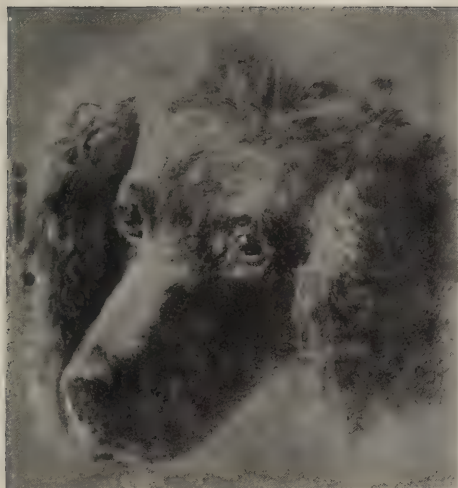
The year 1859 sees forty-nine entries made in the first Kennel Club Stud Book, and at the Birmingham Show in 1862 the first class, but the first prize was withheld.

In 1867 *Stonehenge*, in "The Dogs of the British Islands," considers that probably the "excellent form and colour" of the "Irish dog" had brought to an untimely end the old English water-spaniel. He writes:

"The old English water-spaniel, whether of the large or small breed, if not altogether lost, is very seldom seen. Probably the excellent form and colour of the Irish dog hastened the extinction of the species. The North and South of Ireland both claim a distinct variety of water-spaniel, which we will endeavour to describe.

"The northern dog has a considerable amount of white as well as liver-colour, and we have seen specimens all white, except the head. The ears are very short and devoid of feather, the legs close-coated, and the profile is that of a curly-coated pointer, if such an animal could be.

"The south-country breed, brought to the highest state of perfection by M'Carthy, is a very superior animal. His colour is uncommon, puce, and of high merit; he is *dark*, rich, decided, and unmixed with white, having a tendency to purple or puce rather than fawn, red or sienna, in the liver tones. Mr. M'Carthy some time ago



IRISH WATER-SPANIELS. (*Above*) left, "BOATSWAIN," BORN 1834. *The property of the late Justin McCarthy. From a photograph the property of Mr. F. Trench O'Rorke*; right, CH. "BRIEFNY COUNT," (*Below*) left, CH. "THE ROSE OF SHARON"; right, "ROCK DIVER," winner of numerous prizes, including Championship at Dublin in 1898. *All the property of Mr. F. Trench O'Rorke.*





A TERRIER (?), CA. 1500. From "Hours of the Virgin," a Latin illuminated manuscript (in gold and colours).



(Above) DIANA WITH HER HOUNDS. *From Cirino.* (Below) left and right, DOGS.  
*From Cirino, 1653.*





(Above) TERRIERS ATTACKING A WILD CAT. *From an etching by Howitt, 1819.* (Below) TERRIERS.  
*From Edwards's "Cynographia Britannica," 1800.*

furnished a description of his breed to the 'Field,' and we need not say it was a very faithful and honest description of the animal he has produced.

"The height of an Irish spaniel should be about 21 inches, or a little more; the head capacious, the forehead high, the eyes very intelligent; the face or mask (from the eyes downwards) particularly smooth. The ears, from point to point, measure about 26 inches. The 'top-knot' is a distinguishing feature of the breed.

"In the rough sheep-dog, the poodle, the Russian retriever or Russian setter, and in what is often called a 'Skye terrier,' we find the eyes completely hidden by a mass of shaggy hair. M'Carthy's water-spaniel has a wig descending in a point down the middle of the forehead and (excepting the mask and front of the legs) he is covered with short, close, crisp curls. (One Irish variety has the *front* of the legs covered with curls also. The tail is large at the base, shorter than in most other dogs, tapering to a sting, and unfeathered."

But *Stonehenge* had not been fortunate in his experiences with the breed. "Though excellent water-dogs," he writes, "(and, from the oily nature of their coats, drying very rapidly,) we have had to complain of their impetuous rush into pond or river, and they do not like tangled copse or bramble. From want of early education we have observed them hunting from sight, and, if not hard-mouthed, they have not brought the game alive. Their temperament, which is generally sanguine, renders them rather too playful for the sober profession of a retriever, and they have not come up to our expectations. But we repeat, we consider these faults the result (so far as our experience is concerned) of the want of proper breaking in the first instance.

"We believe the black curled examples of the present day descend on one side from this Irish stock, and we have bred black dogs scarcely distinguishable, except in colour, from M'Carthy's breed of dark-liver water-spaniels."

*Stonehenge* shows an Irish water-spaniel the property of Captain O'Grady (see Plate 145). It is shorter on the leg than the modern dog. About that time a considerable correspondence developed in the "Field," because the judges at Birmingham had given an Irish water-spaniel a first prize, which had a white patch that extended from the lower jaw to chest, and white on the tail and foot. Among the letters is one from Mr. Justin M'Carthy. The correspondence is not of much interest, except for Mr. Justin M'Carthy's letter appended below.

"SIR,

"Will 'Holdfast' allow me to correct an error? My old dog 'Boatswain' was destroyed in the year 1856, when he was about eighteen years old. Mr. Jolliffe Tuffnell's dog 'Jack' was born in 1849. In reply to the many inquiries in your paper, may I state that, in my opinion, there is not a more docile, obedient, and easily trained dog than the true-bred Irish water-spaniel. Full of intelligence and courage, he is not to be taught by an undue application of the whip; it renders him shy, cunning, and mistrustful. He is best adapted for open and marshy grounds, and wild-fowl shooting; he does not object to open coverts, but does not like strong thorny brakes. If wanted for general purposes, he should be taught to range within a short distance of the gun. He will always indicate the presence of game by the peculiar flourish of his tail. He is naturally and intrinsically a retriever, both by land and water, but can with care be taught to sit. I have known several that were steady to partridge,



quail, snipe, etc. Captain Palmer, Mayo Rifles, Royal Terrace, Kingstown, has a dog of this breed, large, strong, intelligent, and brave. He sits, backs, and retrieves, and when out with the gun he glides noiselessly into the water, like a duck, but when out on a lark he will at full speed jump into the sea from the Ballory Head or Kingstown pier, which, at low water, is more than five and thirty feet of perpendicular fall. I agree with 'Decoy Duck' that Captain Montresor's 'Norah' is one of the finest, best-bred, and handsome bitches of the breed, in or out of Ireland. Many years ago in breeding I made frequent use of his clever and well-bred Irish water-spaniel 'Nep,' which he procured in Limerick. In conclusion, I beg to add that the Irish water-spaniel should have a well-defined top-knot on the crown of the head, but *not a wig*, as that, with a woolly coat, betrays the cross of the poodle; whilst a soft, glossy coat, with short crooked front legs, induces suspicion of admixture with the Sussex or some one of the wood spaniels of English breed.

"JUSTIN M'CARTHY.

"ALBERT ROAD, KINGSTOWN, DUBLIN."

Walsh (*Stonehenge*), in 1879, shows by his illustration considerable improvement in the breed. Two Irish water-spaniels are depicted—"Rake," by Robson's "Jock" out of "Duck" by Tuffnell's "Jack," a son of "Boatswain," and "Blarney," the property of Mr. Lindoe. He also gives the points of the breed to be:

#### POINTS OF THE IRISH WATER-SPANIEL

	Value.		Value.		Value.
Head . . . . .	10	Chest and shoulders . .	7½	Tail . . . . .	10
Face and eyes . . .	10	Back and quarters . .	7½	Coat . . . . .	10
Top-knot . . . . .	10	Legs and feet . . . .	10	Colour . . . . .	10
Ears . . . . .	10			Symmetry . . . . .	5
—	—		—	—	—
	40		25		35
—	—		—		—

*Grand Total, 100*

"1. The *head* (value 10) is by no means long, with very little brow, but moderately wide. It is covered with curls, rather longer and more open than those of the body, nearly to the eyes, but not so as to be wigged like the poodle.

"2. The *face and eyes* (value 10) are very peculiar. Face very long, and quite bare of curl, the hair being short and smooth, though not glossy; nose broad and nostrils well developed; teeth strong and level; eyes small and set almost flush without eyebrows.

"3. The *top-knot* (value 10) is a characteristic of the true breed, and is estimated accordingly. It should fall between and over the eyes in a peaked form.

"4. The *ears* (value 10) are long, the leather extending, when drawn forward, a little beyond the nose, and the curls with which they are clothed 2 or 3 inches beyond. The whole of the ears is thickly covered with curls, which gradually lengthen towards the tips.

"5. *chest and shoulders* (value 7½).—There is nothing remarkable about these points, which must, nevertheless, be of sufficient dimensions and muscularity. The chest is small compared with most breeds of similar substance.

" 6. The *back and quarters* (value  $7\frac{1}{2}$ ) also have no peculiarity, but the stifles are almost always straight, giving an appearance of legginess.

" 7. *Legs and feet* (value 10).—The legs should be straight and the feet large, but strong; the toes are somewhat open, and covered with short, crisp curls. In all dogs of this breed the legs are thickly clothed with short curls, slightly pendent behind and at the sides, and some have them all round, hanging in ringlets for some time before the annual shedding. No feather like that of the setter should be shown. The front of the hind legs below the hocks is always bare.

" 8. The *tail* (value 10) is very thick at the root, where it is clothed with very short hair, as is well shown in the portrait of 'Blarney.' Beyond the root, however, the hair is perfectly short, so as to look as if the tail had been clipped, which it sometimes fraudulently is at our shows; but the natural bareness of tail is a true characteristic of the breed.

" 9. The *coat* (value 10) is composed of short curls of hair, not *woolly*, which betrays the poodle cross. A soft, flossy coat is objected to as indicative of an admixture with some one of the land-spaniels.

" 10. The *colour* (value 10) must be a deep puce-liver without white; but, as in other breeds, a white toe will occasionally appear even on the best-bred litter.

" 11. The *symmetry* (value 5) of this dog is not very great, and I have consequently only estimated it at 5."

The first dog, a great winner, was Mr. J. T. Robinson's "Jock" (by "Boatswain"), who took first at Birmingham in 1864. He was the sire of the noted "Doctor," the property of Mr. Skidmore.

"Jock" came from Mr. Justin M'Carthy's strain, at that time the most important one. "Jock" was also the sire of Mr. Lindoe's "Rake." The dam of "Doctor," "Rake," and "Widgeon" was out of "Duck," a bitch the property of the Rev. A. Willett. In the early stages of the breed inbreeding was, of course, a necessity. "Hindoo" was out of "Widgeon" by her brother "Pilot." Tuffnell's "Jock," by "Boatswain," was related to most of the dogs at that time. It was from his breeding came "Sailor," the Rev. W. J. Mellor's "Bingo," Mr. Morton's "Paddy" and Mr. Skidmore's "Patsy," "Shamrock," "Barney," etc. It was from this line, via "Boatswain," "Jock," "Doctor," that "Mickey Free" arrived. The last was considered the best water-spaniel of the day. He was the exact liver-colour then desired, with correct curls and free from white.

The show points of the breed are:

Head carried well above back level. Skull and muzzle of good size. Skull high in dome, good length and fairly wide. Muzzle long, strong, and somewhat square. Face perfectly smooth. Topknot, long loose curls, growing down into a well-defined peak between eyes. Nose large, dark liver. Eyes comparatively small, dark brown. Ears very long, lobe-shaped, set low, hanging quite close to cheek, covered with long twisted curls. Body fair-sized, round, barrel-shaped (cobby). Back short, broad, level, ribs well back; loin deep, wide; shoulders powerful, not too straight; chest deep, not too wide. Fore legs well boned, straight, with arms well let down, the fore arm at elbow and knee in straight line with point of shoulder. Feet large, somewhat round, spreading, well clothed with hair over and between toes, but not feathered. Coat dense, tight, crisp ringlets. Fore legs, feathered abundantly, but shorter in front.



The hind legs below hocks smooth in front, but feathered behind to feet. Stern short and smooth, strong and thick at root where it is covered with short curls for 3 or 4 inches, then tapering to a fine point; carried nearly level with back, shorter than length to hock joint. Colour a very rich puce-liver.

The illustrations of the modern type are from the leading kennel of to-day, that of Mr. F. Trench O'Rorke, of Breifny House, Bodmin. The dogs shown are Ch. "The Rose of Sharon" and Ch. "Breifny Court," also a head study of Mr. Trench O'Rorke's old dog Ch. "Rock Diver," born over thirty years ago and now in every pedigree of note. I have, thanks to the courtesy of Mr. Trench O'Rorke, the privilege of showing on Plate 105, the only picture known of Mr. Justin M'Carthy's famous dog "Boatswain." It shows clearly that the type has changed, if anything, very little, in the last hundred years. "Compared with the head of the youngest specimen of the breed of note, 'Breifny Devorgilla,' one clearly sees the same length of fore-face (which *Stonehenge* described as 'very peculiar'), and depth and squareness of muzzle."

Mr. Trench O'Rorke's interesting notes on the breed to-day are given in Appendix XXIV.



VIGNETTE FROM THOMAS BEWICK (1770).







BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 9999 08782 535 0



